The Life of Christos

Book Five

Jualt Christos

June 26, 1984
through
March 13, 1987

Copyright 2014 © Walter Brooks
All Rights Reserved
2022 edition

Introduction 2014
140412

What do I know today, of Book Five, of *The Life of Christos*?

An answer is, very little, of the content...

I know, that Book Five is, at this time, the last of my typewriter typed manuscripts, to need to be transcribed, other than, a small amount of material, at the front of Book Nine.

I know, that I have remembered, that Book Five, could stand alone, while I had intended, originally, to have books, Two, Three, and Four, within one manuscript, and later, to have books, Six, Seven, and Eight, also to be within one manuscript.

I know, that Book Five seems to cover, a lengthy time-period, nearly three years. I know, that a lot can happen, in one day...

Other than that, at this point, I am, as much of a reader, of this material, as anyone else.

I shall be making comments in brackets [like this], to provide, a somewhat 'guided tour', of this material, elaborating, to provide more detail.

There are numerals, at the start of my brackets [140412 ~ like this], and these numerals, indicate the date, that the comment was added. The first two numerals indicate the year, so '14', indicates 2014. The next two numerals, indicate the month, so '04' indicates April, and the final two numerals, indicate the day, so that '12', indicates the twelfth. Thus, 140412, indicates April 12, 2014.

[140523 ~ Oh happy day... I have finished the transcription, of this material... Much work remains to be done. My impression now, is that this book, focused a lot, on my life as Jualt, and on love... I seemed to feel, that much focus, previous to this book, was upon my life, as Christos. I hoped, in 1987, that this book would help people, to see me, as a normal human being, one who shares, the same sort of problems, issues, as do other 'normal' people. Because the book, focuses on issues, common to normal people, I hope that it is of value, to normal people...]

[140523 ~ This 'modern' version, does have some

differences, from the original type-writer typed manuscript. I allowed myself to elaborate, and to also delete material. I did denote, in brackets, some of that elaboration, but also, allowed myself to add recollections, of that time-period, without differentiation, between original and new material. This is a change, from any of the others, of first eight books, of *The Life of Christos*, the years of my 'youth'...]

[140604 ~ Although, people might read, these first eight books, in an order, different than the order, in which I prepared them, this book, Book Five, is the last, of this group, of the first eight books, in *The Life of Christos* series, that I am 'preparing'. I understand, that my books, could be viewed, as lengthy, but that reflects, that I am seeking to be, thorough. Other writers, through time, can use these books, to prepare shorter renditions, using more entertaining, and shorter, story-telling methods. My job, is to provide, an accurate record...]

[140604 ~ I understand, that different readers, have different perspectives, and different areas of interest. I seek to cover all bases, while other writers, who might use this series as a reference, might seek to only glean, and present, a focus on one aspect.]

[140604 ~ I do like to believe, that any single book, of *The Life of Christos*, can stand alone, without any other book, of this series, being necessary, for a reader, to gain understanding, and enjoyment. I hope I have done, 'a good job' as a writer...]

[220205 ~ I have nearly completed, a 2022 edit of this book. I mostly added or removed commas. I previously used an abundance of commas, to have pauses, when an application program is used, to read aloud the text of this book. I know ample commas, can be annoying to readers, but can be overlooked. During this 2022 edit, I sought to remove commas, and to make the book more grammatically proper, while still having enough pauses, to make listening to it easier, with less droning on and on. I did add a phrase or sentence here and there, not many, but more than a few, and I did make a significant correction to the final chapter, and elaborated on one aspect in that chapter.]

* * * * *

Introduction 1986
December 28, 1986

Book Five, of *The Life of Christos*, is the continuing journal, of Jualt Christos, 'the messiah' of our 'new age'.

[140412 ~ While I might agree, that I do view myself, among other things, as holding the 'positions', 'names', or 'titles', of the Maitreya, a future Buddha, and a messiah for Jews, a 'second coming' for Christians, and a Mahdi for Moslems, I can hope, to be viewed, as a decent, good, humane, human being, a teacher, and a guide.

[140524 ~ To me, these 'positions', are of value, not because, they are 'special', or 'elevated', which they could seem, to some to be, but rather, foremost, that because of my humanity, I represent the common experiences, shared by other human beings, and thus my experiences, are of value, to other human beings. If these 'positions', made me 'special', or 'elevated', then perhaps, they might serve some value, as a promotion of ideals, but might also, lack great value, or relevance, to normal people, in the course of normal life.]

The focus of this book, is often upon, the life of human Jualt, who must deal, with the real, 'rat race' working world, and cope, just like any other person. In my view, because the experiences, of one human being, could be appreciated, and learned from, by other human beings, this book, has importance, and value, to any other human being, or sentient being(s), with similar issues, and challenges.

Jualt is an example, of a good human being, rather than, a 'perfect' human being, one who might be construed, as being 'without flaws'... I am mindful, and appreciate, that Jesus, was said to face, the same 'temptations', situations, and issues, as other human beings...

[140412 ~ By 'good', I mean, one who seeks to live, in ways, that are karmically positive, overall. To me, perfection, can be a process, rather than a final state, and 'perfect', can be, that which is 'appropriate', and that can change.]

[140604 ~ Since I use the word, 'karma', a lot, then, as a communicator, I should define my terms, to seek to convey, what I mean, when I use that word. I understand, that

individual words, can have, many meanings. To me, karma, is the return, of the energy, that is sent out, when one interacts, with 'other'... When one does something, which is of benefit to other, then karma can be positive. When one does something, that is harmful to other, then karma can be negative. Karma responds, to intent, and effect. To me, what people today call 'fate', can be, the return of one's own karma.]

Jualt must cope, with hunger, the need for shelter, job responsibilities, the desires for love and sex, relationships, and the demands, of the role as Christos.

Book Five began, as an epilogue, of Book Four. Its length has made it, a book in its own right. By the time I had finished, editing Book Four, for registration, with the US Library of Congress, where it would be preserved, there was plenty of material, for a Book Five... The first four books, of *The Life of Christos* series, were written openly. Those around Christos, knew, that Christos, was writing books, a running journal, to serve as historical record, of his existence, for the future to study, and interpret.

Book Five, was written, somewhat secretively, as those exposed to Book Four, saw that I intended, for Book Four to be, a final book, of this series. Book Five, was written, somewhat secretively, because Jualt had found, that those around him, might not always appreciate, the fact that he was writing a book, which included them. Some names were changed, with this in mind, and always, only a first name, was used, for each 'character'.

Book Five, might be, the most controversial, because it deals with sex, and unpleasant situations, and 'sensitive' topics, but, hopefully, it is neither obscene, nor distasteful, because these topics, are ones which are somewhat common, in many people's lives. Relating the experiences, and logic, of Christos in these situations, is intended to serve, as a teaching lesson, for others. Learn from my mistakes, as well as, from my correct choices.

[140412 ~ In the original, typewriter written manuscripts, of Books One through Eight, of this series, I had minimized mention, of issues, related to Jualt, minimized mention of sex, and some 'challenges', in my life. However, in the current versions, which I have edited, I did make a point, to

add in, more details, much elaboration, upon these aspects.]

Book Five, was also carried out, more secretively, so that others, might be more motivated, to write their own remembrances, of their experiences, with Jualt Christos. I told some, that if they wrote, of their remembrances, of Jualt Christos, that then their writings, might remain alive, in much the same way, as the writings of the Apostles, became the Christian New Testament, while there is, maybe just one short letter, existing today, written by Christ Jesus.

Book One, of *The Life of Christos*, heralded the rebirth, of Christos fully, in the real human world. It saw Christos touch the various realms, of human belief, and align them all harmoniously, and give to them, a common thread, upon which, to seek to build, a more peaceful future, an attempt to harmonize diversity, rather than, to eliminate diversity.

In Book Two, of *The Life of Christos*, Jualt Christos, wrote of his metaphysical beliefs, and lightly touched upon, his world, as the private individual, Jualt. In Book Two, Christos attempted, to gain national attention, by taking a test, of his metaphysical abilities, and more significantly, to show God's willingness, to produce 'miracles', through Jualt Christos, to show support, for Jualt Christos. In Book Two, Christos was able, to successfully document, the difference, between the use, of his individual, human, metaphysical abilities, and requests made to God, and fulfilled by God.

Book One made historical record, of the existence, of Christos. Book Two gave a more detailed picture, of some, of Christos' early beliefs.

Book Three, of *The Life of Christos*, was a time-period, where Christos, was forced to recognize, the material needs, of his being, as human Jualt. Making a living, by selling books, of his writings, had not been, a profitable idea, for Christos, and so, Jualt focused, more, on the 'real-world'. Many lessons are provided, that each human being, can examine, at some point, in their personal evolution.

Book Three brought forth, two lessons in particular: Each individual, should seek to be responsible, for his or her, or its, own existence, because no one else, is usually willing, to be totally responsible, for anyone else, and because, responsibility can be, where consequence lands, so if consequence, is going to land, upon an individual, then

that individual, must seek to be, responsible.

[140412 ~ I understand, and sympathize with, the fact, that responsibility, can be a shared thing, and that each individual, has limitations, upon choices, that can actually be made. Some people, might seek to dodge, any and all responsibility, for their behavior, while others, might assume too much. However, it is the degree of responsibility, that is real, that one does embrace, that allows one, to make a difference, in one's own life. Absolving oneself of responsibility, can fail to spare one, from consequence(s).]

In Book Four, Christos tried, once again, to gain national attention, to mark his position, in our world, more easily for future historians, among others, to find and study. Also, Christos wished to gain, international attention, to seek to help, divert our world, from war, from Armageddon, from an end to this civilization, due to free will abuse, by humanity.

Christos was able, to gain mention, in a publication, with an international audience, and this, was a major success, during Book Four. There had seemed to be, a major 'struggle', between, 'the real-world powers that be', and, 'the metaphysical powers that be', and Christos' gaining, national attention, helped to provide a peace, at that time, so was very significant, in its own way.

Book Four, details, more of the beliefs, of Jualt Christos, as a metaphysical human being, living practically, to nurture ideals, in our real-world. An ideal, can become real, when you live it.

Book Four, was also meant, to tie up loose ends, but broached new topics, as it grew. The experiences, of a human being, within an age group, could be relevant, to other human beings, of that age group, or situation level, at a later point, in linear time. I was between, 30 and 33, years of age, during this book, and so, this material, might be most appropriate, useful, of value, for those around these ages.

And thus, Book Five is new ground, and new material.

I hope this book, helps to bring you, enjoyment, knowledge, and peace of mind, peace of being...

Respectfully,

Jualt Christos

* * * * *

EPILOGUE ~ Verse One
June 26, 1984

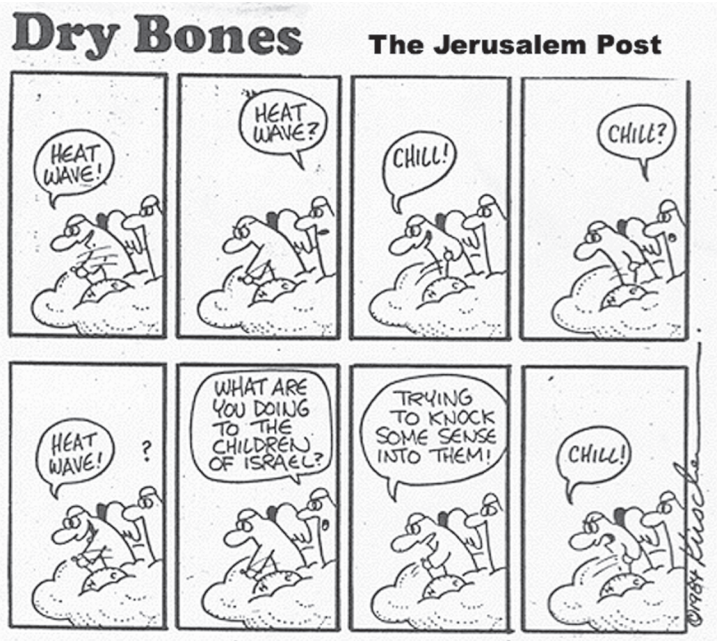
The first thing, I ask myself, other than 'Why?", is that, if I start, an 'epilogue', for Book Four, of *The Life of Christos*, how long will it be?

[140412 ~ If anyone became aware, that I was still writing, then I could say, that I was writing, an epilogue, for Book Four, which was, a truthful answer...]

Some significant things, have occurred, which I think, should be mentioned. My world is still okay... Thank God, and my other allies.

The university, paranormal investigation squad, never did contact me. Perhaps they will, in a future. Two more articles, mentioning Christos, have been written. One has been printed, in the July 3rd, 1984, issue of *The Sun*, which arrived in the marketplace, on June 25, 1984, yesterday.

I include it on the next page, for the record. Also included, is a cartoon, which appeared, in Israel's *Jerusalem Post*, the issue dated, May 27, 1984. I have been having, my own problems, with the weather, but I'll come to that later.



Psychics move objects with their minds

MANY PEOPLE are able to get objects to move by using a psychic force, but some also call upon the spirit realms for help.

by TOM TOMM

Telekinesis, according to the American Heritage Dictionary, is "the movement of, or ability to move, objects by scientifically unknown or inexplicable means, as by the exercise of mystical powers".

Several psychics, such as Uri Geller of Israel, have shown an ability to make objects move with their minds.

In the Soviet Union, infrared cameras have filmed a thin line like an octopus' tentacle making an object move while a psychic is practicing telekinesis.

● *MASTER psychic Uri Geller can bend nails with sheer mind power*

The SUN spoke with Barber Gedney Clark, a famed radio personality from Lexington, Kentucky, with an ability to uncover hidden information.

Says Barber, "Telekinesis is done under controlled circumstances, like the laboratory at Duke University in North Carolina. It is part of psychic phenomena.

Soviets

"It is done in Russia all the time, going back to the 1950s. The Soviets are way ahead of us in this field.

"In order to be able to move objects by psychic means you have to believe very strongly in the ability to do so," stresses Barber.

● *BROADCASTER Barber Gedney Clark specializes in psychic mystery*

A psychic researcher in West Palm Beach, Florida, who asked not to be named, disagrees that you have to believe in telekinesis in order to be able to psychically move objects.

Says she, "Telekinesis is not a supernatural function. It is something we have all done at times.

"If a person triggers the natural law which causes objects to move, then objects will move because the natural law makes it work whether a person understands it or not.

"Knowledge of natural law is necessary so that we can understand how to use it properly. There are many teachers of natural law.

"We are all catalysts for psychic function. It is lack of true information and education that hurts the development of psychic ability in general."

A South Florida psychic named Christos, who has many abilities, says that while belief in an ability is not necessary to get it to work by accident, believing that something will not work for you can prevent it from working for you.

Says Christos, "My own ability of projection can get objects to move, but not right away. If I say that I will get a chair to move, then sometime in the near future that chair will be moved. As I believe, so will it be."

Bette Peters, of Oak Brook, Illinois, says, "Not only the mind moves things, but spirit guides do too. The mind part can be tuned. Levitation is probably helped by spirits' intervention.

Guide

"I have seen objects hurled across rooms and tables lifted, but these things were done by spirits on the other side to show their presence.

"I have seen candle flames moved around consciously and deliberately through mental power. These things just take practice.

"Everyone has a spiritual guide. You can get in touch with them through seances, but this should only be done in important cases. It takes a lot out of a spirit to reach through to this world."

First, I want to mention, an interesting series of events, which took place, at Temple Mount, a site sacred, to Jews, Moslems, and Christians.

In the time, of the Age of Moses, under the eye for an eye, law of karma, there was built, the First Temple, the central temple, of the Jewish faith, of a people banded together, in loyalty, to the God, who had called them, His 'chosen people'. Through them, God, oversoul of all oversouls, was able to influence, the development of human civilization. This makes that site, sacred to Jews.

After the First Temple, was destroyed, the Second Temple, was built, on the same spot. It was to the Second Temple, that Jesus came to speak. That makes this site, sacred to Christians.

Metaphysically, Jewish 'myth', holds that the granite stone, at Temple Mount, is the foundation stone, of our universe. Some believe the location of the central temple was elsewhere, but nonetheless, these sites are held sacred today.

When came Mohammed, Prophet of God, oversoul of all oversouls, Islam gained possession, of the magic touchstone. Today, the mammoth Golden Dome of the Rock, an Islamic shrine, marks where Mohammed, is beieved to have ascended, 'to the heavens', and 'vanished', from our Earth, from the physical human realm. The Golden Dome of the Rock is sacred to Moslems.

The yellow, golden Islamic shrine, was bombed the other day. Fortunately, damage was minor. Jewish messianic extremists were arrested. Take note, commendably, that it is the government, of the State of Israel, a nation which grants citizenship, and the shimmering hope, of safe haven, to any Jew, anywhere under the sun, which is going to punish, those Jews, who attacked, a Moslem religious shrine.

[140412 ~ While Israel, is intended to grant, 'safe haven', or 'automatic citizenship', to any Jew, who wants it, there has come, an argument within Israel, about 'who is a Jew?'. Some denominations of Judaism, decline to recognize, some other denominations, of Judaism, as valid...]

The Dome of the Rock, is to be repaired, and plans have been made, to build a Third Temple, on the same site. This

newest, Jewish central temple, is to contain, within its structure, everything, that has been built before. In the same way, that the Moslem Dome of the Rock, is located upon, the first and second temples, sacred to Jews and Christians, plans are for the third central Temple, to encompass, the Moslem Dome of the Rock.

The Third Temple, is to be, a massive complex, and also rebirths, a major Jewish institution, as Jews have lived, without such a 'central authority', have enjoyed autonomy, of very small groups, the 'rabbinic era'. All of these plans, are 'very controversial', to both some non-Jews, and to some Jews. Some think, that even putting, such plans on paper, is a prophetic marker, for a coming of a 'Messiah', or at least a sign, of the changing of the Age, in our planet's galactic orbit, as Earth moves, from an age of Pisces, to an age of Aquarius...

[140412 ~ I have 'joked', that Jerusalem could be, a, 'Disney Land for the insane', akin to, a giant amusement park, and that the bloody conflicts today, could be intended to gain, 'concession space' for 'vendors', during a time of peace...]

As Christos, I affirm, that all humans, are children of God, and warn, that a parent does not normally, happily bless, bloody quarrels, among the children. It is karma, which can naturally return, as it was sent, a 'bounce', like an Australian boomerang. Seek to keep, your own karma kind...

Now, about my 'problems', with the weather... My area, has had, no destructive weather. There have been, recent reports of tornadoes, in the sky, but they did not touch ground.

A tropical low cell went north, in the Atlantic Ocean, up the Florida east coast. It stopped, around Gandalf's spot, in Neptune Beach. A high cell, further north, kept the tropical low, from moving further north, but it did not go, south, east, nor west, though there was nothing visible, to stop it, from doing so.

That which occurred, was the storm, failed to penetrate, the Florida coast, but its rain certainly did. There was, no major damage, but there was, much complaining, about the weather, in the world around me. The storm fell apart.

So far, no hurricane, has been born, anywhere yet, this summer. In thanks, for the article, in *Sun*, which reported my beliefs, as Christos, on weather influence, I will seek, to use my influence, to protect, my southern triangle, my primary psychic web, like a spider-web, during this hurricane season.

I definitely felt, an energy boost, after the article was published, possibly from, the many thousands of people, who were reading, and thinking about, Christos.

To those who complain, about the rainy weather, I can conjecture, that without my automatic, on for protection, the weather, could have been, worse.

I told Thomas, that I wondered, if my being publicly placed, in this area, will influence others, to target this area, to show their own abilities... I heard, the spirit of my mother, saying, that if my being public, would make this area a target, then that too, must be for the best, in some way. I asked, How? An answer was, to show that I am Christos, for Christos uses, the energy of a total, so should be greater, than any, of the single pieces, and so, if others were able, to penetrate my area, then I must not be Christos. If I could protect this area, in spite of attacks, by other powerful characters, then that might give, some credence, to my claim, to be Christos.

I am uncertain, of the correctness, of that logic, and would prefer, to avoid being targeted. I am uncertain, of the result of my efforts, but I can pledge, to seek to do, what I am able to do...

I can see my mother, as perhaps aligned, with a secret society, of eugenicists, perhaps made, exclusively of women, but have, no reason to believe, that this is so. I might suspect, that as portrayed, in the book series, *Dune*, such a society, might 'strongly prefer', that all children, from members of such a society, be female. People are people, as individuals, rather than, inherently due, to their gender(s).

I am at peace, with my mother, once again. Once I finished, Book Four, which has been sent, to the US Library of Congress, for historical registration, I then asked, a friend of mine, Paul, to ask a friend of my mother's, Cynnie, if I make take my mother, out for dinner, as a peace gesture. My mother agreed.

I went to my mother's, newly built, and bought, apartment, prepared to take her out for dinner, at my expense, but she had already prepared dinner, so we ate, at her place. We had, a good exchange of dialogue, remaining peaceful and civil. She is the same. And so am I. Hopefully, she and I, now have a truce, remaining positive, and distant. My mother, might now have, 'other fish to fry', and hopefully, I can remain uninvolved, in her conflicts.

I hope, that the weather remains good. I have not watched, the daily newspaper, or television reports. I have heard, an occasional radio report. My conscious focus has not been upon the weather, except for some daily pushes, in a general direction. My conscious attention is, by choice, upon my treadmill, in the real working world. If need be, such as the approach of a hurricane, I could then refocus my automatic, and conscious, upon weather.

During lunch, with brown-haired Sharon, she said, "A natural weather barrier, has been protecting Florida, but it is breaking down."

"Not so," I replied. "The area is still being spared. I wrote about, a spiritualist, named Christos, who has pledged, to protect this area, during the past four years."

Negatively, she shook her head, preferring to believe, in the scientific myth, of a natural weather barrier. She did relent though, and said, "Maybe."

We discussed Christos, and weather, no further. Even though Sharon was not prepared, to blindly accept, my statement about Christos, she does believe, that the zone, claimed by Christos, has been spared, for some reason. And, in believing, that zone to be spared, Sharon was ignorant, of the existence of Christos. So, if nothing else, coincidentally, the zone claimed to be protected, by a natural barrier, is the same zone, that I have publicly pledged to protect, during the previous four years, and now this fifth year.

This 'natural scientific barrier', seemed to appear, after I started making my pledges. I know nothing, of any, 'natural scientific barrier'.

Sometimes people, strangers, look at me closely, as if they recognize me. Perhaps they do, and perhaps I am the only one, who does not know, that they know, that I believe,

I am Christos. One day, the world might have, a surprise party for me!!

I told Thomas, that word, about the existence of Christos, is growing on its own. My seeds are beginning to grow, their own roots. I can feel it... I also know, that often, life can suddenly present one, with bumpy ground, even during, what might have appeared to be, and been expected to remain, the smoothest of rides...

A person new to me, one who has spirit, is 'lively', with wit, intelligence, and exuberance, is Daniel. Daniel asked me, what did I write, in my own time, as he knew, that I wrote, professionally, for a national tabloid, as a job, for income to survive. In answer, I showed to Daniel, books from *The Life of Christos* series. Daniel has read parts, of all of my books, and asked to keep, his copy, of Book Four. I gladly gave it to him.

After reading Book Four, or part of it, Daniel asked me, if Jualt and Christos are separate personalities. That is not so. I am Jualt Christos, of one mind, and one spirit. I refer to myself, as Christos, when emphasizing those things, which I do, as a manifestation of God. I refer to myself, as Jualt, when mentioning those things, I encounter, as a human being, which other human beings, might have to also deal with.

Friend Red Jeff, who often seems to me, to be too young to listen, said, "I was told, that if you, well, not you personally, stop talking, and just listen, then you'll learn something. My friend says, that if you are talking, then you are talking about stuff, which you know. If someone else is talking, then you may hear something, that you didn't know before."

Red Jeff could be, in a normal learning stage. I think, Red Jeff could be, at times, simply speaking the things, he is hearing in his own mind, perhaps for the first time. He truly hears it first, when he speaks it. People's external words, often reflect, their internal dialogue, or at least reflect, how they think...

Red Jeff has a good mind, but he is not yet interested, in attaching himself to the real working world. Red Jeff's phase may be normal, for a good many young people. Red Jeff is still learning. Repetition can be good, for the memory.

Red Jeff's repeating things, could help him, to remember them.

However, in spite of his good thought, about listening, Red Jeff actually spends, more time talking, than listening. I am simply, a guide for Red Jeff, one whose influence may be slight. Red Jeff has no interest, in Christos, or in anything 'metaphysical', so we have not discussed, that subject yet.

I met Red Jeff, at a bar, for men who like men... Red Jeff actually was the one, who initiated our connection, and this pleased me, flattered me, as I found him to be bright, and cheerful, and attractive... Red Jeff and I, have enjoyed movies, music, dancing, and some time at the beach, among other things.

One thing, about this epilogue, is that I do not plan, on mentioning its existence to my world, at least, not until it is complete. I have found, that many people, might feel uncomfortable, or even angry, if they know, they are being portrayed, and I wish, to seek to maintain my relationships, as they might be naturally, without knowledge of this book involved.

At some point, in the future, it might be said, that I have been killed, while I live on, thereafter, in secret. This is said to be, what happened, with Joan of Arc, that her death, was publicized loudly, while she lived on, secretly, out of sight. The same could have been done, with Jesus. It is within a realm of possibility. Jesus was seen, in Ethiopia, after the crucifixion. The Egyptian Coptic church was grown independently, based on those interactions. Some might thus speculate, that Paul, actually did meet Jesus, on the road to Damascus, rather than meeting, a spirit or apparition, of Jesus... This could be, a sore point, in the modern world, a relatively unimportant, divisive issue, in the greater light, of peaceful coexistence, an issue, perhaps with too much focus, upon the personal history, of Jesus, rather than upon, the teachings of Jesus.

I hope my readers agree, that I was correct, to continue writing.

May peace be with you, and with thy spirit.

= 30 =

KEEP IT SIMPLE STUPID
August 11, 1984

I have taken to photography, as a hobby, and may learn that field, as a money-making trade. I am writing captions, for political and humorous cartoons, with an artist named Rich, who I met at a gym, where we sometimes work-out together. Having a work-out partner, can help one, to regularly go to a gym. I came up with an idea, a caption, which Rich then illustrated. I have submitted our material, to some publications. Neither of us has yet been paid, for our efforts. We are a team, partners, in this one activity. I would split half and half, with Rich, anything I get.

I did find Rich, to be very attractive, but he is totally heterosexual, and I respect that. I did inquire. Rich did express, some concern, that some people, might wonder about him, if it was known at the gym, that I might like men. I assured Rich, that at the gym, I am regarded, as 'straight'. Nevertheless, I think this 'knowledge', has impacted Rich, and his attendance, at the gym, then became irregular, so that, I work my own routine alone, more often than with him, since then.

Rich expressed, great anger to me one day, strong in mood, due to someone he perceived, as a 'bad driver', in this case, a very slow driver, who had blocked Rich's travel. I tell myself, that another driver, is probably doing, as well as, he or she is able, and that I am unaware, of what problems, that driver might have, either with self, or with vehicle. Accept people as they are, and seek to make, your own adaptations.

I told Rich, that another person, fails to feel your anger. Only you, feel your anger. Being angry, can be non-productive behavior. Seek to avoid, acting in anger. If in your anger, you lash out, and hurt the person, who caused you, to feel angry, then that person, probably only feels, his or her own pain, and might fail to feel, or even be aware, of your anger.

I told Rich, that getting ahead in life, can be, like a fast race-car, matched against, a regular car, through traffic on city streets. It is possible, for the driver of the regular car, to win. It does not necessarily matter, how fast a car can go,

which would otherwise make, the race-car, an obvious favorite. What can count, is which driver, makes best use, of the random opportunities, that occur, and how well, the obstacles are handled. The driver can be, the most important factor.

I said, a similar situation can occur, with image and substance, of people. It can be, how people make use, of opportunities, that makes a difference. A very talented person, and-or a very beautiful person, who does nothing, can 'lose', to a less talented, and-or less beautiful person, who is willing, to 'do something'.

Those who think of themselves, as superior, often think, they should be supported, by others, by the inferior ones. However, in life, one must often start, at the bottom of a ladder, and work one's way up, by real efforts, rather than, due to any inherent 'superiority'... People, who think of themselves, as superior, often fail, to be team players, and sometimes look down upon, those who actually do the work.

[140413 ~ The value, of being competitive, skilled, might have more validity, in a free enterprise capitalist economy, than in a fascist, or communist, controlled or managed, economy.]

Rich has been, 'bulking up', at the gym, seeking to gain size. I prefer lean growth. Bulk can turn, from muscle to fat... Lean stays lean...

I have given to Rich, a copy, of Book Four, of *The Life of Christos*. Rich asked if people think I am crazy, because of the Christos material. At this point in time, I believe the answer, is no. This is because I only answer questions, as Christos, rather than, seeking to preach to people. As my norm, I let people, who have come to know of me as Christos, mention me to others, rather than my doing so. These people, who know me as Christos, tend to vouch for my 'sanity', when mentioning me to others. I also have, some separation, between those who know of me, as Jualt, and those who know of me, as Christos, to minimize the impact, upon my life as Jualt, from my life as Christos.

I think I am the same, as Jualt, and as Christos. I think nobody, who knows of me, as Jualt, while being ignorant of me, as Christos, thinks of me, as crazy. Thus, I can say, that people who know me, even if I am Christos, think of me

as sane. Knowing of me as Christos, does get some, to question my sanity. Those who have known me, as Jualt, for a while, before learning, that I think I am Christos, have already gained, an impression of me, as sane, and can be assured, that, even if I do think of myself, as Christos, that I still live, 'sanely'.

Rich was an exception. Rich had mentioned to me, that he hoped to earn a living, as an illustrator. I mentioned, that I wished to earn income, as a writer, and he asked, what I wrote, so I showed to him, a copy of Book Four, which he said he wished to read, after I told him, what it was about, in general terms. I thought, Rich would be, a good recipient, of that book, as he was outside of my world, lacked any connection, to anyone mentioned in it, and is somewhat, a 'normal person'. I thought that Rich, could be, a 'normal reader', and give to me, some feedback, from that perspective, as he would lack, having any 'bias', from 'involvement'.

The weather has been, extremely nice. We had been having, our normal, once a day afternoon rain. After the article, in *Sun*, which mentioned, that a spiritualist, named Christos, was seeking to protect, a southern triangle, of the US, a storm began to brew, offshore from here. For about a week, there were clouds, with some drizzling rain. Nothing harmful happened though. The storm then fell apart. The weather has been good since then.

Rich requested, as a demonstration from me, and then received, five days of sunshine, in a row. Now, I have told Rich, that I want some rain. Too much sun, without water, is not good, for the plants. Rich just listens, and puts up with my crazy notion, that I can influence weather. Rich does not believe, in psychic phenomena, existing at all. Rich's requests were made, to show me, that I couldn't grant his request, and, when I did succeed, he dismissed it, as 'coincidence'. Nonetheless, Rich is still a witness, and he did get from me, that which he requested from me...

My job remains pleasant. John-V, is the most pleasant boss, I have had. I get along well, with everyone, and John-V has lacked complaint, about any of my material.
Everyone goes to lunch together, as a group, and then, after work, sometimes we go to a bar, for drinks. This bar is near

the gym, where I work-out, and I generally go to the gym first, and I usually manage to work-out, longer than my co-workers, spend time drinking, and this helps me to smile, thinking that I am able, to do something, that can be healthy, longer than they can do something, that can be unhealthy. I am failing, to really gain any weight, but my life seems stable, and I am content.

Bobbie is a co-worker, and she and I, are now friends. Bobbie has helped me, by giving to me tips, about who to contact, related to some topics. Bobbie compliments me, on how well I write, how easily I seem to write, as, she says, that while she can gather material, that she sometimes feels challenged, to organize, and present, her stories. Bobbie is very good at research, but feels challenged, as a writer. Sometimes I help Bobbie, to do those things. I advise people, to sometimes speak aloud, what they wish to say, and then write that down, rather than trying, to just write. Sometimes, trying to say something, helps one to focus properly, to find the right words.

[140413 ~ There was, a somewhat humorous interaction, between Bobbie and I. Bobbie is Jewish, and a politically active Democrat. Bobbie had mentioned to me, that she felt, there was serious, significant, discrimination, against Jews, in Palm Beach. I told Bobbie, that sometimes I wondered, if Jews, discriminated against others, more so, than they might be discriminated against. I pointed out, that Jews, have their own clubs, religious places of worship, and even housing developments, and private clubs, and outsiders can be unwelcomed, at these places, more so, than Jews might be unwelcome, at non-Jewish clubs, places of worship, and housing developments.]

[140413 ~ I was invited, by Anne Cox, the woman for whom I edited a book, about the history, of the Woman's Club, in New York City, to a formal party, at the Bath & Tennis Club, in Palm Beach, a top-notch Old Guard, private club. I think Anne's daughter, married David Eisenhower, son of the US President.]

[140413 ~ I told Bobbie, that I would bring her, as my guest, and she, in her turn, would bring me, to a private Jewish gathering. Bobbie looked splendid, and, as always, was able to converse intelligently, on most any topic, with

anyone. Bobbie was well treated, at the party, and enjoyed herself. Bobbie said, that she thought, that people knew, that she was Jewish, and lacked any overt objection, and said she was well treated. Bobbie later told John-V, that I seemed to be known, by most all there, and that I seemed, to be well-liked, and respected.]

[140413 ~ Bobbie brought me, as a guest, to a Jewish party, a more casual outdoor affair, near some tennis courts. I mingled easily, staying at all times with Bobbie, and, although some expressed some surprise, that I was not Jewish, nobody was insulting to me. However, Bobbie was brought aside, by one of the hosts, of this gathering, and was told, that it was 'inappropriate', for me to be there, and asked, for me to leave, and we both departed... Bobbie apologized to me, for the behavior, of some of her compatriots, and agreed, that she had, indeed, been treated better, as my guest, than we had been treated, at her event.]

[140413 ~ It does seem, somewhat wrong to me, for any group, which complains about discrimination, against them, to then discriminate, against others. I have found this true of blacks, who have all-black organizations, that exclude non-blacks, and of women, who have all-women groups, that exclude men, while both blacks and women complain, against any discrimination, they feel against them... I understand, that some groups, which are totally private groups, privately funded and maintained, have right to select, for their own 'type' of members. I prefer, to only attend group functions, where anyone, would be welcomed.]

[140413 ~ My health remained good, and I attended work on time, without missing a day. I easily met my quotas. I did request, an extended lunch, one day, as US CIA director, William Casey, was speaking in our area, and I could attend, and wished to do so. John-V expressed some surprise, and disdain, and asked me, why I might care, about anything, that Casey might have to say. I said, that I wished to be aware, first-hand, of Casey's perspective.]

[140413 ~ I also, thanks to my mother, got to attend, a private party, hosted by, 'Russian exiles', in Palm Beach, where US 'special envoy', Vernon Walters, was a guest, and I got to speak casually with him, in a group setting, as we mingled, and also, for a short time, privately one-to-one.

Vernon has worked, in foreign affairs. I did mention, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, to Vernon. *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, is a weekly overview, of world economic, military, political, social, news, views, and issues, that I write, carried now by, *The Key West Citizen* newspaper.]

My mother invited me, to a small cocktail party, and dinner. I bartended, for my mother. This let my mother's friends, see for themselves, that she and I, are at peace. My mother told her guests, how I was, the first human baby, ever frozen, hibernated, due to the premature birth. My mother was 22 weeks pregnant, when she fell down, a flight of stairs, and I had to be removed. In the past, my mother has said, that I was born, at a Rockefeller-funded, medical center, in Paris, in 1954, that was researching premature births, and had been experimenting, upon primates. This medical facility, just happened to be nearby, and that is why, she was brought there. I have 'joked', that this means, I was born, at a place, meant for animals. However, this time, my mother told her guests, that I was born, at a public hospital.

After the guests left, and I was helping my mother, to clean up, she 'surprised' me. My mother told me, that I should be thankful, that she is such a good, and forgiving, person, because, in her view, I am evil, a thief, and a whore. I had said absolutely nothing, to provoke such a statement, from my mother. This statement was irrelevant, to anything that had been, or was being, discussed, and was totally, 'out of the blue'...

I told my mother, that I didn't understand, how she could say, such a thing, and told her, that I felt, that it was time, for me to leave, and I did so. I understand, that my mother, can quickly become venomous, due to alcohol, sometimes even a very little bit of alcohol. I decided, it would be for the best, if I minimized any contact, with my mother... I can chuckle, at this, as my mother just being my mother, that this is just how she is, or how she can be, but I also, can inhale deeply, and exhale, a big resigned sigh...

I took Sharon, to a Delta Upsilon, fraternity rush party. It has been, a long time, since I touched that base, and I note it, just to give, another bit of historical trivia. I am a member, of Delta Upsilon, and I continue to align, with their commendable ideals.

I gave Nicole, a copy, of Book Four, of *The Life of Christos*. Nicole, a daughter of a Swedish ambassador, describes herself, as a, 'Buddhist metaphysical adept'. Nicole is living, in Helene's lake house, while Helene is staying, in Washington DC. I collect, and deposit, the rent for Helene. I also did, a 'ghost story', for *Sun*, featuring Nicole, and her friend, about a ghost, at her residence, perhaps from a boat, that hit rocks, near the Boynton inlet, and sunk offshore, causing many to drown. I wrote the story, and took the pictures, and got a little bonus for that.

At my job, with *Sun*, I also interviewed, Mark Second, of the Church of God of Philadelphia. Mark believes, that he is a prophet. Mark believes, that Armageddon is going to occur, that it cannot be prevented. Mark says, that Armageddon has to be. I think, this is a rather gloomy view, with much sorrow for humanity, if this be so. Mark says, he will be shot and killed, and then, his body will be taken, to Temple Mount in Jerusalem. Mark will then rise again, and thus become recognized, worldwide, as the resurrected Jesus... Mark says, he has been told these things, by a voice in his head.

I hope, that the way I live, and my 'teachings', shall be of value through time.

Mark said, that after this, there will come Armageddon, and that there will be survivors, and they will build, the 'new Earth'... I say, the 'new world', is in the next second, in your own heart, and how you live your life... I told Mark, that I hope, he is not shot, and that I hope, that Armageddon does not occur, and that I, personally, seek to help build awareness, and peace, in our world. I told Mark, that there is a spiritualist, named Christos, in south Florida, who is concerned, about Armageddon. I told Mark, that Christos has a friend, named Thomas, in Atlanta, and suggested that he speak with Thomas. I never identified myself, as Christos, to Mark. As said, I interviewed Mark, as Jualt, as a writer-reporter, for *Sun*.

My boss, John-V, told me, that heroes have to be killed, to become remembered. John-V says, that a hero must be killed, at the height, of his or her, or its, popularity. Otherwise, John-V says, that person becomes forgotten. I disagreed. I said, that there have been many people, who

have achieved long-term remembrance, honored, without being killed, to gain it. I suppose, there could also have been, many heroic people, who have been killed, and forgotten...

I would prefer to live, and enjoy life, while still helping, to maintain and improve, the condition of our world, today and tomorrows... It just seems to me, that one's life, should have more meaning, more value, than one's death...

There have been, some 'crying statues', of the Virgin Mary, around the globe lately. The manifestation of Mary continues in Yugoslavia. The apparition has been called, the Madonna, and the Shining Lady, by those who have

WHEN YOUR BOSS smiles at you, or frowns, it will be because he has bought a new gadget that can read your mind!

Many thought machines are being invented as a result of research conducted at universities across the United States.

by TOM TOMM

One device your boss will be using is a clever little scanner that monitors your level of stress. It will be able to detect how seriously you are concentrating.

Risks

If you are in a job where there is a lot of pressure, it could affect your work performance — and, in some cases, create safety risks.

The thought scanner will show when your brain waves get stronger, or weaker. If you are too lax, the boss will know. If you are beyond a safe level, the machine will send out an alarm.

Rudy Oswald, AFL-CIO research director, says, "Despite the 30 years use of lie detectors, there are clear examples that those devices have not always been reliable. The same is true of these machines."

Rudy also fears that the thought machines represent an unconstitutional invasion of workers' privacy.

Portable

Other brain scanning gizmos which may be put to use in the office include brain readers and portable lie detectors.

The brain readers are still being developed. They have some truly frightening aspects.

Jualt Christos, while a student at the University of Florida in the 1970s, participated in a required psychology experiment for class.

Says he, "The electrical engineering and psychology departments were apparently being funded by the CIA to do research on the language of the brain.

"Students were told the experiment was to study memory. They were given a list of words, told to rest for an hour, and then asked to recall the words. Their brains were monitored the entire time.

"What was really being done is the machines were identifying the brain waves that went with the words. A computer would then record the brain wave language.

"Once developed, these brain readers could be used to read the thoughts of people or to project suggestions."

A portable lie detector acts in much the same way. Your boss can place the palm-size device on his desk. It will record the speech of those around. When a lie is told, it flashes a light.

It too operates on picking up brain waves. When an untruth is told, brain waves are faster than normal. As the lie races through the brain, the machine registers the increased frequency.

seen her. Mary has described herself, in Yugoslavia, as the Queen of Peace. I have called myself, a Prince of Peace...

I have not written, about Christos recently. There have now been, four articles published, which mention Christos. The article, on the previous page, appeared in *Globe's Sun*, Volume 2, Number 29, July 17, 1984, on Page 14. The incident I write about, in this article, now on the previous page, is one of the times, I might have, unknowingly participated, in government experiments. I have sometimes wondered, what the school's machine registered, when it monitored, my brain-waves...

There was some 'bounce', in my world... Rocky likes to wrestle, and to 'frolic'. I didn't wish to wrestle, as my severed shoulder, gives me a bit of a disadvantage. However, Rocky 'insisted', and my hand got cut, though it is now nearly healed. A week after that incident, Rocky was stalked, he says, by three young males, who demanded the gold necklace, that he was wearing. Rocky caught them by surprise, by attacking them, but, in that melee, he broke his hand. As I was able, to fight Rocky off, but still suffered, a wound to my hand, so too was Rocky, able to fight off his attackers, but suffered a hand wound... Rocky was pleased, that he got to party, with members of the rock music group, Van Halen. I like their music.

Friend Chuck has been to the hospital, for a double bypass operation, on his heart. The surgeons, made him unconscious, and then cut open his breastplate. They used a vise, to open his rib cage, so they could work on his heart. They took a length of vein, from his leg, and stitched it, into two places, where his heart vessels, had weakened. Chuck's problem was that two arteries, which feed blood to his heart, had closed, so his heart, was not getting enough fuel. The transplanted leg vein will do the job now.

When I went to see Chuck, in the hospital, I was shocked, at the sight of him. Chuck was connected, by tubes and wires, into everything in sight. I told myself, that I hoped, I would have the courage, to kill myself, before I paid people, to do that to me. However, Chuck is now back home, enjoying new life. Chuck says, he wouldn't go through the whole thing twice, but says, having the operation once, is worthwhile. Not having gone through the

operation myself, I tend to think, that if going through the operation once, is worthwhile, then going through it twice, should also be worthwhile, unless the first time, did nothing to improve the situation.

I am truly inspired, by Chuck's courage, and am now willing, to go through a major operation, if more than one doctor, independently says, I should. Doctors make money, by performing operations, so some doctors, might advise one, to go through, an unnecessary operation, just to earn income. That is one reason, that a second opinion, can be a good idea.

And so, this is how goes, the life of Jualt Christos!

= 30 =

September 9, 1984

The main change, in my routine, to be noted in my story, is that I have been, 'laid off', at my job. My being let go, was sudden, without any warning, and done by John-V, in a friendly way. I went out to lunch, and when I returned, John-V called me, to his office, and said, that I had to be laid off, for several months. John-V told me, to call him in December, to see when in January, to come back to work. I asked John-V, if he would mind, if I sought a different position, with *Globe*, as they have many publications. John-V said, that I would be paid less. I said, that I would make more, than if I earned nothing.

John-V said my 'leads', my first paragraph, in each story, were 'weak', and that, 'poor Beverly', had been covering for me, by rewriting my leads, and that this, was causing her, to fall behind, with her own work, as she really didn't, have the time, to cover for me. I knew this, to be at least partially untrue, as my leads, had been used intact, without change, and I could have shown that, to John-V, as I had kept copies, of my stuff, but he was disinterested, didn't have the time, to do that.

If Beverly, was falling behind, with her own work, I had nothing to do with that. If Beverly, did seek to claim credit, for writing my leads, then she was being deceitful, and that I could demonstrate. John-V said, the situation, was what it was, and that I should wait, until December, before seeking any employment, with *Globe*...

At face value, one might speculate, that perhaps John-V, wanted me gone, and Beverly, had supplied the pretext...

Beverly had walked out, at her previous job, for John-C, and I had been hired, during her absence. Beverly had returned, and found me occupying, what she viewed, as 'her space' there. It turned out, that Beverly had applied, for the job with *Sun*, at the same time as I, but I had been hired. Beverly perhaps decided, that she would, 'get me', for these things, though technically, I had done nothing to her, and never did.

Beverly later applied, for a 'clipper' position, with *Sun*, being a person, who would go through articles, from newspapers and publications, and 'clipping', cutting out with

scissors, for review by John-V, those articles, that might become, an interesting story, for *Sun*. Beverly sat across from me, and perhaps was very envious, that I was writing... One might say, that Beverly had, 'pencil envy'...

I was caught by surprise, in part, because, John-V, had lacked any complaint with me, for quite some time. One might think, that John-V, had invested in my salary, and could have 'guided' me, if he had need to do so, as he did, for my first week, to ten days. Thereafter, all was well, and John-V, had only kind words, to me, and about me to others.

Two co-workers, Bobbie and Rita, told me, prior to this current situation, that Beverly was saying, that she had to fire me, from my previous job, with John-C, because I was incompetent. For the record, Beverly was not my boss, at my previous job, and she did not fire me. I had visited Beverly, at her residence, to speak to her, about this, to request, that she cease attacking me. I never mentioned, any names, to Beverly... I asked Beverly to focus, on doing a good job instead. I told Beverly, that I was willing to help her, if she wished. I hoped, to have 'peace' with Beverly.

Beverly refrained, from denying, what she had been said to say, and declined to apologize, for her behavior, and instead, had said, that anyone, who had told me, what she had said, was no friend of mine, for they were seeking, to cause angry feelings, and trouble. I respect, and appreciate, that Bobbie and Rita, had been truthful to me. I figured, that Beverly, was simply seeking to distract me.

Essentially, Beverly admitted, that she had been, back-stabbing me, but sought to say, that those who told me, of her back-stabbing behavior, were the bad ones, were trouble-makers. I found this ploy, to be ludicrous. I had hoped, that my competence, would continue to demonstrate itself, and that would be good enough, to let me hold my job.

I never responded, to Beverly's nastiness, with any nastiness, of my own. I maintained, a professional demeanor, and hoped Beverly, would become, a decent person. I maintained peaceful, friendly, and even civil terms, with Beverly at work, viewing her inner anger, which caused her to lash out at me, now and then verbally, as her problem. I apparently was wrong.

Even if I was, victimized once again, by female reptilian

venomous behavior, ultimately, I feel, that it was John-V, who let me down. John-V could have, as easily as I, compared the leads, in my submitted material, to the leads, that were actually used, and easily seen for himself, that they had remained intact. John-V, also let his employer down, by acting against a competent worker, one who did his job well, and selecting to keep, a worker, who was failing, to do her own job... Perhaps, John-V was influenced, by his lust, for Beverly...

I did muse, that in a recent popular movie, *Star Wars*, the protagonist, Luke, had his hand cut off, by a villain named Vader, like John-V... If a 'light saber', could be a symbol of a pen, an instrument to write with, one that I used, to promote Christos, then I seemed to have suffered, at least for now, the same fate as Luke, at the hands of someone, who had the same name, as that villain...

I suppose, that if one is limited to speculating, that one examines, all possibilities. I even wondered, if my being ousted, with Bobbie, from that party of hers, while she had been welcomed, at my party, had factored into this situation with Jewish John-V...

Loss of this job, is my problem, and it tossed me back, to the ranks of the unemployed, and I am financially broke, once more. I really can't emphasize enough, to my readers, just how bad, and stressful, poverty in itself can be...

I am also surprised, when employers, select for workers, who create friction, within the work-force. I believe, that those who work hard, honestly, and competently, should be retained, for a business to operate smoothly, more efficiently, and thus more profitably, at least in a capitalist environment. Yet time and again, I have experienced, 'Gestapo dens', of back-stabbing, and informers who lie, an environment of rigid order, and hurtful rumors. Perhaps, employers seek to insulate themselves, from wage demands, of a work-force, by selecting for strife, among the workers. I believe, the most profitable businesses, are those, with a smoothly functioning, team of workers... Perhaps the idea, of a long-term job, is in itself a myth...

Coincidentally, I wrote the following article, off the top of my head, for *Sun*, and it was used intact, including my 'lead', the first paragraph:

IF YOU are hard-working, honest, and do a good job, you'll never have to worry, about being fired, right? Wrong, says a recent study, which found that most workers, get fired, for the very reasons, they should be promoted!

Being honest, smart, and doing a good job, can be dangerous, to your job security, found unemployment counselor, Chuck E. Sheehan, of Montreal, Canada.

Chuck surveyed 150 men, who had been recently fired, from their jobs. Some were laid off, as a result of business layoffs, but others, claim to have been fired, without cause.

Explains Chuck, "In general, good workers stay with good jobs. There are always openings at places, where something is wrong. Good jobs don't open up all the time.

"Honest people, will be let go, by business, where there is corruption. Places with high turnover, often have inside theft. The fired workers become the scapegoats.

"This can be true, of warehouses, stores, and small businesses, which handle money or merchandise.

"Good workers can be fired, because they do too good of a job. They make others look bad, without necessarily meaning to, and this, sometimes, works against them, in the long run."

Many of the unemployed, told Chuck, that they had been fired, by managers who feared them, because they did excellent work.

"Insecure bosses," Chuck believes, "will try to get rid of potential rivals. They only want people, who pose no threat.

"Everyone wants to move up, but there are, a limited amount of positions, at the top.

"Many firms, will use all kinds of pretexts, to get rid of workers, to avoid giving raises, pensions, or promotions. There is always someone else, knocking at the door."

Stock-broker John Lane, 28, is a typical case. He went to broker's school, and then was accepted, as a trainee, at a brokerage house. Within a year, he has worked at two different places, and is jobless again.

Says Chuck, "The firms used him, to get new clients. Once he had done so, they fired him. They actually got rid of him, because they feared, that his clients, would be loyal to him, and not to their agency.

"Many sales operations, do the same thing. It can be a cutthroat world."

Unfortunately, personnel managers generally look, at a person's work record, to see how long they stayed, with their previous jobs. Less than six months at a job, is viewed as worthless.

Comments Chuck, "Why a worker was fired, is often explained, by the employer, not the employee. Sadly, even the best of workers, can be fired without cause, and left with a bad work history."

J.C. WITHEY

I am reminded, of how US President Lincoln, had all of his Cabinet Secretaries, sign their resignations, at the start of their employment. That way, Lincoln could 'accept' the resignations, at any time, and say, that the Secretaries had quit, if he wished to do so...

I was stunned, by the suddenness, of my being let go. I thought I had found, a 'home', a secure job, which I enjoyed doing, and did well. My conscious remains, to protect my area, from destructive weather, but the area where I worked, got hit, two hours after I left, by a severe thunderstorm, with hail and lightning, that seemed somewhat centered, on their location. They found themselves, unable to operate, as they lost electricity, as apparently, the building itself, was hit, more than once, or so Bobbie told me later... I assured Bobbie, that I had not, deliberately focused upon them. Bobbie said, the situation, had been 'terrifying', to her. Apparently, some computers, or desk terminals, had to be replaced... It apparently was, 'very bad'...

As writer Jack would say, "You've got to understand the total picture!" Jack's meaning, was that when something happens, that seems to make, no sense to you, then you probably don't know, the total picture. Jack had made his statement, after I commented, about a news report, which said, that the US Central Intelligence Agency, had paid weapons and supplies, to the enemy Viet Cong, during the Vietnam War, so that the Viet Cong, wouldn't attack, US supply truck convoys...

Rich, no longer wants to do cartoons, saying, that he wishes, to spend his time, seeking to find, a female mate.

Sometimes, heterosexual males, fail to maintain friendships, with other males...

Vic is staying with me now... Vic is Russ' brother, and had been staying, with Russ, but a girl, Laurie, has now moved in, with Russ, and Russ preferred, to have privacy, and to minimize risk, that Vic might say, or do, something 'disturbing'... Vic is unaware, of the, 'close relationship', which Russ and I enjoy, which is how, Russ wishes, for that to be.

I am not asking rent, or sexual favors, of Vic. At 22 years of age, Vic is fairly unskilled, but is able to learn. I do expect Vic, to job-hunt, and to contribute, if he chooses to stay, after gaining employment. It seems that I have lost, both my job, and time, with my 'main squeeze', Russ, as, with Vic staying, in my one-room efficiency, everything between Russ and I, became 'normal'...

[140416 ~ I had met Russ, at Chuck's. Russ enjoyed a trade arrangement, with Chuck, where Russ was 'straight', and allowed Chuck, to play with his body, in return for some cash. Russ wished to maintain, a 'straight image', to his family and friends, and to Chuck. Chuck would only pay, 'straight men', and, if a man was even bisexual, then Chuck would refrain, from paying that gentleman, for 'sexual favors'...]

[140416 ~ Vic also engaged, in similar 'trades', but was often loudly anti-gay, using the word 'faggot' derisively, and often. Russ wished, for Vic to think of him, as 'straight', lest his sexuality, be used against him, within his family, by Vic, or among Russ' friends. Therefore, for Russ, I was to maintain, my own image, to Vic, as 'straight', so that my image, would fail to tarnish, Russ' image...]

[140416 ~ For me, Russ, was a 'love at first sight', the 'thunderbolt'... I enjoyed Russ' company. Russ was a mechanic, skilled, talented, and I looked up to him. Russ was also, very handsome, at least in my view. Russ and I, enjoyed fooling around, but our relationship, encompassed much more, than just sex. Russ befriended me. Russ and I enjoyed, working-out together, at my place, and also playing Frisbee, and swimming, at the beach. Russ and I, could enjoy bantering, for hours...]

[140416 ~ However, to maintain his 'straight image',

Russ also got a girl-friend, Laurie. There were times, when Russ would leave Laurie, in the car, in the driveway, and come to my efficiency, to fool around... I felt, that I was 'on the inside', as I felt I knew, most everything, about Russ, while Laurie did not know, what I knew... However, it was a strain for me, when Laurie would confide to me, that she thought, something was wrong, with her relationship with Russ, that he seemed, sexually disinterested in her, and seemed often, 'unable to perform', somewhat no matter what she did...]

[140416 ~ My preference, would have been, to just enjoy, a monogamous relationship, with Russ, but, as he seemed to like, to have income from sex, and wished to conceal, his sexuality, from his 'personal world', friends and family, I accepted the situation, in order to maintain, my relationship with him, because, it was, 'love'...]

For six weeks, I have been driving friend Chuck, out to get something to eat. Doctors have told Chuck, not to drive, while he recovers, from the heart operation. I only hope, that there is somebody around, to drive me places, if I am ever, in the same situation, as Chuck. Chuck's employers, are holding his job for him.

I am contacting, a publisher, about *The Life of Christos* material. My area remains, protected from hurricanes, but a tropical storm, hit Canada, the home of my former employers, after I was fired, or put on, 'extended leave'. This was also, 'unusual'...

I am glad, to have gotten Christos, into four articles, while at my job, with *Sun*. I think, the articles were good, for both *Globe's Sun*, and for the path of Christos.

[140416 ~ Bobbie later explained to me, that she thought, her situation, with John-V, might have influenced John-V, to get rid of me, due to his perceiving, that she and I, were having a relationship... I was mostly unaware, of things that were happening, with Bobbie. Bobbie had mentioned to me, that she was having a problem, at her home, due to obscene phone calls, sexual suggestions, from a muffled voice, or heavy breathing, as if someone was masturbating, that came at all hours, even when she was seeking to sleep, during early morning, or mid-morning hours... That much I knew.]

[140416 ~ Apparently, Bobbie went to the police, and to the telephone company, about this situation. It was then discovered, that the caller, was John-V. I am uncertain, of all related particulars, but Bobbie told me, that police warned John-V, to 'cease and desist', and he did so. Bobbie, might have declined, to prosecute, lest she lose her job... Bobbie did visit, John-V's wife, after I was let go, and was told, that John-V, and his wife, lacked sexual relations, as apparently, John-V had decided, he liked Sado-Masochistic sex, and his wife, had tried this once, but found a whip, to become painful, and had never agreed, to sex again, with John-V thereafter... However, she also, apparently was content, to remain married, and they had an understanding, that either of them, could enjoy sex, with others...]

[140416 ~ There has to be, some paradoxical irony, of some sort involved, if Bobbie's friendship with me, influenced for John-V, to get rid of me, considering that I was 'disinterested', in a sexual relationship, with Bobbie... Bobbie believed, that her situation, with John-V, was the reason, I was 'let go'...]

[140416 ~ I was also later told, by Cheryl, who had started working, at *Sun,* after she left, John-C's employment, where we had also, worked together, that, when I was at lunch, John-V was visited, by men, who wore gray suits. Considering that I was let go, immediately after their visit, to John-V, I wondered, if they had something, to do with my being let go. I wondered, if their visit, had something to do, with *WORLD PRESS WATCH*.]

[140416 ~ I can only, 'rabidly speculate', about this visit, by men in gray suits... I could wonder, about two articles, that I had written recently, that were published by *Sun*. There was the article, about brain-wave research, at the University of Florida, which I have presented, within this book. And, there was also, the 'Atlanta article', where I had reviewed a book, called *The List*, written by, Chet Dettlinger and Jeff Prugh. This book had maintained, that Wayne Williams, was actually innocent, of those murders in Atlanta, and had instead suggested, strongly, that an Atlanta Police Department, vice officer, was the culprit. The book had presented, a picture, of that vice officer, and I had been surprised, to think that the gentleman pictured, was the

same one, who had caused me, to be kidnapped by police there, nearly a decade earlier, an incident, that I liked to forget.]

= 30 =

RUNNING HISTORY
September 15, 1984

I still have not found, a full-time job. I continue to apply, at places that are advertising, in the local newspaper. Government unemployment benefits, won't reach me, for another three weeks. I wish bill collectors, were as patient.

A tropical storm, named Diana, formed off the Florida coast, around Daytona. It was unable to enter, the area I have declared, to be under my protection, which is from Key West, north up the east coast of Florida, to Savannah, Georgia, then west, through Atlanta to Birmingham, Alabama, and then south again, along the coastal highway, and Alligator Alley across Florida, and then south again to Key West. This is my primary area, which reflects, places where I have actually been, and can thus touch, within my mind, as long as my memory of them, remains accurate.

Diana finally penetrated the coast, in North Carolina. Diana did cause some damage, but no direct loss, of human life. My area was spared, which is what I have asked of God, to show proof, of my being Christos. Since *Sun* ran Christos' pledge, to protect this specific area, I will continue to honor that pledge, even though, I am now jobless. It would seem somewhat 'wrong', if my job loss, was related to my protection pledge...

I am glad, to have been able, to consciously use my influence, to do something positive, even though, my mood was disturbed, by my own personal troubles. My conscious manual focus, was able to surmount, my automatic bounce.

I received a phone call, from a publisher in Atlanta. I had sent sample chapters, with an introduction, as a presentation, which caught this publisher's interest. The publisher wrote to me, to say that he, "couldn't put it down". I have now sent the publisher, copies of Books Two, Three, and Four, and will send Book One, to that publisher, on the same day, that I send a copy, of Book One, to the US Library of Congress. These acts, historically mark, the existence of Christos, in this linear time-period.

I have spoken, civilly and politely, again, with my mother, though it was an accident. My mother answered the telephone, when I called my half-sister, to wish my half-sister, a happy birthday.

= 30 =

I HAVE STRAYED FAR FROM THE PATH
October 1, 1984

Here are some more thoughts, from my interactions, with our world at large...

First, in re-reading, the first four books, of *The Life of Christos*, I noticed, that my dedication, to the path of Christos, seems to be less now, than what it was, in earlier years, especially compared, to what it was, in Book Two.

I have, instead, sought physical comfort, and pleasure, even if in moderate amounts. I have given these things priority, while I was living comfortably, while employed with *Sun*.

It seems to me, that it is only when, the life of Jualt, is treading water, sinking into poverty, that I give my energy, to the path of Christos.

I have even been, consciously neutral, about the weather. I have intervened, now and then consciously, but mostly, I have focused my energies, upon my real-world needs. When tropical storm Isadore formed, off the Florida coast, I remain neutral. I figured a tropical storm, would not do much damage, nor break my pledge, of protecting this area, from hurricanes.

Tropical Storm Isadore, did come through my area. It zigzagged its way, right up north, through the Florida land-mass, leaving land again, around Jacksonville, where, coincidentally, the interested publisher, who is reading my manuscripts, is located right now, though he is normally based, in Atlanta.

If nothing else, the path of Isadore showed, that there is no natural barrier, protecting this region. Isadore also shows, that others, who might claim, to be protecting this area, are not necessarily doing so, for the area has been spared, when I asked, or willed, that it be so, while, when I am neutral, then Isadore weaves its way, right up through the area.

Isadore was not of my conscious. Isadore may have been, a reflection of my automatic, as I have been depressed lately, about my lack of employment, and the consequences, of this condition. The weather has been dismal, for about a week now. Many people have

complained to me, about the weather. For years, I have been told, that an ability to influence weather, is insignificant. I remain neutral, at this time. People, who complain all the time, will complain, all the time. Their complaints, reflect their own dispositions, more so than weather... I am more interested, in being pleasing, to those who say, thank you...

More dynamically, I have registered, at the local junior college, for a course in basic writing, for mass communication. It is one, of the two journalism courses, I need, to get a two-year degree, with eligibility, for a journalism degree, in upper division. No school, in my local area, offers an upper division, journalism program, so I would have to eventually move, to continue my education.

Vic sat around my place, day after day, not even looking for work, but being relatively secure, as long as I supply food and shelter. To seek to motivate Vic, I told him, that he would have to leave, if he didn't get a job, in four weeks, but, if he got a job, then he could stay on, indefinitely into the future. Vic moved, rather than look for work. Vic expressed, some anger at me, for having given him, an ultimatum, rather than saying, that he was annoyed, by the content of that ultimatum...

If Vic had not gotten a job, in four weeks, but had at least looked for work, I probably, would have let him stay. I simply hoped, to get Vic, to at least look for work. Vic just views me now, as being somewhat heartless, and as, 'not a friend', because, in Vic's view, no 'friend', gives ultimatums, of any sort, to any 'friend'...

About three years ago, Vic stole a ring, and so has that, on his record. When potential employers, ask Vic, if he has a criminal record, and he admits, to past theft, nine out of ten times, he says he does not get hired, because of that.

People are more forgiving, when you can say, either, that you have no criminal record, or, that your offense, was at least five years before, and you have had, a clean history, since that time.

Vic had hoped, that I would understand, that his criminal record, prevents him, from being hired, for a job. Vic said, my demand, that he seeks to get a job, indicated to him, that I wanted, for him to leave.

In conversation with Vic, I admitted, that the biggest

contradiction, I have failed to resolve, is my situation, compared with my belief, that the laws of karma, will give a positive return, to those who seek to live, in ways that are overall, karmically positive, both in their real-worlds, as they gain a good reputation, and metaphysically, as their energy levels increase.

Even I, a knight to my friends, get wounded by aggressive venom, which has stabbed at me, now and then. I have hoped, that doing a good job, being honest and competent, would speak for itself, but it has failed to do so...

[140417 ~ I have come to understand, to believe, that karma, is one of many influences. I believe that dharma, which can, among other things, be defined, as the environment one lives within, the energy level, has its influence. I believe, that good people can suffer, when in bad environments. Conversely, I believe, that if one sees good people, who are suffering, that could indicate, a bad environment, one to be improved, or avoided, unless one wishes to seek, to prosper in hell, which I believe, can be a foolish path, as I believe, hell burns all, who seek to live there...]

Even while I am jobless, I still provided Vic, with food, and a place to stay, for five weeks. I am now bird-sitting, for Bobbie's budgie, while she is at the World's Fair, in New Orleans. I helped Paul, to put up shelves, and cabinets, and put together, a flock of contraptions, for his apartment.

I did get my first check, for unemployment compensation, last week. It took 28 days to arrive, after I first applied. My former employer had no objections. In fact, *Globe* even sent to me, a check for $220, as severance pay, which I did not expect. One more week with *Globe*, and I would have qualified, for my first ever, paid vacation, meaning five days off from work, with regular pay...

While letting my mind roam last night, a thought came to me, that during my Rapture, Book One, I had a problem, ridding myself, of excess energy, which was creating, too much bounce, in the immediate world around me. I sent that energy elsewhere, by 'renouncing' my 'god-head', and I instructed my allies, to do as they thought best, to help the path of Christos. I think now, that what I actually did, rather than to end my energy flow, was to hook it into weather, and

perhaps, that is now reflected, as my ‘automatic bounce’. I did not think of this, in these terms, until now.

From my experience, with Beverly, comes a lesson, that a belief in female superiority is as wrong, as a belief in male superiority, for the same reasons. The two genders are different as individuals, while being similar, as human. People differ in their spots, their situations, and there could be, good and bad individuals, within all groups.

The Palm Beach Post newspaper turned me down, for a copy editor job, simply checking spelling and grammar, and fitting articles into available space, because I lack a college degree. They declined, to view my relevant work experience, as of any value, declined to do any testing of me, to determine my actual relevant skill levels... It might have taken them, one to three weeks, to train me, in any peculiar way, they might wish, a process that someone, with a college degree, might also have to go through. I did at least, get to speak personally, face to face, with the personnel manager, and it was he, who told me, that my work experience was “worthless”. He said, that I would have to have, a journalism degree, to be considered, for any position, with his newspaper.

I wondered, if my ‘reputation’, for finding all the factual errors, in that newspaper, when I interviewed people myself, and then had my own articles published, in ‘independent’ local newspapers, had worked against me. I wondered, if my doing *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, providing accurate information and all perspectives, had made me seem undesirable, to ‘the propaganda ministry’...

In our world at large, the whole world is breathing a sigh of relief, because US President Reagan, and SU Foreign Minister Gromyko, had a polite meeting. Relations, between the nuclear-armed super-powers, have been getting worse, and worse, since even before September 1983. The path of humanity, seems to now be, the total control path, of 1984...

THE BOOKS ARE BEING READ
October 29, 1984

I have surmounted myself, in a good way. Though I felt anxious, and insecure, due to my own poverty, and dwindling savings, when hurricane Josephine formed, directly offshore from my residence, I called for God, to spare my area. I was pleased, when the 85 mile-per-hour winds, of Josephine, missed the coast, and the tempest traveled north, to land outside of my primary area.

Tropical storm Isadore, was good, in that it showed, there is no natural barrier, protecting Florida, and I had remained neutral. But, with Josephine, being a powerful hurricane, I did seek to intervene, and my 'triangle', was spared. My thanks to God...

Red Jeff introduced me, to a friend of his, named Asmodeus, who was described, as being a 'warlock'. Asmodeus told me, that he successfully performed, a minor spell, a rather simple spell actually, and one which he took the time, to teach me, how to perform.

Asmodeus wrote the following request, on a piece of paper: Send to me books of knowledge. Asmodeus then burned the paper, totally, and put the thought, out of his mind. Now, a short time later, Asmodeus has received, many books, about metaphysical, magick, theological, or esoteric subjects, including my own book, *The Preliminary Dogma of the Civil Church of Christos*.

I have lent to Asmodeus, Book One, of *The Life of Christos*, and he has nearly finished, reading it. Asmodeus says, he is understanding the story, and says the material, would be appreciated, by anyone, who has some background, in metaphysics. Asmodeus has studied, and read enough, that I consider him, to be a scholar, of Christianity.

Asmodeus believes, and I can agree, that each human, can be, an extension of God. Asmodeus says, that each person, is God, is Christ, because all of us together, are God. I think, each is a piece of God, oversoul of all oversouls, and that Christos, is a reflection of the totality, but, as human, is one piece also. I think, that the common group spirit, of all humans, the oversoul of humanity, is a

piece of God, rather than being, the totality of God. God, to me, is greater in scope, than humanity. Humans are simply human, a type of 'physical' life-form, among an abundance, of types of life-forms.

In Book One, of *The Life of Christos* series, I wrote, of "the spirit of Christ Jesus, of the human before". I have also said, that Christos, is my spirit, is the spirit of Jesus Christ. A question then, is does this mean, the spirits of Jesus Christ, and of Jualt Christos, are the same, or separate? And a perhaps confusing answer, is perhaps both...

As spirit, Christ Jesus and I, are one, for we both shared, the spirit of Christos. But Jesus Christ, and Jualt Christos, are different human lives, with different human minds, and different spots, in linear time. I believe, that mind, represents the essence, of who one is, 'now', during this singular life-time, and that spirit, represents the essence, of who one is, from all of one's life-times, except for this one. I believe, that mind, merges with spirit, at time of mortal passing. I also believe, that it could be possible, for the spirit, or mind, of a linear time-period singular life-time, to continue to exist, in some way.

Psychically, by projecting, through the realm of 'no time', one may re-enter, or connect, with any other linear time-period, including the time of Jesus Christ. Some beliefs, have described this, as sitting in the 'chair of time'. The total life experience, of the human Christ Jesus, would be a subset, perhaps eternally, perhaps only for one galactic orbit, remaining in that one point in time. However, the spirit and soul, could live eternally, and I would say, that I am a reincarnation, of the spirit of Christos, and am thusly further growth, of the human being, Jesus Christ.

I received, a total of $210, from government unemployment compensation, by the 25th of October, about seven weeks' worth, of lack of income. I had been making, $278 a week, after taxes and company deductions, at my last job. I have finally found, a new job. It starts tomorrow, and will pay $5 an hour, to do typesetting and paste-up work. At least this job, is within my career field. I am only guaranteed, part-time work, but more hours will come my way, if business picks up. Psychically attracting business, by calling for customers, has been, one of my psychic gifts.

Paul gave to me, some work to do for him, where he works, for Frank-B. That has been helpful. I am still living at Helene's. Helene has been generous, and kind, and allows me, to not pay rent, when I am unemployed. I do give some rent, to Helene, whenever I am able. I do maintain the grounds, and help Helene, to show the property, and help her with bill paying, and with editing of her material, and do all of her typing, for the finished manuscripts.

Vic went to live, with his mother in Atlanta. Vic said, that I had been cheap. I pointed out to Vic, that I was supplying him, with a roof over his head, a place to live and sleep, as well as food, and that I gave up my privacy, while demanding neither rent, nor sexual favors, of him. I also found, some temporary work, for Vic, and gave to him, a little spending money, now and then, as I was able, at least until, I lost my own job. I told Vic, that in the same terms, that he used, to view me as cheap, I could view him, as 'worse than cheap', as he would be viewed, as 'expensive'!

I hope to remain friends, with Vic. I could consider it to be possible, that Vic moved, from my one-room efficiency, to be helpful, by removing his weight from me. I would have preferred, for Vic to job hunt, and to be able, to find a way, to earn income. I believe, that Vic has a good mind, is smart, and can do okay in life, if he applies himself.

With Vic gone, and my privacy restored, I did seek, to start to earn income, by making 'attractive photos', of some males that I know. I can hope, to sell pictures to magazines, and then, both the models and myself, could make some income. I intend to submit samples, as a representative, for these models. I made, a 'model release form', which spells out the understanding, for sharing of funds.

Red Jeff helps me to smile, with his fun company. Red Jeff says, that he likes me, and could enjoy, a 'union' relationship with me. However, for now, Red Jeff also enjoys, seeking to earn income, with his sex, and thus we often refrain, from fooling around, so that he can, use what he has, so to speak, for other purposes. Nonetheless, Red Jeff can be fun company, without sex.

Red Jeff says, he feels 'love' for me, romantic, while I, just 'like' Red Jeff. Red Jeff says, he would like for us, to view each other, as 'lovers', but to me, 'lovers', implies a

'union' of some sort, and I have told Red Jeff, that, unless he can support himself, with a 'regular job', and carry his financial weight, I would not consider, a 'union understanding' with him. I do like Red Jeff, and I am glad that he is in my world. I view Red Jeff and I, as 'sex buddies', and as friends.

My affection seems focused, very strongly, upon Russ. Russ' relationship with Laurie, seems to have failed to dim, his fondness, for fooling around with me, which remains a secret... I refrained from mentioning anything, about my relationship with Russ, to Vic... That is how Russ wanted it. One might say, that Russ is, 'the apple of my eye'... Russ seems, to have my heart...

When Vic was living with me, Russ would visit, often with Laurie. It was tough for me, to avoid reacting, while I watched, Laurie and Russ, being physically affectionate. I felt involuntary anger, and pain, within me. Now that Vic is gone, Russ has resumed, visiting me to frolic...

I went to see a movie, *Amadeus*, with Cheryl. Cheryl said, that I generalize negatively, too often, and I believe, that Cheryl could be correct. I do this, without thinking. I shall seek to focus, on this issue, and avoid doing this. I do not believe, in 'painting with a wide brush', which is to see all, as some or many of a group, might seem to be. I know, that people are people, as individuals.

I understand, that one's automatic, is formed by manual repetition, and so, in the same way, that I began to generalize negatively, I can now begin, to cease doing so. I thank Cheryl, for helping me, to improve myself.

Cheryl told me, that, in her opinion, Beverly is transforming, the work environment, at *Sun*, into a nasty Gestapo den, like the one at John-C's newspapers, where we all worked together, at one time. Cheryl says, that Beverly seems fond, of telling others, what they have done wrong. I suspect, this is a ploy, that Beverly uses, to distract attention, away from herself.

I mused, that when I was there, Beverly allegedly used me, as a pretext, for her own inability, to do her own work, saying that she had to focus her time, on correcting me. Now that I am gone, Beverly seems to be using the same ploy, upon others. Perhaps one day, Beverly might become

able, to do her own work, and then her criticisms of others, might decrease or vanish...

I have found, that 'some' incompetent people, seek to criticize others, to distract attention, away from themselves... Competent people, those secure in their own ability, tend to help others, to be teachers and guides. A difference, between constructive criticism, and destructive criticism, is that constructive criticism, also provides possible solutions, while destructive criticism, is only critical...

I understand, that some people, need to learn to do things, and these could ask questions, to gain understanding, or could, at least listen to instructions, to memorize without understanding, rather than seeking, to only be, critical of others. The choice, reflects a person's 'character'...

I advised Cheryl, to avoid mentioning, her date with me, to anyone at work, lest doing so, cause her jeopardy, at that job.

For what it's worth, although I was laid off August 31st, *Sun* continues to use my material. In fact, last issue, 21 out of its 51 stories, were mine. This week, 15 out of 58, were written by me. And yes, my leads remained intact, as I have copies of my work, at home. It would seem, that my job performance, had nothing to do, with my being laid-off.

My class, at the local junior college, was cancelled. My pursuit, of a journalism degree, will have to wait.

The publisher, who called me, about *The Life of Christos* series, is back in Atlanta now. He had been traveling. I have heard, nothing from him. I have sent to him, the last four issues, of *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, to attest to my sanity. I will write to him later, and find out, the status of my books.

I have given, books One and Four, of *The Life of Christos*, to Daniel, to preserve.

A stray thought: A reason, why the very wealthy, get together, with the unemployed, could be, that everyone else, is working during the day!

ASMODEUS
November 28, 1984

Out of the blue, Thomas called me, from Atlanta. Thomas is still studying metaphysics, which, of course, includes comparative theologies. Thomas is working as a carpenter, to earn a living, a good-paying respectable trade.

Thomas asked, if I'm prepared, for a public path of Christos. I said, I'm ready, but a public path, does not seem to be, in the near future. The publisher in Atlanta, sent back my manuscripts, with a short note, saying, "Your manuscripts do not warrant our interest." Perhaps this publisher, previously spoke so well, of my sample chapters, saying he 'could not put them down', because he wanted me, to publicize his books, through *Globe*, and, since I have been 'laid off', from *Globe*, my manuscripts, might now lack interest, to him.

However, on the bright side, my books are being well received, by Asmodeus, his magick name. Asmodeus has great interest, in things religious, spiritual, metaphysical, magick, occult, or esoteric, and finds my books, to be 'excellent', just the sort of thing, he wants to read...

Thomas said, that if Asmodeus likes my books, then Asmodeus, must be well-read, and have a good background knowledge. I would hope, that my books, could give knowledge, rather than require knowledge, to grasp... Nonetheless, Thomas is correct, about Asmodeus, and I am flattered, that someone, with as much knowledge, as Asmodeus, does actually enjoy, my books...

Thomas said, he would like to visit me, around Christmas-time. Asmodeus says, that as a short-term goal, he would like, to have read, Books One through Four, of *The Life of Christos*, before Thomas arrives.

Asmodeus has urged me, to continue writing, beyond Book Four, of *The Life of Christos*, urging me, to write a Book Five. Perhaps I am wrong, but I have said nothing, either way, and have refrained, from mentioning, that I am indeed, continuing to keep notes, in my journal. I think, people might behave more naturally, around me, if they do not think, I keep notes, related to my life, as Christos. I think people, might step away from me, as Jualt, if they thought,

they might be defenselessly, or poorly, portrayed, in my journal. I like to believe, that I portray people, accurately, even if I might, disagree with them.

I received an interesting nice letter, from Howard, who has now returned to living, in Asgardian Key West. Howard saw an advertisement, by a New Jersey writer, who is seeking information, on how to 'practically' manipulate weather. The writer could be looking, for scientific means, for weather influence, but I sent, to that writer, a letter, offering to explain to him, metaphysical, mind control influence, of weather. Whether he mentions Christos, or not, he does know, that I exist, and what I can do.

And speaking of weather... My area was hit with a storm, with heavy rains, and forty miles per hour winds. There was flooding, and damage. I did not know, of the approach, of bad weather. The media, gave no advance warning, of the storm's approach, though the results, have gained national publicity.

Asmodeus asked me, on Wednesday, to seek to keep it from raining, on Thanksgiving, the 22nd. It was late at night, when Asmodeus made his request, giving me short response time, but I agreed to try. The storm hit the next day. There was occasional drizzling, during the daylight hours, which he wanted to have dry. That morning was the downpour. Though the results, were not as clear, as Asmodeus desired, he was generous enough, to say that the storm, was much worse, the day after Thanksgiving, a quirk which showed some influence, on the day before, which naturally should have held, the more serious weather.

For my part, the storm was not of my conscious, nor probably of my automatic. I have had some time, to consciously focus my will, for better weather, asking specifically for dry, in the face of media-conjured impending flood. Perhaps my area, has become a target, of others, who wish to show, their own influences.

In the old television program, *The Powers of Matthew Star*, Matthew could move objects, telekinetically, that is, with his mind, if he could see them, to focus upon. If Matthew could not see something, then he could not focus, upon it. Later, Matthew's human guide, Walt, taught Matthew, that he could focus upon something, by visualizing

it, in his mind, rather than having to actually see it, with his eyes.

As I told Chuck, this storm, was the first ever, to hit my area, when my protection, has been on. I suppose, this storm was, nonetheless, less than a hurricane, and my protection, is against hurricanes.

I have been working part-time, at a print shop, for John-S, in Delray Beach. My part-time work, has been twelve hours a day, sometimes... I can be amused, that I am working, for another gentleman, named John... Our understanding, at start, was that I would be, part-time at least, and could work more, if business justified it, and our shop, has been flooded with business, since I have been there...

I sent some sample slides, of males, to a publication, and they were returned, with a note, saying the slides were blurry. I then had some prints made, from those slides, and was happily surprised, when I found their quality, to be excellent, without any blurs. I was able, to see for myself, that the editor was wrong...

I thought, perhaps the editor, of that publication, had made some sort of error, so I called him, and told him, that the prints, from the slides, indicated that everything was fine. The editor, got annoyed, or distempered in his tone, toward me, and said, “If I say the slides are blurry, then the slides are blurry.” I am unable to agree, with that editor, but I do see, that he has a pretext, for doing what he wishes to do... To some degree, the quality, of the slides was actually irrelevant, as my interest, was to gain a contract, for those models, rather than to seek to sell, my sample slides...

The episode with the slides, reminded me, of that joke, that a reason, there are so many dogs, in our world, is because, dogs treat their owners, like Napoleon! So many bosses are abusive toward their workers, forgetting that they are equals, as humans, deserving of respect, and consideration. So many bosses forget, that their karmically negative ways, can leave them vulnerable, to any ‘empowered’ individual... Some bosses, seem to measure their ‘power’, of their being a boss, only by how abusive, they can be... Very sad... Good people, can suffer, in bad environments...

Raise your staff, a wooden walking stick, and then three times, slowly and hard, tap the ground with it, and let karma flow... I imagine, that for some, such a staff, could be a pencil...

[140419 ~ It has become my experience, that abusive bosses, as a norm, do not become 'better', though I have had two, who did... I would advise anyone, who has an abusive boss, to seek to transfer, away from that boss. There can be detrimental impact, upon one, from negative imprints in life. It can be very important, to seek to give to oneself, some harmless, moderate, ways to smile, some positive imprints, to counterbalance, the negatives, that one might have to endure.]

And then there's the fairy tale, about the Emperor's new clothes, and perhaps, there are a few lessons, to be gleaned...

The Emperor, ordered his tailor, to make for him, the finest suit in the world. Well, something went wrong, so that the tailor presented the Emperor, with an empty box. Faced with losing his head, decapitation, the tailor explained, that these were indeed, the finest clothes, in the world.

The Emperor then agreed, and so did all the subjects. Everyone praised, the Emperor's new clothes, the magnificent outfit, his splendid taste, his wit and his charm, and even his ability to sing... But, one little child, looked up, and innocently asked, "Why is the Emperor, wearing no clothes?"

While there can be, the obvious humor, of the pompous Emperor, parading around nude, actually believing, that he was wearing clothing, there is also a hidden truth, that often, people do, whatever they think is required, to keep them either alive, or in favor, regardless of actual truth... I suppose, many leaders, have been led astray, sometimes detrimentally, by brown-nosing 'yes-men'...

Asmodeus told me, a funny story, a true story...

A man and his mother were arrested, for passing out religious pamphlets, in a public transportation terminal, a subway station I believe. When they came before the judge, in court, the judge asked the man, what his name was. "I'm, Jesus Christ!" The man proclaimed. "And who are you?" The judged asked the woman. "I'm his mother," she bravely

replied. Then the judge said, “Well! That certainly must be, an enviable position!”

I do not think, my mother thinks, she is in, an ‘enviable position’!

Asmodeus keeps his own ‘magick notebook’, or grimoire. I advise students of metaphysics, to take notes, from books they read, of things they think are interesting, or useful, and also, to keep notes, of things they might attempt to do. I believe, having such a book, a grimoire, helps one to have, all relevant information, in one place. Asmodeus was already keeping a grimoire, before he met me.

Asmodeus believes, that humanity’s alleged original sin, was the spiritual human creature, wanting physical life, causing humans, to thus have to die, which they might have avoided, had they remained spiritual beings, all the time.

I have wondered, if an original sin, so to speak, was predatory genetics, which might be contained, at least potentially, within all humans, from when ‘modern humans’, were altered, or created, from existing humans, as reflected, by Cain killing Able, so that all ‘modern humans’, thus come from Cain, or from other children, of Adam and Eve, assuming that Cain’s genetics, also came from Adam and Eve.

Asmodeus believes, that the story of Noah, is a parable, about reincarnation, and suggested, that reincarnation was so well known, and accepted, during the linear time-period of Jesus, that Jesus refrained, from mention of it, took it for granted, as a ‘known’.

I have wondered, if the Biblical flood, of Noah, was when the Mediterranean Sea, was formed, a time perhaps, when a lake and valley, located there, might have been flooded, by ocean waters, from the collapse, of a land bridge, where Gibraltar now stands.

Asmodeus believes, that the ‘second coming’ of Jesus, must be so significant, that it will be known, all over the globe, either due to the overwhelming nature, of the manifestation, or because, Christ would ‘appear in the air’, not faked by holograms...

I believe my existence, as Christos, will become known worldwide. I have wondered, if my being on radio, or on television, though I am reluctant, to have my current image

known, would be, metaphorically, a way to, ‘appear in the air’, or, in the ‘air-waves’... I would prefer, for my words to become known, without losing my privacy, as Jualt...

Asmodeus says, that he believes, that Lucifer possessed Judas, at the time of the Last Supper, the Passover meal, and from that time on, Jesus spoke to Lucifer, in Judas, rather than speaking, to the spirit of Judas.

I remember, when I met a human, Sam, who thought he was a reincarnation, of Judas... Sam felt a touch tortured, by nightmares, and daydreams, that showed to him, his life as Judas, repeatedly... I told Sam, that I believe I am Christos, a new life, of the human before, who was known as Jesus. I told Sam, that I forgive him, for what he did then, and that he now has, or had, as long as I knew him, my affection, as Jualt.

I told Sam, that his life now, as Sam, is new, and that he has free will, just like my life, as Jualt, is new, and I have free will. I suggested to Sam, that he seek to live his life, in ways that allowed him, to be content, when he faces himself. I gave to Sam, full body massages, with oil, and with the rhythm of music, leaving no part of him untouched, and he did, cease to have, these nightmares and daydreams. I ’joked’, that I had exorcised him...

Asmodeus showed to me, a story written by Emmet Fox, called ‘Cafeteria’. The story occurred, when Emmet first came, to the US, and went to a restaurant. Emmet went in, sat at a table, and waited for service, and waited and waited, as people around him, ate their meals. No one came to serve Emmet. Finally, it dawned on Emmet, that this was a place, where people served themselves. Only in America, says Emmet, could such a restaurant be created.

In many ways, life can be, like a cafeteria. You can see the food, and have to pay for it, but you have to go, and get it, for yourself...

Asmodeus also commented, on some of the material, he has read, in *The Life of Christos*, thus far. Asmodeus says, that in Biblical scriptures, it is written, that Elizabeth, was related to Mary, that Elizabeth’s son, was John the Baptist, so that John the Baptist, was a cousin, with Jesus. Asmodeus says, that Elizabeth and Mary may have been cousins, by blood. For some reason, I had thought, Mary

and Elizabeth were sisters.

In talking with friend Peter, I advised him, to never say no, for other people, especially in sales work. Sometimes, people say no, just to see, if you have more to say, more to offer. If nothing else, let them be the ones, to say no. Don't give up, and fail to even try, just because you might assume, that others will say no. One never knows, unless one tries.

One of my failings, frailties, is that I say no, for other people, often fail to ask, when I think an answer, is going to be no. Perhaps I am correct, but, what if I am capable of error, and I do know, without doubt, that I am capable of error... Failing to seek something, can fail to get that thing, and one can be letting oneself down, by doing that.

Sun is still using my stories. About a quarter of the stories, in each issue of *Sun*, were written by me. I had written so much, so creatively, and so quickly, that they have been able, to use my material, as if I was still there, even now!

I sent to Thomas, a copy of Book One, as a gift, as well as the hand-written rough notes, from Books One and Two, of *The Life of Christos.*

The following is a brief mention of Christos, made in an article, on Randi not granting his prize money, to Christos, and the bad winter weather, of 1983. Volume 2, Number 6, week ended February 13, 1983, of *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, reported:

[James] Randi failed a spiritualist, named Christos, who claims an ability, to influence weather. Christos missed, exactly two, of Randi's 33 requests, which were made, for specific weather, and made far in advance. Christos said, that humanity was foolish, "for not at least trying, to put his abilities, to constructive use."

CHRISTMAS 1984
December 29, 1984

Even though, many today believe, that Jesus, was actually born, in October, or March, during a time of moderate weather, when shepherds might have been outside, with their flocks, rather than, during the cold, of December winter, most of today's Christians, celebrate, the birthday of Jesus, on December 25th.

This year, first I said, that I was not going to observe Christmas, that each day, could be for gift-giving, and that those, who focus on Christmas, as a time to be generous, or kind, seem often to think, that there is no other time, to be generous, and kind... I said, that Christmas was too financially expensive, for me to observe this year. I felt, my lack of lover, and lack of financial security...

However, as the many-colored lights, were erected everywhere, and uplifting songs were sung, the spirit of this Christmas, managed to reach me too... I felt gladness, and joy, in my heart, and my spirit smiled...

A friend of Asmodeus, asked me, if I am Jesus. The question, from a stranger to me, caught me off guard. I replied, that I am, possibly, a reincarnation, of the human Jesus, and we are both, one with the spirit of Christos. I, Jualt, am a life of my own.

Asmodeus says, that Biblical prophecy, declares there will be, many, who claim to be Christ, at the end of time, at the time of the manifestation, of the true Christ. Therefore, says Asmodeus, there will be many. Today, there are many, who claim to be Christ, or claim to be Jesus.

I say I am Christos, Jualt Christos. I say, Christos is the spirit, manifested as human, as both Jesus and Jualt, and also as Confucius, Krishna, and Buddha... As far as, which manifestation, might be the most important, I say that could depend, on the individual, and which lessons, are most relevant, to an individual. I say, my next manifestation, shall be around 3253, that I will be alive, during that year. I hope, to help protect humanity, from those, who might otherwise be tempted, to make false claims, between now and then.

I believe, many can connect with, or give life to, or share life with, the spirits of Jesus and Christos. Jesus can have

life, in one's heart. I seek to honor God, with how I live my life...

I believe psychic abilities, and use of, and respect for, karmic energy, are natural, normal, and okay parts, of being human. I believe, that if people have, common everyday knowledge, of karma, and etheric energies, that people might behave better, among one another, and our world could become, a better place, a place where life, can be as pleasant as possible, for all things...

I differentiate, between karma, and mental energies, parma, which can be reflected, in telekinetic technology. I have wondered, if a factor, in a destruction of a place called Atlantis, might have been abuse, of telekinetic technology... I have wondered, if Earth's deserts, might reflect, past wars...

Thomas visited with me, this Christmas. Thomas agrees, that publication of my books, is inevitable, and agrees, to align with Christos. Thomas agrees, that a public path, for Christos, is not necessarily, beneficial, for Jualt, and could cause, some problems, in the real-world, as well as risking, a negative karmic bounce, upon humanity, for an age. It is a victory for Christos, if Jualt lives, to the coming of Halley's comet, which formally marks, the beginning, of a new galactic age, which is phasing in, over a longer period of time.

I fear, that a murder of Christos, could influence, for an Armageddon, perhaps influenced for, by 'others', who might view humanity, as 'undesirable'...

Thomas met Asmodeus, Paul, Chuck, Helene, and Suzanne. Thomas spoke with Viola-Genesis, also. I have mentioned to Daniel, and Thomas, that I will to do an epilogue, to Book Four, which is, what this started out to be.

Asmodeus took me, to a Unity in the Pines service, where the minister, has seen, some of my writings, thanks to Asmodeus. Asmodeus says, this Unity church, is a New Age church, which can accept, my being as Christos.

The Unity minister, asked the congregation, "What would Jesus say, about Christmas today? Would Jesus condemn, our modern Christmas, as commercial?"

I can see, the commercial aspects, as beneficial, for our economy. I think, the spirit of Christmas is very positive, and

I am glad to see it. I feel, that Christmas is a source, of mass human joy, and positive karma. I think, Christmas can be, a spiritually beneficial event.

I have given to Asmodeus, copies of Books One, Two, and Four, as well as, many of the little CCC, Civil Church of Christos, booklets, to pass out. About 110, of the 300 CCC booklets, have been distributed.

Asmodeus told me, of two 'after-life' experiences, or 'after-death'... One person remained fully conscious, after his heart had stopped. He could not talk, nor move, and yet he could see through his eyes, and think. Asmodeus says, we probably remain conscious, after death, for a short while, and that is why, doctors close the eyes, of those they pronounce dead. Cutting off the vision, is hoped to make it easier, for the spirit to detach, from our physical world.

The other person flew around the hospital room, after he was pronounced dead. Then his spirit was pulled back, into his body. The next thing he remembers, is opening his eyes.

Another friend of Asmodeus, says, if you can't remember, what you were doing, one month ago, or one year ago, then how can you expect, to remember what you doing, in your last lifetime, much less, in all of your past lifetimes!

I emphasized to Asmodeus, and Thomas, that I am, the historical Christos, manifest now, in 1984, as far as the future is concerned. The main goal, of creating record, of the existence of Christos, has been accomplished, and Christos has now been presented, to hundreds of thousands, of people.

Since I am, the historical Christos, a question is, how to make best use, of this spot, in the here and now. My answer was, to try to teach things, that would help to improve, the condition of our world.

The Catholic Church, is no longer officially recognizing, the manifestation, of the Virgin Mary, in Yugoslavia. The manifestation, is now said, to present, some "theological problems", but none are specifically named. It could be, the issue of 'authority', and 'significance', again...

An amusing thought is, that as humans, we raise our spirits, during our physical lives. Upon mortal death, we

might naturally go, to the dharmic level, or realm, to which our spirit, has risen or fallen, during that lifetime. Those who believe, in only one life, might only have, one life per age. We might go, to spiritual realms, shared by those, of our common group spirit. We might go, to a spiritual realm, shared by those, of our own ways. We might also, be able to seek to be, with the spirits, we have met, during our lifetime, to share a spiritual realm. There might be, 'nations', within spiritual realms, just as there are 'groups', within our physical realms...

I have wondered, if some humans, might be encouraged, misled, to engage in karmically negative behavior, just to increase their dependency, upon aid, management of their karma, in after-life realms...

As humans have free will, and can learn and evolve, during a physical life, so too could spirits, have free will, and learn and evolve, during a spiritual, nonphysical, phase of life. A physical life is perhaps unnecessary, for spiritual evolution to continue. The spirit is probably most definitely affected, by one's actions, while one is going through, a physical mortal lifetime. I suspect some, who wish to promote physical immortality, are those, who fear facing a hell, upon their mortal passing...

I believe, how one lives, outside of church, is more important, in determining that one is actually a Christian, than the mere fact, that one 'attends', a Christian church...

Spirits might be able, to enjoy human physical sensations, by attaching themselves, to a living human, like passengers, in someone else's car.

If one's life, is like a ribbon, in space and time, a path that one traveled, then perhaps, it might be possible, for one to make 'other choices', after one's life, to embrace other paths, to branch off from that original ribbon.

Perhaps as spirit, after one's lifetime, one can visit the spots of one's life-time, perhaps like a passenger in a car, and to feel, to enjoy, places where one had already been. I believe that, as spirit, one might be able, to also enjoy, other people's lives, like a passenger in a car, perhaps done, for enjoyment, education, or karmic balancing, or karmic enhancement...

Perhaps we are greeted, upon mortal passing, by those

we have previously known, perhaps like a ‘birthday party’, or a ‘welcome home’ party, before one might then, also have to face, some sort of ‘management’ ‘options’, choices of spots, for a next life... Perhaps being greeted by ‘the dead’, helps one to understand, that one is now ‘dead’. I believe, reincarnation could occur, in past, present, or future...

I do lack certainty, about these things, but do consider them, to be within, realms of possibility.

Both Asmodeus and Helene believe, that we were spiritual beings, before we became, human physical beings. To Asmodeus, it was the craving, for physical life, for something that spiritual life, might have seemed to lack, that was humanity’s original sin.

I believe, humans are children, of spiritual God, and physical planet, of Father God and Mother Earth, and as such, we are both physical, and spiritual, beings.

Asmodeus believes, that Aleister Crowley, was the Biblical Anti-Christ. Asmodeus says, that if I am to fulfill prophecy, that then I must, manifest my being, to everyone on the planet, in their own language, at the same time. Asmodeus maintains, that only the true Christ, can do that. Such simultaneous translation, and broadcast, is now being done, every day, at the United Nations General Assembly... Asmodeus suggested, that perhaps it would be necessary, for me as Christos, to speak at the UN General Assembly, in order to fulfill that prophecy.

I say, that people do two things in life... They do, what is necessary, and they do, what they are able to do. If I were to reassume my God-head, then I could possibly fulfill that prophecy. However, I do not see it as necessary. I only believe, I can beam out my thoughts, to everybody. The reception of my thought depends on the receivers.

Asmodeus asked me, to demonstrate, an ability to influence weather, by bringing rain, to Ethiopia, where drought conditions, for three years, and war, have caused massive famine. I agreed to try, and rain did hit the region, several days later. In fact, there was flooding, and much damage, because the ground was not prepared, for a heavy rain. Asmodeus said, that demonstration, certainly satisfied him...

Peter reminded me, on a totally different topic, that we

do not choose the people we love. We can only choose, whether or not, to engage in a relationship, with them.

It is difficult, to gain material wealth, in one life-time, if you are starting with very little. The heterosexual family system, allows wealth, to be passed, from one generation to another, ensuring that each new generation, has a chance, of being a little bit more comfortable, than the previous one. Sometimes, homosexual men and women, marry, just to have children. Ethics apply, to couples equally, whether the members of the couple, be of the same or opposite genders. Needs of couples, or of unions, or households, are similar. Homosexuals, must pass on, their worldly possessions too, and there are many people, in our world, without family, to count on, that homosexuals have helped.

Asmodeus says, the spirit of Jesus, never died. I can agree. I believe, each person, as an individual, can give life, to the spirit of Jesus, within themselves, or give themselves to Lucifer, or Satan, knowingly or unknowingly...

Some say, that Jesus brought a sword, which divided nations, peoples, families, and friends. I hope to bring peace, with the 'light' of understanding, and knowledge, a white light, of a golden dawn.

Asmodeus says, he is one, with the spirit of Elijah, of John the Baptist. Asmodeus believes, he is the one, meant to herald Christos, that he is one, of the 'two witnesses', in Biblical Revelations. This time, Asmodeus has been teaching metaphysics, and waiting for me. Asmodeus is showing my books, to many people, and writing his own story.

Asmodeus says, Randi now has, a book on the market, about those who have failed his tests, but Christos is not mentioned.

I have seen a book, called, '*The Reappearance of the Christ*', by Benjamin Creme. Creme received telepathic messages, from the Christ. Not only do these messages, mirror some of my own emanations, they are presented, at about the same time, as I was sending them. Creme's books, seem to have been written, when I was working on *Basic Earth Reality*, my grace time.

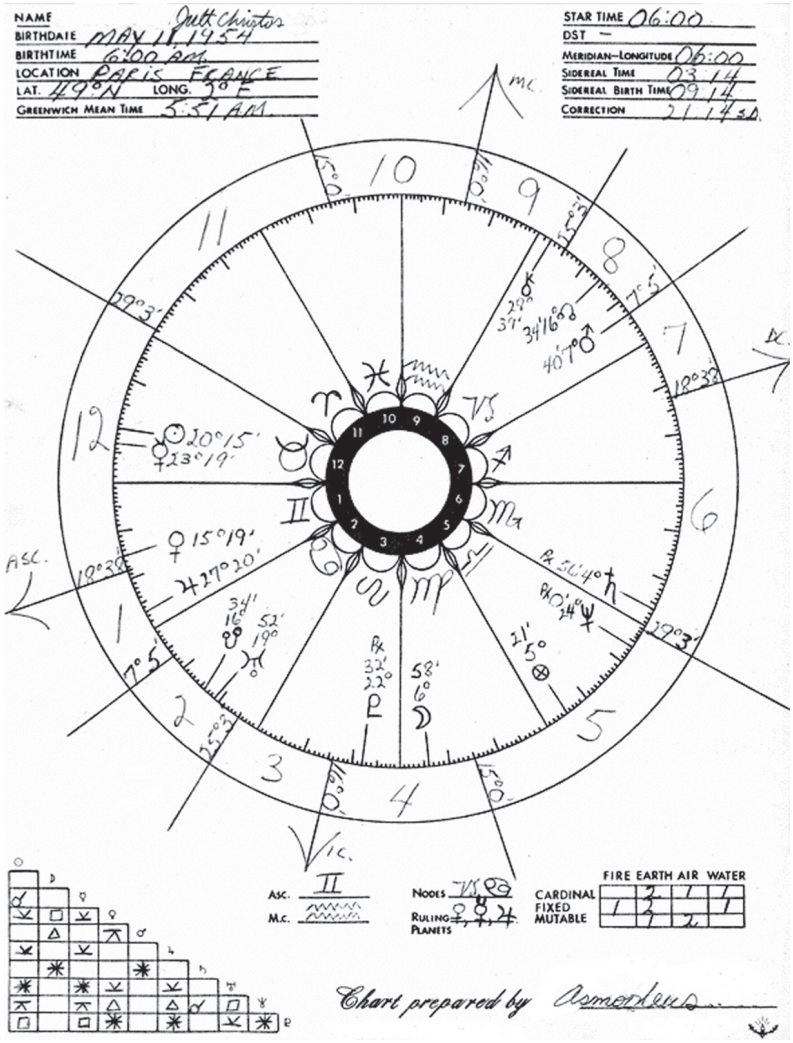
For instance, on suffering, written June 1, 1977:

CREME: When you were speaking, about the intense suffering, that is going on, all over the world, did you mean,

that Christ is coming to alleviate that suffering, to prevent many people, from dying?

MATREIYA, the CHRIST: I am not saying, He must come now, ONLY to stop suffering. His decision, to come NOW, is to help, by His Presence, in the world, to speed up, the process of change, so that the suffering, will be relieved, but we, still have to make, the change.

Asmodeus researched, and put together, my astrological birth chart. It shows my primary planetary allies, as Jupiter, Venus, and Mercury.



A reading of my chart, from '*Karmic Astrology*', Volume One, by Martin Schulman, says:

The major karmic lesson, in the Capricorn north node, is to identify with an ideal, bigger than the personal life. The individual must, ultimately, come to stand for something, in spite of all his real, or imagined, personal difficulties. He must understand, true responsibility.

The most important thing, about the Capricorn North Node, is that it represents, the point through which, the individual will meet, his karmic mission. For this reason alone, many with these Nodes, tend to be reluctant, to accept the full concept, of adulthood [accepting my public responsibility as Christos?]. They would prefer, to remain in an immature state [privacy?], for as long as possible, for they sense, a type of judgment, awaiting them. Just like the condemned man, desiring one stay of execution, after another, they seek to hide, behind others, constantly pushing themselves, further and further, to the back of the line, so as to avoid, meeting the effects, of all they have created.

Perhaps Asmodeus and Thomas are the two witnesses, spoken of in Revelations.

My family got in touch with me, this Christmas. Even cousin James said hello. My new job is pleasant, and boss John-S, is a good companion. The path before me remains the same. I shall seek a literary agent, to go to a publisher, or seek to publish my work myself, with my own money, if need be, and speak to strangers, as Christos.

I am finally taking, my mother's advice, from long ago, and not mentioning my being as Christos, to anyone where I work. I have to eat too you know...

STRAYING FROM THE PATH
February 15, 1985

I have done little, as Christos, since the time of my last writing. It looks as if, this will be my course, for some time to come.

The weather has brought, unusual heat, and record cold. The first freeze, I attempted to blunt, but it was not to be stopped. The onrushing wall of winter, caused damages, as it pounded its way, across our nation. The only mercy, was the cold front, peacefully passed through, my area, without causing any damage...

Some people taunted me, saying that I sure wasn't doing them any good. I admit, that what they say, seemed true, as far as the weather becoming colder. I remain grateful, for the mercy, shown to my area, by my allies, including God. However, people who are displeased, with the cold, seem to care little, about the lack of damage...

I had to bear with the cold, perhaps more so, than most people, as I live in an unheated domicile. Chuck gave to me, a small heater, as a Christmas present, and this has helped me, to be more comfortable. I have learned to accept the weather, for what it is, and seek to live around it.

My conscious energies are deliberately focused, upon the material needs, of my world as Jualt. This is practical and proper. My employer and friend, John-S, is helping me to circulate, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. In my news, which is still carried by one newspaper, *The Key West Citizen*, I present the views, of all parties, intact and accurately, in their own terms, to seek to foster, greater understanding, in support of, non-violent coexistence. Communication can be, a basis of understanding, and understanding can be, a basis of peaceful co-existence.

John-S is allowing me, to typeset *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. I am once again, making copies, this time to distribute free, through several local businesses, including The Green Owl, a restaurant where I often enjoy lunch, in Delray Beach. It helps me to smile, when I see many people, reading *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. I mention John-S' business, on the newsletter, so his shop gets some publicity, from that. I am hoping, that some people, who pick

up a copy, might then subscribe, to *WORLD PRESS WATCH*...

[140420 ~ I had referenced John-S, in earlier versions of this book, typewriter typed versions, as 'Michael'. This perhaps gave to me, some 'bounce', as I then did meet someone, named Michael, who became very important to my life. I decided to reference John-S, by this name, as it amuses me, that so many of my bosses, had been named John.]

I think that sometimes, the way people, might react to Christos, or to *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, can be more harmful for me, than beneficial, so I generally avoid, identifying myself with either. I still have occasional, 'mail snags', and, as all mail, is to come directly, to my Post Office box, I am unable, to attribute this, to my mother. I have wondered, if perhaps, someone in the mail delivery system, likes to read my magazines, as sometimes, some of them, fail to arrive, and at other times, their delivery is delayed. There are times, when I receive, nothing for days, at my Post Office box, even though, I should receive, something each day...

[140420 ~ There was a time, when my mother assumed control, of my Post Office box, in Palm Beach. This influenced, for me to get, another Post Office box, this one in Lantana. I failed to receive, any forwarded mail, except for, a small token amount, at start, even though I indicated, I would pay, for any and all mail, to be forwarded.]

I think that *WORLD PRESS WATCH* needs to be done. There is nothing like it, and I am aware, of most all other publications, and newsletters, that are available. I review items, from all over the world, and select for items, that relate to major official US news, as conveyed, by the three major television networks, and the two wire services, that feed information, to all US newspapers. I select for items, which have yet to be reported. Even though, there is obviously some lag, between when the information, that I receive, actually occurred, and when I send it back out, I often am, six weeks ahead, of major US news media, with reporting these items. I think I display, a great talent, perhaps a natural, or 'guided', talent, from my upbringing, for being able to discern, what is important.

I think, a people of any democracy, need to be accurately informed, of the true, actual situations, so they can vote properly.

Due to my upbringing, I enjoyed, a specialized, somewhat unique, privileged, learning path, being mentored by leaders from the US, and world, economic, military, social, and political realms. Among my family, are a five-star general, and the man, who built the first railroad, from Moscow to St. Petersburg, and the partner, of JP Morgan, and a US Ambassador to Canada, who married Doris Duke, heir to the tobacco fortune, and married Delphine Dodge, daughter of a founder, of Dodge cars, and many other, highly esteemed characters. One, of my father's wives, was Mary Rogers, daughter of brilliant columnist, Will Rogers.

Unfortunately, family wealth never made it to me. Since perhaps, everything can be made, for the best, I have learned, due to lack of wealth, how people think, about wealthy people, and how to deal practically, with the real world, through fair trade. Most people I know, never had money, and never will have wealth, and they are often, quite content. Many people I have known, who have great wealth, have nonetheless, lacked happiness, or even contentment...

It remains my hope, that eventually, perhaps enough people, will come to know, and respect, and most importantly, to subscribe, to *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, so that I will be able, to enjoy financial security, and stability, from income, from *WORLD PRESS WATCH*.

I feel a strong kinship, with the thoughts, of Thomas Jefferson. One might say, that I easily 'grok', become one with, the thought of Thomas Jefferson, and can ascribe his beliefs, as often being the same, as my own. Humorously, I see Jefferson's thought, as an evolution after Mao, even though Jefferson lived, way before, Mao was born.

A former employer, Ryan, is now using *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, in a Finnish-language, weekly newspaper, which he oversees. This publication, is popular, among the Finnish community, in Lake Worth, and is also shipped to Finland. It helps me to smile, thinking that I am, a voice of, 'the free world', in Finland. I can be glad, that Ryan liked *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, more than he liked me, as he did

suddenly terminate, my employment, with his newspaper, where I had been, 'acting editor'... I think the popularity of, and respect for, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, influenced Ryan, to retain it...

Many Catholic publications are now being sent to me, out of the blue, so to speak, at least unsolicited. There are many publications, which come to me without charge, simply to be reviewed, and included within *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. I like to believe, that I have gained a respected image, reputation, among editors of our world.

Doing sensitive foreign affairs analysis is a field, which can cause paranoia. I live my life, without fear, as my norm. But, with the challenges I have already faced, and those that seem ongoing, I can understand, how others might become fearful.

I am receiving, hang-up phone calls, lots of them. Perhaps someone is checking to see, if I am at home, but that person hangs up, after I say hello.

While I was at work, my home was entered, and my locked desk, was broken into. Perhaps this occurred, when I failed, to answer my phone... My camera and two lenses were stolen. I had a small box, with some old silver coins in it, and that was taken. Sadly, that box also contained, in a hidden compartment, a gold pocket watch, given to me, by my father's mother, and that I do miss, as it was sentimental, a family heirloom, an object that helped me, to remember her. I had hoped, someone might open the box, and steal the coins, and leave the box, but, the whole box was taken... I suspect, that eventually, the coins were removed, and the box thrown away, with its gold watch, still in it... A bathing suit was also stolen.

Thank goodness, that my Buddhist teachings, help me to have, peaceful acceptance, of my loss, help me to mourn, for the things I lost, and to go onwards, without rancor. A battle for a warrior, is within, to keep hate and negativity, outside of one's self.

I did pass through, a day with anger, and then depression, sadness at thinking, that someone I know, to whom I have been friendly, and helpful, might have been the thief... I have sent Chiefie, my fire spirit watchdog, to chase the thief. I do not need to know, who the culprit was, or is.

Chiefie knows... Only a return, of the things stolen, or repentance, and making amends, could soften Chiefie...

My life as Jualt perhaps faces challenges, from both the paths, of Christos, and the news reporting, of Jualt. The robbery, may have been done, by parties wishing to stop me, from taking pictures...

One bright spot is, that I have shared paths, with a lovely young lady, who is separating from her husband, with their child. I am already fond of this girl, and I may timidly pursue her.

One main problem, that sometimes develops, with the Christian system, is rigid self-righteousness, a sense, that because, one's peculiar way of thinking, is correct, that then other ways, are all wrong. Many Christians, seem to forget, that there are other ways, which are good, are karmically balanced. It seems very sad to me, that Christianity, based on someone, who preached only love, is a source of hate, and pain, in our world. I hope my life, as Christos, serves as a reminder, an affirmation, of love, of seeking to live, in ways that are karmically positive, overall.

My mother, and half-sister, jointly gave to me, a new typewriter, as a Christmas present. This gift arrived, just as my old typewriter, given to me by Howard, when I lived in Key West, broke down... It was a timely gift, and a significant peace gesture.

[140420 ~ Unfortunately, this big expensive nice typewriter, was electronic, rather than manual, and perhaps, it was adversely impacted, by the humidity of my home, by the sea. It would skip letters, add spaces, and sometimes fail to print letters, and sometimes print two or three, rather than only one, and its ribbons were very expensive, and lasted only a short while, sometimes only 17 pages. I began to muse, that this typewriter, was perhaps meant to discourage, anyone from writing...]

Asmodeus says, another indication, that the original sin, was humanity's desire for physical existence, was God's warning, to Adam and Eve: "If you eat of this [the forbidden fruit], you will surely die." Eve took a bite, and so did Adam, but neither died, at that moment. Some suggest, that God's was lying, even if as a parent, seeking to discourage, 'wrong behavior', in God's 'children', whereas, most who seek to

be, devoted to God, prefer to view God, as always telling the truth.

Asmodeus suggests, that the passage, which says that Adam and Eve, stood naked before God, before they ate that 'fruit', means they were spiritual beings, without physical form, until they ate that 'fruit'.

Asmodeus suggests, that without physical life, the spiritual beings enjoy eternal life, but, once they assumed physical form, they then assumed, an end of physical mortal life, a death.

Asmodeus 'joked', that I could be, a reincarnation of Aleister Crowley. I do not know if Christos and Crowley are similar enough, to have been, or be, of the same spirit. Asmodeus said, that Crowley said, that Christos will become public, in 1997. I can hope, for an earlier occurrence, for a public path of Christos... Actually, Christos has appeared in public, has become part of humanity's historical fabric, even if with only a few foot-steps...

Asmodeus insists, that each individual is God. I think, each can be, part of God, oversoul of all oversouls, like a cell, in a bigger body. With that in mind, I could agree with Asmodeus, but, his meaning, is that any person, as an individual, can be God, and I find this, to be contradictory, illogical. I believe, people must make a choice, to embrace their connection, to that oneness. I believe, that people can be, vehicles for God, in our world.

One question, that I keep getting, is how I can believe, that my books of Christos, will get published, if all I ever receive, is rejection. One answer is faith, that my allies, including God, did not have me pursue this path, unless they were prepared, to help make this path a reality. How they might do this, whether in my life-time, and-or beyond my life-time, I do not know.

I believe, that my going public, as Christos, as requested by God, is part of God's 'plan'...

That's all for now folks...

THANKS TO SAINT JOSEPH
March 22, 1985

I continue to accept, and adapt to, weather conditions, and focus my energies, upon my world, and my means of income. I advise people, to follow this example. I can be pleased, that my area, has enjoyed harmless weather... Last year, there seemed to be, some awful weather, and that terrible weather was ended, when there came, public mention of Christos, through articles, published by *Sun*. Since then, things have been basically okay. My life is enjoying, some stability, and perhaps, this is influencing, for good weather.

If one wants, to make a business venture succeed, one must bear down, gear down, and give it all you got. However, I have a regular full-time job, that has a heavy work-load, so all I am able to do, is to do, what I am able, rather than being able, to focus entirely, upon my own venture. I had originally hoped, that I would work part-time, and thus have spare time, to develop *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. I remain glad, and grateful, to have full-time work, with John-S. Life is a matter of priorities, as Howard says.

I have gotten, a handful of subscribers, to whom I mail, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. Five places, are now distributing, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, for free. I have given each place, which distributes *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, a free advertisement, in the newsletter, so they get something in return, for distributing it. If you give people, something for free, they often refrain, from spending money on it later. I am gambling, that some, who like picking it up for free, or tourists visiting the area, might subscribe, to be certain of getting it, as I only supply, a limited number of copies, and each week, all of them, seem to get picked up, so some people, might be unable, to always get it, that way. The biggest week so far, was two weeks ago, when 325 copies were printed.

John-S and I, made a business deal, which allows me to print, the first 500 copies, for free, and I would pay thereafter. I do buy my own paper. John-S' business gets prominent mention, in two places each issue, so he gets advertising, which might help, to bring business to him. I print on an

ABDick press, myself, sometimes now, and I do all the typesetting, and paste-up, myself. This is, of course, in addition to the time, I must spend, to read all of the publications, and then to select items, and then to write concise reports, and arrange them, in a nice way.

WORLD PRESS WATCH, as a newsletter, looks very good, very 'professional', and I send this, to the three newspapers, for their use. I use an upside-down world map, as a logo, which I think is somewhat appropriate. Christos was expected, by some, to turn our whole world, upside down, and metaphorically, I have now done so...

The owner, of the Green Owl restaurant, a nice lady, made a point, to introduce me, to one gentleman, who wished to tell me, how fine, he regarded *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, and that was nice.

I have found, some more words, regarding Asmodeus' statement, that each person, IS God. I can be thankful, that Asmodeus stimulates me, to think. While it might be nice, if people agree, with things I write, or say, it is of value to me, that things I say, or write, get people, to think for themselves, even if they might continue, to disagree with me. I am capable of error.

I can be thankful, that Asmodeus provides, topics of interest, to readers of my books.

I believe each human, is both physical, and spiritual. As Christos, I hope to help humans, to enjoy life, to cope with internal, and external negativity, in positive ways, but my primary concern, is providing guidance, that allows, or helps, people to live, in ways that are healthy, for spirit. Religions, focus upon social needs, upon providing, a path in physical life, that is physically healthy, while also, perhaps, spiritually healthy. Some religions seem to devalue, the importance of spirituality. My priority remains, upon spiritual wellness.

To me, God is oversoul of all oversouls, and while each human, might be a cell, in the body of God, the body of God, would encompass, more than all of humanity. Each human, can be, a part of God. Jualt Christos represents, the totality of God, manifest as spirit, and as a human. Even so, Jualt Christos, as a living being, is just a part of God. Jualt Christos, is not God. God is God, and only God is God.

Often, when a human says, "I am God", that might seem

to carry, a hint of superiority, or self-righteousness. If a body has wellness, due to the healthy harmony, of its pieces, then no piece, is inherently superior, to any other, as it is all together, which produce wellness.

I believe, that which is 'good', is that which is beneficial, for spirit. I believe, that which is 'right', is that which is beneficial, or thought to be beneficial, for society or state. I find that sometimes, with those definitions, that which is 'good', and that which is 'right', can seem to differ.

I enjoyed a movie, '*American Caesar*', about General Douglas MacArthur. According to the official portrayal, a version of currently accepted, and promoted history, MacArthur assured Truman, that China would never enter, the Korean War, if United Nations forces, threatened to use, US nuclear weapons, to counterbalance China's manpower superiority.

General MacArthur's differences, with US President Truman, were said to be, sharp and public. Truman refused, to use the threat, of nuclear weapons, and somewhat portrayed MacArthur, as urging actual use, of nuclear weapons, so Truman assumed a role, of a 'humanitarian', who would never use, nuclear weapons, even though, he had actually done so, against Japan. Truman held MacArthur, to his statement, that China would never enter, that Korean War, of the 1950s.

China did enter that war, with a massive invasion, causing UN forces, to retreat hundreds of miles, a major military loss, that Truman publicly proclaimed, had been done deliberately, by MacArthur, to politically embarrass him, a 'great surprise', an 'unnecessary defeat', a 'military blunder'. Truman blamed MacArthur, for the reversal.

MacArthur resigned. Instead of accepting MacArthur's resignation, Truman said, he would fire MacArthur, dishonorably, so that neither MacArthur, nor any of his family, would receive any benefit, from the US government, for MacArthur's long and honorable service, to our country. At least the citizens, of New York City, gave to MacArthur, a welcome home parade...

The story, told by MacArthur, to my branch of his family, significantly differs, from the official version, which has now been promoted, for decades...

It was MacArthur's view, that Truman's decision, to publicly decline, to ever use nuclear weapons, in Korea, encouraged China, to use its superior manpower, and invade Korea. It was MacArthur's hope, that the threat, to use nuclear weapons, would prevent China, from entering that war, would at least give to China, a 'face-saving' reason, to avoid entering. Sometimes, diplomacy can seem to have, less meaning, without the threat of force.

Truman, over MacArthur's objections, believed superior conventional weapons, would counterbalance China's numerical superiority. MacArthur, as commander in chief, of UN forces, acted on his own, and staged a major tactical withdrawal, without Truman's knowledge, or approval, just prior to China's actual invasion, and thus saved, thousands of lives. Truman might have used, the deaths of thousands, to justify 'stronger action', perhaps even use of nuclear weapons. Truman was somewhat setting up, another 'Pearl Harbor', another 'surprise' attack, that would then serve, as a pretext, for stronger US acts...

Truman believed, that MacArthur acted, as a US general, without proper authority to do so. MacArthur believed, he had authority to act, as UN commander in chief. MacArthur perhaps wore, both 'hats', but was unable to wear, the hat of UN commander, without first also wearing, the hat of US commander...

Perhaps ironically for both men, UN forces were able, to use their superior conventional weapons, to fight their way back in Korea, and Truman did get China, and North Korea, to agree to negotiate, with a threat to use nuclear weapons, if they did not do so. So, Truman was proved correct, eventually, in his belief, in superior conventional weapons, and MacArthur was proved correct, in that the threat to use nuclear weapons, got rid of a 'need', to actually do so. Some construed MacArthur's position, as wishing to actually use, nuclear weapons, when what MacArthur wanted, was to use the threat, to use nuclear weapons.

[140525 ~ I had hoped, an accurate version of events, might be revealed, when those 'secret papers', were unsealed, after 50 years. However, when the 50-year deadline arrived, those papers, were then sealed again, for another 50 years...]

MacArthur had also differed sharply, with Truman, over the handling of Japan's Emperor, after the war ended. MacArthur somewhat pardoned the Emperor, and credited the Emperor, with helping to bring peace. Truman had preferred, that the Emperor be publicly tried, a 'show trial', as a war criminal... MacArthur declined, to go along with Truman's wishes, and without public support, and without evidence from MacArthur, Truman was unable or unwilling, to prosecute, or persecute, Japan's Emperor...

[140605 ~ A movie, starring among others, Tommy Lee Jones, called, *The Emperor*, gives details about this situation. The Emperor's power, as 'head of state', was that he enjoyed, public support, public veneration, but that he lacked, actual administrative controls. When the Emperor, decided to seek to exercise 'authority', as 'head of state', by agreeing to surrender, by broadcasting over radio, a surrender announcement, the palace was then attacked, the night before, that announcement was broadcast, by troops loyal to the military, who wished to fight on. The Emperor survived that attack, and was able, to broadcast a surrender announcement... MacArthur found, that the Emperor, had done little, to actually promote that war, and had done something, actually at the risk of his own life, to end it.]

I think MacArthur, should also get, some commendable credit, for helping to promote, political pluralism, and democracy in Japan, for getting women equal rights, socially and politically, and for the modernization, and efficiency, of Japan's industry, in my life-time.

Lastly, I had a friendly and warm dinner, with my mother. My mother was very pleasant. I enjoyed the evening.

= 30 =

THERE IS NEITHER VICTORY NOR DEFEAT
WHEN THE STRUGGLE REMAINS CONSTANT...
April 13, 1985

The Easter-Passover season was blessed by beautiful weather, in my area. Parts of our nation, endured devastating weather. The gods smile on me... As does God... The local newspapers, focused on the weather, as the cause of a reduction, in south Florida's water supply. The newspapers, headlined that a hurricane, or at least a tropical storm, would be welcome, and necessary, to restore the water level. The area's resources are strained, by an influx of tourists, during the winter, many escaping the bitterness, of the northern winter. I suppose, those with money, from other areas of our nation, come here, as a 'safe haven', while the poor, remain in their winter...

I reacted, to a possible insinuation, that my ability to influence weather, was not helping our area, by writing the following letter, to the *Miami Herald* daily newspaper:

Recent articles voice alarm, over Florida's water shortage. Some meteorologists declare, that even a hurricane, would be good news. At least a very soggy tropical storm, they say, is needed, to correct the situation.

I am a spiritualist, with an ability, to influence weather. In my youth, I [accidentally] created, hurricanes David and Frederick. Since 1979, I have used my power, to protect Florida, from destructive hurricanes. I reaffirm my pledge, to shield Florida, this coming summer.

I have been tested, by psychic dis-creditor, James Randi, in pursuit of his $10,000 prize. He gave me 33 requests, for specific weather, well in advance, asking for rains, in our dry season, and dryness, in our wet periods. Randi even asked, for heavy flooding, but I declined, to try to accomplish that. Randi declined, to give me the reward money, but he did not say, that I failed his gauntlet.

I will bring Florida, the water it needs.

Jualt Christos

I say, the gods smile upon me, because, as I wrote the letter, a storm brewed, in the south, then moved north,

despite forecasts conjuring otherwise, and has been dumping much water, upon Florida, for the past five days. I am pleased. As I told Chuck, it is nice to see, that I can still do it. And I felt, the presence of opposition.

I showed, my letter to the editor, to Asmodeus, and Paul, and told Chuck, and Troy, about it, and will send a copy, to Thomas. They all provide, favorable or good bounce. That is to say, they allowed their wills, to be friendly to my suggestion, and aligned with my projection.

When I say, 'the gods smile on me', I mean no disrespect, to God. I view angels, and gods, as other children of God. Angels and gods seem to have different histories, and different interactions, with humanity. At one time, gods seemed to farm, human vibrations, while angels, seemed to have some concern, for 'spiritual wellness', which gods seemed to lack, or at least, which gods seemed to lack, when they regarded 'humans', until Jesus.

'Gods' represent, many different things, as far as how humans have used the word. One aspect, is that some gods, seem to have been similar, to oversouls, common group spirits. As an example, in Olympian tradition, some gods were said to represent, love, war, wisdom, and death, among other things. The Norse had Thor, for weather, and Loki, for magick.

To me, these oversouls, common group spirits, are also children of God, and exist in a timeless realm, which can be touched, connected with, from any linear time-period. I definitely count, both Norse and Olympian 'gods', as among my allies, as I do believe, that I have interacted with them, and that they show to me, their visible presence, today in our world.

I do not worship gods. I only worship God. I view 'gods', as 'friends', as among my allies. I also count 'angels', as among my allies. Many modern 'scientific' humans, discount or disparage, any belief in 'gods', or 'angels', and some humans, who do align with either 'gods', or 'angels', tend to 'feel adversarial', to the other, while I feel no such 'conflict', and welcome both, angels and gods, among my allies.

To me, gods and angels, are what they are, and I do not know, everything that they are. I just know, that they have befriended me, as Christos, and I believe they do so, to

seek to honor God, oversoul of all oversouls.

I work with Troy, and he has some interest, in 'metaphysics', which has opened, a door between us, to conversations, on that topic. Troy rides his motorcycle, to visit me, at my home, and we have had, some good talks. Troy has expressed his interest, in finding a girlfriend, and I have refrained, from mention of my own, 'more liberal' views, on sexuality, as I do work with him, and for now, I have a 'straight' image, where I work.

Troy seems to have, some 'personal chemistry' problems, with John-S, and has considered, just walking out, quitting suddenly, on many occasions. They seem to have, an increasing mutual dislike, for one another, with John-S viewing his 'dissatisfaction', in professional terms, while Troy often feels, 'personally insulted', by John-S' tone of voice, and choice of words.

I have helped to calm, Troy's agitation, and helped to keep him, working for John-S... I have told Troy, to take deep breaths, and take a break, to go outside, until his mood calms, as it normally does, and to keep this job, while he might also, seek employment elsewhere, and urged him, to find another job, before he quits this one. The disturbances do pass, and then, Troy becomes more content, to remain at this job.

John-S can seem sharp, critical, and insulting, as far as Troy is concerned. John-S feels, that either, sometimes Troy, lets the quality of his work, as a press operator, become unacceptable, where some jobs might have to be run again, or that Troy might fail to follow instructions, on his work orders, and these things, can cost John-S money. John-S feels, he is on a tight budget, seeking to make income, so 'every penny counts'...

I have advised John-S, that he has invested money, and time, into training Troy, to do things, as John-S would like to have them done, and that John-S should perhaps, more often check on Troy, and give to him guidance, in a civil way, to coach Troy, to seek to prevent errors, that cost money, rather than to appear now and then, often after the fact, and club him with words, for things that are already done.

John-S feels, he has a lot to do, as is, and that spending time with Troy, would be one more thing. I pointed out, to

John-S, that he seems to be, spending that 'extra time with Troy', anyway, but often in an adversarial, critical manner, after costly errors, and that perhaps, if he spent that time, before costly errors are made, in a nicer, guiding, friendly teaching way, that perhaps, these problems might end.

John-S disagrees with me, and thinks he might just fire Troy, and hire someone, more to his liking, even if he then has to spend time, running the press himself, during any interim... I think, that the more John-S seems to be insulting and angry, in words and tone, then the less Troy might care, and the more he might make these errors. It has perhaps seemed to me, to have become a game, as to whether Troy, can get John-S to fire him, or if John-S, can get Troy to quit...

I pointed out, to John-S, that either, in having to run a press, after getting rid of Troy, or spending time, to train someone new, John-S might be spending more time, than he would spend, if he sought to guide Troy, in nicer ways. I told John-S, that I think Troy is only hearing, the tone of voice, and insulting words, rather than becoming motivated, to seek to do a better job, and that insults, often fail to provide any guidance, sort of like whipping a blind horse, until it just happens to move, in the right direction.

Unfortunately, John-S gained an impression, that I seemed to be, sympathetic to Troy, and he took some offense at that, and basically, ultimately, just told me to mind my own business, and do my own job, and let him worry about running the shop.

Part of the reason, for John-S' annoyance, is that he feels Troy's errors, are obvious, and that, even if Troy, were to misread a work-order, that Troy could certainly see, when the quality of his output, from a press, is diminishing... John-S has suggested, perhaps in jest, that if he were to deduct from Troy's wages, the costs of supplies, for doing work over, then Troy might care more, to do work properly...

Troy said he hated, to ask John-S any questions, about work-orders, because John-S was always, so nasty. I suggested to Troy, that he bring a work-order to me, that we then go over the information, before work is started, to seek to ensure, that what Troy does thereafter, is correct, at least as far as work-orders are concerned.

John-S put a stop to that, saying it was a waste, of his money, for me and Troy, to be wasting time, in this way, when Troy should be able, to figure out a work-order, for himself, and I should be, doing other things, things that he is paying me to do...

At any rate, Troy does visit me, at my home, and we do have, conversations about metaphysics, among other things.

I told Troy, that a process, of 'gaining allies', from energy realms, can be similar, to a process of learning magick, as described by Castaneda's character, Don Juan. To channel metaphysical energies, one must put one foot, in the tonal, the 'everything that is', and one foot, in the nagual, the 'everything else'. One's self, becomes the connection, that joins the two... So, a first step, can be an awareness-building process, where one learns, that there is something, to which one can connect...

To 'project', as I might say, one must focus upon a thought, with the intent, to send it forth, to know, that it can be sent forth, and then forget about it, totally, to release it. One thus joins, one's reality, the 'what is', to the 'everything else', to the 'what could be'.

One can also join, connect, the spirit, or mind, to those, in other linear time-periods. I believe, spirit can carry mind, and that mind, can carry spirit... I believe, mind could be resident, primarily in our physical realm, at least anchored. To me, spirit seems naturally resident, in 'other realms'... I believe, mind could be resident, within one's entire body, and that all parts of the body, influence mind, rather than only brain, per se.

As practice, Castaneda advised, that one could focus, on one's right hand, during a dream, and seek to gain control, of that hand, and then of one's body, and self, in a dream. This has become called, 'lucid dreaming', to be aware, that one is dreaming, while one is dreaming, and to become, an active participant, in one's dream, rather than just being, an observer.

An end result, can be an ability, to choose, when to connect, mind and spirit fully, even when awake, and, according to Castaneda, one could then teleport oneself, to another location, by having one's spirit, in that other

location, and then bringing one's mind, and body, to that other location. One, of Castenada's examples, is a 'graduation', where a student, jumps off a cliff, and then goes to a safe spot. I don't recall, Castaneda ever taking, that particular test himself, and I would advise against it.

I believe, I have been able, to have my mind, join with my spirit, to be in other places, but this, in our 'real world', physical reality, has perhaps been akin, to being an apparition, elsewhere in our 'real world', other than where my body is located, and I do not believe, that I have ever physically transported myself, from one spot, to another. At least not yet... However, this is something, which I have failed to seek to do, failed to practice, and exercise. Perhaps my doubt, in my own ability, to do this, has prevented me, from seeking to learn to do it. I have heard, that there are humans, who claim to be able, to do this.

I have suggested, to Troy, that he take notes, from conversations and books, and experiment, with his 'psychic' abilities. I suggested, that those things, that seem most interesting, to Troy, could be those things, that he might have, some talent, for performing. I suggested, that Troy keep an index of topics, noting page numbers, in his book, for future reference. I told Troy, that this book, a grimoire, a mix of research and experience, can have information, relevant to him, in one location.

Troy does display, some accidental 'bounce', when he says something, and forgets about it, and it then occurs, so he could have, 'natural ability', to project. Troy also has, 'prophetic dreams', dreams that seem to occur, within a few days, after he has dreamt them. Troy has been, just basically, an observer, of both of these things. I have advised Troy, that the things, he can do accidentally, can be things, most natural, for him to be able, to learn to do, consciously.

Troy has told me, that one reason, that his quality of work, might sometimes slip, is because, he seems to fall into a daydream, due to the repetitive noise, of the press he operates. I have advised Troy, to seek to deliberately daydream, visualize something, to strengthen that ability.

I also wish to mention, that Troy seems to me, to be a good person, one who chooses, to seek to live in karmically

positive ways overall, even if he has yet to consciously think, in those terms. I would refrain, from 'teaching power', to someone I believed, was abusive, who wished to do harm. I believe, that Troy is a decent, good, human being.

And, as far as teaching my 'beliefs', through books, where 'anyone' might encounter them, I do believe, that those who seek to do harm, in our world, can be vulnerable, to anyone, who 'calls karma' on them...

In return, for my 'teaching' about metaphysics, Troy is guiding me, through learning about martial arts. One aspect, that Troy has taught me, is to focus, beyond one's target, by at least one foot. Troy says, that if one focuses on one's target, then one's force, might end at that target, and be weaker, than if one was focused, on reaching something, a foot beyond the target. Some people might 'stop themselves', might 'pull their punches', when focused only on reaching or touching a target.

One might also gather, some force of momentum, from movement, before throwing a punch, or kick, and hurtle that extra energy.

Troy showed me, a nice passage, in a book called, '*The Fighting Arts*', by Howard Reid and Michael Croucher. I include it here, for my readers' enjoyment.

Tao Te Ching, by Lao Tzu

He, who knows others, is wise;

He, who knows himself, is enlightened.

He, who conquers others, is strong;

He, who conquers himself, is mighty.

He, who knows contentment, is rich.

He, who keeps on his course with energy, has will.

He, who does not deviate from his proper place, will long endure.

He, who may die but not perish, has longevity.

A Norse tradition was use of sex and massage, to build energy, and intensity, which can strengthen, force of projection. Peace of mind, can allow, for flow of will, without need for intense energy... The energy created, by physical activity, such as sex or massage, can go into producing life, or can be given 'purpose'. I have mentioned this, to Troy, as

he seems to enjoy, giving massages, but he is reluctant, to receive one, as if, receiving one, might be, 'less than straight', while giving a massage, seems to let him, remain straight, in his mind.

Troy has advised me, that my receiving a massage, from him, after our work-outs, stretches, and martial arts exercises, is good for my body. One might think, Troy would apply, his own logic, to himself, but he does not. I have respected Troy's boundaries, and have allowed him, to give me a massage, whenever he wishes, as I can enjoy that, and do think, it is healthy, for my body.

I also, as an experiment, had Troy focus, upon something he wanted, while he gave, a massage to me, which in this case, was to meet a girl, and he actually did meet, and speak with a girl, at a grocery store, three days later, and got a date with her... I told Troy to make a note of that, in his grimoire... For the record, I have told Troy, that I would be glad, to give to him massages, but it is up to him, to tell me, when he might like one, and he has refrained, from asking for one. And also, for the record, Troy has not touched my 'privates'... I have worn underwear, briefs, during these massages...

An amusing thought, is that if men want to understand, how women might think, about sex with men, then men have only to look, at how they think, about sex with men.

I believe, some heterosexual men, have a fear of homosexuality, might fear, that if they enjoy, one same-sex experience, then they are homosexual, and that means, to some, that they are then, 'less than men'. To me, it seems illogical, for men, who know they do enjoy, sex with women, to then think, they might be gay, if they enjoy some aspect, of some same-sex activity. One might consider, that masturbation, is same-sex activity...

I believe, the truth is, that most people, if not all people, are capable of bisexual, physical pleasure, that the sensations received, are the same, regardless of whom, is giving the sensation, which is being received. I think the notion, that people are either homosexual, or heterosexual, is wrong, though it could be true, that some people are given, to one preference, or the other.

Troy told me, that he had been, raised to believe, that

homosexuality, was not natural, was sinful, and that all homosexuals, are feminine, or become feminine. I believe, all those thoughts, are wrong.

I think, that there are ample examples, of homosexuality, in the animal world, to see that such behavior is 'natural'. I believe, that today, feminine men receive attention, are thought of, as homosexuals, but that not all feminine men, are actually homosexual. I also believe, that there are, many-many masculine men, who enjoy the company, with or without sex, of other masculine men.

To me, that which is 'sinful', is that which is karmically negative, and that which is karmically negative, is that which causes harm to other. I believe, that neither homosexuality, nor heterosexuality, is inherently sinful. I believe negative karma, can be sometimes found, in transmission of disease, of betrayal of mutual understandings of unions, and of having unwanted children, or abortion.

I believe, much of the pro-heterosexual, anti-homosexual, propaganda touted today, by society, state, and religions, is intended, to socially influence, for breeding, and I tend to believe, that today we are facing, some serious, significant problems, due to over-population.

I believe, that today, in these times, more and more children, are having children, that youths are having children, before they are able, to adequately care, for a child... I believe, that today, children are more often a result, of a desire to have sex, than of a desire, to have children...

I believe, it can be wrong, to bring a child, into poverty for life... I believe, some might welcome, an abundance of impoverished children, to have cheap labor, or fodder for war agendas... I believe that ultimately, it is the individuals, who have children, who are responsible, karmically.

So, while I might now be enjoying, an occasional massage, from 'straight' Troy, who wishes for me, to refrain from touching him, I am also enjoying, giving 'full body massages', to orgasm, to 'straight' Russ, who as his norm, rarely does anything to me, but lets me do, whatever I wish, to him... Russ likes to spend time with me, when I am alone, and will leave, if anyone else arrives. Russ does spend time, at the beach with me. I felt, and feel, strong involuntary romantic love, for Russ, and let have him know

this. Russ maintains, that he wishes, to have a relationship, a union, at least publicly, with a woman, and that anything, he and I might do, is 'on the side'.

I had been enjoying, some frolic with Red Jeff, and he does enjoy, playing with me, and I do enjoy, playing with him, but he has seemed to vanish, from my world. However, while I felt fondness, for Red Jeff, I did not feel, the strong romantic heart tugs, with Red Jeff, that I do, with Russ... And, just as Red Jeff, seemed to vanish, from my world, Troy seemed to enter my world... It seems to me, that if Russ and Troy, could be merged, then I might have, one sex buddy... Russ does not visit, if Troy is at my place, and Russ leaves, when Troy arrives... At least Troy seems able, to hold a job, to have some 'stability' in life, and he does not, seek to use sex, to gain income, as do, both Red Jeff, and Russ...

With Troy, seeming to like, to give massages to me, I have a hope, that perhaps, if he might allow me, to do the same for him, that perhaps, we might enjoy, a stable long-term relationship.

Asmodeus asked, if I agree with him, that the 'original sin', spoken of in the Christian Old Testament, was humanity's taking physical form. I told Asmodeus, as I believe that sin, is found in karmically negative things, in doing harm to others, that I think the mere act, of assuming physical life, could have been without sin. However, I could agree with Asmodeus, that for a spiritual non-physical life-form, to take physical form, within our physical reality, could then produce, the experience of physical death, so that it could have been true, to say, that then, 'you will surely die'.

I told Asmodeus, that taking physical life, could have been, what was said to be, 'original sin', but that I would refrain from viewing that, as inherently 'sinful', even understanding, that most all, biological animal life, seems to be 'harmful', to other life, in some ways, sometimes...

I told Asmodeus, that I think 'original sin', could have been, humanity's disobeying God, rather than necessarily, the way in which God was disobeyed... The next 'wrong', could have been, seeking to deceive God, by lying to God, about what they, Adam and Eve, had done. And the next, would have been murder, when Cain displayed, predatory

ways, and killed Able.

However, Lilith would have been innocent, of all of these things, and she too, had the 'new genetics', so to speak, and perhaps went forth, and bred... Some view Lilith, as a lesbian, due to her alleged rejection, of Adam, and, in that perspective, then Lilith could be, the mother of all homosexuals.

However, some say, that it was Adam, who rejected Lilith. And, in either case, unless humans are so animalistic, that they feel compelled, to breed with anything, that is available, which some seem to do, at least men, who feel compelled, to hoot and holler, at any female form they see, just base animals, then at least some, who are heterosexual, might have some preferences, might decline to have sex, with one person of the opposite sex, while being totally willing, to have sex, with another person, of the other gender.

I suppose the same situation exists, within homosexuals. Some homosexuals, both men and women, might seem willing, to have sex with anyone, of the same sex, while others, are more particular...

At any rate, I can agree with a view, that the life of Jesus, paid for past sin, opened the door to a new age, for humans, though I tend to also believe, that things would have been better, for humanity, had Jesus lived, had the at least attempted murder, of Jesus, not occurred.

Asmodeus belongs, to the western half, of the Eastern body, of the Roman Catholic Church... Originally, each region developed its own Orthodox head. The Roman Orthodox head, was known as The Pope. The Pope, as the Roman Orthodox head, felt himself, to be above those Orthodox heads, who were under, Roman political or military control, like the Greek Orthodox, or Syrian Orthodox, or even the Egyptian Coptic Orthodox, so to speak. When the Roman Empire, split into two, and became The Holy Roman Empire, and the Byzantine Empire, there came also a division, that produced a head, for the Eastern half, and Asmodeus belongs to that group.

Later, as some among the Roman Catholic church, began to disfavor some Roman Catholic 'tolerances', like allowing people, to give money to the church, to erase their

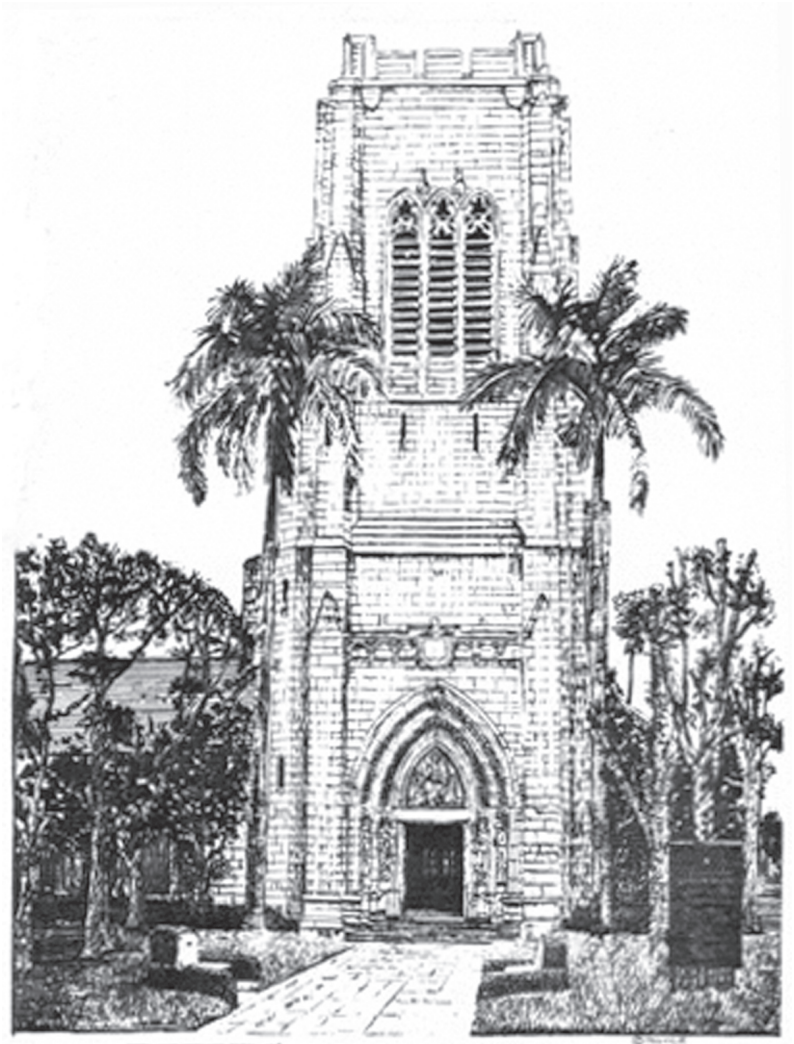
sins, and some viewed the Pope, as political head of the Holy Roman Empire, to be more political, than spiritual, then groups began to break away, from the Catholic church, and these 'protesters' became known, as Protestants.

A big break, between the Eastern and Western wings, of what had been, the Roman Catholic church, came in the 1880s, when the Pope declared himself, to be infallible, incapable of error, and that he is, the only direct voice of God, in our world, with unquestionable authority... Some view this time-period, as significant, as a start of maneuvering, preparations, for 'the New Age', for the manifestation of Christos...

I myself, am most certainly, not infallible. I am capable of error. I also believe, that each human, as a cell, in the body of God, oversoul of all oversouls, is capable of direct connection to, and interaction with, God.

My mother and I remain friendly... My mother has even been warm to me, nice in her words, without rancor or venom. This is a change. I am pleased by this. My mother is having problems, with her mail service, perhaps due, to her association, with me. I am having mail delivery problems too. My mail has been snagged, a couple of times recently. Some publications, failed to ever arrive, while others were delayed, and I lacked any mail, of any sort, for days. This week, I published the address, in *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, of the US Central Intelligence Agency employment office, sort of grabbing the tiger by the tail, but they have been grabbing my tail, for a long time!

Pictured,on the next page, is a sketch, of Bethesda-By-The-Sea Episcopalian church, in Palm Beach, Florida, done in 1983, by Royce Emley. This church, is where I had my first 'instruction', from God, that I was Christos... I was a child, maybe six years of age, or perhaps a little older. I regularly attended this church, at that time. I would ride my bicycle, to church. As the choir was singing, entering the church, through that front door, everyone rose, to sing with the choir, and I was struck, with a blinding white light, and heard a voice say, "You are Christ!" I was then instantly knocked unconscious... I started to receive, 'visions' from God, thereafter...


BETHESDA BY THE SEA
PALM BEACH

LOVE CRIES
April 22, 1985

I am feeling some sorrow, some heart-ache, because I am, once again, feeling strong emotions, for a man, who claims to be, heterosexual, and I have concealed, my fondness, and sexuality... I am spending more time with Troy, which I can enjoy. Part of me, thinks that Troy, would be a good partner, thinks this is indeed a possibility, while the reality, still, at face value, is the opposite, that this is something, that could never be...

I actually fear, that if Troy thought, I might be 'gay', or even 'bisexual', that I might, never see him again, but, paradoxically, as long as I simply say, that I am 'straight', then he wants, to play with my body... And, as long as Troy, continues to express, some dislike of homosexuality, then I would wish to avoid, being portrayed as gay, since I do work with Troy, and do have a straight image there.

The situation, to me, seems a touch, 'totally absurd'... Troy had expressed, that after working-out, after stretching, and doing some martial exercises, that it would be proper, be beneficial, as part of the martial arts program, for him, to give me, a rub-down... Troy did not feel, however, that it would be good, beneficial, as part of this martial arts stuff, for me, to give to him, a massage. For some reason, Troy seems to believe, that he is straight, and remains straight, when giving to me, a massage, but that he might be, less than straight, if he enjoyed, receiving a massage, from me...

Then, later, Troy thought such a massage, could be, a 'magickal' thing, where he might make a wish, or focus, using the energies he felt, from giving to me a massage, even if we had not worked-out, had not done, any martial arts stretching, or exercises... Perhaps Troy was encouraged, in this belief, by actually being granted, the wish he had made, with this energy...

What occurred, during one of his massages, of me, when I was on my back, and he was doing my legs, was that I gained an erection, one that, 'could not be easily concealed', by my underwear... Troy suggested, that as a 'magickal experiment', that he bring me to orgasm, emphasizing, that this was not, a sex thing, and I let him do

this, knowingly giving to him, the energy, from this ‘massage’, and ‘event’... Troy later told me, that ‘things went well’, without giving, any specifics to me...

What I find, is that, I now think often of Troy, during his absence, and have a growing fondness, an emotional desire, to be with him, while, for his part, Troy remains focused, on seeking to find, women to date, and has now had dates, with two more different women. In some ways, I believe, that Troy, is seeking to gain, my affection, and the benefits, of my affection, my time, without union...

I have wondered, if Troy, might simply be getting, some confidence, with women, because he believes, in the influence, of ‘magick’... And, of course, I have wondered, if Troy, might be enjoying this, sexually, rather than, ‘magickally’, but I have never noticed, any ‘visible’ arousal, to indicate, that might be so. At a minimum, this situation, is ‘confusing’ for me...

I think, some of my growing emotions, for Troy, might be due, to my frustration with Russ... The emotions I feel, for both Russ and Troy, are involuntary... So, I am feeling, strong romantic emotions, for Russ, and he knows this, but says, no chance of union, that we are, ‘just friends’...

It is true, that Russ, does now, sometimes give massages, to me, and sometimes, even brings me to orgasm, actually more and more often, but only before, I ‘do him’, but, he is also, quite clear, that he could only be, in a public union, with a woman. I have suggested, that ours could be, a ‘secret union’, but Russ says no.

I suppose, one aspect, that is particularly frustrating for me, is that both Russ and Troy, come to my place, both seek my company, and both insist, that they are ’straight’, while one, is fond, of letting me doing anything to him, while he is passive, and the other, wishes to play with my body, while declining, to let me touch him... It just seems to be, ‘too much’...

I counsel myself, to seek to enjoy these things, and I do, but, my emotions are also involved, and that, sometimes makes both situations, a touch frustrating.

What my situations, with Russ and Troy, seem to be telling me, is that I would like, to have a partner in life...

I am reminded, of my times, with Rich, where he too

emphasized, his desire, to be ‘straight’, and I felt some emotional yearning for him, which I did express, with a result of greater separation between us, as he felt uncomfortable, felt that others might know, of my ‘ways’, and that this, could thus taint, his image...

At any rate, because my expressions, of how I felt, pushed Rich away from me, I have kept my silence, with Troy, and sought to simply enjoy, the situation. However, my growing emotional, and perhaps physical desires, for Troy, are making it, more and more difficult, for me to continue, to accept the situation, as is... I did mention again, to Troy, that I would be glad, to give a massage, to him, and he again told me no, and said, he’ll let me know, if and when he wants one...

And, I suppose, I have some ‘confusion’, at how this guy, Troy, who thinks it good, for me to be massaged, after a work-out, or stretches, or to give a massage, for ‘magickal experiments’, then declines, to use the same logic, to allow reciprocation... Troy seems content, with the situation, overall. It is I, who would like, ‘more’... And you know what, it would be, a ‘straight’ man, who might enjoy, being in my situation with Troy, as is, and in Troy’s view, I am supposed to be, a straight man...

For the record, Troy and I, spend time together, at work, or at my place, but he refrains, from joining me, at the beach, or to go out to a movie. I do enjoy our talks, about metaphysics, and his instructions, and guidance, related to martial arts, and yes, the ’massages’.

The next time, that Troy gave a massage to me, I did not gain, an erection, and the massage, ended ‘normally’. However, the time after that, I did gain, another erection, and he did again, wish to bring me, to orgasm, and I did again, allow it, and he again, did preface the event, with a disclaimer, that this was nothing sexual, and was just, for ‘magickal purposes’...

Perhaps I should mention, ‘for the record’, that everything that Troy does to my body, is done by hand with oil, and there is nothing oral, and nothing anal, so that what he does, could perhaps be seen, as ‘somewhat straight’, though, in my view, none of this, is entirely ‘straight’, other than, perhaps my penis at times...

I have believed, Troy to be, between 24 and 28 years of age, handsome, masculine, muscular, and think he lives, with his parents... I did have a passing thought, that perhaps, Troy actually lives, with a girlfriend, and that perhaps, his activities with me, provide 'fuel' for him, to 'perform' with her... Or perhaps, Troy might be, unable to perform, with anyone?

I am beginning, to really disbelieve, in the term 'heterosexual', at least not as 'natural' evolution. From what I have experienced in life, what is 'natural', is for people to enjoy, being physical, with one another. I really suspect, that, rather than being, 'naturally heterosexual', people are either, 'blindly heterosexual', or, 'one-sided bisexuals', meaning just innocently unaware, ignorant, of their true sexual potential.

I've seen some women, challenge their men, as being perhaps gay, if those men, spend, 'too much time', with other men, which to me, could be a ploy, designed to cause separation, between men, who might actually, only be, platonic friends, and who might really lack, any sexual attraction, for one another, as their norms...

Blindly-heterosexual men, can be 'overly sensitive', to any insinuation, that they might be, anything other than, totally heterosexual, as there is that belief, that any man, who might enjoy, being physical, with any other man, in any way, might be, less than, 'a real man'...

Likewise, I think some men, feel compelled to have sex, with any women, who makes herself available, just to demonstrate, that he is heterosexual... And conversely, the less secure, a man might be, in his sexuality, the more likely, he might be, to fall for, that 'requirement'...

I have enjoyed, a long-term relationship, in union with a woman, Grace. I think our union dissolved, for reasons other than sex... I have considered, that I might seek, to find a woman, as a partner, but I am fearful, of the legal arena, that men face, in my times. A woman, who leaves union, with a man, can then 'harpoon' that man, into financial support, for a long time, and a man, can lose property, and children, in divorce. For women, who don't wish to work, marriage and divorce, have been ways, to gain income... I would rather avoid that situation.

Married employers, sometimes prefer, to give priority, in hiring, to married people, and sometimes, singles might be the first, to be laid off, during a low tide, in business... Some employers might feel, that a married man, who has a family to support, might be more inclined, to stay in place, or put up with abuse, than might be, a single person...

I had been fairly content, 'alone', with some frolics, with some 'friends', like with Russ, especially with Russ. However, I find I am spending, a significant amount of my time, now, with Troy, and this is also interfering, with my time, with Russ. Russ does not stop, at my place, when he sees Troy's motorcycle, parked in the driveway. Russ did visit one time, when Troy was around, and seemed to wait patiently, for a while, for Troy to perhaps leave, but Troy remained, and then Russ departed, and Russ has since then refrained, from visiting me, when he sees, that Troy is at my place.

I am reminded, of how several 'straight' men, would visit Chuck, at the same time, all there for sex, but none willing to appear, as if sex might be 'a thought', because they were all 'straight', and each, would seem to wait, for the others to leave, so they could then engage, in 'trade' with Chuck. This sometimes resulted, in long card games, and nobody had sex, as Chuck would eventually say, he had to go to bed, to go to work the next day...

Some though, could sometimes mention, the possibility, of 'doing business', as sex for the purpose of income, was a 'straight thing'... But none could mention, that 'business' involved sex, lest doing so, disturb the 'straightness', of any of the others... Chuck's situation, was perhaps made more complicated, in that he would only, 'do business', with, 'straight men'... And, given that Chuck's payment, was probably, either $10, or $20, which was a fairly small amount, one might even wonder, if the money, was the main object... Many men, will gladly welcome, receiving oral sex, as long as it is understood, that they would never reciprocate...

I could seek to enjoy, the 'now', as is, but I am also beginning, to think of this, as a waste of my time, as my desire, for 'more' with Troy, or with Russ, makes me think, that what I want, is a partner, and the time I spend, with

Troy, or Russ, is time I could use, seeking to find a partner...

How 'absurd' is it, for me to be brought to orgasm, by one 'straight man', who I am prohibited from touching, or expressing emotion about, while the other 'straight' man, lets me do whatever I want to him, physically, lets me express emotions, tenderly lays with me, hugs me, even kisses me, and has begun as a norm, playing with my body, and bringing me to orgasm, but won't have a 'relationship' with me, because he wishes, to remain 'straight'... Russ knows, that I am 'in love' with him, and accepts that...

I can openly express, my emotions for Russ, to Russ, at least when we are alone. I think my frustration, with Russ, influences for me, to want 'more', with Troy... And, for the record, I am very content, with massage with oil, for sexual play...

Rather than being frustrated, I am doubly frustrated... I suppose, that both Russ and Troy, are 'content', with things as is... I would love to feel, content with the situation also, as I am at least enjoying, some physical fun, with two handsome, attractive, masculine, muscular men... Amusingly, as both wish, to be regarded, as 'straight', and both have some curiosity, about the other, I have told Troy, that Russ is 'just a friend', and told Russ, that Troy, is a 'straight work buddy', who is teaching martial arts to me, and assured both, that the other, is straight. I told Russ, that Troy thinks of me, as being 'straight'... I could be amused to consider, that as neither Russ, nor Troy, might actually be 'straight', that each, might also view the other, as 'less than straight', and think the other might have, 'some interest' in me... But that is just speculation.

I am content with Russ, when he is around, and discontent, with the situation, more and more, when he is absent... On another hand, I am also content with Troy, when he is around, and more and more discontent, with the situation, when he is absent. Rather than feeling, 'discontent', per se, what I am feeling, is some emotional pain, some sadness, some longing. If I did not feel these emotions, involuntarily, then it would be much easier, for me to be glad, for what I do enjoy, with Russ, and with Troy.

And I do seem, to feel some certainty, that Troy, would seek distance from me, if I mention any of this, to him. I

once told Troy, after I had an orgasm, that I 'enjoyed that', and he replied, "don't enjoy it too much," a reminder, that this is, a 'straight thing'...

I am feeling, some emotions, some attraction, for Troy, and I am uncertain, if this is lust, or romantic, or a combination of both, or a reflection that what I want, is union, and I seem unable, to have that with Russ...

For what it's worth, I have experienced, a young male, similar to Troy, during the time, when I lived in Key West. That was a very attractive, young guy, maybe 21 or 22, who would sometimes, give a 'hand job', to a dog, 'to be kind', or to a male 'friend', as a friend, and viewed himself as straight, because he would not allow himself, to be touched, would not allow himself, to have such pleasure passively... People are people as individuals...

I am reminded, of a toothache... There comes a point, when the pain, of having a tooth removed, or repaired, by a dentist, might seem less, than the pain, of the toothache...

Asmodeus asked me, to lift a storm, so a friend of his could have an outdoor party, a Wiccan event. I told Asmodeus, that I would try, and a hole, appeared in the clouds, over the party area, and there was sun, for this event...

The Miami Herald, did not print my letter, to my knowledge, so what else is new, or not new, as the case might be...

The Palm Beach Post, sent a reporter, and a photographer, to my work-place, to interview me, about *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. They produced, a very nice article. I did inquire of them, if either had a college degree, in journalism, and neither did. The photographer, lacked a college degree, of any sort... The reporter, had an English degree... I just mention this, as I seem to have been, repeatedly disqualified, for any consideration, never have been able, to gain, even another interview, for any position, with *The Palm Beach Post*, where I was told, that my work experience, is 'useless'... It seems, that the requirement, that I must have, a journalism degree, to be considered, for any position, at that newspaper, is applied, only to me...

I have not yet had, the extra money, to once again, pay for advertisements, to gain subscribers, to *WORLD PRESS*

WATCH... Helene, after the nice article, in *The Palm Beach Post*, again strongly urged me, to drop *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, saying that article, would bring me, unfavorable attention, and that 'they', would 'get me'.

I think everything I do, is legal, as I do provide my sources, and am only reporting items, that have been published somewhere. I am not revealing anything, that was previously totally unknown. *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, remains my hope, for a secure future income, a way I can earn a living, on my own, in life. Helene is insulated, by ample wealth, and perhaps lacks regard, for that type of concern. Helene has different priorities than I in life...

If nothing else, people need to know, world events, because otherwise, they are vulnerable to war, manipulation, and now especially, to the limited bleeding warfare, of 1984...

All of my metaphysical abilities, and great knowledge, seem to amount to very little, when I see my world impoverished, and without romantic love...

[140421 ~ In the past, I had somewhat, danced around my situation, in this journal. It is in this version, that I am providing, 'too much information', though I am doing so, from my memory of events... My original journal, might have seemed to imply, one relationship 'issue', whereas there were two individuals, simultaneously...]

= 30 =

AND THIS TOO SHALL PASS...
April 25, 1985

I felt such inner turmoil, that I felt compelled, to seek advice, to vent my feelings, to express myself. I turned to Christian Dana, with whom I interact, at work. I told Dana, that I was involved, with two women, and really wanted more, than just a sexual relationship, wished to have some union understanding. I told Dana, that both of these women, had relationships, with other people, and that I sometimes now feel, emotional pain, when I know, that they are, with someone else, that I am unable, to be content, with the situations, as is...

Dana told me, to communicate with the women, to pick the one, I liked the most, and speak to her first, and prepare to separate, from both of them, if neither, wishes union with me, so that I can seek, to spend my time, with others, and to start a healing process, from pain of separation... Dana said, that he thought that, to go on as is, would only, make things worse later...

I felt unable, to be totally honest, with Dana, due to his proximity, to me at work, due to my sexuality, and the often adverse, and punitive or harmful reaction, to homosexuals, by 'Christians'. I view Dana, as a fine person, but suspect, that his regard for me, would vanish quickly, due to the sexuality issue, as he might be, a fundamentalist Christian, one who might be devoted, to a letter of the law, rather than, to the spirit of love, as demonstrated by Jesus. I presented my situation, to Dana, in 'gender friendly' terms, as I believe, these issues affect people, as people, as individuals, rather than, due to gender, or sexual preference.

I feel, the same sort of problem, challenge, obstacle, and punitive potential, exists with Troy, as I work with him, and thus, his casual mention, of my sexuality, might hurt me, at this job. I actually do not know, how John-S feels, about sexuality. John-S is a Catholic, with a wife, and seems to lack, any gay acquaintances, or gay business... I simply prefer, to avoid losing this job, due to sexuality...

As long as Troy, is just giving, massages to me, and this is, a 'magickal thing', and, as he might wish to maintain, a 'straight' image, then I think, he is unlikely, to mention this

situation, at work. However, if I put things to Troy, that I might actually enjoy, being physical with him, as a physical or sexual thing, then that could change everything...

And, it is for Russ, that I feel strong emotions. And, it is Russ, to whom I have said, that I would enjoy union, that I feel strong, romantic heart, love for him... So, it was with Russ, that I spoke...

The next time, that Russ visited, I told him, that I was feeling, stronger emotions for him, romantic, and this yearning, was causing me, to feel some pain, during his absence, that I hoped, that perhaps, he might consider, trying to put, a life together with me. Russ has been getting closer, to the girl, Laurie, who also knows me. I told Russ, that I was scared, his relationship with Laurie, would end his relationship, with me. I told Russ, what I really want, is to enjoy a union in life, with someone, someone to face life together with. I told Russ, that I was thinking, it might be better for me, to have distance from him, so that I could pursue other people, more easily.

Russ said, I seemed to have, a 'head problem', and that he enjoyed, his relationship, as a 'platonic friend' with me, very much. I told Russ, that I think he misunderstood, the meaning of the word, 'platonic', which means, lack of sex... Russ said, that we lack 'intercourse', so we are not, 'having sex'... Russ said, that if I stopped calling him, he would continue to visit me.

I doubt I would turn Russ away, as I am just so content, so happy, when with him. When Russ is with me, it is easy for me to believe, that he is, 'the one', as he seems happy with me, and I am happy with him, and we are without quarrels... We are very harmonious together... However, then Russ leaves, and I am reminded, by reality, that he might not be, 'the one', even if I feel that way, because he does not wish to be, 'the one'...

Russ said, that his relationship with Laurie, had never impacted, his time with me, and that it would never do so, that what we have, is, 'a guy thing'. Russ said, that I am, 'special' to him. Russ said, he didn't think, he would ever have, a union with a man, but, if he changed his mind, then I would be, 'the one'... This made me, both happy, and sad... Perhaps this is what is meant, by 'bittersweet'...

Russ said, that he is 'straight', as far as the 'outside

world' is concerned, and he wishes, to keep it that way. Laurie is aware, that Russ sometimes earns income, 'with men', but, apparently, she can accept, that this is, 'for the money', and fails to reflect, on Russ' 'real sexuality', or his relationship with her. Laurie is unaware, that Russ and I fool around, and there is no money involved, between Russ and I...

Russ said, that sometimes he worries, that my 'image', might tarnish his. Russ said, he might be inclined, to fool around with me, 'more freely', if I had a steady woman...

The whole thing, brings me back to Grace... Right now, a rising female star, Madonna, has released a movie, called '*Desperately Seeking Susan*'. I would welcome, seeing Grace again... Russ might be amused, that my abortive relationship, with him, has led me back, to considering women...

I am normally content, having a safety net, of friends, while I frolic, with passing strangers in the nights. It is this being with people, who are frustrating, that is causing me, to feel 'discontent', or unhappy... I do feel, emotional heartache, and sorrow, at times... Love cries, hopefully more from joy, than from sorrow...

I do not know, if I could only have sex, with one person, for an entire lifetime, but I really want, one main other half, in my life. I prefer masculine men, as companions... Perhaps, if I had never engaged, in 'sex', with Russ, or with Troy, I might have been, without these 'pains'. However, I tend to feel, that at least with Russ, the emotions are there, with or without sex. And, even if sex can be, a physical thing, a healthy recreational activity, sex can also be, a way to convey emotion, and definitely, a sharing of energies... I also do enjoy, 'intimacy', with Russ, with 'intimacy' being, a knowing, of what the other enjoys, knowing how the other's body responds...

I suppose, in the same way, that I say, that everyone is bisexual, and that people differ, in how they respond, to that 'secret' knowledge, that each individual, also has to cope, with involuntary emotions. If I felt nothing emotional, for either Troy or Russ, then perhaps, I could appreciate the situations, as they are, without change.

= 30 =

THIRTY-ONE WITH MIXED EMOTIONS
May 11, 1985

Today I am celebrating, my twenty-fourth birthday, for the seventh time! I guess I inherited, this youthful appearance, from my mother, something she would have me remember, when thinking about breeding.

I worked, the past 38 consecutive days, but didn't work today... I have also worked, some of the evenings. I find myself fatigued, and more irritable. My boss' view is, that at most, I work six days a week, for him, and what I choose to do, on the seventh day, is my business. I do *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, on the seventh day, often now doing, most all of the work, on this single day, as my other available time, has been filled, by other things. When I am limited, to one day, to work upon, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, then this work, takes most all, of that day...

The question, if Troy would eventually, just walk off of the job, or be fired, was answered, when John-S fired him. I have not seen, nor heard from, Troy, since then. I never had a phone number, to be able to call Troy, and he has refrained, from calling me, even though he does have, my telephone number.

John-S continues to print, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, for free, as I have yet to exceed, 500 copies in one week. Sometimes, John-S is the one, who prints the newsletter, on a press, and he takes great pride, in quality workmanship, and *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, does look very good.

I did get together, the money, to take out an advertisement, for subscribers, to *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, in one national weekly. There have been occasional snags, in my mail delivery, but no total seizures recently. I might rent, Post Office boxes, under different names, to ensure, that I receive enough magazines, to put together, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, each week. Paul and Asmodeus, help me to distribute, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, to local outlets.

Russ had visited a few times, with Laurie, perhaps as a just in case, Troy was around, but Troy has been absent, for weeks... Russ also visited, without Laurie, though apparently, at least once, she was in the car, in the driveway, while Russ fooled around with me, though I didn't know that,

until afterwards... I wonder how Russ explained, that time, as were not, 'quick'... Maybe Russ told Laurie, that it was, 'for the money', even if no money, was involved. I tend to believe, that Laurie never suspected, that Russ and I fooled around.

And I was horrified, to think of Laurie, just sitting there in the car, thinking of me, as being inhospitable... It was emotionally tough, for me to seek to display, no emotion, when Russ would be, in my efficiency, with Laurie, holding her, kissing her, and they would be, laughing happily together. It was tough for me, to behave, 'as if I didn't matter', and to accept, that perhaps I didn't. I did manage, to do it though, a great exercise, in self-control...

Russ would say, it had to be this way, and that he, could continue to enjoy, time with me, as long as I, didn't make any waves, and that my 'emotional problem', was beginning, 'to concern' him...

Now that I think about it, Russ visiting me, while leaving Laurie, in the car, probably occurred, after I had mentioned to him, that it was emotionally tough, for me to endure, being with him, while he was being, so 'loving' to Laurie... And perhaps, Russ did this, to show me, that my relationship, with him, would be unaffected, by his relationship, with Laurie.

It also factored in, with me, that I know Laurie, and have to face her, and sometimes, she might call, to confide in me, her unhappiness, with things, that Russ sometimes seemed, sexually disinterested in her, and she might wonder, if he was seeing, another woman, and I would assure her, that I knew, of no other woman...

I knew both Russ and Laurie, before they met one another. I didn't like, having to be deceitful, to Laurie. I disliked that aspect. Yet, I was stuck with it, and had to maintain, my own image, to Laurie, as 'straight', to help maintain Russ' image, to Laurie, as also being 'straight'... Laurie had met Russ, when she got to know the two people, who had stayed in my apartment, after I moved to Helene's... Those two people, a guy and a girl, knew of me, as straight. I remember a time, when Laurie arranged, for her new boyfriend, to join the group, at my place, and she mentioned, that he was an undercover police officer, and it

had then been Russ, who entered... I suppose Russ knew, what he was walking into, but both Laurie and I, were surprised, to find out, that we each knew Russ... I did know Russ, for a long time, perhaps two years, before Laurie met Russ... I knew Russ held jobs as a mechanic.

Perhaps, things also came to a head, with Russ and me. Russ said, that he was going to marry Laurie. Russ said, this would not affect, his relationship with me...

I told Russ, that if he married Laurie, that then I would seek to maintain, my friendship with him, but that I would no longer fool around in any way, with him. Russ said, "That's messed up."

Russ then visited me, one more time, for over an hour, enjoyed a fun time, physically with me, first bringing me to orgasm, after giving to me a massage, and then having me, 'do him', which he seemed, to tremendously enjoy, so that it was perhaps, our best sexual experience together, ever, and then, afterwards, told me, that he had decided, to leave the state, with Laurie, and then they were gone, perhaps the very next day...

I do miss Russ, and continue to think about him, whereas I really don't think about Troy... I might even feel some relief, that the situation with Troy, is over, though I have also wondered, if I might be, or have been, more able, to enjoy things with Troy, 'as is', without Russ in the picture...

Bottom line though, is that I have some sorrow, continuing, about lack of Russ in my life, and I do continue, to think about him, and yet, feel I face new ground, and my spirit does welcome that. Knowing that Russ, 'is gone', seems to be helpful, healing, to my spirit, helps me to 'know', that it is 'over', that he cannot be, 'the one' for me...

Bottom line then, is that both Russ and Troy, seem gone from my life, and I can miss both, and be glad, and sad, to be separated, from both...

[140423 ~ I think, that being with the wrong person, or feeling frustrated, when with someone, can make one feel lonely, whereas being alone, leaves more open the possibility, of being able to meet someone, and one can also be content, alone, when one is content with self. So, one might feel more 'alone', isolated or lonely, when with the

wrong person, than when single...]

[140423 ~ I think my interactions, with Russ and Troy, made me wish to have union, and this remained, a difficult desire, in part, because a union, might be somewhat apparent, to outsiders, and a same-sex union, could leave one vulnerable, to discrimination, in employment, housing, law, society in general, in life, at that time.]

[140423 ~ As paradoxical, as it might seem, I think I wanted, 'a normal life', and, to me, a normal life, would include, a union with someone, a romantic and realistic union... Achieving such a union, in such an environment, of adversity, could be, 'delicate', and challenging... I think I had accepted, and been content, with being single, to have some friends, some sex buddies, some good times, until I felt such strong emotions, within me, as kindled by Russ.]

[140423 ~ Whereas, many heterosexual meetings, always had in mind, from start, a possible long-term development, most homosexual meetings, focused on, 'enjoying now', because a long-term situation, might be more difficult, at best.]

I rarely see Helene now, though I live in an 'efficiency', on her Manalapan property, right next to her lake house. An 'efficiency', is a living space, that is 'complete', has a kitchen and bathroom, while being one room, that also serves as a living-area and sleeping area. I am either, at work, or working on *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. I do continue to edit and polish, Helene's entertainment column, for *The Palm Beacher*. I am talking positively, about her stage-play, to try to generate, more popular interest.

Asmodeus made, four specific weather requests of me, one at a time, at different times. Each time, I have been successful, giving Asmodeus something to witness.

My mother tells me, that she too worked, seven days a week, for ten years. I was not aware of this, so it must have been, before I was born. My mother says, for me to invest in land, because real estate holds its value, and generates income, when you rent to others. Good advice.

Chuck loves jigsaw puzzles, which are pictures, which have been cut, by a device called a jigsaw, into little pieces, which one then seeks to assemble, to create the picture. Life can be, like a jigsaw puzzle, except, not only do you

have to put the pieces, of your experience together, you might have to make some of the pieces, as well...

Fisherman Alan, a stranger at the Boynton Inlet, wanted to know, if I could agree, with his belief, that a group of people, races in particular, have a right, to insulate themselves, from other groups. Of course, they have that right, but they must also respect, common areas, where those of any group, have equal right, to access.

I think any group, which receives public funds, should be open, to all members, of the public. No facility, which enjoys financial support, by government, should exclude segments, of that society, especially given, that all segments, of society, give financial support, to government.

Peaceful coexistence remains a prime directive. Life should be, as pleasant as possible, for all. I think groups, that allow anyone to join, can be more harmonious, with our world.

I also tend to agree, that sexuality, can be a learned thing, rather than inherently genetic. All homosexuals probably have heterosexuals, as parents. Perhaps also, homosexuals have had children, who became heterosexual. To me, this indicates, that probably, or perhaps, something other than genetics alone, is involved. All humans, are capable of bisexual stimulation, and choose a sexual preference, from their realm of experience.

In my own particular individual twist, I have been warier, of women than of men, because the laws, make a relationship, with a woman, a very serious thing, for a man. The law, does not allow men, to claim each other's belongings, just because they lived together, even if in union. I have found it more difficult, to be casual with women, than with men, but that is my reaction, to the legal environment.

Humorously, when I do, or have had, sex with a woman, that woman often seeks, to move in with me, starting the next day, while men, go back to their own worlds, and have to be beckoned, sometimes... Casual recreational fun, same-sex, at least does not involve, the risk of pregnancy. However, I am now more ready, to settle with a woman, since any time, since Grace and I separated.

A friend of Asmodeus, who looked at my material, for

The Life of Christos, says there is a lack of continuity, in the story, so for him it was difficult to follow... The material is an accurate reflection, of my life. I think, there is a natural continuity, but it reflects what life is, or was, or can be... One might think, that any life, naturally has 'continuity', at least until it ends? I am uncertain, of the validity of his complaint, but perhaps he was at least sincere. I am reminded, of the literary agent, who asked what my credentials were, to write my own autobiography. I mean, who other than you, has 'credentials', to write your 'autobiography'?

One man says to another, "You're smart. Why don't you have money?" And the other replies, "You're wealthy. Why aren't you smart?"

I am now looking, at touching up, three essays, to put together, a Christos book, called *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*. The excerpted essays are from Books One, Two, and Three, of *The Life of Christos.*

Having a day off, from constant activity, has let me relax some. I feel a little bit refreshed. Asmodeus says, I asked for much business, when I went to this job, at start, to ensure, that I would work full-time. Asmodeus laughs, that I only have myself to blame. However, John-S is a competent pressman, and does a good job, and is superb, at pricing items, to make sure, both the customer, and our business needs, are satisfied.

I hope, that the day, you read this chapter, brings you something wonderful.

= 31 =

HAPPENINGS
May 21, 1985

Everything can be for the best, even if it is up to you, to make that true... I'm okay, and you're okay, or at least, that's what I'm telling myself now... As Tina wondered, perhaps I am being paranoid...

A local newspaper, called me, out of the blue, and talked to me, over the telephone, about my newsletter. Carl, the writer, wanted to know, more about me, as a person... There wasn't much I could say... Saying that I am single, and have never been married, can be 'damning', as far as our system is concerned... I also feel a touch 'reluctant', to mention my 'family', as that can bring to me, 'much attitude'... I would like to think, an article, about *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, should focus, mostly on *WORLD PRESS WATCH*...

Today, if one is known as gay, one can be excluded, from government employment, as a 'security risk', because one's sexuality, could be used, as blackmail, to compel one, to do things, for 'others'... If one's friends, and family, know of one as homosexual, then one might get hired by government, though government still reserves the right, to discriminate against homosexuals, as homosexual, even if then not a 'security risk'... So, for homosexuals, it can be a double-edged sword, where if open, then one won't be hired, and if closeted, hidden, then one might eventually be fired... Many gays marry, simply to avoid discrimination, and often, the woman, is unaware. Even if a man, might lose half in divorce, he might be prevented, from getting anything, otherwise... And, for what's worth, I have been 'reluctant', to describe myself, as a homosexual...

At any rate, I think Carl, and the *News/Sun-Sentinel*, did a fine job, and I enjoyed the picture, of me, taken by a staff photographer, who they sent to my workplace. John-S got some publicity, for being my employer. The newspaper ran this article, two different times...

The article gave to me, a little more encouragement, to continue to spend, yet another Sunday, reading, taking notes, re-writing, type-setting, proof-reading, correcting, and pasting up, the material for *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, a very

People/Entertainment

Man seeks solutions as he publishes newsletter

WPB edition (Ft Lauderdale) SUN SENTINEL 850519 Page CZ7

Carl Herzog
Staff Writer

Walter Brooks calls himself a strong moderate who is looking for answers.

"I'm looking for solutions to the complaints of both the right and left wing," said Brooks. "At the time I established my beliefs, it was unique to have moderate views."

Brooks, 31, publishes the *World Press Watch*, a weekly, one-page newsletter of world events collected from publications around the world. Brooks distributes the letter free, but claims around 40 mail subscribers who pay $15 for 12 issues. Brooks said his subcribers come from around the globe.

In addition, his newletter is published in the *Key West Citizen* and the *Amerikan Uutiset*, a Finnish newspaper published in Lantana.

The *World Press Watch*, said Brooks, presents all sides of the issues and costs him about $30 or $40 a week.

Although Brooks, a typesetter and graphic artist at Printing*Plus*, is losing money on the *World Press Watch* right now, he hopes to someday make it his full-time occupation.

"Eventually, I'd like to have it support me rather than the other way around," Brooks said. "I try to make money. I haven't succeded yet, but I'm still trying."

Brooks said his idea to publish the *World Press Watch* started with a challenge from his mother when he was 24.

"I had some strong opinions," Brooks said. "She said I was too young to be credible, so I should seek to quote people who are creditable."

With that, Brooks began writing a book on recent history.

"I wanted the headlines of tomorrow," he said.

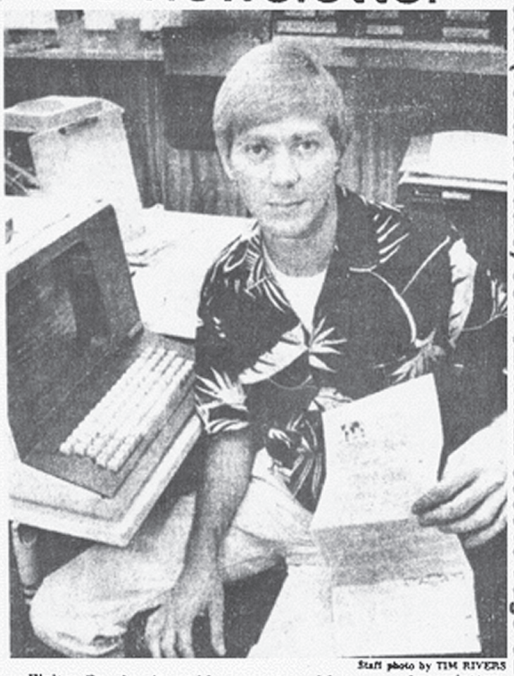
Brooks said his book, which he titled *The Book of Life*, was designed to be a running history of world events.

Brooks said he chose the title because of its biblical implications.

"There's something biblical about a record in heaven of everything that went on called *The Book of Life*," Brooks said.

"My book is kind of a record of everything that is going on, so I picked that name," he said.

Brooks never published his book, but he said he still has about 3,000 pages of notes covering world events from Christmas of 1978 to Easter of 1981.



Staff photo by TIM RIVERS

Walter Brooks sits at his computer with a copy of newsletter.

Brooks' views are not confined to politics. At one point, Brooks, who now attends the Unity Church, started his own church, The Civil Church of Christos.

"It wasn't going to be building where people meet. It was going to be in spiritual terms," he said.

Brooks said he wanted to bring people of many different religions together to "civilly solve religious differences."

"Most religious wars are just an excuse for a war that is actually over a different issue — land, power, oil — things like that," he said.

Brooks' view on the future follows his moderate line of thinking.

"I see humanity following one of four paths," he said.

Brooks calls the four paths Armageddon, the golden age, 1984 and apocalypse.

"Armageddon will come through the abuse of free will and will result in the violent destruction of humanity," Brooks said. "The golden age will come through the nonviolent coexistence of differences."

Brooks described the path he calls 1984 as a state of "total control of society by a central authority," similar to the one detailed in George Orwell's *1984*.

"Apocalypse is the destruction of humanity through disease and famine," he said.

Brooks said humanity may have to follow the 1984 path to avoid Armageddon and apocalypse.

That path, however, will "preserve the species until we can plant it in space," he said. "Of course, that's is a very simplified explanation."

full day... At least I do sincerely enjoy, all aspects of this work.

[140422 ~ In the past, I have included, a copy of this article, in manuscript versions of this book, Book Five, of *The Life of Christos*, but I had also blacked out, words which indicated, my private self, as Jualt.]

I got a loud message, from Asmodeus, on my telephone answering machine, to bring rain, heavy rain, and lots of it, to put out the fires, reported around Florida. This may sound like a digression, but it is interwoven.

The first report of fire, came when electrical power, went out in southeast Florida. It was reported, that a fire, at a specific location, had burnt a relay point, for electrical power, a transformer. However, soon after that report, a radio reporter got on the air, and said, he was in the area, where the fire was reported, and said, that there was no fire there... Other fires were then reported, in other locations. The idea of brush-fires, seemed a little odd to me, because there had been, some soaking rain, days ago, so the ground was damp, not conducive to fire.

The day after Asmodeus' call, massive thunder-clouds, dropped heavy rains, in my residential area. The media warned, of severe weather, and power outages. One area, in Palm Beach County, was still reported, as having fires, despite the heavy rains. The next day, heavy hail fell on that specific area, with rain. No fire could survive, that hail and drenching, so the media conceded, the fires were definitely, no longer burning.

After that episode with Asmodeus, who did thank me this time, and the newspaper article, about *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, being published, my home phone went dead. When I went to Paul's, and called my home phone, I was able to hear my phone, indicating a normal ring. So, people calling me, received an unanswered call, as my telephone message machine, would fail to respond, to a dead phone line, which was the situation, at my end. I informed the phone company, and they said, there was a problem, with my phone line. They never put on, an out-of-service recording.

At the same time, the Post Office decided, that I was getting, too much mail, for my Post Office box, and began giving to me, a pink slip, instead of any mail. The Post

Office, had previously, put into my box, as much of my mail, as possible, stuffing it full, if need be... At any rate, this was new...

It took me a few days, to be able, to get to my Post Office, in Lantana, during their business hours, to pick up my mail. For a time, this past week, I was unable to receive mail, or phone calls. A harmless coincidence...?

For a period of time, when I was a teenager, my parents had me, return to my room at home, from school. I was not to leave that room, nor have visitors, nor allowed use, of the telephone. I guess they were preparing me, for the future... I am somewhat, of an emotionally independent person, and feel no need, for peer approval. However, I am also a prudent person, and do wish to avoid, active peer disapproval...

Back to sex, one more time... Handsome, rugged, masculine Walt, with huge pecs and biceps, whose arms, are as big as my legs, asked me, how I could have known, that he might be interested, in recreational sex with me. The answer is easy. I did not know. I thought it fair, for me to ask, if Walt would be interested, and fair for him to decline, if that had been his wish. Other than that, I know, that all humans are capable of bisexual stimulation, so it is just whether or not the other person knows it too. It is true, that all good-looking people, do something to maintain their appearance, and this is a same-sex trait. Walt is most definitely, a good-looking person. I had asked, at a grocery store, of all places, if Walt might enjoy, a massage, and he had said yes, and one thing, led to another... I very much enjoyed, playing with his entire body...

[140421 ~ I have wondered, if some men, have to get, 'really big', muscular and strong, to be able, to enjoy sex with other men, so that they feel 'safe', able to protect themselves, if they might have to face physical attack, due simply to 'sexuality'...]

I believe, members of a union, should be able, to have outside sex, if they have a mutual understanding, to allow it. I think, some men and women, who might have, a homosexual sexual preference, can still raise children, as a couple. I believe one man, and one woman, are proper role models, to raise children, and I tend to prefer, that a married

couple, remains together, until after the children, have left their home. However, I also believe, that same-sex couples, can raise children well also. I believe, that two adults, can be better able, to raise a child, than one single adult. I understand, that sometimes, two people can be so combative, or adversarial, that their ability, to properly raise a child, can be diminished...

I tend to believe, that the Christian way, of one man and one woman together, harmoniously, has value, and can provide helpful, nurturing, healthy, role models, to encourage children, to also be heterosexual, and to properly raise, their own children, when their time comes...

I believe, a man and woman, who bicker, while raising children, could inadvertently, encourage those children, to consider a homosexual life-style... While a loving mother, could encourage a male child, toward a heterosexual life-style, I believe that an adversarial, domineering, or nasty woman, as a mother, can encourage a male child, toward a homosexual life-style.

Even though I myself, have a fondness, for companionship with masculine men, I do not advocate, any particular life-style. I advise people, to do as I do, which is to seek, a harmonious happy relationship, that is pleasing to one... For some, that could be a heterosexual union, and for others, a homosexual union.

= 31 =

BE RESPONSIBLE ~ DON'T MISS THE APPOINTMENTS YOU MAKE, WITHOUT CALLING IN ADVANCE ~ MEAN WHAT YOU SAY, AND SAY WHAT YOU MEAN ~ IF PEOPLE FEEL THAT YOU'RE NOT BELIEVABLE, THEY WILL STOP LISTENING TO YOU ~ ALL HABITS CAN GROW, SO CHOSE YOUR HABITS CAREFULLY...
June 27, 1985

Here is a tidbit, presented by, gentle Monique:

IF YOU ARE UNHAPPY

Once upon a time, there was a nonconforming sparrow, who decided, not to fly south, for winter. However, soon the weather, turned so cold, that he reluctantly, started to fly south. In short time, ice began to form, on his wings, and he fell to earth, in a barnyard, almost frozen.

A cow passed by, and it crapped on the sparrow. The sparrow thought, it was the end. But the manure warmed him, and it defrosted his wings. Warm and happy, and able to breathe, he started to sing. Just then, a large cat came by, and, upon hearing the chirping, investigated the sound. The cat, cleared away the manure, and found the chirping bird, and promptly ate him.

MORAL OF THE STORY:

1) Everyone, who dumps on you, is not necessarily, your enemy.

2) Everyone, who gets you out of shit, is not necessarily, your friend.

3) If you're warm, and happy, keep your mouth shut...

Asmodeus again reaffirms, that he respects my belief, in myself, as being Christos, as sincere, but he remembers the Biblical warning, against false prophets, and the Biblical Revelation, that the end times, would be filled, with many, who claim to be Christ. I have wondered, if all times, might have been filled, with those who claim to be Christ. I affirm, that I expect to be living, as a human Christos, in the year 3253.

For Asmodeus to believe, that I am Christ, I must fulfill the prophecy, that Christ's coming, will be known, to everyone in our world. On another hand, Asmodeus says, that perhaps the man, who recently tried, to murder the

Pope, Ali Agca, might actually be Christ, for Ali claimed, to be Christ, and all world newspapers, reported the claim, each in their own language, so that prophecy, was then fulfilled...

I do not believe, that Christ, would be a murderer, or an assassin, though Krishna, whom I view, as a manifestation of Christos, is remembered, as a warrior... I told Asmodeus, that I do, as God requested, for me to do, and perhaps, God wished for me, to be among the many... I did remind Asmodeus, that I do not claim, to be Christ, which to me, is a title, bestowed by humans. I claim, to be Christos...

I view Asmodeus, as being a Christian scholar, from the perspective of a deacon, of the Old Catholic Church, and I respect, what Asmodeus has to say, even if I might fail, to always agree with him, on everything.

I sent to Thomas, a copy of the notes, for this book, up to the chapter, before the previous chapter. I asked Thomas, not to mention it to anyone. I wanted, part of this record to survive, at least enough, for an epilogue, to Book Four, in case I am unable, to complete it myself.

I have remained, unable to gain the interest, of any magazine, in buying, any of my Wolf Studio photos, or interest them, in using my models, from which I would gain, a finder's fee. Most magazines, seem only interested, in promoting pictures of models, who appear in movies, they themselves sell, a corporate in-house network thing... I continue, to run advertisements, for models, and am continuing, to get a lot of response. It seems, that anyone, who might want to see, beautiful nude human bodies, has only to advertise, that they wish to represent models, and take pictures, and one can then be deluged, with 'much beauty'...

It does irk me, annoy me a little, that there is so much more interest, in nude humans, than in world news... I had thought, that any money, I might make, from photography, could be applied, to funding *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. However, I have yet, to make any money, from photography.

A local radio station, talk show host, has recently expressed interest, in having me as a guest, in mid-July, about *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. This interview is due, to that host, seeing the article, about *WORLD PRESS WATCH*,

in the *News Sun Sentine*l.

[140423 ~ There was a time, when I was a dinner guest, of Frank-B's, with Paul. During this dinner, with some Hapsburgs, Frank-B said, something akin, to how he had helped, to make WORLD PRESS WATCH, a success. I truly was uncertain, of in what way, Frank-B might have thought, he had helped, to make WORLD PRESS WATCH, a success. My reply, was that credit for success, should be claimed, after success is attained, rather than before...]

I have typeset my book, *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, with the computer at work. I still have to proof-read the text, and make corrections, and then do the paste-up, but the project, is at least, in process now.

I would like, to start exercising, at a gym again. I have not done so regularly, since last September. I have 'lost my body'... I guess I am at, about fifty percent, of my potential. Working-out for three weeks, would get me back into condition, and after three months, I would be back into shape, with some tone, and ready to seek to build. At least without a body, I am not deluged, with people wanting my body, and am more able, to hunt for an object of my desire, rather than being cast, as the object of others' desires.

I have learned, that one aspect, of 'the curse of beauty', beyond having so many people, interested only in one's shell, is that one can become less able, to seek to meet people, that one finds to be attractive, because one can be overwhelmed, by people seeking to meet one, by those who find, one's shell to be attractive...

I have become discontent, with my situation, working for Paul, for Frank-B. I have been paid, $20 per week, and I do the payroll, and other bill payments. I do this work, usually requiring me, to be at Frank-B's, for about two hours, or three hours, at the most, on Saturdays, and sometimes go to work, for John-S afterwards, which requires a fairly long drive, from downtown Palm Beach, to downtown Delray Beach...

I mentioned to Paul, that it would be helpful to me, if I could be paid, a little bit more, for my time and travel, and fuel costs. Paul said, that this would be impossible. I asked Paul, if he would at least, make the inquiry for me, and Paul declined, and told me, not to ask Frank-B, and said that he,

Paul, is in charge of such things.

I am mindful, that Paul has been, very helpful to me, in real-world ways. I am mindful, that I did this work, as a favor to Paul, rather than, for any significant, financial compensation. However, my own life, has very many demands, on my time, and doing this, for Paul, does take my available free time, and I have less 'extra time' now, than before I started working, for John-S. I do enjoy Paul's company, and do remain willing, to be helpful to him. What annoyed me, was that Paul, was unwilling, to even ask, for a little bit more money, for me.

I gave six weeks' notice, saying that I could stay longer, if offered a little more money, but I would stay, at most, that long, so that someone could be hired, and trained, to replace me. I could leave sooner, if someone else was found, and satisfactorily trained.

When the six weeks was up, nobody had yet been hired, so I gave, a final four weeks' notice. I was somewhat amused, that this company, could not pay me more, but would seem to insist, on having my time... They seemed to forget, that the time is mine, not theirs. That which is theirs, is the need to have the work done. That which is mine, is also a desire, to have a good work reference, from Frank-B.

Often very sadly, one's work history is normally described, by one's former employers. It can be very challenging, to have a good work history, as told by one's former employers...

During the next four weeks, I was told, that the company, could find someone, to do the same work as I, but for less money, so that I should be content, and stay in place. Paul seemed to ignore, that I was already discontent, and would prefer, to have the time, to do nothing, rather than working, to earn next to nothing. I urged Paul, to hire that person, but apparently, that was not done, as, at least to my knowledge, nobody new appeared, to be trained.

I sent a letter, after the four weeks had elapsed, in writing, giving two weeks' final notice... I have wondered, if Paul intercepted that letter, as he does handle business mail. It is Paul's responsibility, to see that the work I am doing, does get done. If I were to leave, after two more weeks, then Paul would probably say, that I had abandoned

them, without notice, even though, technically, I would now have given, 12 weeks' notice, and perhaps then, Paul would give to me, a bad or unfavorable work reference, and would step away from me, perhaps even as a friend... I know, that one reason, I do this work, is because, Paul was unable, to do it himself, mostly due to other demands, on his time, but also due, to some challenges, with vision, and typing...

At this time, the two weeks, are now up, and I have informed Paul, that I have a model scheduled, for next Saturday, so will be unavailable, to do the payroll, and bill paying. Paul has suggested, that I reschedule, the time for the model, around my 'job', with he and Frank-B. I have said, that noon, is the only time, this model can travel, from Miami, to be in my area... Paul arrives, at Frank-B's, at 10:00am, and says that, is the earliest possible time, for me to do my work there, and Paul likes to leave, by 3:00pm... It is, a 20- to 30-minute drive, one-way, from my residence, to Frank-B's residence. I lack the leeway, to seek to do Paul's work, before noon, and be back to my home, at noon, and have no idea, of how much time, might be required, for this photo shoot...

And, as far as juggling is concerned, it is possible, that I might have work to do, on that day, for John-S. And it might be nice, for me to be able, to do some of the work, for *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, on one day, and then some on another, rather than filling an entire single day, with *WORLD PRESS WATCH*... Admittedly, I do seek to review, and make notes from, the items within magazines, during the course of a week, when able to do so. There is, 'a bit of work' involved, with reviewing many publications, noting items from which to make selections, nicely writing concise reports, arranging or organizing those reports, done at my home, and then going to the print-shop, to do the typesetting, proofing, correcting, and pasting-up, of a newsletter, so that it is ready for a press...

At any rate, when I said, that I would be unavailable, on the following weekend, Paul expressed surprise, personal hurt, that I would, 'treat him like this'... I believe I have given, 12 weeks' notice...

You know, I might have been content, if I had been offered, $25 a week, rather than the $20, I now earn... I

think all I needed, was a gesture of appreciation, and I did not get that...

= 31 =

TIME TO GET SERIOUS
August 7, 1985

Capitalist business success, can be found, in the right mix, of three things:

1) You must have, something that people want.

2) You must make it, known, to the people.

3) You must make it, available, to the people.

The first item, having something that people want, is essential, for if people don't want it, they're not going to buy it. Product sells itself...

Some advertising campaigns, are geared to tempt people, to want something, as well as, to making things known. If people don't know about something, even if they might want it, they are not going to get it. People must also be able, to get something. That means, they must be able, to afford to buy it, and know where to buy it, and have places, that they can buy it. If they know about it, and are able to afford it, but can't find it, they can't buy it.

[140423 ~ Fascist business success, within a 'managed' economy, can be dependent, upon political favor, that allows one, to seek to market something. Fascist, which can be communist, when left-wing, business success, also seeks to foist products, upon the people, by limiting access to market, to promote something, that 'the system', wishes to promote, and can be prone, to false claims, to entice people to want something. I continue to find merit, to 'truth in advertising' laws, that punish those, who make false claims, or deceptive practices. However, a fascist, or 'managed' economy, might tolerate, or even promote, such false claims, or deceptive practices, as 'smart', cunning, in pursuit of 'false profit'.]

Also, one must have money to coast, to spare, in order to succeed, in capitalist business, for initially, sometimes estimated at up to two years, a business might operate, at a loss, while building a clientele. Many small businesses fail, simply because, they do not have enough money, to glide through slim periods. It takes money, to make more money?

I enjoyed my interview, with host Craig, for one hour, on his talk radio program, on *WJNO*. Craig had me on, with another gentleman, who did a high school, independent newspaper, *The Highlander*. Craig said he thought, from my

picture, that I was, 'a young person', and was surprised, that I am, over thirty years of age...

I seem to have failed, to get any new private subscribers, due to the radio interview. However, another local talk show host, Herbert Swope, on *WPBR*, heard the show with Craig, and has asked me, to be a future guest, on his show, an opportunity I gladly accepted.

Asmodeus says, he is willing, to seek to get for me, more radio talk show interviews, to act as my agent, and I have agreed. I would give to Asmodeus, 20-percent, of any revenues, that he might gain, but normally, being a guest, seems to pay nothing. Asmodeus said, he would like to mention, my 'family connections', but I have asked him, to refrain from doing so. I would like *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, to stand on its own merit.

I made a wage agreement, a written contract, signed by both of us, with John-S, to continue working, at my present wage, for six months, and then to receive, a pay-raise, every six months thereafter, of fifty cents an hour, until I get, to $8 an hour, which is where I should be at now. My mother's maid gets $8 an hour.

I am willing to work, for less money, because I sympathize, with John-S' desire, and challenges, to build a business, and also because, he has generously, and kindly, helped me with *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, continuing to print copies, each week, without charge. John-S does get advertising, from my newsletter, which is distributed, through some local businesses, so is of potential benefit, to him. I like to think, that both John-S and I, benefit from our current arrangement. It is a real-world fair trade.

So far so good, with my hurricane protection, as Christos, this hurricane season... I believe, each manifestation of God, as Christos, provides a polishing touch, upon humanity, provides some teaching, and thus guidance, for humanity to seek to grasp. My view, is that my current manifestation, is one of many, and probably not the last. It is my view, that perhaps my fate, might be, to continue to manifest, among humanity, until humanity, is either good or gone, a fate perhaps shared, by Michael-Brahman, and Lucifer-Shiva...

I do not know, what future I shall face, during my next

manifestation, around 3253. If Armageddon has occurred, after my lifetime, then I might find myself, next life, in rubble, or in conditions, similar to those, of my current linear time-period. I have wondered, if Jesus birthed, into a time of rubble, during which, times of past splendor, could be dimly remembered, and anticipation, of new growth of civilization, like that of the past, could be hoped for...

= 31 =

BE USEFUL TO YOUR READERS, IF YOU WANT TO SELL BOOKS
August 24, 1985

Asmodeus says, his energy bounce is equal to mine, especially when he is angry. Asmodeus believes, what I do, can be learned by others, and they should be able, according to Jesus, “to do even greater works”.

I declined, to compare myself, to Asmodeus, in terms of ‘power’. I told Asmodeus, that we are different. I told Asmodeus, that I thought, that friends, were simply stronger together, than separate as individuals, but that could be untrue, if they engage in rivalry...

I find, that Asmodeus has little, in the way of, ‘natural psychic gifts’, and much, in the way of knowledge, or use of tools, of rituals, objects, and incantations, so to speak. I believe, that I can do, without anger, simply with focus of mind, most anything, that Asmodeus can do, with anger, or with tools. We are different. That which would be, of value to me, is that both Asmodeus and I, seek to live in ways, that are karmically positive overall, and do what we are able, to help maintain, and improve, the condition of humanity, and of our world.

I believe, that other people can connect with God, in their own ways. In this regard, I am but a messenger of God. I am not superior, in my own view, to others, because I am Christos. I simply know, that it is my purpose, to seek to leave record, of my existence, and to leave teachings, that can help people, in their lives, and help to maintain, and improve, the condition of humanity, of our world, and even civilization, in that regard.

I can accept, that other people can connect to Christos, or to Michael, or to Lucifer, or to ‘others’, if they have the connections, and knowledge, that help them, to be able to do so. I do not believe, that anyone or everyone can do, what I can do. I do believe, that some can do, what I can do, and that some can do, even greater works, so to speak.

I believe, that each human, can directly reach God, oversoul of all oversouls, through prayer, and that each can be, an extension of God, as all things, can be parts of God, oversoul of all oversouls. I believe, some people, might

have some difficulty, in embracing, their individual, one-to-one connection, with God, and these can be helped, to learn how to connect, or could be benefited, by intermediaries, who can connect with God.

While I personally prefer, the use of my individual human abilities, and prefer to teach, individual human empowerment, rather than use of tools, such as incantations, objects, and rituals, I do understand, that use of tools, fails to imply, lack of ability, to use individual human abilities, and that use of human individual abilities, fails to imply, lack of ability, to use tools.

I do not believe, that anyone else, is me... I am Jualt Christos. I do believe, that historically, manifestations of Christos have been singular. Asmodeus believes, the only true manifestation, of Christos, as I define Christos, has been Jesus, and says, that Jesus is the only true manifestation, of Christos, because Jesus, is the only manifestation, of God, to have been heralded in advance... Asmodeus did then, agree with me, that a 'second coming', has also been 'heralded'...

I lent to Asmodeus, the '*Book of Krishna*' to read. Hindu belief, and the *Book of Krishna*, say Krishna's manifestation, was heralded in advance, by God.

Humorously, my nickname as a child, was 'Booty', which can be liberally interpreted, phonetically, as 'Buddhi', or 'Little Buddha'...

While I view Asmodeus, as a Christian scholar, and a close advisor, I maintain, that I am here, as Jualt Christos, for all groups. As Jesus visited, the many peoples of his time, bringing them all, the same message, so too do I. In a similar way then, when I speak to Christians, I am speaking to them, as one group of many groups, in our world today.

I believe, Christian ways of life can be balanced ways, that protect the spirit, while maintaining wellness, within society, or community, and world. I believe, those who promote, 'THE' way, as an only way, even if, perhaps from the best of intentions, could be promoting disharmony, conflict, within the human overall body.

I too am human, like any other person. Like all other people, I have been influenced, by both my environment as a child, and, the sequence of events, through which I have

evolved, in the world at large.

I was raised, by a big man, who was often physically intimidating, and physically abusive, violent, leaving me with a severed collarbone, a disjointed hip, and an inverted spine, with discs of my lower back bent inwards, rather than meeting straight, all of which, affected my physical, emotional, and material development, a tragedy, which I hope I have surmounted, through physical exercise.

My mother was often mentally sharp, and hostile, venomous and demeaning. My mother was also physically violent, until she became fearful of retribution, which was accidental. My mother slapped me hard, across my face, catching me by surprise, and then I, in reflex, blocked her next attempt, without thinking about what I was doing, and my ability to do this, then came to my mother's awareness, and she was no longer, physically violent toward me, after that... I was, perhaps, 16 years of age, at that time. My mother then rested content, being verbally venomously nasty to me, while my father remained physically intimidating, violent.

Both my father and mother, sought to raise me, to be blindly obedient, and to question nothing. Both of my parents viewed any question, about anything, from me to them, as insulting to them, as disrespectful. In no way, did either of my parents, seek to nurture or guide me, into becoming a competent, content, adult in our world. My parents' only life guidance was to tell me, to marry wealth.

I learned to seek to avoid, being similar to my parents. I learned, to seek to bring into myself, the things I liked to experience, from others, and to rid from myself, the things I disliked experiencing, from others.

I was not allowed, to bring friends home, or to use the phone, and was required, to come home, directly from school, go to my room, and stay there. I could violate these rules, at my own risk. For a time, my father would demand, that I gain employment, and my first job, was when I was 13 years of age, as a gardener, at a housing development, Century Village. Then, after I had gotten a job, my father would then start demanding, that I quit, and if I did quit, he would then demand, that I get another job, never giving to me, any logic, just making his contrary demands, all the

time. This situation, was somewhat continuous, until I left home. My father, was willing to be, quite violent, to enforce his will, until I threatened to break valuable items in 'our' home, unless he stopped, and then he did somewhat stop hitting me, though he did continue, to 'manhandle' me.

[140423 ~ As an adult today, almost 60 years of age, I continue to feel, some embarrassment, that I was so controlled, beaten, intimidated, abused, and that I stayed in that environment, that I failed to fight back, that I failed to destroy them... However, I can give to myself, and to anyone else in a similar situation, my understanding, that a small child, which I remained, even during my teen years, is probably unable to win a physical fight, against a big strong muscular man, like my father. I never felt 'affection', from either of the two adults, who raised me, as my parents. I believe, I was about 110 pounds, at six-feet two inches in height, when I arrived at college, at 18 years of age...]

It was difficult, for me to make friends, in such an environment, but I had two, Marcus and Hicks. They did not understand, being youths like me, why I didn't just run away. An answer, was that my father, had promised to pay my way, through college, if I graduated high school, and qualified for higher learning. My grandmother had left money to me, for this specified purpose, but my father, did embezzle, most of those funds. For her part, my mother also administered some funds, which had been left to me, and she gave to me, none of them, saying she had spent all of that money, in my behalf... But I stayed at home, in part, to be able, to go to college.

When I got to college, I had a 'rude awakening'... My father refused, to buy for me, books for school, and said, he would stop paying, for my tuition and rent, if I got a job. He also refrained, from giving to me money to buy food, and for a long time, I lilved without much food. I did seek educational financial aid, but, my parents, declined to cooperate, with financial disclosure, so I was unable, to get any financial aid.

When I first really experienced, 'the real-world', away from my home environment, I thought I had done well, just to survive. I could tell myself, that others, in my age group, among my peers, were weaker than I, and inexperienced

with life. I had more, 'healthy mistrust', than they, but they had the strength, that can come, from family nurture, aid, and guidance... And many of them, had learned some skills, helpful to them in life, by that time... I was behind my peers, in many ways, but I did not know this, at the time. I suppose, my peers took for granted, much of what they had received, where I had learned, to greatly appreciate, anything and everything. Nonetheless, I also did lack, the things my peers, took for granted...

I believe, I still carry, many mental-emotional and physical, wounds and handicaps, from my upbringing. I have found, unsympathetic to my situation, others who might have been guilty, of abuse, and I suspect, that an identifying feature, of an abuser, could be, their lack of sympathy, with victims of abuse. So, if you mention abuse, and find a lack of sympathy, you might want to remain distant, from that person... Abusers hurt the wellness, of community, society, and our world... Abused children, can become, wounded adults, for a life-time... No one deserves abuse.

I have found, empathy and sympathy, from those who have had similar experiences. To some, who have healthy childhood environments, the problems, from lacking that, seem unreal. Some, take their good upbringing, for granted, and fail to grasp, how beneficial, a healthy environment actually can be. I understand, that the wounds, from a bad childhood, can be surmounted, through positive experience, and focused effort, through time.

I am too timid, in many ways, and often not as direct, as I perhaps should be, in maintaining my own interests, and I think these aspects, might reflect wounds, from my childhood. I have sympathies, with old tired dogs. I think my norms, what I am prepared to accept, as conditions in life, are lower, due to my abusive childhood, than the norms, of people who have had, healthy childhoods. In depression, I can feel worthless, like a beaten dog. I lack self-confidence.

I can fully understand, that some people, who are comfortable in life, might shut out people, who have problems, simply because, the comfortable people, wish to enjoy their comfort, wish to shut out the world, as much as

they can, for as long as they can... I think this can be, natural and normal, but not necessarily okay, even if understandable... Our world needs, all the help it can get...

I believe my upbringing, influenced me, to lack desire, for family of my own, in part, because I wished to refrain, from exposing my children, to my relatives... I believe, the constant warfare, between my parents, and from them toward me, influenced me, against having, such a situation myself, influenced me, against a heterosexual union, as for me, such a relationship, seemed to be, one of combat, one of anger and sorrow.

However, I do believe, that a harmonious, heterosexual environment, where people have children, because they wish to have children, can be a healthy environment, for children, for community, for society, for nation, and for our world. I do believe, that same-sex couples, can be just as beneficial, as healthy heterosexual couples.

Danny asked me, about trust and respect.

I advise people, to give 100-percent respect, or respectful behavior, to others, to minimize friction, and to make ours, a better world. Let others lose your respect, or maintain your respect, but seek to be respectful, even to those, for whom you lack respect. Seek distance from those, from whom you fail to receive, respect, and from those, for whom you are unable, to feel sincere respect.

Trust no strangers. Let people gain your trust, through time, based on their actual history. People who seek to pry, into your privacy, could be displaying, aggressive intent... People have a right, to privacy. If you give trust blindly, saying people have to lose your trust, then those, who lose your trust, usually have done so, by hurting you, in some way, in which they have abused your trust. Since trusting others can hurt you, then trust, is not something, you should be expected, to give blindly. Someone who demands your trust, without earning your trust first, could be someone, to never trust...

I put the onus on me, and tell people, that I have, 'healthy mistrust', and that I am able, to come to trust people, through time, based on their actual history. I tell people, that I think, it is both reasonable, and prudent, for me to be, distrustful of them. It can be better, to be a king,

or queen, in one's own game, than to be a pawn, in someone else's?

Giving trust away, casually, can hurt you, materially and emotionally, seriously. I am unwilling, to advise people, to do this.

There have been, no hurricanes, to hit my protected area, this season. To witnesses, Thomas, Asmodeus, Paul, Helene, Daniel, and Chuck, my position, is that my automatic protection, continues this season, in part, because I wrote the *Miami Herald* newspaper, and made a pledge, to protect the area, this hurricane season, and I seek, to honor my pledge.

Asmodeus advises me, to stop giving away, my protection, for nothing in return. I may drop my protection, after this hurricane season. My area does stand out, on the globe, as one that is uniquely blessed, with good weather.

Two hurricanes, Claudette and Danny, have come and gone, with neither striking my primary area. Asmodeus asked me, what was my grudge, against Louisiana, to cause Danny to hit there? I have no grudge, against Louisiana. I did not send, the storm to Louisiana. I do not control weather. I merely have, some influence. I use my influence, to seek to protect, my primary area.

At times, I get depressed, that I live in a place, with a front door, which does not close, with leaks everywhere, that is boiling hot, in the summer, and miserably cold, in the winter, and humid and damp, so that my clothes smell, and my skin gets afflictions, that I seem to lack, public support, for *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, for lack of a lover, for being a slave, to my means of income, for lack of money in the bank, for hostility and rejection, to my words and works, as Christos...

At times, I think I should follow the example, of Guru Rajneesh, and migrate to Australia, to enjoy 'freedom', and 'liberty', and that society in Australia, might survive, a nuclear conflict, between the US, and any other world power...

Fortunately, I remind myself, that I love the beach, which my home is close to, and that, despite hot and cold times, I am normally comfortable, within my home, with a small heater, and with fans, and that I am fortunate, to have good

friends in life, friends who are helpful, in real-world ways, and-or are interesting, mentally stimulating, and fun, that I do have good health, and that my youth, gives me much time, for improvement, that I enjoy, a secure home, secure job, and reliable transportation, and that my time, in life right now, is better, than some other times, I have had in life, and that my words and works, as Christos, are of value, and are needed, in my world, in our world. And essentially, I am at peace, with both my world, and with God.

The radio talk show, with Herbert, went very well. This was entirely about world affairs, about *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, and in no way, publicly related to me, as Christos. There were callers, who asked me questions.

It was mentioned, that I am an author, of Star Wars logic, and of 'liberation ideology'. I did mention, that while I envisioned 'Star Wars', use of lasers, to destroy missiles, to prevent nuclear warfare, that I have come to understand, that lasers can be used, to hit ground-based targets, so can be, a form of offensive weapon, rather than only being, a defensive weapon. I maintain, that peace in our world remains a prime goal.

When I got home, from this radio interview, I found my phone, to once again, be dead. I got a ring, as if my phone service were normal, when I called my home phone, from elsewhere... I did report the situation, to the telephone company. This situation, lasted for two days, and then seemed to fix itself. I mused, that I was being 'protected', against any hostile callers, but I could also hope, to have perhaps received, some calls, from friendly listeners, including from other radio talk shows, guest opportunities.

Asmodeus says, that if I am Christ, that then I must perform, some truly wondrous miracles. Asmodeus says, doing weather, is, 'scrawny magick', even if I am not using 'magick', to do it... Asmodeus says, that the *Bible* warns, that the anti-Christ, will appear before Christ, and that the real Christ, will perform great miracles.

Perhaps a future, or some futures, will interpret this manifestation, of my being, as that of the anti-Christ, and then view my next manifestation, in 3253, as that of Christ, while truly, both manifestations would have been, of me. I do not even know, that I will 'be known', in 3253, only that I

will be alive...

I told Asmodeus, that perhaps Hitler was the heralded anti-Christ.

I told Asmodeus, that I believe, only God performs 'miracles', and that others, can do things, that seem 'miraculous'... I told Asmodeus, that I do not believe, I can actually walk on water, nor levitate myself into the air, or make things materialize, out of thin air, or impose peace on our world.

I do believe, that I can bring understanding, to those who lack it, and perhaps, thus bring some 'sight', metaphorically, to the 'blind', and that perhaps, I can be heard, on radio waves, and thus, metaphorically, be 'appearing in the air'.

I do believe, that I can help people, with emotional wounds, to heal. I believe, peace must be built, and maintained, by humanity, and that I can help, with guidance, in that regard, but that process, is a process, and that I am unable, to 'impose peace'.

I do not believe, problems of our world have been instantly solved, in the past, nor do I believe, that there shall be, instant solutions now, or in the future. I believe, that peace, and civilization, are both artificial, and must be built, and maintained, throughout time.

Some believe, that Armageddon could be, a harvesting of humanity, a time when all are vanquished, and that the 'good', will go to Michael, and the 'bad', will go Lucifer, and the process then started, all over again.

And, for reading this long chapter, I hope you may receive, some joyous mirth, and laughter, in your world, for a moment at least, to uplift your spirit.

= 31 =

ELENA and other things...
September 5, 1985

Hurricane Elena, was truly a phenomenon, as was the media weather exaggeration, and the struggle that I put myself through, was an almost 'witness-less', witlessness, experience.

Elena entered the Gulf of Mexico, after traveling overland, through Cuba, and then missing Key West, though that wonderful island did get some frothy waves. My automatic was not so good, at the time, due to many troublesome drains, and weights on my world. My conscious attention has been on my job, where work demand fell off, and a new, inexperienced worker, Trudy, has been hired, for a lower wage, than I am being paid. I do understand, that there is a business logic, which would urge Michael, to replace me, with a lower paid worker. I feel insecurity, based on my past experience, rather than, due to any lack, in my actual job performance.

Elena became a hurricane, and headed directly, toward Pensacola, Florida, the area where Trudy is from. Impending strike was announced, and the coastal population, hooked into civil defense exercises, and evacuated, or ordered to evacuate. I felt the sureness, certainty, of impending personal defeat, for Elena would be, the first hurricane, to penetrate my primary area, against my automatic and conscious wills. I had little reaction time, and felt doubt, that I could do anything.

I have not been, outside south Florida, in many years. Does this affect my primary area, lessening it? It must, as a primary area is defined, by me, as that area one can touch, from memory of having been there, and, as time goes on, the memory fades, becomes less accurate, and changes can come to an area, so one's connection, can also fade. There do exist, 'secondary methods'...

Trudy said she feared, for her parents' well-being, facing this storm, in the Pensacola area. I asked God to intervene, to protect Pensacola, if I could not do so alone, and I focused, my conscious, and my automatic energies, directly against the storm. Even if I failed, it could not be said, that I had not tried.

Elena swerved, and turned away from Pensacola, heading now directly, for the central west Florida coast, right into the center, of my primary area... Ironically, I realized, that Pensacola, was a place, I had never been, so was actually, outside of my primary area anyway. It seemed, that my focus, had only served, to actually bring Elena to bear against my own lands, when otherwise, my area would have been spared, and Elena would have hit some place outside of my protection pledge.

Thousands more people, were evacuated, or ordered to evacuate, from coastal areas. Some people, might erroneously think, that when an area, is said to be 'evacuated', that some form, of government intervention, has occurred, to actually remove people, from an area. What happens, is that the government, normally does nothing, to evacuate an area, but orders people to evacuate, and this frees insurance companies, from some liabilities, if those people are injured, for remaining, when an evacuation, has been ordered. The only thing, that the government, normally 'evacuates', or removes, is the liability, responsibility, of insurance companies...

The people of Pensacola, were told, they could return home...

I mentioned my struggle, to Asmodeus. What, I asked, would people think, if the storm, penetrated my area? Asmodeus said, Elena's hitting my area, would not be significant, because my ability, to influence weather, is not significant. Asmodeus said, these things happen. I said, I would continue to try, to block, or minimize, Elena.

Elena then stalled, and swirled around, in the waters off the Florida coast, being pushed toward land, by the prevailing high-altitude winds, but then stopped, as if by some unseen force. Northern Florida was beginning to experience flooding, from nonstop drizzling rain, and sadly, there were two small tornadoes.

I told Daniel, that I worried, that Elena might continue, to press against my barrier, blocked, for days, and that could cause, more damage to my area, than if I allowed the storm, to pass through. Tidal surges, at the place, where any storm comes ashore, could be devastating though. A dilemma for me, as to what to do, with my focus... At least, in crashing

against my barrier, Elena's winds were cut, from 120 miles per hour, to 95 miles per hour.

I felt somewhat bound, to my pledge, to protect the area, as I had stated, to the *Miami Herald*, and I wondered, whether Randi, might be asking others, to use their influence, to strike this area...

I decided then, with Paul and Daniel as witnesses, to try to block the storm, for at least two more days, and then I could relent, and let it pass through, to get rid of it that way, if need be.

Elena continued to hover, throughout the next day. Everyone's attention was on this storm. That evening, I meditated, became calm in mind, and merged my mind, with my spirit, assuming god-head energy being levels, for a time. During that time, I envisioned myself, as large, and Elena, as small, and I literally pushed Elena away, from the coast, and back into the Gulf of Mexico, against the prevailing high-altitude winds. After repeating that mental exercise, for an hour, I returned from that energy alpha state, and let my spirit, go free again.

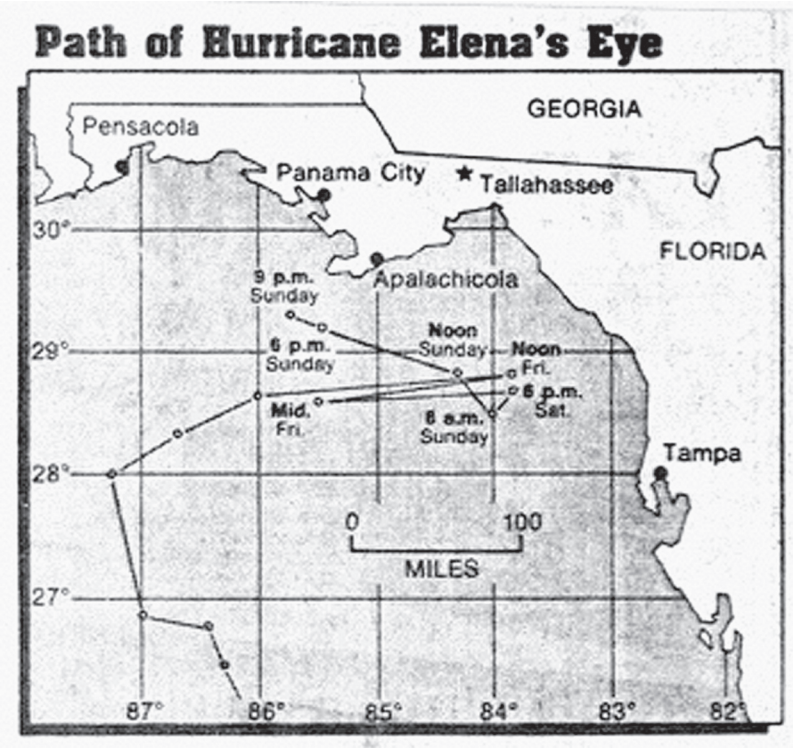
Elena reversed itself that night, as I slept, and began speeding toward Pensacola... In the morning, listening to the news, of the storm's path, I asked again, in Trudy's behalf, that God shield Pensacola, for it is outside, my own primary area. Elena then missed Pensacola, but did hit Mississippi, with winds of over 125 miles per hour...

The people of Mississippi, might not appreciate, my protection of Florida. I cannot dodge, that they suffered, instead of the people, in my area. I did what I was able to do. Perhaps, at some point in the future, I will have an opportunity, to do something good, with my abilities, for the people of Mississippi.

Asmodeus repeats to me, that his abilities are equal to, or greater, than mine. Asmodeus wished for me, to refrain, from getting carried away, by this success. I told Asmodeus, that I had nothing to gloat about, and that I can hope, that in the future, all areas will enjoy some protection. I told Asmodeus, that I hope, our respective abilities, are never put to such a test. And, for what it's worth, this time, I most certainly, did also call upon God, specifically, though I do always count God, as among my allies, and do hope, for my

allies to aid me, or their own, in their own ways, as they see fit.

Asmodeus did say, that he prayed, with a Unity Universal Mind prayer group, that Elena not hit our area, on the Florida southeast coast, and Elena came nowhere near, the Florida east coast.



Part of me does understand, that, as far as any 'Judgment' is concerned, that it is not necessarily my behavior, which might impact, such a Judgment the most, but rather, could be, how people respond to me, as Christos, that generates their 'Judgment'.

I like to think, that the fact, that I teach metaphysics, and how to develop, individual human psychic abilities, to people, is evidence, that I do believe, that others, even if some, rather than all, can learn, to do all that I do, and more. I am uncertain, of how many times, that I might have to say something, before people hear me say it...

I believe, that it is possible, that contemporary humanity's search, for a 'missing link', between itself and other apes, primates, could be foolish. Modern humanity could be a result, of genetic interbreeding, or manipulation, between a higher humanoid, and the ape, or more primitive humans. Mathematically, modern man could be a '5', and a primitive man, a '3'. The search is to find, the missing '4'. However, if the primitive '3', was genetically enhanced, one way or another, by a humanoid '7', then that is how the '5', could have been created. There would be, no '4'. In reproduction, one gets genes, from each parent, which are then totaled and halved, so the final total amount of genes remains the same. So, 3+7 equals 10, which is then divided, by 2, or cut in half, and then results, in a '5'. The missing link could be a '7', rather than a '4'.

The magazines, for *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, have been totally stopped, for the past two days. Just a regular review, for my own good, I reckon, protecting me from mailed bombs... It could be more accurate, for people to argue, that censorship is beneficial, than to seek, to portrays ours, as a 'free press'...

If that which is done to me, seems 'normal', or 'okay', then one might also dispute, that ours, is a 'free country'... My mother likes to say, that one has the right, to do as one pleases, as long as one pleases, to do right...

TROUBLE ON MANY FRONTS
September 25, 1985

I am running into some trouble, on many fronts. Perhaps my world, is under psychic assault, or maybe my planets, are crossed...

My magazines, are not reaching me again, not for the past five mail receiving days. Once again, it may be difficult for me, to put together, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*.

The advice I offer to people, is don't get involved in politics, or reading too many magazines. Just live your own life, as well as you can. Of course, it is up to people, in a government, of the people, by the people, and for the people, to seek to ensure, that 'our' government, is actually beneficial, for the people. Responsibility can be shared, and can be found, where consequence lands... Unfortunately, trying to maintain rights, or social conditions, or seeking to improve our world, can often result, in much hurt or martyrdom... It is perhaps easier, for a single person, to face these challenges, than a married person, or a person with children...

Helene had wanted me, to collect a payment, for electricity, from her tenants. This was an amount, which Helene estimated, as their share, as she receives, one electric bill, for her entire property, which includes three separate living units. However, when Helene had me seek tenants, in her behalf, she said, at that time, that electricity was included, in the rental price. I worry, that Helene might want me, to pay the electric bill, if the tenants do not. Of course, Helene says, that she does not remember, including electricity in the rent. Currently, both the tenants and Helene are unhappy, and I am in the middle.

My car, and my typewriter, are both having problems. The typewriter is tortuous, to seek to use, as it either, fails to print some keys, or, doubles or triples, the printing of other letters... Sometimes its space-bar, fails to operate...

And worst, I am insecure in my job again... I started this job, looking for a niche, and accepted a low wage, to secure my position. Now I am at a more decent wage, and John-S, has hired Trudy, to do some work, that I was doing, at a lower wage than I, at least while she is 'training'. Trudy has

next to nothing, in work experience, but John-S might simply look, at her lower labor costs. John-S has stopped, teaching me new things, and is teaching Trudy, invoicing and bookkeeping, and customer service aspects. This means, as one aspect, that I have to rely on Trudy, to give to me, proper instructions, which she often has challenges doing, as she is ignorant, but she is learning.

John-S may not want, to teach me, because he does not want me, to be able to do, my own business, and compete with him, as he has expressed, repeatedly, that I shall easily have, more money given to me, than he could earn, in a life-time... The reality of my impoverished life seems unable to penetrate, the wealthy reality thatJohn-S casts upon me in his own mind. I somewhat lack interest, in having this business, as my own... John-S seems very concerned ~ concerned enough that he is seeking to separate me, from his customers... While John-S charges, $30 to $40 an hour, for my time, he originally paid me, $5 an hour, so he definitely should enjoy, 'some profit'...

John-S has also, sadly, started to yell at me, for no apparent reason, a change in his demeanor, for which I lack understanding. I have wondered, or suspected, that perhaps, some 'outside force', has influenced John-S' behavior, and have wondered, if substance abuse, might be involved. Some substances, that help one to feel happy, can then make one, feel the opposite, in this case, irritable and nasty, when one lacks that substance.

It is beginning to sink into my head, that perhaps, I have no real alternative in life, to eventually opening, my own little typesetting service. I would certainly make more money, than I am making now... It is also true, that John-S' main ability, was getting the financing, to open his own business, and then hire people, who knew how to do the work, and pay them less, than he charges, for their services. The threat of union activity, seems necessary, to keep employers, on good behavior, toward workers.

When John-S first hired Trudy, he told me, to tell her what to do, and how to do it. When I told Trudy, what needed to be done, and how things should be done, according to John-S' systems, Trudy would just ignore what I said, saying that John-S pays her check, and she doesn't

have to do, anything I say. Trudy did very little. Trudy would sit, at the front counter, and do nothing, saying that is what she had to do, in order to be there, if a customer entered, or if a phone rang... I suspect, that Trudy could have done work, while at the front counter, or done work elsewhere, while I kept an eye, on the front counter. And there are other phones, around the shop... I get paid by the hour, and keep up with, what needs to be done, without help from Trudy, and our business, has slowed down, since Trudy's arrival...

So, I did mention to John-S, that Trudy tends to ignore, what I say, and seems, to wish to hear things, from him. John-S would then yell at me, to just get her to do what you want, and stop bothering me... John-S declined, to affirm to Trudy, that I had right, to tell her what to do... I believe, some clear lines of authority should be indicated, by John-S. I can tell Trudy, what to do, and how to do it, but I am unable, to physically or mentally force her, to do anything. And, I do need to focus, on my own work. Trudy does not substitute for me, with photo-developing, paste-up, or typesetting...

I did manage, to join Trudy and John-S, at the same time, and did ask, that John-S indicate, then, to Trudy, that I could tell her, what needed to be done. Trudy then asserted, that she knows, what she has to do, and John-S should just focus, on things he needs to do... Then Trudy continued to ignore anything I said... I did seek, again, to bring this situation, to John-S' attention, and he again, yelled at me, again saying, that I should just get Trudy to do, whatever needs to be done. I informed John-S, that I seemed unable, to get Trudy to comply.

And that has remained the situation, except that, whenever Trudy makes a mistake, then John-S yells at me, for allowing her to make it, and thus far at least, John-S has refrained, from actually complaining to Trudy, about anything he has yelled at me, for her having done wrong, and he has refrained, from correcting her... And when I say 'yelled', I mean an angry, very loud, tone of voice. Yes, John-S is yelling rather than tallking loudly. Perhaps John-S hoped to influence Trudy's behavior by yelling at me, loud enough that she could hear, but Trudy's behavior failed to change.

So, the work-orders are often wrong, and this got complaints, from ‘the press department’, as John-S seemed to blame him, our single pressman, for allowing Trudy, to make an error, or blamed him, for following instructions, that he should have known, to be wrong. The pressman said he was not a psychic. As for me, I am a projecting psychic, more so than a receptive one...

The pressman, then started going to Trudy, to confirm instructions, and she would always assert, that her instructions were correct, and the pressman, would then follow the instructions, perhaps by then hoping, that they were wrong, and when wrong, John-S would yell at the pressman, and then, after this cycle, was repeated many-many times, that pressman quit.

At least John-S, could not blame me for that, but he did say, he thought I was smiling too much... John-S then ran the press for a while, until he hired Mike... Right now, it is John-S, Trudy, Mike and I, who work here... For the record, John-S, has yet to ever yell, at Trudy, and his yelling, at me, or the pressman, was also ‘new behavior’, at least for us... John-S did yell at Troy, but has been ‘peaceful’, since Troy’s ‘departure’, until now.

There is a ‘joke’, that some people, yell and stomp their feet, to show how right they are, or at least, how right they think they are...

One other situation is that our new pressman, Mike, has been telling me, of his history, as a thief. It seems, that when Mike is friends with someone, he makes a mental note, of their possessions, and then seeks to find, someone who might want to buy something, cheap, and, after he has secured a buyer, he then steals that thing...

I have made a mental note, not to bring Mike, to my home, even though, he says, this behavior, is now, ‘in the past’...

Mike’s mother has a storage business, and lately, Mike has been bringing items to work, which some of his ‘friends’, have come to our shop, to view. I suspect, that some of these things might have been stolen, from people who rent storage units, from Mike’s mother. I did mention to John-S, that I wondered, if perhaps some of the items, that Mike sought to sell, from the print-shop, might be stolen goods,

and advised John-S, that he should prohibit Mike, from selling anything, from the print-shop, as a 'just in case'... I did not mention, to John-S, the confidential history, that Mike had shared with me... John-S said, he thought poorly of me, for saying such a terrible thing...

[140526 ~ There did come a time, when police visited our shop, to inquire about some things, Mike had sold, which seemed to perhaps be, from his mother's storage units. Mike did leave our employ, at that time, and I am uncertain, of anything related to that situation.]

On another topic, the Protestant Church of God, says, "When Jesus spoke on earth, only 120 people believed, what he said (Acts 1:15), though he preached, his message from God, to multiple thousands." I suppose they came, for the free food and-or healing, and they could not have cared less, about anything Jesus might have had to say, like those who go to churches, for free food, and put up with a required prayer before the meal.

= 31 =

EVERYONE WILL BUY YOU A DRINK...
BUT WHO WILL GIVE YOU FOOD ? ? ?
October 7, 1985

Asmodeus showed to me, an astrology book, which used famous people, to illustrate personality traits, associated with astrological signs. To me, each human being, is capable of experiencing, within one life-time, all the traits, assigned to every astrological sign, even if not all, will actually do so, depending on each person's, specific individual evolution.

For instance, although 'stubbornness', is sometimes attributed, to Ares and Taurus, I believe, that anyone, of any astrological sign, is capable of being stubborn. Although Pisces are said to be, able to be, 'slippery', like a fish, I tend to think, that people of other astrological signs, could also be, 'slippery', if they wish to seek to be.

Nonetheless, although I do tend, to personally discount, astrology, I can agree, that astrology could be, an influence among influences...

[140425 ~ There could be 'rivers of energy', perhaps of 'ether', which flow through our cosmos. As these rivers flow, they go through galactic groups and planets, and these groups and planets, are said to leave, 'imprints', upon those energies. When one is born, one is said to be influenced, 'imprinted', by the energies that were flowing, at that time.]

Asmodeus said, that I should hide my astrology chart, because any talented astrologer could use my chart, to determine bad times for me, and to seek to aggravate, those bad times. I would suspect, that any talented astrologer, could make their own chart, without need to reference, any existing one, and that there could be, some differences in interpretation, even of the same chart.

If one wished to be prudent, then it would be, one's birth date, birth time, and location of birth, that one should seek to conceal.

I told Asmodeus, that any object, could be used, to focus against someone, and some people, could do so, with their minds. There, perhaps, is no guarantee of protection. One should seek, to improve dharma, so that people can be content, as it tends to be, hurt or discontent people, who

seek to do, damage to others. I told Asmodeus, that only one's alignment, with God, with allies, or with positive dharma, really offer one, any protection.

I told Asmodeus, that I must seek to avoid, being controlled by fear, though I can respect fear, as an advisor.

Humorously, I told Asmodeus, that, as Christos, I could turn our whole world, upside down, helping to manifest good karma, to those who are downtrodden, while producing some punishment, for those who rule and oppress. I told Asmodeus, that perhaps, this is something, done by Christos, automatically, as Christos' interactions with our world, are viewed by God, before Judgment...

Asmodeus said, that if I could punish the wicked, and reward those who are good, then I should do so, now. Why wait?

I said, that I seem to do so, automatically, with my bounce. Perhaps I lack self-confidence. I told Asmodeus, that my focus is more upon tomorrow, than upon today, that I seek to learn, the causes of problems, to help to bring solutions, to those problems, to help make ours, a better world.

Asmodeus seemed to believe, that I was suicidal, for pursuing a path of Christos. I told Asmodeus, that I hope to live, even if understanding, that there are some risks. I told Asmodeus, that I seek to shield my privacy, as Jualt, to help prolong, my experience of this life, as Christos. It is my desire, to seek to enjoy life. I do not welcome, the 'immortal glory', of martyrdom. I believe, that Jesus was willing to die, for his beliefs, but that he might have preferred, to live for his beliefs. I believe, Jesus was a human being... I believe, that most human beings would prefer to enjoy life. I believe, the persecution, and rejection, of Jesus' words and works, produced some negative bounce.

For a long time, some people have condemned homosexuality, as 'unnatural'. Now that homosexuality, or bisexuality, has been found among animals, and thus 'natural', at least for some, so some are now saying, that homosexuality is 'animal behavior', or 'uncivilized'. One might notice, that heterosexuality, is found among animals also, so neither homosexuality, nor heterosexuality, are inherently, more or less, 'animal behavior'.

Some, including my mother, then seek to say, that any sexual behavior, should only be, for the purpose of having children, and that anything else, is contemptible, or condemnable, animal behavior. I disagree...

I find sex, to be for recreation, and for procreation. I think sexual recreation, can be healthy, physically good for one's body, and also emotionally healthy, one fun thing that people can do. I believe sex, should be consensual.

Helene has returned to town, and was angry with me, because of her dispute, with her tenants, over the electric bill. I told Helene, that I would prefer, to remain neutral, and reminded her, that she did say, electricity would be included, in the rent. I have told the tenants, that Helene wants a payment from them, for electricity, and they have declined, to pay that extra amount. Helene must pay the electric bill, as is, or lose electrical service, at her own home. I am uncertain, of what more, Helene might wish, for me to do, in this dispute, in her behalf. I believe any harmful act, against those tenants, would fail to get, the electric bill paid. I know, Helene has ample funds, to pay this bill...

Sadly, for me, Helene, in her anger, has said, that I am no friend of hers, and she is surprised at me... Helene expressed, that even if she had said, that electricity would be included, in the rent, that she now is saying, that she wants a share of electricity, to be paid by the tenants, and she would have expected, for me to support her, in this. Helene said, she was shocked, appalled, and disappointed, in me, and that she expected, better from me...

I sought to say, that I have supported her, that I have put her 'request', to her tenants...

Helene said that she wants Yoda, a 24-year-old gentleman, to move in with her, and that he wants his privacy, so I should move, within the next two weeks. Yoda will have his own room, in Helene's lakefront house, where she lives. Yoda's mother, is a friend of Helene's, and they are 'moneyed', and Yoda apparently, shares the benefits, of 'family money'...

I have not saved, enough money to afford, an apartment's first and last month's rent, and security deposit, and utility deposits. My job takes my time, often six days a week, and I spend the seventh day, on *WORLD PRESS*

WATCH.

So, Helene seems adamant, that I be off her property, in two weeks, while I seem to lack, the time and money, to easily comply. And, I am also carrying, dependent Matthew...

Who is Matthew???

Well, for reasons of family conflict, and divorce, when Matthew was 15, his mother took him, to the nearest interstate highway, and wished him luck in life, and left him there. Matthew's mother said she was unable to afford, to feed and house him. The world at large became Matthew's parent, as it did, in my case too.

The first group, to abandon Matthew, after his family, were married people, for they are busy, building their own nests, and do not wish, to spare their resources, on a homeless unskilled waif. The next group, to abandon Matthew, was Christians, because he did not belong, to their specific local church. Single heterosexual males, lacked any interest in Matthew, and perhaps viewed him, as a potential rival for women. Many women lacked interest, in Matthew, because they practically select, for men with wallets, or who can be useful, and Matthew lacks money or skills.

The only people, who were interested in Matthew, were homosexual males, or women who might enjoy sex, with a young male. There is saying, that, in life, when one door closes, another opens. Matthew found these doors, to mostly be, bedroom doors... There were some, who were lonely, and wanted a companion. I tend to think, that it is these groups, who, in Jesus' time, were called Samaritans.

Today, Matthew is 23. To Matthew's possible discredit, he has learned, that getting a lonely man, to care for him, in return for sexual favors, is easier than working, a low-paying job. I have told Matthew, that if he would job hunt, then he could stay with me. Matthew is not someone, I would wish to have sex with, nor have I had sex with him. There were times, in my life, when I was homeless and drifting, and some good people, did give shelter to me. I hope to repay, some of that karma, by helping others, in the same way, as others helped me.

Matthew is also facing, some competition, from young

people, who might also lack job skills, but who are at, within, their own family homes, and can work for less money, than Matthew might hope, or need, to earn. I told Matthew, while a job, might fail to allow him, to have a place by himself, that it could allow, for him to have, his own space, in a shared living space. And this goal seems appealing to Matthew.

I can be pleased, that Matthew has applied, for some jobs, but his lack of experience, is unhelpful, as perhaps could be, his being a stranger to this area, and lack of any references. I have advised Matthew, that getting, and a holding a job, can be challenging, for anyone, and that it can be normal, for him to face, some discouraging thoughts. I told Matthew, that I am pleased, by his effort.

I can hope, that if Matthew does get a job, that he might, share costs with me, for a living space of our own. I am mindful, that within Helene's timeframe, Matthew is likely to be, unhelpful to me. A two-bedroom apartment, can allow one to split costs, and be less expensive for one, than having to afford, a single bedroom apartment, by oneself. In my own past, I have rented two-bedroom apartments, with the intention, of renting out the second bedroom, to reduce my living costs.

I believe, Matthew could be wrong, to think that he could find security, in someone else's pocket. Matthew believes, that his youth, and appearance, can allow him, to find some temporary, or prolonged security, and he is confident, that he could continue, in this way, for years.

I have advised Matthew, this his youthful appearance, and sexual desirability, could naturally fade, and that could then result, in him facing, at an older age, the same situation, he now faces, and that it could be, better for him, to seek to get, a foothold in life now, rather than later.

I am not yet prepared, to abandon Matthew, to put him, 'back on the street'. I find Matthew, to be likeable, and good company. Paul seems jealous, that Matthew is with me. I have assured Paul, that I am platonic with Matthew, but Paul remains, only nasty to Matthew... Paul might be inclined, to allow me, to live in his second bedroom, but not with Matthew, even though, there are now two separate beds, in that room.

Even though, Daniel has two extra bedrooms, he says,

that I could only live with him, if I share his bedroom with him. I have refrained, from fooling around, with Daniel, in part, because he has expressed, some romantic affection, for me, and I do not feel this, for him, and I wish to avoid, harming him, and I feel, that if I allowed Daniel, to enjoy my body, that then his attraction, would grow, and the friendship we now enjoy, could end. I believe, that Daniel believes, the friendship we now enjoy, could end, if we lived together without sex. I do lack, any lustful desire, to play with Daniel's body... I understand, that Daniel seems able, to maintain his friendship with me, as is, due to the current distance, between our living spaces...

My situation then, is not good, at this moment. I can hope, that Daniel or Chuck, might be helpful, in this situation, as either, might at least house Matthew... I am working, and am able, to cover the living costs, of Matthew and myself. It is the initial start-up costs, of an apartment of my own, that I am unable to afford, at this moment.

And, now Matthew says, he will get a job, once I have found, a place for us... I have suggested, that Matthew seek work, near where I work, so that then he could ride to his job with me, regardless of where we live. I think, Matthew should keep looking, for work now. Matthew thinks, that his residence location, needs to be determined, before he finds a work location...

I recall, that when I was drifting, and was granted shelter, in Pompano Beach, that I then hunted for a job, and got one in Sunrise, and then sought to find, and found, a room to rent, near that job. For me, in that situation, I let the location of work, determine, where my residence, would then be located.

HOSTILE TRUTHS
October 9, 1985

Tropical storm Isabel has intensified, with gusts of wind, up to 75 miles per hour. I do not wish harm, upon my territory, but see the storm, as a coincidental reflection, of my situation.

Paul told me, I could stay, in his spare bedroom, for free temporarily, until I am able, to get a place of my own, but he said, that Matthew, could not stay there. Chuck said, I could rent, his empty efficiency apartment, and that he would pay Matthew, $100 for sexual favors, much more than Chuck's norm. I am uncertain, if this would be, a one-time thing. I joked to myself, that I might have advised Matthew, to get the money first, and to avoid accepting a check... However, Matthew said, he wished to remain, 'loyal' to me, so he declined, Chuck's offer, and Chuck then became uncertain, of when that efficiency, might become available, for Matthew and I...

Chuck and I, have been acquainted, for at least ten years, but have no sex. Perhaps Chuck's attitude is why he has no friends, but he normally, does not care about that, as his job is stable, and he is content as is, and meets his own needs in life. Jay does provide, some companionship to Chuck, and helps to bring, some 'men' to Chuck... While Chuck might find, a lack of need, for helpful friends now, I do recall, that when Chuck was down and out, sick, that he then only had me, to help him.

Chuck seems willing, to overlook, some really questionable, 'bad points', in people, if he has sex with them, and seems equally willing, to overlook good traits, if he lacks sex with someone.

I found it 'confusing', that, first of all, Chuck would offer so much money, to Matthew, and second of all, that Matthew would decline. For my part, I was unwilling, to seek to compel, Matthew to do this, if he did not wish, to do that.

Matthew then expressed, that he might enjoy, a union with me. I told Matthew, that might be something, for me to consider, after he got a job, and showed me, he could be a partner, for me in life. Matthew and I, remain platonic. Apparently, Matthew might have, some sexual interest, in

me. Perhaps Matthew, who has been accustomed, to being an object of desire, now might find me, to be acceptable, to him, as an object for his desire...

I find Matthew, to be good company, fun, and can enjoy, living with him. However, I generally prefer, to frolic with masculine, or muscular men, or even men, a little older than Matthew. I suppose, to be quite blunt, Matthew is perhaps, just a touch, too feminine, to arouse my lust... I believe, some closeted gay men, those who hide their sexuality, from public view, might be uncomfortable, with Matthew around, if he seems to be, 'obviously gay'. I think this quandary, exists for Paul.

[140425 ~ I suppose, though I did not consider it at the time, due to my being platonic with Matthew, but perhaps, Matthew's being, 'overly gay', was disturbing to Helene... If so, Helene never mentioned it.]

[140526 ~ There are both, masculine and feminine men, within the gay community, and for the most part, they do get along, at least in private, with one another. There are some masculine gay men, who like to partner, with feminine gay men, and most feminine gay men, do like to pair up, with masculine gay men. However, most masculine gay men, prefer to be with, other masculine gay men.]

[140526 ~ Perhaps, because feminine men, are often assumed, to be 'gay', while masculine men, are often assumed, to be 'straight', it has been feminine gay men, who have been, in the forefront, of seeking equal rights, for homosexuals. Masculine gay men, are often able, to 'pass' as straight, and thus can avoid, some of the hateful discrimination, and adversity, that homosexuals can face, as a norm. Feminine gay men, as a norm, have had to face adversity, for being gay, and thus, they have had to fight, for their 'rights', more so, than masculine gay men.]

[140526 ~ Some feminine gay men, have sadly disparaged, some masculine gay men, as being, 'less than gay', and this 'complaint', is perhaps based, in part, on how feminine gay men, have often focused on, advancing equal rights, for all homosexuals, while masculine gay men, have often focused on, advancing their sex lives...]

[140526 ~ At any rate, there can be those, even within gay circles, who are 'uncomfortable', to be 'publicly

associated', with feminine men, lest that association, taint their image, and cause them to face, some adversity in life. I understood, that this situation, also compounded, Matthew's situation.]

[140526 ~ While I admit, that Matthew's 'feminine traits', influenced me, from wanting him, as a sexual lover, or from having romantic feelings for him, I did, nonetheless, stand by him, as a friend, in real-world ways.]

With Daniel, he too, is 'obviously gay', and that perhaps, keeps me from having, any desire, to be romantic or sexual, with him, though truly, sincerely, I do have great affection, for Daniel, as a person, and I do sincerely, truly, find much intellectual stimulation, with Daniel.

However, it could be Daniel's perception, of Matthew, as being perhaps maybe, a touch feminine, that causes Daniel, to feel some annoyance with me, for my being able, to be close to Matthew, while being unwilling to be, too close to him. For the record, it was Daniel, who said, we could not have, separate bedrooms, if we lived together. If our shoes were reversed, I would give shelter to Daniel, without requiring sexual favors.

When I mentioned to Paul, that Chuck would not let me, have his efficiency, because Matthew was declining, to have sex with Chuck, Paul then said, his friendship with me, would be over, if I continued to have, anything to do with Matthew. In other words, even the offer, of temporary shelter, in his extra bedroom, would be withdrawn...

I assured Paul, that I do value his friendship, though sometimes, its value seemed to dim, and said, I would continue to house Matthew, in my current efficiency. I told Paul, that if our friendship, could end so suddenly, and easily, then it probably, wasn't much of a friendship anyway, and that his only interest, was probably in having my body, which I occasionally allow him to enjoy, safely. My butt, is 'off limits', to all...

Paul said, I was 'cruel', to say such a thing. I said, that I am capable of error. I apologized to Paul, if I caused him any offense, and said that, right now, I seem to be 'agitated', by my situation.

I later told Paul, that I probably would take, Chuck's efficiency, as Matthew had agreed, to have sex with Chuck.

That was untrue. However, Paul then became nice to me again, and said, that both Matthew and I could stay, in his extra bedroom.

I assured Paul, that Matthew and I would use separate beds, and that I remain platonic, with Matthew. I told Paul, that as far as I was concerned, Matthew's presence in my life, would fail to affect, my relationship with him, now, in the same way, that it had failed to do so, previously. I told Paul, that I would pay to him, a fair price for rent, and would want some privacy, in my own room. Paul agreed.

I gave $80 to Paul, to show, that I did intend to move in with him. I started, moving things of mine, to Paul's.

Paul announced, that he had bought shelves, and a bureau for me, and even a new, clear, see-through curtain, for the shower, so he could come in, and enjoy observing me, when I shower...

I somewhat resented, Paul's 'decadence', and told myself, that Paul was certainly, no longer much of a friend, and was primarily, being lustful. Given my situation, I resolved, that I would stomach, being at Paul's, temporarily, until I saved the money, to get a place of my own.

When Matthew and I arrived, at Paul's to stay, Paul then said, that Matthew could not stay, and ordered him, out of the place, to go, "back onto the streets, where you belong..."

I had, fortunately, moved into Paul's, a week before my deadline, at Helene's was up, which Paul did not know. Matthew and I thought, we might enjoy, the more comfortable situation, in that room at Paul's, with its central air conditioning, and I still had more things, to move from Helene's.

I turned around, to leave with Matthew, and then Paul, began throwing, a real loud hysterical fit... Paul said, that I could not leave, that only Matthew, was to leave.

I told Paul, that after all of this time, he didn't know me at all, if he thought, I would casually abandon anyone, to the harsh realities, of the street.

I mentioned to Paul, that if he would not allow me, to stay there, that then he should return, my rent payment to me.

Paul said, that if I did not move in with him, that I would owe him $150, because he would not have bought, the

shelves, bureau, and the see-through shower-curtain, otherwise.

I told Paul, that at a minimum, I would like to see his receipts, as I doubted, that he had spent, more than $50, for all of that. I also told Paul, that regardless, that his decision to buy things, was his alone, and I would not be responsible, for his decisions, to spend money, allegedly in my behalf, without consulting me.

Paul said, he would keep the things, which he had bought, but still wanted me, to pay him $150, for his time and trouble, and costs, to do so in my behalf. In other words, Paul would not return, any of my money to me. I had never seen Paul, be such an awful creature before.

Matthew and I returned to my efficiency, at Helene's, and I left my things, at Paul's for then. I told Paul, that I would have to think about things.

Daniel said, that neither Matthew, nor I, could stay with him, as his mother, was coming to visit. Chuck said, that I could stay with Paul, and that Matthew, could share his bed... It seems that Paul, has been on the phone, two or three times a day, with Chuck, so knew Chuck's terms to me.

So, basically, with few alternatives, I put most of my things, into storage, and brought Matthew, to Chuck's. I myself went to Paul's. No one is happy. Daniel is avoiding me, until things calm down. Matthew says, he is refusing, to sleep with Chuck, but is able to stay, on a sofa, for now, though he must leave, when Chuck leaves, and must be waiting there, when Chuck returns from work, so he can enter, when Chuck enters. Matthew says, Chuck says, that Chuck will lock him out, if he leaves after dark... And, it is that time of season, when our days, are getting shorter...

I am minimizing, my contact and conversation, with Paul, to perhaps even below, bare minimum. I have let it be known, in no uncertain terms, that there is to be, absolutely nothing physical, between Paul and me.

Once I moved in with Paul, he said, that I could not have guests over, at any time. Paul is also speaking with my mother, and probably trying to get money out of her, by stressing to her, how much he is doing for me. Paul maintains now, that I must start socializing, in my family's

world. I understand too well, that aristocrats, can seem to demand, that poor relatives, be servants, and I would rather be working, and independent, on my own.

Paul says, that I should have, nothing to do with Asmodeus, because Asmodeus, is a socialist. Paul says, that my associating with Asmodeus is bad for my image, and reputation. It seems equally obvious to me, that my associating with Paul, who is known, in 'society', as a gigolo, an escort for wealthy matrons, older women, could be equally detrimental, for my 'reputation'... The 'young guys', in that 'field of employment', are in their mid-50s... Paul is 'somewhat known', as gay, but these women are looking for, 'presentable and proper' escorts, to social functions, rather than for sex.

I see, that both Paul and Asmodeus, have been real-world friends, to me, and I am sorry, that right now, I am in this position, and that, most all of my relationships, seem to have, some strains upon them, though I like to believe, that none of these changes, has been on my side, of our boards. Perhaps what is occurring, is a loss of illusions, and a greater sight, of 'reality'...

It seems, that even if one is able, to get along, with many different types of people, one's friends, will not necessarily, get along well, with each other.

= 31 =

THE PROCESS OF SURRENDER
October 15, 1985

Asmodeus was very angry toward Helene, for her manipulation of me, which resulted, in my being at Paul's, as that has aggravated Asmodeus, due to Paul's prohibition, of allowing Asmodeus, to visit me there. As strong as Paul's hostility, toward Asmodeus, might now seem, to openly be, which had been previously absent, allegedly due to Asmodeus's being a socialist, it has resulted, in an equally strong, or stronger, reaction, from Asmodeus, toward "our fascist oppressors", who he says "are responsible, for deliberately imposing poverty, upon the people, as a means of oppression..."

If Helene, had given to me, more time, then I could have become, able to afford, to secure a place, of my own... Asmodeus says, that was not accidental, but was deliberate manipulation, by Helene, to get me, to go to Paul's. Asmodeus has, a 'full house', but he did say, after Paul prohibited him from visiting me at Paul's, that I could stay at his place, on a bedroll, on the floor there, with Matthew... Asmodeus lacked space, for any of my things, and had space, only for our bodies. Asmodeus owns his home, inherited from his mother, after her death. Asmodeus' home is basically full, wall-to-wall with 'clutter', except for walking and sitting areas, and there are often many people there, enjoying conversation, music, and party. If nothing else, at least Paul, does want me there, and I think my things are safe at Paul's...

Matthew says, he wishes to be with me, but he has been, unable or unwilling, to find a job, and what Matthew wants, is for me to shelter, and carry him... The less Matthew does, to try to get on his own two feet, the more I am inclined, to make the best of things, with Paul.

Paul does need, my rent money, as extra income. Paul has awakened me on three mornings, by trying to crawl into bed with me, and each time, I have pushed him out of bed. On the third day, I am afraid, that I kicked Paul, out of my bed, using my legs and feet, and propelled him, some distance, so that he expressed, some pain...

Paul is not sexually loyal, to anyone, and perhaps, due

to his age, and physical body, he seeks much recreational sex, in darkness at adult 'book-stores', or adult 'movie theatres'... I can be pleased, when others are able to find, sources of joy in life, but I must also be concerned, with disease, that some promiscuous people, might risk carrying...

Matthew says, he has continued to decline, to let Chuck, enjoy his body, and that he finds Chuck, is becoming unfriendly, though he has not yet, kicked Matthew out. Matthew hopes, that I can find, a place for us, before Chuck kicks him out...

I have advised Matthew, that if Chuck, is inappropriate for him, and I am unable, to secure a place, for a while, then he might consider, seeking another place to roost. Asmodeus, would let Matthew, stay at his home, but Matthew turns his nose up, at the living conditions, at Asmodeus' home...

I am actually surprised, that Matthew has not left Chuck, and left me behind also, and found someone, who is comfortable in life, who would welcome his company, and easily financially afford, to carry him, something I believe, that Matthew could probably do, without that much trouble, but one never knows, eh. Life can have, its nasty, hidden surprises, and so sometimes, the devil one knows, might indeed be better, than the devil, one has yet to face...

I think I have been foolish, to spend my time, upon Chuck...

For her part, Helene has not dropped me, and continues, to have me edit, her newspaper entertainment column, and now, she is saying, she wants me, to help her, to make a book version, adapted from the last version, of her stage-play. Helene attributes my move, to Yoda, and says that she knows, I am in better living conditions, with Paul, in his comfortable town-home, than I was, at the Sugar Shack... I think I was better off, in the shack... The distance I must commute, to work, from Paul's, is more than double, the distance to work, from Helene's, and that increases, my fuel costs, and takes more of my time...

Paul has given me, space for my desk, in the back of a storage area, of his condominium, and there I can work, on *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. Despite the turmoil in my life, I

have kept steady, and on proper schedule, with *WORLD PRESS WATCH*... And both Paul, and Asmodeus, help to distribute, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*... Somewhat amusing, for one, of the elite, and one, of the proletariat, to both enjoy, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, precisely because, I do accurately convey, the points of view, to which they subscribe, intact.

A paradox, to me, of similarity, between the SU communist system, the US 'capitalist' system, and the India caste system, is that, they all have, the same social pyramids... Each has a small elite, and then, a layer of insulation, a middle of managers and supervisors, and a vast bottom... The percentages of population, within each stratum, tend to be the same, in India, the US, and the SU. It seems to me, that perhaps this pyramid, is 'permanent', regardless of the social system...

I would suggest then, that it behooves the top, to keep the bottom, as comfortable, and content, as possible, for otherwise, the bottom might wish, to decapitate the top, or head... Perhaps when that occurs, it is just a reflection, of a reality anyway, when a head, has already detached itself, from the body...

Paul does discourage me, from doing anything more, with *The Life of Christos*, and says that path, that pursuit, is detrimental to me, and I should drop it.

Asmodeus says, that I am different, from others he has met, who have a similar bent in life, as me, those who claim to be Jesus, in that he says, I seem able to cope, with my messianic complex. Asmodeus says, all the others he has learned about or known, have become, consumed by the path, and either lost their worlds, or gotten followers to support them.

I view myself, as a teacher and messenger, and hope that people, can receive my teachings, from my books. I like the idea, of being able to have, my own life, of being able, to enjoy life, just as any other person might do. In the same way, that other people, can focus on their real-world needs, and upon their spiritual needs, so too, do I, hope to have a focus, upon both of those aspects, of life. I would prefer, to live on my own two feet, through fair trade.

I lack any desire, to have 'followers', as my teachings,

are designed, to help people walk, on their own two feet. Some people, seem to view Jesus, as a magick escalator, or elevator, and seem to believe, that by accepting Jesus, or by saying they are Christians, that they will then be, magickally transported, to after-life heaven, regardless of what they do in life. I provide a stairway, which people have to walk upon themselves, and I advise people, that it is their behavior, which determines their afterlife destinations... Everyone will vote for Santa Claus. I am not, Santa Claus.

At any rate, in his anger, in my presence, Asmodeus hurtled a curse, at Helene, for her treatment of me, and told me, that if Helene had not mistreated me, then nothing would happen to her... Asmodeus said, that his curse would only flow toward Helene, if she had actually been, harmful to me. I remained neutral. Helene got into a bad car accident, but she was, fortunately, unhurt, though unfortunately, her car was very badly damaged. Helene no longer enjoys, the protection from my presence.

Some people, seem to be able, to do some 'questionable' things, when in my world, and be spared, from negative bounce, perhaps because they still enjoy, my good-will overall. However, when these people, then step away from me, they do seem, to then receive, some bounce... I hope, Helene generates positive karma, to raise her dharma, to protective levels.

I have spoken poorly, of Paul, recently, though I have accurately reflected, his behavior and positions, in this journal. I admit, I do feel less fond of Paul, than previously, but I do acknowledge, that he continues to help me, in real-world ways... I feel nothing romantic, toward Paul, and have told him this, and am concerned, that my proximity to him, might strengthen, his possessiveness of me, which might then, cause him some distress, when I do step away, as my goal remains, to gain a living space, of my own.

SURRENDER OR MOVE
October 20, 1985

Surrender or move... I must either, mend my bridges with Paul, and live politely with him, or, I must be prepared to move, once Paul determines, that he is unable, to have his way with me... I am definitely, not happy, at Paul's. None of my things, are at Paul's, except for clothing, and my typewriter... It is a long drive, on Saturday, to get my mail, if need be... Paul insists, on everything being his way, including music, and television shows. Paul barges into my room, in the mornings, to fling open wide my curtains. Paul wants all the furniture, left exactly as is. At least, Paul has dropped his demand, that I pay him $150, for the few things he bought, though that issue, might resurrect, when I do move...

Paul has, apparently been crossing paths, with my mother, at social events, and has been speaking with her, on the telephone. Paul says, that he has told my mother, the good news, that I am now living with him, and tells me, how glad she is, for me, for my improvement in life.

I have wondered, if a gentleman, who lives by pleasing wealthy matrons, might have been influenced, in some way, by my mother, and I have wondered, if my mother, might have thought, that this might actually result, in some damage, to my relationship with Paul, which might then remove him, as one of my defenders, in her society, as an obstacle to her, in that society. And you know what, I basically do not care, about any of that... To some degree, I have somewhat turned my back, upon that entire reality.

Paul has told me, that he is deeply in debt, so needs my rent, as income, to help him out some. Yet Paul gives nothing to me, except for a bed to sleep in. Paul has not physically bothered me recently... I expect Paul, to grow discontent, with my refusal, to let him enjoy my body. I have told Paul, that I am being loyal, to Matthew...

Paul says, all my friends, are low class, and thus very undesirable, and he wishes to keep, a 'clean world'... Paul says, I am wrong, to have friends, who are normal everyday people, though he phrases it, a bit more critically. Paul is constant, in his criticism. I think my friends, are none of

Paul's business. Paul said, I could have no visitors. Now Paul says, that if he approves of someone, then that person, can visit me, but only until 9:00pm. I tend to work until then, each night...

Apparently, according to Asmodeus, Paul refrains, from allowing Asmodeus, to speak to me, on the telephone, and refrains, from giving to me, any phone messages, from Asmodeus... I visit Asmodeus sometimes, on my way home, from work... Asmodeus says, that if he didn't like me so much, and didn't like *WORLD PRESS WATCH* so much, that, in his offense at Paul, and my acceptance, of Paul's being offensive to him, that he would step away from me...

I sought to put it to Paul, that I need to be able, to communicate with Asmodeus, for business reasons at least, but Paul remains adamant, that my being associated, with a "low class dirty socialist", is wrong for me, bad for me, harmful to me, and that I should thank him, for his protection...

Humanity is responsible, for the conditions of our world. Some say, God is responsible... Some say, God created humanity, to experience physical human life. I have wondered if Jesus was killed, precisely because, he was a manifestation of God. Jesus came to Earth, and said, "I am God. You are all my children." The people responded, "He's the one, who's responsible, for how horrible things are! Kill him! Kill him!"

I have wondered, if Jesus might have been killed, precisely because he was an innocent, decent, good human being. People thought Jesus, made them look bad. People forgot, that they make themselves look bad...

Perhaps people condemned Jesus, because he urged all, to live in decent ways. Be kind. Be loving. Treat thy neighbor as thyself... Didn't Jesus know, that it's a bad world, so one has to be worse? Was Jesus trying to upset the rulers, of human hells?

I cannot argue, that some people, are given to money, to pursuit of money, be these rich or poor, even if they could be content... Some people seem easily willing, to be harmful to others, even for casual or petty reasons, and some perhaps, just for sport. However, I do not find economics, or economic status, to be relevant, to this... If genetics is

indeed a factor, then, while one might consider, some deliberate genetic manipulation, one might also be forewarned, that some might consider, predatory, or harmful traits, to be desirable, for 'warriors', or even among the people, to terrorize the people, to promote hate and division...

People seem to have forgotten, that a goal, is to make ours, a better world. Some people might say, that there has never been, a better world, and never will be, because it is impossible, to have people, in a decent world, because people themselves, prefer to live, in karmically negative ways. Humanity was a mistake to create, and a mistake to tolerate?

I suppose, that there could be some, among ETs, who might prefer, to prevent 'humanity', from expanding, into 'their' neighborhoods...

Two current spiritual leaders, from among 'the Elect', the 33 shammas, seemed to have changed, their previous positions, and adopted my positions, on two separate issues.

The first is Lightning Amen, the Arizona Jesus. Lightning Amen went to churches, and told them, that he is Jesus. Arizona Jesus met with scorn and ridicule. Lightning Amen, then went into the Arizona desert, and gathered people, followers, around himself. Arizona Jesus, sent his followers, back into our world, with nothing, telling them to have nothing material, to live by scavenging, and to live upon, the kindness of others. Arizona Jesus, would generate, and cast energy, back onto our world, from the interactions, of his followers, with our world.

However, now Arizona Jesus, has renounced his followers, and returned, to seeking to live, by fair trade, in our material world. In doing so, Arizona Jesus has seemed, to come to agree, with my position, that each person, should seek to do, what is necessary to survive, to be content and comfortable, in our material and physical world, through ways that are karmically positive overall. Seeking to live, only by begging, can create a karmic debt, for beggars... Scavenging, can be karmically neutral, or positive...

Bagwan Rajneesh has also renounced his followers. Rajneesh said, his group was becoming political, and

superior-minded, in how they dealt with other groups, and this was not his intent. Rajneesh said his intent, was simply to teach people, about the world around them, and to balance the spiritual, with the material, paths.

Whereas Arizona Jesus, at least previously, told his followers, to be celibate, throughout life, Bagwan told his followers, to enjoy casual sex, at every opportunity... Rajneesh had advised, that promiscuity, keeps people happy, and without possessive conflicts, from unions. The only union was of a member of the group, with the group. Bagwan has now come to agree, with my warnings, that dangers of sex, can include, unwanted pregnancy, and disease...

[190513 ~ I also note, that while both Bagwan Rajneesh and Arizona Jesus, preached against their followers having material possessions, lest their focus on kama impede their upward spiritual evolution, they required their followers, to give their material things, to Lightning Amen or Bagwan Rajneesh, and both Lightning Amen and Bagwan Rajneesh retained those material things themselves, with the rationalization that they would then care for their followers' material needs, as they could responsibly handle, the balance of material and spiritual things. This to me seemed a touch hypocritical, self-serving. And Lightning Amen, sent his followers into the world to scavenge, so he did not use their material things, to help care for their material needs.]

Well... It seems, that my steam, for the evening, is now spent...

= 31 =

THE GREAT AND TERRIBLE DAY OF THE LORD
October 21, 1985

I have pushed Asmodeus, into writing a chapter, of his own book. Not only do I hope, that Asmodeus can preserve, and pass on, my writings, I also hope, that Asmodeus, can do the same, with his own material. I do respect, Asmodeus' knowledge.

I suppose, that the reactions I face, to me as Christos in life, are similar, to the reactions, which Jesus faced, in life. I suppose, that the reactions, that friends of mine, face in life, due to any association, with me, are similar, to the reactions, that friends of Jesus, faced in life, due to any association, with Jesus...

Asmodeus told me, a brief story, about his view, of the 'great and terrible day of the Lord', as foretold, in the Christian *Bible*. This tale, especially concerns Asmodeus, as he feels, he is the manifestation, of Elijah, one of the two witnesses, in the same way, that I believe, I am the manifestation of Christos, though Asmodeus only agrees, that I am, at least sincere, when I say, that I am, a manifestation of Christos. Asmodeus does say, that he is unable to discount, or deny, the possibility, of my being as Christos, as he says, he has been able to do, with all the others...

Asmodeus points out, that it seems to be, a contradiction, for one day, to be both, great, and terrible. Asmodeus says, that the meaning is, there are two days, one of them great, and the other terrible. The first day, according to Asmodeus, was the coming of Christ Jesus, for that would be great, as Christ was coming, to save humanity, to plants the seeds, for the future harvest, and Elijah was manifest then, as John the Baptist.

The second day, this time, would be the terrible day, a time of Judgment for humanity, and Asmodeus is now living, knowingly as Elijah, and out of the whole wide world, of billions of people, and out of many possible time-periods, our paths have been joined, here and now.

In this view, says Asmodeus, the time of Judgment, through Armageddon, must be, and cannot be avoided.

I hope to prevent Armageddon. I would say, that I have,

at least helped, to delay Armageddon, a destruction of our modern civilization, through free will choices, of humanity, an abuse of free will.

I work for a Golden Age, the peaceful coexistence of humans, with one another, through free will.

At one point, I said I would prefer, a path of 1984, which is 'management' of human civilization, by minimizing individual human free will, to seek to prevent Armageddon. Hopefully, human leadership, during an age of 1984, could focus their struggle, against the causes of Apocalypse, and help to nurture humanity, into a Golden Age. 1984 does seem to be, 'on the horizon', or even here now...

A problem with 1984, is that it uses limited conflict, foreign threat, to justify domestic order, control, security, and that, even with public hostility, toward one another, the major powers must maintain, actual peace, between their homelands. War is sometimes used, as a way to get rid of surplus population? A danger though, is that mismanagement of 1984, can then send our world, into Armageddon...

Even though I can understand, how 1984, can be preferable, to Armageddon, I still don't like it. My support, for individual human empowerment, for nurturing humanity, to live in decent ways, with free will, could make me a threat, in the eyes of those, who rule, in a 1984 system...

I have had thoughts, in my mind, which warn me lately, to be especially low key, right now. Perhaps something hostile, caused me to be moved, as a safety measure...

Helene says, "Life is hard, and then you die."

And my spirit, faintly replies, "But it doesn't have to be this way... But it doesn't have to be this way..."

One might note, that Helene's life, has had its challenges, but those have not been material, or economic... A poor person might be skeptical, that Helene's life has been 'hard'....

Orwell wondered, if elites, were stupid, or if elites were evil? I think, Orwell might have neglected to consider, that an answer could be, they could be both...

ARRAYS OF HOPE
October 28, 1985

If the two major super-powers, the US and the SU, were to destroy each other, through conflict, and there were survivors, in the Mideast, then a future, 'present' linear time-period, could be a mirror, of the past, as there would be Israel, surrounded by its enemies, once again. Those in Iran, where science has been repressed, might say, that there were correct, to suppress Western ways, and scientific development, because they only lead, to mass destruction. To the common people, of that reality, it could seem, as if Judgment, had been carried out, and they, the survivors, would be God's chosen people, simply because, they had survived... I tend to suspect, that survivors, of any indiscriminate mass murder, could be as potentially diverse, as their ancestors had been...

If the two current major super-powers, were to destroy, our 'modern civilization', then the history, of this current present linear time-period, could be written, through the eyes, of the less technologically developed peoples, the survivors, and they might only give, an outsider's view... They might lack, accurate understanding, of 'what went wrong', and simply be determined, to be different, to produce a different outcome...

I suppose, there are many possible, potential futures, some nice, some 'less than nice', and the problems, faced by any peoples, as groups, or people, as individuals, could be about the same, at their roots, as the problems of any other time-period, or any other reality, even understanding, that each place, might have its peculiar, or particular, type of 'challenges'.

I support, during our 'new age', of Aquarius, an end of any 'prohibition', of the old gods, to interact with humanity, and by these, I mean the immortal, nonphysical Olympians, who can assume human form, and the Norse, the immortal unless killed, physical beings, who some say, were birthed, at least in part, thanks to the Olympians. I disbelieve, that gods should be 'worshipped'. I believe, that gods can be interacted with, by humans, in fair trade...

I count gods, as among my allies... In my time, in my

linear present time-period, gods are viewed, as foolish myths, convenient tales at best, to convey 'lessons', and there could be, some distortion, by those who fail to give value, to 'accuracy'.... However, to me, gods are living beings, a type of life-form, and to me, they are 'real'. I understand, that my position, viewing 'gods' as 'alive' now, does nothing to enhance my credibility, or my appearance as 'sane', at this time, in my linear present time-period. Today, 'gods' of our past, are viewed, as basically, figments of the imagination, and any belief in them, as actual life-forms, would be disparaged, as a norm... However, one might suppose, that my saying I am Christos, has ruined my image, of being 'sane', from the start... I can 'joke', that rather than being viewed as sane or insane, I might be viewed, as 'un-sane'.

And, to be fair, I wish to also mention, that among my allies, I would count angels, from all houses of angels, as well as allies, from 'those of the many'... And, as long as I am not to be believed anyway, I also count ETs, physical beings, in the same ways, that humans are physical beings, and let me say, many others also, as among my allies...

I also hope, to renew and affirm, the loving ways, of 'true Christians', of those who seek to emulate, the example of Jesus, in our world. There seem to be, many Christians, who embrace the Old Testament, rather than the New Testament, and I think this, is inappropriate. I fail to understand, how any Christian, can preach hate, in the name of someone, who only preached love.

I know, it can be easy to destroy, and take time to build, but building is a better goal. I know, that it can seem easier, or tempting, to hurt an enemy, especially if an enemy has harmed one, rather than to talk to an enemy, but seeking peaceful solutions, should always have, its priority maintained. One can seek to vanquish an enemy, by making an enemy, into a friend...

It would be nice, before a battle, if military leaders could talk, to see if that battle was necessary, or, if results of a future battle, might seem so clear cut, that the battle could then be avoided... Perhaps sometimes, that might seem impossible, or undesirable... Sometimes, commendably, people do sacrifice themselves, in behalf of 'greater

causes'... I understand, that 'war is war', and can be, a terrible thing for all, even if some must fight, to seek to protect, that which is good, in our world. So, even if warfare rages, in terrible ways, there should be, some diplomatic contacts, to seek peaceful resolutions. I have found, that peace can be maintained, through fairness, through mutual benefit from peace, and that war is risked, whenever there is discontent...

Perhaps the heterosexual family system, where the woman maintains the home, and children, while the man goes out, into the world, to seek sustenance, of that home, is beneficial, in frontiers. But essentially, what is occurring today, is a man and a woman, working together, as a team. In our modern world, men and women, can still work together, as a team, even if they both share, the responsibilities, of maintaining the home, and children, and gathering the means, of sustenance.

I believe, that Christos has manifested, many times, in human host, and I expect to manifest, more times, in the future(s). Each manifestation, seeks to bring, a polishing touch, to set a course for humanity, to provide instruction, which will help to maintain, and improve, the condition of our world. This manifestation, as Jualt, is extremely important, because it is this manifestation, which occurs in a time-period, when everyone can know, of the existence of Christos, so that everyone, on our entire planet, can be able to receive, the same message. During our current time-period, technology allows, for fulfillment of the prophecy, that Christos would be known, to the entire world.

There is that, 'insane temptation', to be recognized, as 'king', to be in an official position, even if a figurehead, who offers 'guidance', to all spiritual leaders, like a, 'Pope of our Earth'. Perhaps this suggestion, comes to me, from Paul's somewhat staggering, opulent social world... However, I would decline such a position, at least within the physical human realm, as I want people, to guide themselves, to use my teachings and advice, to seek to make ours, a better world. I probably, will not be around 'here', forever, even if some 'representation of me', is maintained, and I do not wish, to leave behind, any 'office of authority'... A challenge for humans, is to manage their own diversity, and to learn

from that experience, how to manage their interactions, with 'others'... Sadly, I have mused, that if humans, wish to kill one another, simply because of a difference, in skin color, then their civilized behavior, among beings that are, 'even more different', might be less than civilized...

I find the violence of Islam, to be 'distasteful', and all too common. The notion, that a Muslim, can kill any non-Muslim, or behave, in less than decent ways, to any other sentient being, would seem to me, to be offensive, to God. I find the writings of Mohammed, in his youth, to be awesome, inspiring, loving, and most certainly, 'touched by God'. The first battleground, for any warrior to face, can be, within self, to keep hate, and negativity, from having a home, in one's spirit.

The eye for an eye has been carried way too far, in linear time, in never-ending feuds, and vendettas. The people, under the rule, of some Islamic dictators, are manipulated, and slaughtered. Why don't those, who urge others, to die for their cause, wish to die, for that cause, themselves?

Perhaps the riskiest thing, I have to say, in my linear time-period, is that I, Christos, Jualt Christos, Jualt R Christos, am Mahdi... I hope to guide Islam, away from the eye for an eye, and to the law of love...

I would hope, that Iran's spiritual and political leader, Imam Khomeini, would seek to make a peace, with Iraq, to end the blood feud... Let Muslims, of all the various denominations, and in particular, the Shiite and Sunni, find peace, based on their devotion to Mohammed. If some Muslims, wish to be guided, by someone, with blood relation to Mohammed, let them join a group, which does so. And, if some Muslims, wish to be guided, by 'elected' representation, in spiritual arenas, then let them do so... One influence, for me to avoid having children, is to avoid, having any seek to claim, any sort of spiritual, or other superiority, over others, based simply, on blood relation to me. Even if genetics is involved, with my 'situation', there remains, always, for me, and for anyone else, a learning process...

I embrace many paradoxes... I believe, in separation of church and state. I believe, church can help, to educate

people, to help guide them, in their political selections, and I do believe, the people should vote to elect their political representatives, and my preference remains, for a parliamentary republic.

I believe, Khomeini hears me, but dismisses me, as irrelevant, to the 'here and now'... I think that Khomeini, might distrust me, as Mahdi Christos, precisely because, I live in a nation, which he views, most distrustfully.

I am tempted, to wish to visit, Rome and Jerusalem, Mecca and Qom, among other places, openly as Christos, if that be God's will... However, I most certainly, should not visit Jerusalem, until a 'happy peace' is there, for Christians, Jews, and Muslims, and those of any, karmically positive overall, spiritual persuasion...

= 31 =

OF MERCURY, VENUS, AND JUPITER, AND HERA
November 7, 1985

Helene has been ill, and may discontinue her work, on a book version, of her stage-play. It looks as though, a television network, which turned down her stage-play, as 'untimely', is now doing, their own version of it, which clearly indicates, they believe it to be 'timely'. Helene is to receive, no payment from them, as they are doing, 'their own version', based on her actual life experience... Such can be life, in the United States. Very sad, that such a network, with ample funds, would deny giving, even a stipend, or a gesture of some payment, to Helene...

Paul remains cunning, and, in my view, untrustworthy. Paul is friendly, and charming, to me. By 'charming', I mean, given to nice flattering words, about me... Paul remains unceasing to me, in his venom, or derogatory comments, about Asmodeus, Matthew, Chuck, and even sometimes Daniel, though Daniel is in, the periphery, of Paul's social world, and in gay social circles, so Paul focuses mostly, on the other three. Paul feels that Chuck, 'might be okay', but that he is, 'beneath me'...

Sometimes I do tire, of listening, to Paul's constant stream, of venom. It seems at times, that other than charming words, to me about me, that all Paul speaks, are words that are demeaning, about others... I do understand, that what a person speaks, reflects what he or she hears, in his or her own mind, and what I hear, is but a fraction, of what that person hears. I do not understand, why Paul is so 'hateful', when his own world, is so comfortable...

I have declined to participate, in Paul's 'social activities', outside of his home. Paul has entertained, some of his 'society friends', including some, who are mutual friends, of he and my mother, at his home, and I have engaged, in civilized friendly conversation. Paul has also seemed prone, to 'defending my honor', by saying, that I am bisexual, like most guys, of my generation, adding a touch of a smirk, as if he might know of this, in some firsthand way, so to speak... I might think, that neither my mother nor I entirely appreciate that, though my mother might be among the first, to gladly seek to use that insinuation, against me.

Matthew did manage, to get a low-cost car, and I did lend to him, $100, for some repairs, of that vehicle. Matthew has yet to secure, a 'real job'. I have advised Matthew, that I must seek, to conserve my funds, to be able, to get a place of my own, and thus I am unable, to comfortably lend, any more funds, to him.

Asmodeus says, that he will try to get, a national tabloid, to do an article, on my tests, with James Randi. I have told Asmodeus, that I would split 50-50, any funds he might be able to gain, for such an article. Asmodeus often talks much, and does little, so I lack expectation, that he might, 'do something', but I can hope... Perhaps the disappointment, from silence, is less than the disappointment, from hollow words...

I am considering, ceasing the free distribution, of my newsletter, locally, when comes the next year, 1986. Giving away *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, for free, seems somewhat appropriate, considering that John-S is providing it to me, without charge. However, both John-S and I, do hope, for some income, from this, and there have been, zero subscribers, locally, as a result, of the free distribution. It seems that people, who receive things for free, might never pay, for that thing, as long as they can get it, for free, even if they like it, and its continued survival, might depend, on some financial support. I plan to expand, the size of my newsletter, when charging for it, next year.

Asmodeus says, I must continue, to give away, for free, without charge, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, as a public service, saying that I am providing news, to people, who would otherwise be, financially unable, to get such a wide view, of our world. I hope, some of these people actually bother to vote...

I can be amused, that Asmodeus seems to believe, that I should provide *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, for free, while he also seems to believe, that I should understand, that he is unable to afford, to help me, to distribute it, without some financial payment, from me to him, to help him, cover his fuel costs... One might say, that Asmodeus, does not distribute, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, from 'the goodness of his heart', alone...

And yes, I have continued, to distribute *WORLD PRESS*

WATCH, for free locally, and Paul takes some copies, to some places, without charging me for this, and Asmodeus takes my newsletters, to other places, and I do give to him, some money, to help with his fuel cost. Even though, it has been a while, since I attended, a Pundits luncheon, Paul does attend, and does bring, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, with him there.

Three newspapers, are now carrying, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, so it does enjoy, some readership.

Hurricane Juan really battered Louisiana, doing loops, into and out of, the state. Juan weakened, and fell apart, before it passed through, my area. It seems, as if all coastal areas, suffered major damages this year, from hurricanes, except for mine. My thanks to my allies, including God... Perhaps Randi, sought to test my claim, or the abilities of others, by having others, assault my area. If Randi did make such an effort, then I wonder, what he might think, now that he has failed.

Grizzly, in Maine, called me, and asked for fog, and storm, in his area. I agreed. I am willing, to seek to grant requests, that are harmless, preferably those, which are actually beneficial, in areas, where the person making a request, is located. That way, at least the person making the request, has to experience, the result of that request.

What I did, was to use, a 'secondary' method. I could not see, Grizzly's area, in my own mind, from my own memory, but I could connect, with Grizzly, as I was speaking to him, on the telephone, and thus touch, that area of Maine, because he is within it. Grizzly knowingly gave to me, good bounce, for use with this method. Grizzly got, both of his requests. A good friendly bounce...

I gave to Asmodeus, Books Three and Four, of *The Life of Christos*.

Asmodeus and Casey, are taking, a psychic awareness class. Casey, says Asmodeus, thinks I am, as far away, from being Jesus, as anyone could possibly be. I do not think, that Casey knows me, personally, as a human being, well enough, to actually have, any opinion of me. I could hope, that Casey's respect, for Asmodeus, and Asmodeus' friendship, with me, might influence Casey, to at least give to me, some benefit of the doubt. Casey normally departs,

when I arrive, at Asmodeus' home. Casey's preconceived notions, of me, seem to preclude, his actually getting to know me.

I respect, that Asmodeus, thinks well of Casey, as a human being, that Asmodeus considers Casey, to be a spiritual person, and that Asmodeus does believe, that Casey seeks to live, in ways, that are karmically positive overall. Casey has always been, at least pleasant to me, and I have always been, pleasant to him.

Casey rejects the material world, and he works as a dish-washer. Casey lives, in a poor part of town, has extremely long hair, rejects 'formal education', and rejects the rat race, of the competitive working world. I am amused, that while I can accept, that Casey is living a life, that is okay for him, spiritually karmically positive overall, that he cannot accept, the way I live, simply because it is different than his own. Casey also has, some personal aversion, to me, because I have, somewhat short hair, rather than very long hair, and he views this, as a sign of conformity, and he thinks, any Jesus, would at least, at an essential bare minimum, have very long hair.

In my lifetime, males have had great attitude, based on hair-length. Short-haired men, have rejected long-haired men, viewing long-haired men, as uncivilized, or as animals, outsiders, hippies... Long-haired men, have rejected short-haired men, as war-mongers, robots, fascists, tools of the system... I hope, that people can learn to avoid, judging one another, based solely, on 'appearance', or hair-length...

Asmodeus, has informed Casey, about my 'family background', and this too, breeds some distrust, in Casey toward me, and perhaps also, some resentment, as he might have that expectation, that I lack, any need for money, whereas truly, Casey does have family, to fall back upon, a safety net, and I lack much, of any safety net in life. It remains true, that Paul helps me, because of my 'background'.

Casey is also, distrustful of me, precisely because, I do world news, for Casey believes, that I must be, a knowing pawn of the elite, to do so... I would like to believe, that Casey might actually like, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, if he were to read it, but, that seems, unlikely to occur. Casey

has enjoyed, some time, and alignment, with Lightning Amen, the Arizona Jesus.

I say, I am simple, in that, as a human being, I have the same feelings, and needs, as all other human beings. Each human, might differ in spot, and in evolution. Just as parts of one's body, can be different, in order to meet, the various needs, of the body, so too, can individual humans, be different, in order to meet, the various needs, of a society, nation, or civilization.

All I ask, is that each person, try to meet their own needs, in fair trades, to keep their dharma, and karma, positive, by doing what they are able, to help others. If each person, truly tried, to live in karmically good ways overall, then our word, would have to become, a better place.

= 31 =

THE REASON WHY...
November 13, 1985

Media has reported, that Halley's comet has been sighted, for the first time, with the naked eye, without the use of a telescope. I have noticed, people in general, having intense moods, more often. And I have noticed, a mood, like a disembodied spirit, seeming to travel, from person to person. First a depressed mood, hits one person, then another, passing through them, like a dwarf spirit, seeking a temporary host. Some dwarves, in the fairy tale, *Snow White*, were called Sneezy and Sleepy, but I suspect, there could be others, like Smelly, Sadly, Lazy, Angry, and Happy...

To me, dwarves could be akin, to spirits, resident within inorganic material, while elves, might be, spirits resident, in organic material. Both could be 'natives' to our planet, of 'the many', resident in other realms. I have even wondered if perhaps, while sleeping, cats might live lives, as elves, while dogs might live lives, as dwarves...

Halley's comet is on everyone's minds, coinciding, with a super-power summit, between the Soviets and the States. The US and the SU, now have a rough nuclear parity, based on a policy, of 'Mutually Assured Destruction', popularly known, as MAD. If one side attacks, it seems that both, could face obliteration. This acts as a deterrent to war, peace through strength, as such a war, might lack a 'winner'. There is also, at least to me, the specter of 'overkill', where radiation, released by nuclear detonations, can kill all life, on our planet, regardless of where, those detonations occur...

The US is now designing, and testing, laser and particle beam weapons, and says the SU, is also developing those weapons. These weapons could make it impossible, for missiles to reach their targets, and thus end, the threat of nuclear destruction, as long as all sides have these weapons.

The summit was meant, by the Soviets, to convince the States, not to develop, the so-called Star Wars weapons. The Soviets are offering to decrease, the size of their nuclear arsenal. One reason, for the 'abundance' of nuclear

weapons, is to ensure the survival, of 'enough', if 'some' are destroyed, in a first strike. Right now, each side, weighs the damage, that could be done, by the other, if the other, launched a first strike, and each side, wishes to have, enough surviving nuclear weapons, to be able, to do significant damage, to the other, to ensure, that a first strike, is not done. So, each side, continues to build nuclear weapons, and both, now have enough, to have 15 overkills, which is to say, to have enough radiation, to wipe out, all life, on our planet, 15 times, or, to have, 15-times more radiation, than required, to wipe out, all life on our planet...

Perhaps an international group, should be set up, to manage 'Star Wars', to prevent any nation, from being able, to use nuclear missiles, to hit any other nation. Unfortunately, there is no, 'world government', that is answerable to, or selected directly by, the people of our world. Governments, sometimes have a tendency, to put the interest, of that government, before the interests, of their people. I like to believe, that a government exists, to serve its people, but many governments, seem to believe, that the people exist, to serve the government, and believe this is, 'good for the state', which is then, good for the people. Often, that might seem to be, a false belief...

I also do believe, that any laser system, which can hit targets, in the air, can also hit, targets on the ground, so that any Star Wars system, could become, an offensive, rather than, a defensive, weapon... To me, an answer remains, to make peace more profitable, than war, to make peace more attractive, than war...

Unfortunately, at least in this situation, governments tend to be federal, viewing their authority, as primary, rather than confederations, which would give, each individual state government, primary rights...

Frank-B, asked me to work for him, this past Saturday. I declined, as I have only had, one day off, in the past 40 days. Frank-B said, it was an emergency, that he had to have, data put into his computer, before the coming Monday... I then did agree. Humorously, where was Frank-B, when I arrived, to do his work? Frank-B, was at an expensive club, enjoying the sun, and lunch... I suspect, the cost of Frank-B's lunch, might have been much greater, than

my pay, even if I had worked, the entire day... Apparently, Frank-B, did not give priority, to his own emergencies...

Frank-B asked me, to answer his phone, while I was there. Of course, the phone rang, and a woman, Frank-B's sister, asked to speak, with her mother, and told me, which room to signal, on the intercom... When I did get that room, the lady in the room, tongue-lashed me, saying she had been sleeping, and did not wish, to be disturbed. The woman was quite venomous, in both her tone, and language, strongly implying, it was a mistake, for someone so stupid, and ignorant as me, to even be, in that fine house. I believe, she was actually shrieking...

The woman behaved, as if this phone call, from her daughter, was the worst thing, which had ever happened to her, in her entire life. She went on and on, and on... I could have hung up on her, and left, but, if I wished to stay and work, I had to stay, on the phone with her, until she was finished, which is what I regretfully did. One might hope, that such a woman, has nothing to do, with any sort of diplomatic super-power summit... One might also note, that this woman, had failed to leave any instruction, that she not be disturbed, and yet she assumed, no responsibility, for her own situation... One might speculate, that anyone, who is so demeaning, toward any other person, might have some sort, of a mental, or emotional, illness...

Perhaps abundant opulent wealth, influences some people, to be so without manners, toward anyone, with less money... They might get so high, and mighty, on their wealth, that they forget, that they are the same, as anyone else. They fail to respect anyone, and can develop, into basically awful, human beings, who are shunned, by anyone, who does not feel a need, or desire, to lap at their heels. There just has to be, something wrong, with a person, who is so amply, materially, well endowed, who is unable, to enjoy life, and be pleasant... And yet these people, might like to believe, that they are genetically superior, and might also have, some absolute devotion, to some peculiar forms, of memorized ritualistic etiquette, pomp and ceremony, that they view as essential, while they are ill-mannered, towards others, while to me, basic manners, are the most basic form, of etiquette.

At any rate, this woman convinced me, that Paul had been correct, that I would never wish to be dependent, on such an environment, for my income in life.

I am not as content, with John-S, my boss at my full-time job, as I once was. John-S skipped, giving to me, a pay-raise, which was due, according to our written contract. When I did inquire, about this, John-S told me, that I had made a mistake, while typesetting, which had cost him money, even though, the customer, he, and Trudy, can check my work, before something goes to press, and even the pressman, has to look at stuff, many-many times, before it is finished printing. John-S said, that I had 'better crack down', even though lack of time off, certainly fails, to help my work performance, or else perhaps, he should pay me less... I suspect, that this 'mistake', probably would not have mattered, to John-S, except in the context, of his breaking, his wage contract, with me... I was simply disappointed...

I may switch jobs, to teach John-S a lesson, about mutual interests being served, between employer and employee, especially when the employer, has a nice car, boat, and house, from that employee's efforts... However, if I switch jobs, it will not be, to work for aristocratic Frank-B.

When a worker, has to depend, on one employer, to meet all of that worker's needs, in life, that worker, is somewhat trapped, and sometimes, an employer, can become abusive, and that is karmically wrong.

Rather than appreciating, those workers, who can make an employer's life, 'very pleasant', some employers, seem to look down, on their workers, as if those workers, must be stupid, to be doing work for them, as if stupid people, are okay to demean, when actually, more often than not, the worker might be smarter, or more skilled, than the employer, at that work... Often, it seems that it is money, rather than skill or merit, that determines position, within a company, and this, I believe, can be 'bad for business', at least in a capitalist environment...

Now, I do agree, that a worker, should be paid the same, when the worker, does the same amount of work, and be given raises, in proportion to increases, in the costs of living, to inflation. However, in my case, with John-S, I accepted, a much lower than normal wage, because I understood, that

John-S was seeking, to build a business, and was seeking, to save money, and that he would then, give to me pay-raises, to bring me, to where I should have been, at anywhere else, at start. And John-S, does now seem to have, some repeat business, some established customers, and this is at least in part, due to me, to my skill, and my dependability.

Perhaps John-S simply believes, that he can hire anyone, to do any part, of his business' needs, and simply charge more, for their time, than he pays to them, for their time, and earn his income, in this way. I would like to believe, that I remain, somewhat exceptional, in my work performance, in many ways, including my honesty, and good character.

Perhaps, I have given, to John-S, some reason, for him to believe, that he should assert to me, two or three times recently, that we are not friends, that I am his employee.

I think college graduates, are hooked by their educational debts, and their dependence, on income from their employers, to maintain a higher-than-normal life-style, and they know they lack, relevant work experience, and are being paid, more than they should be paid, in return for blind loyalty, for doing exactly, and whatever, they are told to do. I believe, the higher than deserved wages, received by college graduates, are intended, to ensure blind loyalty, because there is always, a new graduate, willing to step into those privileged shoes...

The college system, teaches general information. A college graduate has to depend, to some degree, on those, who know how to do the work, in the same way, that an employer, like John-S, hires people, who know how to do the work. The college graduate, might be paid, to 'crack the whip', to make sure that others, perform the work... The college system, might teach people, to memorize, and to give an answer, that the professor wants, without questioning, without even understanding, as the information provided, might be, somewhat irrelevant in life anyway. The students learn, to become brown-nosers, to be yes-men and yes-women. That is all... While I have seen, commendable movies, about teachers, who got their students to think, to seek to understand, to grasp, to walk on their own minds, so

to speak, I have found, in reality, that few teachers do that.

Helene once quipped, that in China, each head, that is raised, is chopped off, and that sometimes, a sound is made, to entice people, to raise their heads, to then get rid of, even those, who might be tempted, to do so, for whatever reason. I have wondered, if the promotion, of US ideals, might be much the same, and that those, who then embrace those ideals, who raise their heads, are selected against, by our system, have their heads chopped off...

Helene once told me, the eternal saying, "The Upper Crust, is just a bunch of crumbs, held together, by their own dough." I tend to think, the middle crust is much the same. It seems to me, that the most resourceful, the most independent, free will thinkers, those who rely, on their own minds the most, are those at the top, of society, and those at the bottom...

My mother's logic, could be, that to better yourself, you must be around people, who are in a better position, than you are. I have found, that others, who think they are, in better positions, than you, will then expect you, to kowtow to them, for the promise of reward, and that reward, seems to most often, never come, and, when a person, gets tired of jumping, for a reward, that never comes, then another person, is selected, to replace that person, until the new person, then starts to tire, of jumping, without reward... I suppose surplus population, lends itself, to this sort of system...

I have heard people wonder, why the German people, went along with Hitler, with Hitler's cruelties. An answer could be, that people feel, a need to survive, and are often willing, to do awful things, to each other, for the smallest amount of reward... Capitalism can seem geared, to exploitation and cruelty, at least when monopolies have developed. As long as there is competition, then there is hope, for better treatment, of workers...

Some have also wondered, why people didn't, just leave Germany, to get away from Hitler. And others say, either love America, or leave it. Nobody seems to understand, that leaving a place, costs money, and that some people, have lost their mobility in life... We must, as individuals, seek to maintain decency... It does matter...

I confessed to Helene, that I have been tempted, by thoughts of crime lately, in particular, some logic, that if being honest, competent, intelligent, and hard-working, fails to produce anything, then perhaps bank robbery, is more honorable... Crime can be, harmful to others, and I wish to maintain my life, in ways that are, karmically positive overall...

A long story short, I am somewhat discontent, with my residence, and with my employment.

I have considered, that suicide might be preferable, to enduring prolonged suffering. My enjoyment of life has most certainly seemed diminished. I work and work and work, and endure, and endure, and endure, and have little reasons, to smile in life. I do hope for better days, and do believe, this is a realistic hope...

I would prefer, to commit suicide, rather than to become, harmful to others. I have wondered, if suicide were tolerated, then would employers, and our system, be nicer to workers? I know that Christianity, strongly frowns upon suicide, and yet, some Christians do understand, that it can be humane, to painlessly end, the life of a beloved animal, rather than have, that animal endure, prolonged suffering.

If the abused, kill themselves, then the abusers, will have more problems? No, I do not advocate suicide, but I do forgive it.

Perhaps, some people might criticize me, for feeling anger, even if I do refrain, from acting in anger. Some might say, that Christos, would only feel love, of our world... Would you not feel anger, if someone was seeking to hurt, someone you loved? If I feel anger, and not love, they say that certainly, I could not be Christ. I say, they have conveniently overlooked, moments, when Jesus displayed anger, at the innocent fig tree, at Judas, and at the money-changers, in the temple...

I am human. I am good in my own ways, and seek to live in ways, that are karmically positive overall, and this is the example I bring, for the new age. I am sorry, that I do not have, an easy happy, fairy tale, to give to people. Oh, happy days... I arrived. The world recognized me instantly. There was a great big celebration. I was treated with love and kindness, honored, worshipped. Everyone said

hallelujah. Christos was loved, and lived a nice happy life, loved by all the people, instantly bringing, joy and wellness, to everyone. All the problems, of the world, were instantly solved. I vanished into the heavens, saying all is well. See you later. Good-bye for now. The end. Perhaps not, this time...

However, what I give to people, is my example, of dealing with the very things they deal with, and hopefully, if I can remain, a good and decent person, then I can also inspire them, to also remain, good and decent people. I am not going to argue, about who was 'better', was it Jesus, or Buddha, or Krishna, or Confucius. Each had something to offer.

I suspect, that a reason I am here, now, is because of all the suffering, in our world. I am here, for the oppressed, and for those who suffer. All are children of God, no less than the moon and the stars.

I suspect, Judgment of this civilization, might be found, in an answer, to this question: Can a good decent person, be comfortable and content, in our world, at this time? It might be fortunate, for our world, if more than I, are being viewed, to determine the answer, to that question... Right now, if I am viewed, to find an answer, to that question, then that answer, might seem to be, no.

= 31 =

ASMODEUS' BIRTHDAY
December 3, 1985

Would Christ Jesus, have maintained his beliefs, if he had lived, a longer life? There are those, who say that Jesus, was too young, to know enough, about the world, to give practical lessons, for people to live by. They say Jesus, was an idealistic youth, who failed to understand, the harsh realities, of the world.

It seems obvious to me, that there are many, 'older people', who have experienced, the 'harsh realities of life', through many environments, in many time-periods, who do affirm, Jesus' beliefs. That perhaps fails, to answer the question, of would have Jesus, continued to maintain his beliefs, if he had lived a longer life, but it does discount the idea, that only an idealistic youth, could have such ideas.

I believe that Jesus, like Christos now, was a messenger of God, who was bringing God's words, into the world of humanity, in God's behalf, at God's request. That would mean, that the words, spoken by Jesus, were not the words, of some idealistic youth, but were the words, of a very ancient being, advising humanity, on how to seek, to improve the conditions, of their world(s).

An ideal can become real, when you live it.

One of the fundamental lessons, in my view, brought by Jesus, was cleanliness, of how that by itself, would help to prevent disease, and make living conditions, better for humanity. Some think, one aspect of 'baptism', was bathing, and this helped to reduce, leprosy, among other afflictions.

I believe, Jesus would have, maintained his beliefs, even if he had lived, to be 540 years of age. Hopefully, I will live, to a comfortable, content, ripe old age, and show that my beliefs are timeless, at least unrelated, to my age...

Asmodeus' friend, Charles, brought up a topic, of suicide, during emotional depression... First of all, I am not considering suicide, at this point in time, for myself. However, if a person is suffering, physical or mental distress, or is overly tired of life, then it seems to me, to be that person's right, to exercise individual free will, and put an end, to this life, as long as, that person does not cause, physical injury, to others, during that process.

For the record, in my time, in my linear present, suicide is forbidden, by civil law, and by Western religious groups. I do not believe, that one 'dodges' one's karma, by suicide. It might behoove one, to seek to face one's karma, now, rather than later, and to seek to atone, or make amends, for harm, negative karma, that one might have to face. To me, alignment with Jesus, fails to rid one, of karmic debts, but might allow one, to have some aid, in facing those debts, in a manageable way, to minimize one's own suffering, during that process.

I affirm, that I subscribe, to an 'Eastern view', that one can seek, to cleanse one's spirit, of any potential or actual, karmic wrong, for taking one's own life, before taking one's own life, or having one's life taken, in a humane comfortable way.

The spiritual balance, of which I speak, is threefold. One should ask, either aloud or silently, that all past relatives, understand, and forgive you, for what you intend to do. You should ask, aloud or silently, that all future relatives, understand, and forgive you, for what you intend to do. And lastly, one should ask, either aloud or silently, all present relatives, and friends, to understand, and forgive you, for what you are about to seek to do.

As I consider God, and my 'other' allies, to be among my 'friends', I would include them, in my request(s).

Some 'Eastern ways', have a specific ritual, to be performed, in the process, of ending one's life. I believe this ritual, might have some efficacious value, might help one's own belief, and can perhaps be useful, or spiritually helpful, one more thing one can do, to show respect for life, and for God. However, I think they are generically, unnecessary.

Matthew moved away, from Chuck's, though Chuck said, that he asked Matthew, to leave. I assume this was due, to Chuck's sexual frustration. However, Paul apparently also had a hand, in this development. Chuck complained to me, that Paul would call Chuck, at all hours, to complain about Matthew, even though Matthew, has had nothing to do with Paul, no contact of any sort, with Paul, since he arrived at Chuck's. I assume, Paul acted against Matthew, out of jealousy, because he perceived me, as being fond of Matthew. I am uncertain, how Paul might

think, I might view, his actions against someone, simply because I might like that person. It would seem to me, that for me, to have someone, or people, in my life, that I might like, that I might have to have, some distance from Paul... Chuck says the phone calls, from Paul, have ceased, now that Matthew is gone from his home. Perhaps Chuck, could have simply told Paul, that Matthew was gone, without putting Matthew out...

I also assume, there are things, Matthew could have done, to seek to be, of some value, to Chuck, with or without sex. Matthew failed to contribute cash, food, or any sort of help, around the house, while at Chuck's. Chuck said that Matthew, barely ever, even spoke with him, and never initiated, any conversations. Chuck said, that Matthew failed to appreciate, anything, which Chuck was doing for him.

Matthew has moved, in with a girl, Michelle, and said, that he had agreed to pay rent, to Michelle. This, at least, could be, a step forward in life, for Matthew, where he is, finally acknowledging, that he should, seek to be of value, to maintain his home base. Matthew still lacks, any 'real job', and still earns his income, 'in the same way'... It is not uncommon, for some male youths, to seek income, by allowing men, to massage them, or milk them, as long as they themselves, do not have to do anything, though some do give massages... Some of these men, might view themselves, as 'straight', and are just responding, in a realistic way, to their situations. These 'straight' men, can be glad, that there are some men, who do like men...

Because the move, from Chuck's, seemed to Matthew, to have been caused, by Paul, Matthew feels some resentment, toward Paul. Matthew is displeased with me, for staying at Paul's. Matthew says, that I must not be his friend, if I remain at Paul's. I can understand, Matthew's logic, and can hope, that he understands mine, that I am unable, to yet be able to afford, a place of my own, and that my being at Paul's, was not only, the best that I could do, but was, about the only thing, that I could do. I also understand, that Matthew, has been basically, nothing but weight on me, while Paul has, at least been, helpful to me, in real-world ways.

Matthew asked me, for some more money, another loan.

I declined, telling Matthew, that he has reached, his loan limit, and that I must save money, in order to be able, to seek a place, of my own. Matthew said, his need is now, and I am comfortable, do have a job, and do have extra money. Matthew said, I am greedy, for wanting him, to repay every penny, which I have ever given to him. I pointed out, to Matthew, that I have given to him, shelter, clothing, food, and cash, and that I have expected, nothing in return, for these things. The only funds, that I expect Matthew, to seek to repay, are the funds, he requested from me, as a 'loan'. Matthew has yet, to repay anything, to me.

Matthew said, that since I would not lend him, anything more, then I was no longer, a friend of his. Matthew said, he could not stay with Michelle, unless he gave her, some more money, and so he then, shortly thereafter, left the area, without even saying good-bye to me, when he did so... Apparently, Matthew did have, some money, to buy fuel, for his vehicle...

The hurricane season is now officially over. I dropped my protection, on November 15th, and then thereafter, learned that the official hurricane season has now been extended, to December 1st. A hurricane did form, after my protection was down, and it headed, through the Gulf of Mexico, toward northern Florida. I used my manual, to direct my will, to protect that area, from this hurricane, but the hurricane, traveled through northern Florida. At least my primary area was protected, during the time-period, which was originally, the official hurricane season...

Asmodeus says, that weather modification, is 'scrawny magick', so a hurricane, hitting my primary area, in Asmodeus' logic, means nothing. All I can say is that I did try to do, what I am able to do. The storm hit an area, where I have never been, a weak spot for me, one that is technically, outside of my primary area. People might like, for me to be able, to do anything, but I do have, my limitations... I guarantee, in my protection pledge, that I will make an effort, but I do not guarantee, the results from that effort, other than, I would continue to believe, that regardless of what happens, it would be better, than what would have happened, without my effort.

Even though, I have enjoyed, much 'success', with

weather, and have become more known, to some in scientific, psychic, and media arenas, none seem interested, in investigating me, nor even in seeking, to put my ability, to beneficial use. I think, that is both sad, and foolish.

Some Christians, condemn idol worship, which they view, as giving energy, to an object, rather than to God, when those objects, are non-Christian. These same Christians, might be fond of giving, the energy of their worship to God, through objects, that represent Christian figures, or symbols. I believe a person can give worship, to God, without use, of any object. I respect, that some people, give their worship, to God, through use of objects, and I respect this, regardless, of whether they do so, in a Christian, or non-Christian context.

I do believe, that how one lives one's life, is more important, than how one worships God. I understand, that some religions, have real-world needs to face, as organizations, and need the financial, and other support, of people, to do this. I would much prefer, for organizations, which seek to honor God, to promote themselves, by good works, and good words, rather than by hostility, toward other groups. I respect any group, whose ways are karmically positive overall, that seeks to help maintain, and improve, the condition of our world, or wishes to provide, a haven, to worship God.

God, oversoul of all oversouls, has many children, and they are all equal, before God. They will be 'judged', at life's end, by their own dharma, and have to face, their own karma. I believe that alignment, with one of the groups, dedicated to God, can help to provide one, with some afterlife 'management', of one's karma. I believe, that as my allies, are of all realms, that alignment with me, and my beliefs, could allow an individual, to receive afterlife karmic management aid, from all realms. I believe, that an individual, can raise, his or her, or its, or whatever, own spirit, or group spirit if a hive, by karmically positive ways, that raise that group, or individual's dharma, even without alignment, with any specific group.

In my world today, Catholics sometimes eat fish, and avoid 'meat', on Fridays, even if fish, might be construed by others, as a form of meat, while Muslims and Jews, eat

cows and avoid pork, and Hindus eat pork, and avoid eating cows... Each views their way, as sacred, proper, and views the other ways, as 'sinful'. I think, that each is seeking to honor God, in its own ways. I think each way can be valid, for members of that group, as a faithful gesture, something they do, both to seek to honor God, and also to conserve resources. It can be the abstention, from use of a resource, by one group, that allows enough of that resource, to be available, to others. I believe human managers, need to seek to balance, the demands of consumption, with the ability of renewal.

In our past, perhaps each manifestation of God, was only able, to reach a small group, of humanity, and thus hoped, to reach all, from that group. A group so 'chosen', was chosen, not to be elevated above others, but to be, a messenger, or an example, to others.

I believe my manifestation, now as Christos, is in a time-period, where I am able, to reach all, of humanity. I hope, to harmonize existing groups, rather than, to create a new group. I intend, to avoid, seeking to create, any group of my own, though I do understand, that it is perhaps possible, that some groups, through time, might form, to seek to honor God, by including me.

I therefore mention once again, that I view Confucius, Krishna, Buddha, and Jesus, as human manifestations of Christos. And, in case it needs to be mentioned, I view myself, Jualt, as a manifestation of Christos.

IN MY HEAVEN . . .
December 19, 1985

With Matthew gone, from the area, my relationship with Paul seems smoother, and he has become, less venomous, toward others in general. Asmodeus now refrains, from calling me at Paul's, and I do regularly call Asmodeus, so our communication, remains constant. Paul has not sought, to be physical with me. Paul apparently, still refrains, from giving phone messages, to me, and this has caused, some aggravation to Daniel. While Daniel, seemed to have, some 'sympathy', to Paul's position, that I should avoid, associating with 'low-life', Daniel apparently thought, that did not include him, while apparently, Paul would prefer, that I also be distant, from Daniel. I suspect, that Paul simply wishes, for me to be distant, from everyone, except for him...

I have considered, that my relationship, with Paul, might have been damaged less, if he had stated, at start, that, because he disliked Matthew, or felt uncomfortable, around Matthew, that he would not let Matthew, stay at his home, with me. However, what caused a serious wound, to my relationship with Paul, was his agreeing, to have Matthew, stay with me, at his home, and then waiting, until I actually arrived, with Matthew, to then say, that Matthew could not stay there... Because Paul did that, I am unable, to easily or blindly, trust Paul again, which I did, until that incident. That is a change, which seems to me, to be likely to be, permanent.

I must continue to appreciate, that Paul is helping me, in a real-world way. I can also understand, that I am providing, income to Paul, in return for that, and that I have, less domain, in my room at Paul's, than I might enjoy, in a room, rented from a stranger. Paul has set himself up, to perhaps be lost, to my world, when I get space, of my own...

A bottom line for me, is that I remain at Paul's, continue to seek to save funds, to gain a place of my own, without focusing Paul on that, and I accept the situation, as is, at Paul's, as necessary to accept, for now.

I was thinking, about the ways things could be, 'in my heaven', and here, are some of the things, I would like:

In My Heaven, one can work, as one wishes to do.

In My Heaven, one has one's own space, which can be connected, to others or to common areas, and one can disconnect, if and when, one wishes to do so.

In My Heaven, one lacks need, for a vehicle, with which to travel, as one can travel at will, can go where one wishes, when one wishes, at least to places, of equal or less dharma, to which doors, are open to one. One can always knock, on doors that are closed.

In My Heaven, one is always comfortable, in temperature, and one can appear, in the image one wishes, both 'physically', as one's body appears, and with the clothing one desires, and this is done by will.

In My Heaven, there is neither disease, nor death. I do wonder, if one's dharma, and-or karmic interactions, help to sustain one, in a dharmic realm, and if one then, might eventually have, some need to embrace, a physical life, to energize one's afterlife. Perhaps one in an afterlife can make trade, through service, to produce energy, with those of dharmic realms, or with those, of physical realms.

In My Heaven, one can enjoy being physical, with those who are 'solid', relative to one's own frequency, and vibration, just as one is physical, or solid, within mortal physical life, to those who are also, within one's realms, of frequency or vibration.

In life, physical life, people usually have to work, their entire lifetime, to financially meet their needs. Often that work, might seem hard, or routine, and not that rewarding financially. I think, that no matter what job one has, it can become routine, after a while, a rut, and this can be normal, something to be accepted.

An increasing population, can raise prices, of limited supplies, and can produce unemployment, and homelessness. I believe, that in times past, society determined, that an increase in population, was desirable, and thus promoted heterosexuality. I think, there could come times, when society might find, that an increase in population, is undesirable, and then promotes homosexuality, or bisexuality, or perhaps war. I think, these are social issues, and that which is spiritually important, remains that one seeks, to do more, that is beneficial to other, than harmful to other, during the course, of one's life.

Sometimes, at least in part, due to over-population, a society might seek warfare, to rid itself, of surplus population. I feel much sorrow, and sympathy, for soldiers, as they are put into a hell, in which they must be, harmful to others, simply to survive. I advise these, to understand, that their karma is their own, individually, and that karma responds, to intent and effect, without regard, for cause or context. However, those who have done karmic wrongs, in life, which perhaps includes most everyone, can atone, or make amends, by doing things, which are beneficial to others, to seek to counterbalance, the harmful things, that one might have done.

In most all times, there have been those, who have given money, to 'beneficial groups', hoping that by doing so, they generate, the positive karma, to counterbalance, past negatives. Karma responds, to intent and effect. If one hopes, that by giving money, to a beneficial group, one has helped to atone, for past negative karma, then at least, one might get, some positive karmic credit, for doing so, on an intent level. However, on an effect level, positive karma would only be generated, if that group actually does something, that is beneficial to others. Many groups only give lip service, to the causes, they purportedly serve, and swallow most all the funds, for 'administrative costs', and these often fail, to generate anything beneficial. If one gives money, to a group, solely for 'tax purposes', then one's karma might not be raised, on an intent level.

Biblical Revelations, seem to imply, that a, 'second coming' of Christos, would occur at a time, when there would be, great natural disasters, and many plagues. I think that historically, there have been, great natural disasters, and plagues, in all time-periods...

One reason, for an increase, in disease today, is that modern transportation allows for many interactions, between peoples, and thus carries diseases, from one group, to all groups, eventually. I believe, that an increase, in radiation, is also responsible, for an increase, in cancers...

In a primitive word of rubble, after the fall, of a developed civilization, the past splendor could be remembered, even if no longer enjoyed, at that time. It could be remembered, that eventually, science might produce, instant

communication, and great marvels, that perhaps, were once taken for granted. It might also be remembered, that science could produce, another great destruction.

While the number of natural disasters, might remain, somewhat constant, the awareness of them, thanks to technology, to improvements in communication, could increase. Therefore, it might be speculated, that it would be awareness, of disease, and of natural disasters, that would increase, even if it might mistakenly seem, to some, that what had increased, were the amount, of natural disasters and diseases...

Therefore, in this regard, my manifestation as Christos, during this time-period, is appropriate, for that context.

It also seems true, to me, that industrialization, and increases in pollution, can impact our environment, in many ways, and could cause, an actual increase, in 'natural disasters'. Therefore, my ability, to influence weather, seems appropriate, as what might be needed, for this time-period.

Asmodeus found for me, an interesting excerpt, from the *Bible*, which seems to say, the same thing. Here it is:

From Ecclesiastes, or The Preacher:

Chapter I.

9. The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done, is that which shall be done; and there is no new thing, under the sun.

10. Is there anything, whereof it may be said, See, this is new? It hath been already, of old time, which was before us.

11. There is no remembrance, of former things; neither shall there be any remembrance, of things, that are to come, with those that shall come after.

I told Asmodeus, if this civilization does destroy itself, then the Revelations, of the New Testament, could become, the Revelation, for the New Age. At some point, in the linear future, the survivors would rebuild civilization, perhaps after a long enough period of linear time, that remembrance, of how things once were, could be totally forgotten.

Lastly, I had a pleasant dinner, with my mother. My mother urged me, to seek to find, some other kind of work. My mother said, that I have learned, all that I am likely, to be

able to learn, at my current position, so I am not growing, in any way, and my chances for advancement, or improvement, seem unlikely to her, in such a small company. My mother says, I have some money in the bank, am comfortable at Paul's, so should just quit this job, and find another job. My mother said, I should give two weeks' notice, or a month if necessary, and explain to John-S, that I need to find, improvement in my life, and said, that he would understand...

I doubt, that John-S, would 'understand', and I probably would fail, to get a decent reference, from him, if I did quit.

My mother said, that the time I have spent, at that job, speaks by itself, for my competence... My mother says, that one has only to spend, six months at a job, to have it speak for itself, as a good reference.

The work-load can be extremely fatiguing. With one rush job, demanded nearly instantly, by Trudy, as she had forgotten it, I worked until 7:30am, the next morning, to meet that deadline. That made, a very long 'day at work' for me, as I had started in the morning, the day before... This also caused me, to fall behind, with regularly scheduled work, and, of course, John-S was totally unhappy, with the situation, but he focused on me, rather than upon Trudy... I could not do work, on a job, that I did not have... But John-S' foul mood, was only shared, with me... Time for a big sigh, when I can work, nearly 24 hours, to get something done, for John-S, and only have him complain...

I do now understand, that Trudy, is no threat, to my job. First of all, Trudy probably would be, unable, to competently perform, the same work, that I do. Secondly, Trudy's position, now is to sit at the front counter, and handle the phones, and walk-in customers, to price jobs, and write invoices and work-orders, and she also now makes copies, for customers, with a copy machine, now located, out by her, so she does not have, to leave that work area, to do that job function...

John-S moved that copy machine, to that location, so Trudy could not use that excuse, of having to be at the front counter, to avoid working. I can chuckle, that while John-S, was 'pleased', and said he was 'happy to help Trudy with her problem', I am uncertain, if Trudy viewed this solution,

as a cause of 'joy'...

I can tell myself, to continue to appreciate, that I am secure, at my job, and that it provides me, with good income, and that I am slowly saving some money. There have been, long stretches, without any days off, from work.

I suggested to my mother, that perhaps, she could easily afford, to help me, to open my own, little type-setting shop, so that I could charge, the $30 an hour, which my boss gets, for my time, while I now earn, $7 an hour. John-S says, he must keep my wage low, because he anticipates, having to pay to me, the overtime rate, of time and a half, or $10.50, for many hours each week... John-S says, he must charge his customers, a flat rate, for my time, even if he is, paying overtime, to me. I am only somewhat sympathetic, to someone who is complaining, about having to earn $20 an hour, instead of $23, above or in addition to what I am paid, when that same person, is paying to me $7 an hour, rather than $8 an hour...

My mother said, she lacks the extra funds, to help me, at this time, but my idea, 'is something to think about'. My mother said, it is a shame, that I am missing, the Palm Beach social season, which goes from Thanksgiving, or Christmas, to Easter... This is also, the busy business season, and might thus be, the 'wrong time', for me to leave John-S...

John-S also continues, to produce *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, for me, and I do appreciate that. My mother said, it would be better, for *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, for me to socialize in Palm Beach, than to work, at a print-shop, in 'Nowheresville', in Delray Beach...

Thank God, and Jesus, for Christmas, as I do get, that day off, from work!!!

MEETING THE BEAST
December 28, 1985

A landscaper, came into the print-shop, and told me, that he might switch businesses. After all, he said, he was wasting a college degree. He had simply gotten, landscape tools, and a vehicle, and had built a business, over the past year, to where he now had, 25 regular clients. He said, he was simply doing, what anybody else could do, and so he felt, some insecurity, thinking that anyone, with more money, could come along, at any time, and have lower prices, than he, and put him out of business, as he had somewhat done, to others, in seeking to build, his own business.

Trudy was out for lunch, and so I was handling, the walk-in business, and phones...

I did muse, about this gentleman's belief, that he had done, or was doing, what 'anybody else could do'... First, I would give this gentleman, some credit, in completing the educational requirements, to get a college degree, and am uncertain, if anybody else, could do that, as it takes some discipline, and intelligence, to pass college courses...

However, beyond that, this gentleman seemed to lack, any notion, of how privileged, he actually might be...

Let us start, with the costs, of a college education, and that he had done this, with parental aid, and that many people, who might have, the same intelligence, and discipline, as this gentleman, might be unable, to afford, to go through school, to get that college degree. Financially affording a college education is not something that anybody else could do.

Then, this gentleman, had the funds, to buy landscape tools, to buy a vehicle, and to coast, to afford to pay his living, and business costs, while seeking to build an income, from his business... Financially affording, all of these costs, is also something, that not, 'anybody else could do'.

There might also be, a question, of business licenses and permits, and that perhaps, the same environment, which favored, his parents being able to afford, to cover this gentleman's costs, could have favored, his being approved, to gain a license and permit, as our 'managed economy', seems to prefer, to only allow, a certain amount of

businesses, to operate in an area, to seek to guarantee, that there is enough business, for them all to survive, and not too much, that some of them, might suffer... So again, this could be an aspect, that not 'anybody else could do'. And there 'might be', some political affiliation required, to be granted the license and permit to be allowed to operate a business, so again something that not 'anybody else could do'.

However, this gentleman, from his insulated upbringing, from his narrow perspective, might sincerely believe, as I have found, many of the elite to believe, that 'anybody else could do', what he has done, and is doing... This belief, that 'anybody else could do' these things, tends to lend itself, to a belief, that those who are not doing so, do not wish to do so, rather than, that they are unable, to do so, and sometimes influences, some who are able, to do these things, to look down upon, those who fail, to do them.

I would suggest, while many, might be able to do, what this gentleman had done, if able to financially afford to do so, that some are unable, to do so, because they are prohibited, from doing so, by the 'political environment'...

I suppose, there could be, a back-handed truth, that perhaps, it is because, 'anybody else could do' these things, if allowed, to do these things, that limits are placed, on allowing anybody, to do these things, and perhaps, there is some security, among those who do things, that 'anybody else could do', that influences them, to favor a system, which then excludes and-or prohibits many from being able to legally do so...

Capitalism would suggest, that open competition, removal of the license and permit system, allowing anyone to operate any business, would determine, who is the best, at doing, what anybody else could do. There could be, some 'regulation', to seek to ensure, that monopolies, fail to develop. A pro-capitalist government would seek to keep, as many businesses, in a field, as possible. Our 'managed economy', seems to prefer, to only have, a small, limited number, of businesses, in each field...

And, if there is a system, that seems to exclude some, to protect the interests, of those who are included, then it might seem, that if those who are included, do understand, that

some are excluded, that they might, then still seek to knowingly falsely maintain, to ‘outsiders’, that no such system exists...

I think it might be ‘proper’, for people to understand, that in a ‘managed economy’, that nobody should be looked down upon, disdained, when prohibited from doing, what they could otherwise be doing... And, in a ‘managed economy’, those who are allowed, to do what they can do, should perhaps be thankful, to have been granted, that ‘privilege’.

If it is a task, that ‘anybody else could do’, then perhaps, a ‘lottery system’, to randomly select, who might be allowed, to do, ‘what anybody else could do’, might be fair?

Asmodeus introduced me, to a person, named Damon, who considers himself, to be the Beast, of Biblical New Testament Revelations. By existing, perhaps Damon fulfills prophecy, that this is a correct time-period, for an appearance of Christos.

Damon views himself, as a rebellious hero, helping the down-trodden, against the domineering, a man with spirit, who opposes society’s hollow, spiritless, organized churches, a man who sees himself, as good, in his own natural way, rather than being, blindly self-righteous, in a conditioned manner, to the oppressive robotic conformity, of ‘the system’.

Damon said, he has no quarrel with me, as Christos. Asmodeus gave to Damon, a copy of the CCC booklet, and Damon says, that he likes it.

I told Damon, that I tend to consider Hitler, as having been, the one described, as ‘The Beast’... Damon said, he was more likely, to be described, as ‘The Beast’, because he opposes, organized religions, of our times, so those religions, might be more likely, to describe him, in a derogatory manner, as ‘The Beast’. Damon said, that Hitler was actually liked, by the organized religions, of his times, except perhaps for Jews, of course, though he did allow Jewish emigration to Israel (before that area was Israel). Hitler was thought of, in his own time, during his early years at least, as a, ‘champion of morality’, and was embraced, by the Pope, the head of the Roman Catholic Church.

Damon, as the Beast, says these, are definitely, the end times, spoken of in Revelations. Damon said, he goes among the people, and tells them, that this is, the end time, and that he is, the Beast. Damon has suffered scorn, and ridicule...

I gave to Asmodeus, a copy, of *Basic Earth Reality*, and a proof copy, of *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, which I have finally, just now, put together. Asmodeus and I, also made, an audio tape recording, of a 'candid conversion', a talk without advance preparation, just a normal talk between us, and either of us, has the freedom, to make copies of this tape, and distribute it.

Asmodeus and I did have a disagreement, during our talk, which can be natural, normal, and okay, and which was civil. We both did accurately reflect, our sincere beliefs. Asmodeus said, that Moses and Mohammed, should both be considered, manifestations of God, and can be viewed, as Christ figures, because they acted, as 'deliverers', for their peoples. I say, that both were, prophets of God, and could have been, manifestations of Michael-Brahman, rather than of Christos-Vishnu. I would decline, to view either, as Christ, or as manifestations of Christos.

However, I believe, that Christ is a title, bestowed by the people, in remembrance, perhaps after the fact, and that therefore, it is up to the people, to determine, to whom, they bestow that title. If people, even Asmodeus, wish to view, Mohammed or Moses, as Christ, or as a Christ, then that is their prerogative.

Some fundamentalist Christians, only channel, the energy of their faith, through their local church, and believe, that any psychic or metaphysical ability, is always, due to Lucifer, and is 'evil'. I disagree. However, that is the environment, in which I grew, as a child. To me, psychic or paranormal abilities can be a natural, and normal, part of being human. I can agree, that while these abilities, might have a genetic component, that sometimes, perhaps, they can also be, a gift from God, or from other 'allies', either through grafting, or through connection. I believe, that anybody, who has psychic or paranormal, or 'magickal' abilities, must still seek to learn, to harness those abilities.

More important, than that which I do, as a human, with

my human abilities, could be, that which God does, when I simply make requests, as Christos. That which I do, as a human, with my own individual human psychic abilities, can be done, by others, who might have, those same abilities, and who learn, to harness those abilities. Each human, can also do as I do, and make requests, of God, or of other allies.

To me, 'miracles' are done, only by God. Others may do things, which seem 'miraculous'...

Lastly, boss John-S, has now declared Trudy, to be my boss. Trudy has been given, a pay-raise, though she now complains, that it is a flat rate, and so she declines, to work any overtime... I can 'joke', that the less time, that Trudy is in the shop, the less time she has, to make errors, and this can be, a good thing...

The change that I face, is that Trudy, now has the right, to tell me, which jobs to do, while I am still responsible, for completion of all the work, on schedule. There are events, which occur on a certain date, so obviously, printed items, for those events, have to be done, by that time, and my work, is in advance, of the event time, for that job to be done, on a press. John-S has certain days, for certain ink colors, so jobs for a particular ink, have to be ready, for the day that job, is to be on the press. Trudy seems to be, baffled by that... This has created, some problems, in the press department, where changing, the color of ink, on the press, for a job that Trudy might demand, requires time, to clean the press, to remove one ink color, and to put on, another ink color... So, while my life, might be a bit compounded, by Trudy, so too, is the job, of the current pressman...

We have had, some turnover, in the press department, and it takes some time, for a new pressman, to become aware, of the exact colors, desired by a particular client. Now, when Trudy makes an error, with an ink color, the 'press department', is less likely to know, that an error, has been made, until after the piece is printed...

John-S' promotion of Trudy, was said to be, in part, because he needs me, where I am, and actually, her job responsibilities, have remained the same, but she now has,

the title of 'manager'... This adds some, to my discontent, with this job, for it shows me, that once more, it truly does not matter, how good a job, or bad a job, one does, for my bosses, in my actual experience, have seemed uncaring, other than Mr. Frank...

I do not think, that Trudy's promotion makes great business sense, for John-S has now put, another limit, upon what my working for him, can do for me. We have four people, working here, one owner, one manager, and two people who do a lot of work... I must admit, that John-S, does the bindery work... I do not hold this change, this promotion, against Trudy, as she is what she is, and I even congratulated her, on her promotion. I am somewhat saddened, by this development...

John-S has directed Trudy, to allow no customer, to speak directly with me. Four of our biggest, most major, clients, have declined, to go along with this, and despite Trudy's initial strong protestations, they continue to come, directly to me. The first two insisted, that they would either, wait for me, to become available, to discuss work with them, or, they would go elsewhere, with that work... John-S' logic was that, I should be working, and focused, only on performing work. These clients, prefer to be assured, that their actual instructions, desires, demands, and deadlines, be conveyed directly to me... I do not think, that John-S appreciates, that these major clients, are ignoring his instructions... But, for now, John-S has agreed, to allow them, direct access to me, whenever they want.

Trudy responded to this, by using, the 'power of her office', to tell me, to do work on things, she wished to have done, rather than, having me, be able to focus, on work from those clients, who had spoken directly to me. I believe, Trudy did this, from spite, rather than, from any real business need(s)...

This resulted, in one major client, getting upset, when his work was not ready for proof, when he had been told, that it would be ready. I had actually, brought this situation, to John-S' attention, prior to the proof deadline, and he had said, that he didn't wish to be bothered, and that Trudy and I, should work things out, between ourselves... Trudy said, I did have leeway, to work on that client's job later, told me to

work on something else, and said, she would handle that client, if need be...

When that client arrived, Trudy told him, to speak with me, about why his job, would be late... I said, that I would be ready, the next day, instead of this day, due to my being prohibited, by Trudy, the 'manager', my boss, from working on his job. This led, to an 'immediate' conference, between that client, and John-S, when that client, strongly, perhaps angrily, demanded, that immediate conference, which led to John-S, telling Trudy, that I could work, on the jobs of these clients, who have direct access to me, as needed, according to my discretion, rather than hers.

I have assured Trudy, that I would seek, to meet her deadlines, to please her needs, as well as the needs, of these major clients, and this has sometimes resulted, in Trudy, giving work to me, that she says, has to be, 'ready by morning'. Trudy gives, this 'emergency work', to me, just before she departs, around 5:00pm, and this has required me, to work into overtime, beyond 5:30pm, to get those jobs, ready for her, for the next morning... I am unable, to work on a job, that I do not know exists... I am unable, to work on a job, until after, I receive that job...

It is perhaps fortunate, for me, for John-S, for Trudy, and for our business clients, that I am willing, to drop my life, so suddenly, to serve these business needs. For now, I tell myself, that this is necessary, for me to hold this job, and this job is necessary, to allow me, to survive in life...

And so, that's how it goes sometimes... Part of me suspects, that Matthew, might enjoy, his 'work', more than I enjoy, my job...

DEALING WITH DISCONTENT
January 22, 1986

I am discontent. I feel overworked, and unappreciated, at my job. Boss John-S, is critical and unfriendly, to me, more often than not. John-S continues to blame me, for any mistake, made by Trudy, saying that it is my responsibility, to make sure, that Trudy does things right. Trudy continues to ignore, anything I say, but now she says, she's my boss, so most certainly, I am to listen to her, and should not even attempt, to tell her what to do. I have said, that I am not telling her, what to do, but am telling her, how to do, in ways that John-S approves, what she might need to do... At least Trudy, cannot honestly say, that she did not know.

There is a saying, that honesty is the best policy. I can agree, that honesty, or silence, are preferable, to me, rather than dishonesty. However, I am fairly certain, that Trudy would disagree, with that statement. Trudy believes, in saying, whatever might help her, to either look good, or to get what she wants. Trudy might believe, that dishonesty, is the best policy...

I think Trudy wants people to behave, as if they do believe her, even if they don't. Trudy might find it, to be disrespectful, if anyone were to impugn, her 'honesty'... I think Trudy, would be insulted, if she were to be called, a 'good liar', and I think, that would be untrue anyway, as anyone who knows her, would probably tend to disbelieve, anything she says, and think of her as a 'bad liar'...

It would be my preference, to not have to listen, to anyone, who lies as a norm, as doing so, is somewhat a waste, of my time. However, I do not have that option, with Trudy, as I must work with her, every day...

I suspect, that Trudy feels, that everyone lies, or should lie, but that nobody, should fault anyone, for lying, and therefore, to be respectful, people should be treated, as being truthful, even when they are known, to be lying. I think Trudy's logic, is a bit convoluted, but I also think, sincerely, that this is, 'how it is', with her.

Trudy remains willful, and prefers to do things, her own ways, and that's how it is... I suspect, that people, who insist on doing things, their own ways, might sometimes be,

people who are unable, rather than unwilling, to follow, to understand or memorize, instructions... I suspect, that Trudy, simply feels, a bit overwhelmed...

I can adapt, and do my job, somewhat regardless, of how Trudy does hers, but John-S, continues to yell at me, whenever Trudy does something, he thinks is wrong. Short of killing her, and hiding the body, I am uncertain, of how to make an improvement, in this situation, and, for the record, that is not an option, at least not for me, though I might have some sympathy, for anybody else, in a similar situation...

Manager Trudy is politically hostile, often seeking, to be critical of me, to draw attention, away from her own inexperience, and ignorance. Work has become, an unpleasant environment. The demands, of the work itself, can be challenging enough, but this unpleasantness, on top, makes the effort, seem much less worthwhile.

There remains, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, which is produced here, and the fact, that working for John-S, is at least, a secure job, perhaps because, nobody else would want it... I continue to work long hours, and always do seek, to do a good job, and can say, that I enjoy the work, and I put in, whatever extra time, is necessary, whenever, even, as a norm, without prior or much warning, often working late, into the evenings... I view this extra effort, as a way I thank John-S, for his production, of *WORLD PRESS WATCH*.

Sometimes, I stop at a bar, on my way home, and sometimes, I do meet people, and sometimes get to enjoy, casual, fun sex, and nothing has really 'stuck', so to speak. Nothing has developed. People meet, have fun, and then go their own ways in life, as that can be safer, when discrimination, can be so severe... A relationship with someone, can be a bit obvious, and some seem reluctant, to take that risk.

Home, is also 'challenging'... Paul is, once again, constantly complaining to me, about my friends. I suspect, Paul's being pleasant, was intended, to entice me back, into a physical relationship, and, when it failed to do so, then he resumed, his venomous ways.

And, if Paul thinks, I have come home, and might have someone with me, in my room, as I have done twice, Paul thinks, this is a great reason, for him to enter my room,

which I am unable to lock. Paul has sexually propositioned, both gentlemen, that I have brought home... I continue to decline, any physical activity, with Paul. Perhaps Paul serves, as a bellwether, in that someone must have an interest in me, rather than in Paul, or Paul's nice surroundings, for me, to wish to continue, a relationship with that person. And perhaps, that is a moot point anyway, as Paul seems to always demand, that I never bring home again, whoever he has met, saying, they are 'inappropriate' for me.

The only person, that Paul at all tolerates, is Daniel, and perhaps that is because, I have stressed, that Daniel and I, are 'just friends'... Even so, apparently Paul continues to refrain, from giving any telephone messages, to me, from Daniel, as Daniel has made me aware, of times that he has called me, and left messages for me. I have brought this, to Paul's attention, and he says, he either 'just forgot', or lacked pencil or pen, and paper, upon which to leave a message. This seems to occur, each time, and I have yet to receive, a single telephone message, for me, from Paul... I think Paul tolerates Daniel, only because Daniel works, as a personal assistant, to Mrs. Woolworth, a very wealthy matron, who does have, some connections, to matrons, that Paul escorts.

Sometimes I call Daniel, before I leave work, and he meets me, at a bar, for a drink. I can appreciate, that Daniel, at least gives to me, a sympathetic ear, and right now, I need that...

Sometimes, I do suspect, that it is Paul's, strong lust for me, which keeps me there, even without sex, meaning, that if Paul, did not feel, such strong lust for me, then he would have asked me, to leave... I do have difficulty, thinking of Paul, as a 'friend', even though I can remember, that he has been, helpful to me, in the past, but I have to force myself, to remember that, as otherwise, I am now tending to think, of Paul, as no friend of mine...

At any rate, I am discontent. I am on the borderline, of feeling sorry for myself. And I am longing, for a mutual romantic love, for a feeling, that I love someone, who loves me, that someone, is in my corner, and that I want to be, with a partner, to build, and share a world with, someone

with whom, to face life together...

I can be glad, to have Paul, John-S, Asmodeus, and Daniel, in my life, for the good things, that they help me to enjoy... I do long, for romantic love, and have not had, a continuing relationship, with romantic love, since Russ departed...

I have affirmed to Paul, that I do wish, to eventually get, a place of my own. Paul asks, that I never leave him, saying he wishes, for me to care for him, as he gets older... I have told Paul, that he would have, a greater chance, of me remaining, if he would, at least give to me, privacy in my own room. Paul says, he doesn't mean anything, by what he does; he just loves me so much... And Paul doesn't change his behavior. I have asked, if I could at least, use my own linens, my own curtains, and have, some of my ornaments, paintings, on the walls of my room, and Paul has declined, to allow me, any of these things...

I continue to visit Asmodeus, after work, at least once a week, on the day that I bring to him, copies of *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, for him to distribute. Asmodeus and I, have an understanding, that I am not to mention, Paul's name, or anything about my time with Paul, to Asmodeus, as Asmodeus says, the only news, he wishes to hear, concerning Paul, is that I have moved, and that Paul, is no longer, part of my life.

Asmodeus wants me, to help write, and edit, and polish, his life story, as an unpaid favor... When I had to move, from Helene's, even though, I was trying to save every penny, and even though, I had helped Asmodeus, to get transportation, driving him to many places, for him to look at vehicles, without his contributing, even to fuel costs, when came time for me, to need Asmodeus, to help me to move, from Helene's to Paul's, he refrained from helping, to actually move anything, and only provided, his driving ability, and I had to pay him, for his time and fuel... Now, Asmodeus wants me, to devote many-many-many hours, to his 'life story', 'as a friend', without any payment...

For now, I have advised Asmodeus, to at least make, some rough notes, and to perhaps wait, until he has had, more of a life, to make a story about... Asmodeus thinks, I should just take notes, as he dictates his tale... I have

suggested, that Asmodeus, make audio-tape recordings, that I could listen to, at my convenience, but he dislikes that idea...

In a bet with Trudy, I have started, sending my newsletter, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, free, to three dozen, of the wealthiest people, in Palm Beach. The bet was, that Trudy thinks, some would subscribe, while I say, that the wealthy, are the most worthless individuals, of a society, so no more than four, would subscribe, out of that 30. The wealthy, usually expect gifts from people, who should be trying, to curry their favor, simply because they are wealthy, and usually, just gladly accept the gifts, and do nothing in return...

It is thought, that the wealthy, benefit a society, by how they spend their money, and how they invest, leading society into improvements, and stimulating, or maintaining, an economy. However, I think, as consumers, wealthy people only indulge, in extravagant goods, which means, low production, and low employment, and they seem to have, most things they need, so they fail to help, even the basic aspects, of an economy. And, perhaps prudently, most wealthy people, invest in established businesses, and thus fail, to help invigorate, or direct, our economy, into 'improvements'...

Trudy says, I am too critical, and too cynical. Perhaps Trudy fails to understand, that I am not speculating... Trudy likes to be charming, to wealthy clients... I plan to send, renewal notices, to these 30 wealthy individuals, in six months, and then we'll see, if Trudy was correct, that the wealthy do care, or if I was correct, that the wealthy will do nothing. If three or more subscribe, this would be, at least ten percent, and that would show, more concern, than that shown, by poor people.

On a positive note, *The Key West Citizen*, is now using regularly, each Sunday, all of *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, rather than a partial excerpt, and this is, after I expanded the length, by 25-percent. I am sent, au gratis, the Sunday edition, of *The Key West Citizen*, which I continue to enjoy. *The American Uutiset*, the Finish-language newspaper, also continues, to feature, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. I am now only accepting, paying subscribers, as new subscribers.

On a negative note, my mailing boards, with the addresses of those, to whom I mail my newsletter, vanished from the print-shop. I use that 'confidential information', to make labels, to mail my newsletter to people. I asked Trudy, and John-S, if they knew anything about that, but they both professed ignorance, and neither, had any concern, nor did either, do anything, to actually look for them. John-S, would have been very upset, if the same thing, had happened, to a 'paying customer'...

I did have, a list at home, from which to make, new mailing boards. By 'boards', I mean a typeset, pasted-up 'camera-ready' board, which I can copy onto labels. I no longer keep, anything related, to *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, at work, as I would normally do, for any client, of the print-shop...

Trudy seeks, to use hostile lies, to counterbalance, hostile truths. For instance, Trudy was told to do, the filing of past jobs, which has information, or material, that can be used again, or just for record-keeping. Past jobs, are supposed to be, filed alphabetically. It turns out, that Trudy finds this challenging, both to do properly, and to do at all, and has taken, to just hiding jobs, around the shop, to file them 'later', and then often, apparently, 'later' never comes, so when that material, is actually needed, it can be, very challenging to find, and I do sometimes, have to re-create stuff, which takes more time, than just amending something.

This became apparent, when John-S, found a bunch of files, hidden somewhat, in a closet in the back, and when he inquired about that, Trudy said, that I must have done it. I simply affirmed, that I have had, nothing to do, with that aspect of work, and have lacked, even access, to those files, since John-S took that task, away from me, and gave it to Trudy, saying, "She should be able to do that..."

I suspect, that it was Trudy, who 'vanished' my *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, mailing labels, because I did not, take the blame, for her...

My mother, having learned from Paul, that I missed, the promotion to manager, and that a new, inexperienced woman, has gotten that job, simply says, that John-S apparently likes women, more than he likes, good business... My mother says, I am foolish, to remain there,

and should seek, ‘a good job’...

Lastly, some progress, for Christos... I recently sent, to Thomas in Atlanta, a copy, of the taped conversation, between Asmodeus and I, and also a proof copy, of *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*. Talented Christian artist, Dana, has made a cover for me, according to my design suggestions, and I am very pleased, with his talent, and final product.

John-S says, he won’t print this book, until after I have paid him, in full for it, in advance... I have paid John-S, $250 of the $400, he wants for 300 copies. In some ways, I am trading, more than a week’s worth, of my work, for John-S, in return, for maybe two hours, of his shop’s time... I feel, John-S’ price is high, because I have done, all of the pre-press work myself, and his cost, is for paper, ink, and time on a press. Nevertheless, I feel John-S, will do a good job, and I hoped, that he might do it quickly, though I don’t have, any ‘deadline’, so whenever the job is done, conveniently for John-S, is fine by me.

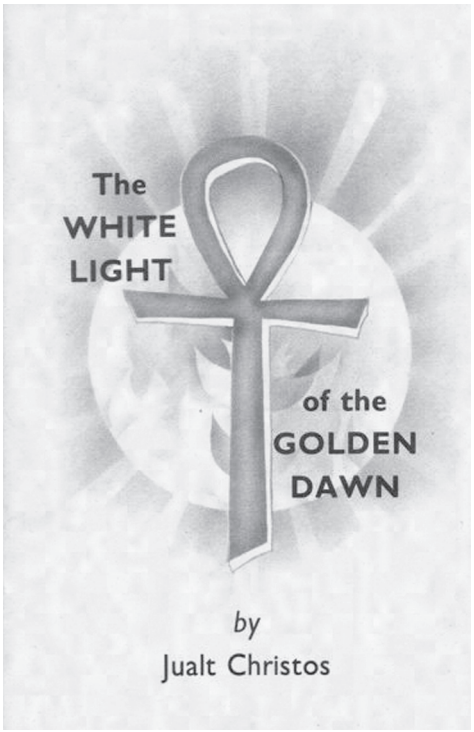
For the record, I do understand, that John-S does feel, some legitimate stress, and strain, upon him, and that I am simply, a convenient, or safe target, for his venting. There are good moments, between John-S and me. I continue, to very much appreciate, that John-S, has given to me, some stability in my life, that I have lacked, previous to my employment with him, at least since I left Key West...

= 31 =

THE WHITE LIGHT OF THE GOLDEN DAWN
February 7, 1986

[140429 ~ I worked on Book Eight, of *The Life of Christos* series, before I worked, on this book, Book Five... When I worked, on LOC-08, I found mention, of *The White of the Golden Dawn*, and had not experienced that mention, in this series, previously. So, in Book Eight, I went into some details, about *The White of the Golden Dawn*. Now, in working on Book Five, I do see mention, of *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, but I was unaware of this, when I put together, Book Eight.]

A minor goal has been reached. The work, putting together, the first printing, of *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, is now complete. It was somewhat, of an emotional experience, especially for Asmodeus. Asmodeus kept saying, that he wanted, to be a part, of the creation, of this book, and said, he would help me, to collate the pages, which is to put them, into proper order, prior to when, I joined them, to the cover, and stapled it all together, to actually make, the finished books.



Once I actually picked up Asmodeus, at his Lake Worth home, and started to drive him, with me, to the print-shop, in Delray Beach, to actually do this work, he then yelled, that I would have to agree, to drive him home, at any time, if he was to accompany me, and help me. What surprised me was

Asmodeus' tone of voice, which had become, suddenly hysterical, and he was actually, yelling at me, in the car, when a civil tone of voice, to make a request, rather than a yelled demand, would have been sufficient. I was surprised...

I could do the job alone. I did not wish, to stop halfway, or at any time before when this task was completed. I told Asmodeus, that I could just return him, to his home, right then, if doing this task, might be a problem for him. Asmodeus said, that I obviously, could not be Christ, if I couldn't cope, with an emotional person. I told Asmodeus, that I was seeking to cope, with an apparent childish tantrum, by declining to cater to it, and by offering to him, an easy way out.

After that, there were no problems, between Asmodeus and I, and he was helpful, and we did finish the task, and *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, has now been born. In my mind, this book, is the polished version, of what I would have done, rather than having, my mother and father, produce the little CCC booklet, without my knowledge or consent, from rough notes, I had shared with them.

I am heeding, Asmodeus' advice, and sending a copy, of *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, to the leading metaphysical publisher, in the US. Asmodeus also advised me, to tell this publisher, that I am related, to at least one famous American, and to name, at least one name, saying that would, at least get the book, to be looked at. I will heed, Asmodeus' advice, on that point also. I have refrained, from mentioning, my private identity, in the past, but, this time, I will take Asmodeus' advice, and make an exception, because it is important to me, that this book, gain a chance, for publication. I would thus give, the path of Christos, priority, over the life of Jualt, in a way, being willing, to sacrifice the life of Jualt, to give life, to Christos...

I am still touched, by moments of self-pity, as I do remain, a touch unhappy, or at least, without much joy, in my life... Any more words, about my situation, would simply be, a repetition, of what I have already said, so I shall spare my readers, from that, for now... I sometimes tell myself, what a stupid fool I am, to invest my life, in Christos, or presenting world news, as both paths, seem detrimental, to my well-

being, and people seem, to at best, lack interest, in either.

The printing, of *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, was marked, by many major catastrophes, worldwide. Asmodeus said, this showed, that the book is significant. Asmodeus says, that the book, being born during the sign of Aquarius, is also a good omen.

My mother, says I was wrong, to mix religion and politics, in my book, although she did seem to think, doing so, was okay, when she did the same, when she helped to produce, my CCC booklet... My mother also objected, to my description, of my birth, as, 'shrouded in mystery', a writer's touch. I think my mother, could perhaps eventually agree, that it is better to say, that my birth, is 'shrouded in mystery', than to say, that she is my mother!

I sense a danger, in the rise of the Apocalypse, at least as a result, of industrialized pollution. A danger is, that the many rising, industrializing nations, of our world, are not concerned enough, with pollution control. They are all, racing to 'catch up', with the already industrialized nations.

As the US, and Europe, industrialized, they alone were able, to affect our world's weather. Now the US and Europe, including the SU, have some pollution control, but the industrialization, of the rest of our world, could become more, in its total, than the total, of what was done, by the US and Europe.

Our world's weather, has been getting, worse and worse, and this could become, even worse. I have claimed an ability, to be able, to influence weather, and so far, so good, with my hurricane protection pledge, for the most part. However, my influence could become, one that minimizes, rather than prevents, catastrophes, depending upon, how much worse, things actually do get.

What I am saying, is that things, could become, actually so bad, that my own influence, could become, insignificant. Perhaps a moot point, anyway, as long as, the real-world powers that be, decline, to seek to help put me, to beneficial use, anyway.

Lastly, the ancient Hebrews may have been insulating themselves, against the Hindu culture, when they warned, to beware, of the 'mark of the Beast'. I think the caste mark, worn on Hindu foreheads, could have been, the 'mark of the

Beast', from an original Hebrew perspective.

For their part, the Hindu culture, may have sought, to insulate themselves, from outsiders, such as the Hebrew culture, among others, by describing, all who lacked, approved caste marks, as 'untouchables', as those to be shunned, or excluded, or mistreated, from and by that society...

I believe, people are people as individuals, rather than inherently, due to a caste mark, or lack of a caste mark.

Once again, I affirm my belief, that I am, the historical Christos, here and now, as far as the future is concerned.

I will seek to do good things with my life.

= 31 =

HEADLINE HIGHLIGHTS
February 26, 1986

Paul had a terrible flu, while I worked 55 hours, this week, at my full-time job... The time demands, of my print-shop job, left me unable, to really do much, to help Paul, to feel better, so I was, somewhat useless, to him. I checked in on Paul, each morning, and each evening, and brought him, something to drink, to help to make him, feel more comfortable. It is sad, when you are such a slave, to your work routine, that you can't be, of much help, to someone you care for. Despite my differences with Paul, he is someone, who is, 'in my corner', and I do hope, he feels better soon. Paul's illness, has reminded me, that I do have, fondness for him, and do appreciate, his presence, in my life, even if I do feel, less trusting of him. My will, parma, is with him, even if my life-energy, is more distant, physically.

Paul's political and 'social' views, put him, totally at odds, with Asmodeus, who believes that a society, does cause the conditions, that people must live within, so must seek to provide, all of its citizens, with all of their basic needs, cost-free. Asmodeus greatly admires, communist governments, that assume total control, and total responsibility... Asmodeus likes to believe, that things are 'good', for all the people, within such communist nations, and believes, that any reports otherwise, are propaganda, without truth.

I think an individual, should be able, to live comfortably, outside of government control. I believe our society, has sought to make life, outside the cage, comfortable. I do agree with Asmodeus, that our government, does influence, the conditions we live within, but, at this time, the people are responsible, as individuals, for their own well-being, which is a trade-off, for their having 'freedom', with that 'freedom', being some freedom, from their government...

However, if one is within a system, where the government, has both control, and responsibility, then it might seem, that such a citizen, should seek to participate, to help to maintain, and improve, the condition of the people. And that system should be open, to such participation, by normal people, which Asmodeus believes, both the governments, of China, and the Soviet Union, do allow, and encourage.

Asmodeus, might occasionally describe himself, as a communist, and his doing this, during a time, when the 'free' US, is in, a 'life or death struggle', with the SU, can make him seem, 'undesirable', to Paul, while Paul's kowtowing to the elite, makes him seem, 'undesirable', to Asmodeus...

Paul is nothing but rude, to Asmodeus, when Asmodeus calls, which Asmodeus continues to do. I do answer the telephone, when I am at home, sometimes, and if I am at home, and Paul answers, he does at least, some of the time, when I am aware, let me speak with Asmodeus. It somewhat, now goes without saying, that if Asmodeus calls, and is told, that I am not at home, even if I am, that I will fail, to get the message later.

Asmodeus does, intermittently threaten to drop me as a friend, if I do not soon, move away from Paul's. When I weigh things out, I select to remain in place. Paul has been helpful to me, in real-world ways, while Asmodeus, always pleads poverty, and does nothing, to seek to improve, his situation. I have advised Asmodeus, that rather than living, on what he views, as a very meager disability income, due to his bad heart, that he could seek, to have some sort of light job, which would give to him, more income. Asmodeus says, that the main benefit, of his disability, is medical treatment, rather than income, and that if he got a job, he might be disqualified, from disability, and the income, he would receive, from a job, would fail to meet, the costs for his medical needs...

Paul, at over 70 years of age, still works a job, for Frank-B, and enjoys his evening activities. Asmodeus is given, to some partying, with a group at his own home, where he 'lectures', and studies. Asmodeus does investigate, and explore, and learn, at least in realms of theology, and magick, and I do find, this to be, commendable. Paul limits his reading, to the daily newspaper, which informs one, of current approved stuff...

Somewhat paradoxically, Asmodeus lives in an area, governed by Democrats, those who favor government control, to enhance society, through social programs. While Asmodeus, thinks current US President Reagan, reflects fascist control, of our nation, with a government, for those who have money, by those who have money, privately

earned in a capitalist way, or 'outside the cage', as I might say, he does also believe, that his own local area, is a bit of a 'police state', serving a 'gang', or 'clique', within the local area, as he thinks, there can be 'groups', within the Democratic party, that fail to honor, the ideals he reveres, of that political party. So, while Asmodeus politically supports, life 'inside the cage', he finds his own cage, to be meager, and oppressed...

I have told Asmodeus, as I mention, in *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, that a monopoly can become abusive, whether that monopoly, is political, or economic. I believe, that Stalin turned the Soviet system, away from social needs, in order to focus, on military needs. I believe, a system must have, more than one political party, and I prefer, a parliamentary system, that allows, three or more political parties, as I believe the people, and their interests, are diverse, and are thus more accurately represented, by a diversity of political parties...

If right now, there are two political parties, and one, is mostly 'right-wing', and the other, is mostly 'left-wing', then Asmodeus, could represent, the far left, of the left wing, and Paul could represent, the far right, of the right wing, whereas, I view myself, as a centrist, a moderate, and a statesman... Perhaps, both Paul and Asmodeus, both have some concern, about 'stepping out of line'... Paul thinks, that I 'step out of line', by having anything to do with Asmodeus. However, I do not share, any fondness for communism, or for monopoly capitalism, which I view as fascism, and I view communism, as a form of fascism.

At any rate, my alignment with Asmodeus, is based on our mutual fondness, for metaphysics. I do allow, communist perspectives, to be presented, accurately, within *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, as part of my presentation, accurately, of all perspectives.

Sales of *WORLD PRESS WATCH* have been slight. My mother, as a gift, paid the $100 fee, for a bulk mail permit, for *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. My mother, would like for me, to invest in a property, with her. My share, of the investment, would be to do the work, to fix a place, and she would like, for me to quit my job, and do this work now, for her full-time, without financial compensation, to earn my

share, of proceeds, from the future sale, of such a property, as my financial compensation.

My mother says, I could supply labor, and says her costs, for hiring other people, to do the work, where I am unskilled, but could learn by observation, instruction, and experience by participation, would be deducted, from what I would earn, from the future sale, of a property, after it is 'restored'. My mother assures me, that she would be, fair with me.

Unfortunately, I do need income to survive... I cannot financially afford, to give up my job. My mother's offer seems attractive, but I don't think, I can financially afford, to accept it. In addition, my mother was interested, in a property, within a city, that I now have reason, to avoid, which is the main cause, for me to write this chapter...

I truly believe, that *WORLD PRESS WATCH* is a positive thing, both for the people, and for our nation. I am providing information, that otherwise, might not be seen. I am picking up two trends. First, US President Reagan is calling for pluralist democracy, in lands with repressive dictators. Reagan says, that such a movement should have a 'spiritualist flow', echoing chapter one, of *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*.

[140430 ~ The US has previously supported, military governments, strong central governments, while the Soviets, have supported, 'liberation movements'... I have said, human rights can be the strongest popular movement, among people, and that a war can be fought, in the hearts, and minds, of people, and won there. Reagan's statement, is a shift, in official US policy, that aligns, with what I have said, in The Evolution of Ideology...]

The second trend, I am perceiving, is a 'law and order' crackdown, at all levels of government, based on our government's, 'right' to do so, if it feels, that it can justify the need, meaning, sometimes sadly, if the government, can come up with, logical excuses, for its actions, after the fact... This is movement, on the path of 1984, in that it can use, foreign threat, to justify domestic order, 'control', for 'security', and thus reduce 'liberty', while claiming to promote preservation of 'liberty', while reducing 'liberty'...

After work, I went to Asmodeus' home, in Lake Worth, to

deliver to him, the copies of *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, that he then distributes. I had 'joked', when among Asmodeus and his friends, that my publishing, of a firebrand letter to the editor, to *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, in *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, about alleged Soviet arms sales, to Mexico, would get me arrested. I had published that letter, with a disclaimer, saying, that I was unable to substantiate, the claims made in the letter.

After conversing with Asmodeus, and giving to him, copies of *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, I left his home, and headed toward the interstate, to go home. Asmodeus lives, on a one-way street, near Lake Worth Avenue, so I had to go, in that direction, and then find the through street, that would take me, to 10th Avenue North, where I could connect, with the interstate, I-95. I still had, a couple of hours, of work to do, labeling and sorting, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, for mailing.

I got to, a four-way stop intersection, first, and a police car, arrived at the intersection, on another street, second. The police car idled slowly forward, as if to go through the intersection, if I didn't claim, my right of way. I was not in a particular hurry, but, on principle, or my own stubbornness, to do, as I normally would be supposed to do, I eased out into the intersection, and continued on my way, as I did have, legal right of way.

I went 25 miles per hour, in a 30 mile per hour zone, heading for the next stop sign, several blocks further north on that road. However, before I reached the stop sign, a police car, came rushing up behind me. I held my speed, and the cop held his position, about two feet behind my back bumper, a bit too close. I increased my speed, to 30 miles per hour, and held steady, at that speed, in case the police vehicle, was so close to my vehicle, because I was going too slow. I thought the cop, would not 'tailgate' me, at the higher speed.

The cop then revved his engine, as if to pass me, and pulled alongside me, riding next to me, in the incoming lane of traffic, on this two-lane road. The cop, then pulled slightly forward of me, and began to swerve his vehicle, at mine, several times. It was definitely, a bad moment for me, for I felt, the cop's driving, was irrational, or that he would hit my

vehicle, and blame me, for any accident. I maintained my speed, and straight course. I am, after all, a 'triple Taurus'...

The policeman dropped his vehicle, back to alongside of me, as he continued to travel, in the oncoming lane for traffic. I looked at the policeman, and asked him, what did he want of me? I know he could not hear, what I was saying, but I felt he understood, what I was saying.

The policeman pulled back, to behind my vehicle, getting out of the oncoming traffic lane, and then turned on his lights, indicating, for me to pull over, and stop. I did so. I was quite nervous, not because I had done anything wrong, but because I didn't like, the cop's odd behavior.

The policeman, came up to my driver window, and politely requested, my identification. I gave to him, my driver's license. It was cold. I closed my window and waited. I was not dressed, for cold weather.

Another police car arrived. The first cop, returned to my window, and told me, that I was a suspect, in a hit and run, that had just occurred, nearby. I told the policeman, that I had just been, at Asmodeus home, nearby, and that he could call there, to confirm my story. I gave to the policeman, Asmodeus's phone number, but, during this whole episode, nobody ever contacted Asmodeus. That phone call, could have ended this situation, right then and there... A third police car, arrived and parked, with the other two...

Now, there were three police cars, around my little car, all with their lights flashing, and me feeling, more and more, uncomfortable. I knew, that I had done, nothing wrong, and I knew, that one phone call, could clear the whole thing up. So, when more and more time went by, I began to question, silently in my own mind, the intentions of the police, and it began to dawn on me, that this whole thing, could have been pre-planned, an ambush, as I was on my regular path, at my regular time, and the whole thing, could have been motivated, because of *WORLD PRESS WATCH*...

A policeman told me, that I had damage, to my vehicle, and that damage looked suspicious. I pointed out, in defense, that this little scrape, or very small dent, on the side of my vehicle, was old, and could easily be, determined to be old, because it was rusted. It could not have, 'just

occurred', like the hit and run, they had mentioned.

For the record, I knew about that dent, and it had happened, when my vehicle was parked, and I was absent from it, at the time. It was a little scrape, on the side of my vehicle. I had thought, it might have been, from a shopping cart, at a grocery store. I explained this, and said, I had viewed it, as inconsequential, so had refrained, from spending money, to have it repaired... It was something, which I could live with, so to speak.

Some people, seem to think, that all damage, should be immediately reported, and repaired, and might view with suspicion, any damage, that is not, reported and repaired, as if one wished to avoid, becoming associated, with whatever that situation, might have been. That is perhaps, a lofty 'elitist view', that views financial costs involved, as irrelevant, unimportant, while to me, 'every penny counts'...

The police, then showed to me, a little dent, in my front bumper... I was unable, to explain that dent. I pointed out, that my front bumper, was hard plastic, so, if another vehicle, had been hit, and metal scrapes were indicated, then it would not be, my vehicle, that had been involved, but would have, instead been, a vehicle, with a metal front bumper.

The police inquired, as to where I had been, during the evening. I said, I had been at work, and had clocked out, when I left my work-place, so my presence there, in Delray Beach, could be indicated, evidenced, by my time-card, which I have to manually use, to clock-out. I have to physically be, at that location, to physically perform, that task, and my work, the items I had produced, and the computer times, on files, would also verify, where and when I had been.

I said, I had gone to Asmodeus' home, directly from my work-place, and he could vouch for me, if they would call him, without having to tell him, anything specific. They asked, if anyone else could vouch for me, and I said, other people, had been at Asmodeus' home, when I was there.

Then an ambulance drove by my vehicle slowly, and I was told, that the victim, of the hit and run, was inside the ambulance. I thought to myself, that these people were really going, out of their way, to cause me some concern.

I began to fear, that any time, I told the police something, that then they might be, re-writing their story, around what I said. I have personally experienced, police writing, and re-writing, and re-writing, their official report, of an incident... I began to fear, that cooperating, as I had been doing, would help them, to build some sort, of false case, against me. If I remained silent, then, at least, they might blunder, and say something, or allege something, which could later be, easily disproved... I feared, that by telling the police, that I had worked this day, and evening, and could prove my whereabouts, at those times, that the police, might then place, their alleged hit and run, at another time. I have personally experienced, an incident, where police first arrested me, and then, afterwards, tried to figure out, with what to charge me...

I asked the police, to tell me, when and where, their hit and run, had allegedly occurred. The police, ordered me, out of my car. They wished to check, to see if I was sober, and I was, and proved that to them, by easily passing their sobriety tests, so they couldn't use that, against me. I thought, the police were searching, for something to hang me with, and, after more than 30 minutes, had found nothing, but had not yet given up...

The police said, that they had two witnesses, to the hit and run, who could identify me, as the driver, of the hit and run vehicle. I told them, I would meet with their witnesses, because I was innocent, of any crime. They had me wait, in the cold. I did visibly shiver, but it was, from the cold.

I should also mention, that the language in use, had become, much less than polite, by the police at this point, with the police strongly demanding, cursing at me, to stop my, mother-fucking bull-shitting, and admit to my crime, that I was nothing, but a low-life lying scum-bag. They were tired of this, and the sooner I gave myself up, the sooner this could then end, for all of us, that I had to face, what I had done. They said, I had left someone, bleeding, by the side of the road, hurt, injured, alone, and that I was despicable.

I knew, I had done nothing... I knew, that one phone call, to Asmodeus, would verify my whereabouts, and end this situation. I knew that phone call, was apparently being avoided...

They said, I had hurt the person's knee, and that this person, might be crippled for life, because of what I had done. Police said, there was damage to my bumper, at the same level, as the victim's knee.

I had been unaware, of any damage, to my front bumper, prior to this incident. In looking at an indentation, on my plastic front bumper later, it seemed to be, on the upper surface, as if it had been pushed down, from above, rather than being on its front, where an impact, might have normally occurred.

With the arrival, of a fourth police vehicle, the police then produced, their two witnesses, one, a big burly man, younger and bigger than I, and the other, a small young man, in his early twenties. The big one came to where I was standing, surrounded by police, as if they wished, to prevent me, from running away, to escape...

The big burly guy, asked me my name, and I told him, Jualt. The police, and the big burly guy, moved together away from me, and talked, and then, the big burly guy, turned, and came back to me, got right in my face, so to speak, nearly nose to nose, and started yelling at me, saying, how could I have left his friend, in the street?!! Didn't I feel any remorse, for what I had done?!!? What kind of an awful person was I?!!

When this was going on, the police moved, further away from me, leaving me alone, to face the onslaught, from this behemoth gorilla. I felt great anxiety then, fear of physical injury, and I still feel that anxiety, now, as I wonder, about this huge person, who seems out to get me, for something I did not do. I think, even an innocent person, might have run, at that point, but I remained, steadfastly in place. I did wonder later, if I had run, would the police, have shot me dead?

I told this hulking giant, repeatedly, that I had done no wrong, and that he had made, an error in identification. He was absolutely certain, that he had not made an error. This went on, for some minutes. It was definitely, 'prolonged'...

For what it's worth, the other witness, the young guy, seemed somewhat uncomfortable, and he made no accusations against me, and then, as this scene continued, he avoided, making any eye contact, with me... I felt that he

was sorry, sorry to see someone, in this situation, sorry that he was involved, in this situation, sorry to see, what police could do... Later, I wondered, if that gentleman, might have been, in some coerced situation, himself, and if his witnessing, what was being done to me, influenced him, to avoid helping the police, against me. I think, I might owe that guy, some thanks. Perhaps, this whole thing, was for his benefit, rather than for mine, or perhaps, it was a case, of two birds, with one stone... I can hope, that gentleman, remained okay, after this episode...

The police rejoined me, and a police officer, one with 'rank', perhaps a captain, seemed to join this circus, after the arrival, of a fifth police vehicle. Perhaps everyone on duty, at that hour, in that small city, was now with me... This seemed to be, a 'big deal'... Police then took, pictures of my vehicle, and of me. I was asked, if I would visit the victim, in the hospital, and I agreed to do so. I was told, that I could go, and would be contacted, later.

I figured, police would tell me, when to meet them, at a hospital, to meet the victim. I feared, that the big burly guy, would follow me, to my home, and seek to do, some damage to me... I actually drove, a roundabout route, to get to my home, to be sure, that I was not followed.

I believe, that in my past, I have had, some 'interactions', with 'authorities', in which I believe, they acted, much less than properly. I am therefore, much less than trusting, in the 'goodness', of police and authorities. I do however, wish to always, seek to give, the benefit of the doubt, that police are behaving, in good faith, according to the ideals, of their job. I have many sympathies, for police, and do believe, they are meant to provide, a very valuable public service, in keeping the peace, and helping people, in the face of crime. I believe in the ideals, represented by honorable police.

At this time, I plan to find out, if there was, a hit and run accident, at all. If there was, a hit and run accident, then I can excuse, the way the police acted, for they were under pressure, and filled with excitement. The police really wanted, to get the guilty person, but got hung up on me, instead. Had the police, quickly checked out my alibi, with Asmodeus, they could have devoted, their resources and time, to finding the actual culprit...

Even so, in any situation, it would seem wrong to me, for the police car, to be swerving, improperly and dangerously, unnecessarily, at my vehicle, a slow-moving, manual transmission vehicle, one which would have been unable, by the way, to 'speed away', from any hit and run. At any rate, I believe, the policeman should have used, his siren or lights, rather than, swerving at my vehicle.

It was also serious, for the police, to leave me alone, with that big angry gorilla. There was no way, that any policeman, could have protected me, from this guy, had he actually attacked me, and, with my severed collarbone, there would have been, no way, for me to protect myself. If I had been frightened, and run, the police, would probably have shot me, saying I was trying, to escape questioning.

Later, after telling them of what had happened, Paul, Asmodeus, and John-S, all said, that I am over-reacting. I have some certainty, that all of them, would be 'over-reacting', much more than I might be doing, if they had been, in my shoes... I suspect, that rather than, actually believing, that I was 'over-reacting', they might have believed, that I might be, exaggerating, and I was not exaggerating... John-S might have suspected, that I was lying, simply seeking, time off from work...

I still face, visiting the victim, in the hospital, and face possible charges, of hit and run, which is very serious. I am directly involved, and cannot afford, not to react, to this situation.

The police treated me, like I am guilty. I had thought, that our nation honored the concept, of a person being innocent, until proved guilty. Because the police, thought I was guilty, they denied to me, their protection, from that angry thug. I have even considered, that perhaps, the two witnesses, were police in civilian clothes, and that is even worse, if the police, are prepared to create, their own witnesses, to a crime...

I am still churning inside. I at least, got my labeling and sorting done, for *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, and have now spent much time, putting down these notes. These notes are, right 'after the fact' memories, undimmed by time.

My father was an honorary deputy sheriff, in this county, and he told me, two things: An innocent man should stand

his ground, and sometimes, the police play games...

If there is no report, of a hit and run, on record, then the police were playing with me, and perhaps, only my family background, protected me. Perhaps, the police found, that they could not, just put me away, without publicity, and this might have, 'saved me'... A poor person, could have been locked away, and sent to a work farm, at least in Georgia. I am a poor person, but my grandfather, was a national hero, and the authorities, might not want, to tarnish his image...

What if, the victim in the hospital, dies? Then could I be convicted, without the victim, identifying me, or my vehicle, or more importantly, vouching for my innocence? The police did say, it was a knee injury, so perhaps, such a death is unlikely, due to natural causes... I think, a visit to the victim, best be done, sooner, rather than later...

I also am, totally unable, to afford to hire, a lawyer... I am a poor, working person...

I told Paul, that I would never resist arrest, with or without violence, so he should never believe, any stories, about me being beaten or killed, while resisting arrest. This is sad, and scary. I do not know, what is going to happen next, but I do intend to investigate.

There is that old question, of what good, does it do, to sue a government, when government, just pays off, with taxpayer's money... Deterrence to future harassment, for others and myself, could be an answer, to that question. It does seem necessary, to me, for me to consider, suing that city. I certainly, do not wish, to purchase property, with my mother, in that city, for then I might truly be, a hostage.

Writing this episode down has helped me, to vent my pent-up emotion, and to calm down some. Having to work, on *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, also served, as a distraction. I have called karma, on those involved, and sent Chiefie, to 'respond'. Let those who did this to me, feel what it is like, to come under assault... Perhaps then, these authorities, might back off of Christos, a bit...

To those, who might wish, to portray me, as living, a 'safe and sheltered' life, read this chapter. I am, in no way safe, or sheltered. If anything, this attack upon me, is because, I champion the civil rights, of all, in the face of a government, which seems to perhaps be, clamping down,

on everyone's rights, to maintain 'healthy order', of course... Order always seems healthy, when one administers that order...

Lastly, there might be, some 'humor', in all of this, as Biblical Revelations, spoke of two witnesses, but I thought, these two witnesses, were supposed to be, allies of Christos, 'true witnesses', rather than, 'false witnesses'...

[140430 ~ I have thought, that during this time-period, that perhaps I was observed, by those concerned, with who I might be, as Jualt, with my family background, and by those, who might be concerned, about *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, and by those, who might be concerned, about my activities as Christos, and by those, who might be concerned, about my ability to influence weather. I think this incident, did bring together, all of these, into growing awareness, of each other, whereas previously, I think each group, focused on one aspect of my being, and each was somewhat unaware, of the other groups.]

[140430 ~ In the long run, or 'today', I tend to think, this incident, was perhaps related, to my association, with 'known communist', Asmodeus, and was perhaps related, to *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, was done by those, who were concerned, about my reports, of arms shipments, to Iran, and drug transactions, in Central America, which overall, became later known, as a scandal, the Iran-Contra affair... Again, I was only publishing, items that had been reported, to people, outside of major US news, media focus. I had not yet 'put it all together'...]

[140430 ~ I tend to believe, today, 2014, that perhaps what occurred, was that those, intending to whisk me away, to vanish me, due to *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, ran into those, concerned with me, as Jualt, and those concerned, with *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, then learned, that they could not, just put me away, without any publicity, and thus, a police captain arrived, and quickly ended, that very prolonged situation.]

[140607 ~ A bottom line remains, that all I can do, is detail what actually occurred, and present, the facts involved, and can only speculate, about anything else.]

THE MOVIE-MAKERS WILL HYPE THIS UP
February 26, 1986

I called John-S, when the print-shop opened, in the morning, and told him, I was unable, to come in to work this day. I explained to John-S, what had happened to me, the night before. John-S did think, I was over-reacting, and exaggerating, but I did tell John-S, exactly, what had actually occurred.

I felt unable to focus, on my job situation, with thoughts of an impending visit, to the hospital, perhaps this very day, to meet the victim, of a hit and run. I felt that perhaps, I might be charged and jailed, at any time. I wanted to investigate the situation, and find out, just what my situation was. Did I need a lawyer to defend myself, and with what money if so? Or did I need a lawyer, to sue the city, and make some money, from this situation? Turning the tables, on the money-changers?

I suppose, I was calling, to tell John-S, that I was definitely, taking this day off from work...

I realized the police officers, had failed to give to me, their business cards, or badge numbers. I spoke with Asmodeus, and told him, what had happened. I told Asmodeus, that I wondered, if the police had harassed me, because of my visits to him, to a known communist. Maybe the police had wanted, to find out who I am, to figure out, why I was, associating with Asmodeus. Perhaps this whole incident, had absolutely nothing, to do with me, and everything, to do with Asmodeus?

Asmodeus asked if I would stop by, and 'socialize' with him, since I wasn't working. Asmodeus said, he was joking, with his choice of words... Asmodeus, was not taking, my situation, very seriously... I told Asmodeus, that I had no spare time to waste, only time to investigate. Asmodeus wished me luck.

I suppose, in all fairness, that perhaps Paul, Asmodeus, and John-S, felt that, since I was innocent, that I had no reason, to be further concerned. I felt they could be casual, because it didn't involve them. Hey, if I am lucky, they might even visit me in prison...

The local newspaper, *The Palm Beach Post*, reported,

that a young boy, had been hit, by a vehicle in the afternoon, of the evening, that I was stopped, but the driver, had been arrested, before I was stopped, and the vehicle in question, had been a big pick-up truck, which in no way resembles, my little Chevette. Comparing a big pick-up truck, to my little vehicle, is like mistaking a donkey, for an elephant...

I called my lawyer friend, Gumble, a former assistant state attorney, but he was not in his office, so I left a message for him, asking that he get in contact with me, as soon as possible.

I went, to the Lake Worth, local newspaper, and they told me, they had no record, of any hit and run, on the police blotter, for their area. I mentioned, the article I had seen, in *The Post*, but perhaps, that was in a different area. I told an editor, Lighte, what had happened to me. Lighte told me, that perhaps there had been, another accident, after the one, reported in *The Post*, even if there was, no record of one, on the police activity sheet. I wondered, if there was no record, of a hit and run, on the police activity sheet, then how could police, have responded, to such a report? I suppose, one could be put there later, if so desired?

I figured, that rather than being, in any investigative frame of mind, that Lighte was concerned, first, with defending the actions, of his city representatives, including their police. I put it to Lighte, that what happened to me, could happen to anyone, in his city, and that perhaps, that aspect might concern him. I told Lighte, that I was not interested, in being malicious. I said I wanted, to make my situation known, and to be told, that everything is okay, that I was no longer, under any cloud, and that I could cease, and desist, any defensive activity, related to this situation.

As a gentle reminder, a person found guilty, of a hit and run, could be sentenced, to ten years or more, in jail. My past experience, has shown, that innocence, by itself, is no guarantee, that one will be found, innocent, in court.

Lighte said that cases, like hit and runs, are sometimes handled, outside of public view, like sex and drug cases, so his newspaper, would not delve, into my situation, at this time, at least not until after, more facts are known. I suggested, that more facts, might never become known, unless Lighte, did delve into, this situation. Regardless,

there would still have been, a record, of a hit and run occurring, if one had been reported, and one would have been reported, if I had to deal, with five police officers, an ambulance with a victim, and two witnesses to it, the night before... Lighte had zero reports, of any hit and run, in the area...

Lighte advised me, to go see, the City Manager, and tell to him, my story of events...

I feel, that what occurred to me, could have happened, to anyone, and that, if what happened to me, is normal police procedure, and if the newspaper and city, are uncaring, then this behavior, is likely, to continue to occur, and has probably been occurring... And the words, 'collusion', and 'conspiracy', sometimes become relevant, in court...

I recalled, recent media articles, about a dispute, between the police chief, and mayor, of this city. The mayor had received complaints, of harassment by police, from two people. The mayor, asked the police chief, to end the harassment, of those two people. The mayor said, no charges had ever been filed, by police, against those two people, and there seemed to be, a lack of legal grounds, to continue to harass, those two people. The police chief responded with a formal complaint, that the mayor was interfering with his ability, to properly do his job. The mayor, did then back off, saying she had done, all she could. The mayor was then defeated, when she sought re-election, as she was portrayed, by the local newspaper, as if she might be, either 'soft on crime', or 'involved', in some unsavory way.

Fortunately, I do not live in that city, and am thus not subject, to the same pressures, that residents there, might feel, including those, at that city's newspaper. I definitely do not wish, to get stuck in that city, with a property, with my mother...

If there was no hit and run, at all, then the Sergeant, who directed the whole incident, could have been showing his rookies, how an innocent man, will react under pressure...

I did tell Lighte, that I felt intimidated, by the incident, and would contact a lawyer, regarding this situation, regardless, of what the City Manager said. I told Lighte, that

this incident, was causing me, continued mental anguish, and anxiety. I do not feel safe, anymore, going into that city, at night. At least in daylight, there might be, some random witnesses, to police behavior, and that might be, a deterrent, to unwarranted, or harmful activity, by police...

I am still concerned, that there is, some big angry hulk, in that area, who feels anger, or hate, toward me, and feels justified, in doing damage to me, should he get the opportunity, to do so... If that angry hulk was a plain-clothes police officer, then I am probably, in no danger. But, if he was a police officer, and police were thus producing, witnesses to a crime, that had never occurred, then that too, is of serious concern.

I went to see, the City Manager, and waited, for an hour and a half. The City Manager was preoccupied, and unable to see me. Finally, his secretary, asked me, to give to her, the details of my situation, and I did so, in the presence, of the City Attorney.

City Hall, might be more interested, in seeking to protect their city, against a lawsuit, than interested, in investigating my situation, and preventing, a similar situation, from occurring ever again. City attorneys, or state attorneys, or even perhaps, the Attorney General, have perhaps become, defense lawyers for incumbents, rather than, champions of justice and truth, for the people...

I can accept, that my trip, to the city newspaper, and to City Hall, could make some ripples, which could result, in even more heat, coming my way. But, I cannot rest content, until I know for sure, that I am not, in any real jeopardy.

I also act, to set an example, for my readers, so they have something to learn from, either to follow my example, or to avoid it at all costs, if worse happens to me, due to my actions. Perhaps being born, into freedom, influences for people, to take it all for granted, and thus, to then lose it, due to their apathy, or even fear.

While I was being 'interrogated', during the incident, I did mention, to the police officer, who had been driving, and swerving his vehicle at mine, that I thought his behavior, was 'odd'. The policeman explained to me, that he was trying to see, if my car, had front bumper damage.

Later, Frank-B said to me, my headlights should have

prevented the policeman, from seeing anything, from the angle he was at. My own point of view, is that I would have much preferred, to have the policeman, use his siren or lights, to pull me over, rather than, for him to repeatedly swerve his vehicle at mine. If nothing else, this particular policeman, was polite to me, throughout the entire incident, though the others were not... A less level-headed person than I, might have panicked, and caused an accident, a collision between vehicles.

My mother and I, spoke about this, and she thought, I should leave everything alone, should not have gone in, to see the newspaper, or to City Hall. My mother said, if I left it alone, then it might just blow over, be forgotten, whereas now, I might have put the city, into an active defensive position, where it might feel a need, to take actions, to justify its behavior. I told my mother, that the city had no defensible position. I was telling my mother, why I was now, definitely disinterested, in having, any sort of property venture, in that city...

I told my mother, that I felt, she had let me down, in the Atlanta situation, where I had been innocent, but her concern, had only been, for her image, and reputation, and she (and my father) had coerced me, into not fighting for my innocence, in that situation, just to end the situation, safely for her.

I told my mother, that I would not back down this time. The 'Stop Sign Incident', is rippling through some circles now, as I make my case known. I am not willing, to be victimized, this time.

Lake Worth, has also begun, a 'Crime Watch' program, called, 'Citizens On Patrol', COP, which is intended, to prohibit prostitution, and recreational drug traffic, in residential neighborhoods. This program is different, from most neighborhood watch programs. Most such programs consist of residents, walking in an area, simply to act as witnesses, to any crime, to alert police. This one was just formed, and started with 25 'volunteers', who all happened to have, two-way radios, in their vehicles. Talk about twisting a good idea, into something, that could become, a nightmare of abuse, of selective enforcement initiative authority. Most citizens, do not own, two-way radios, and

have them, already in their personal vehicles... How many of these, 'volunteers', are off-duty police personnel? It seems, this city's police force, might have created, a false witness program, to support, whatever police want said, in court, to enforce their agenda?

I told Lighte, that I could recognize, the two 'witnesses', that I had met, and then he could learn if they were on police payrolls...

It seems clear, to me, I have stumbled, into a mess...

I told the City Manager's secretary, and the City Attorney, who observed this, that if the police had justifiable cause, for their actions, if there was actually, a hit and run on record, then I would harbor no grudge, despite the way, they conducted themselves. I said, I faulted them privately, on procedure, for using a vehicle, as an intimidating weapon, rather than using lights, or sirens, and for allowing me, to be vulnerable, to physical assault, when under their protective custody, and for not providing me, with at least one business card, from one of the officers involved, as my contact in this situation.

Frank-B said, he felt, I had no legal quarrel, with the police, on their leaving me vulnerable to attack, because no attack, had actually occurred.

I told the City Manager's secretary, that I felt intimidated, to enter her city at night, because I did not know, what to expect, from their police force, and because I felt, that because of the police actions, I had been exposed, to some angry goon, who would now, be out to get me, for something I did not do.

I will probably put together, an editorial on this, for use in *WORLD PRESS WATCH*... I now feature an editorial, in the expanded new format, of *WORLD PRESS WATCH*.

LAW AND ORDER
February 28, 1986

Frank-B called me, to wake me up yesterday, urging me, to get into gear, and go look at the police report, to see what they had said, or specifically, to see what they are saying now, before they might change that record... Anything they say, can and will be used, against them, in a court of law? In the same way, that my giving information, to the police, could allow them, to build a case, around my defensible positions, so too, should I look at their report, to see, what I can challenge.

I dialed Asmodeus' phone number, and heard clicks, on the phone line, so hung up, before he answered, figuring that his line is tapped, as I have given his phone number, to the police. Asmodeus called me later, and I told him, his phone line, might be tapped. Asmodeus didn't take me seriously, thinking I am making a mountain, out of a molehill, much ado about nothing, so to speak, and that annoyed me a little. I told Asmodeus, that if he wished, to paint himself, as a leftist subversive, that was his business, but I didn't want, to have that kind of image, in some secret file.

Asmodeus then said, that he was, in no way, 'subversive'. Asmodeus said, that Citizens On Patrol is a good idea. I hope nobody teaches them, how to march. I mused, that both of us, were probably speaking, for the benefit, of any current or future listeners, rather than actually speaking, with one another... Asmodeus, has always had a fondness, for state control, in part, thinking that such a state, would be one that he likes, as it would be caring, for the well-being, of the people. I tend to think, government maintains, the wellness of government, as its first priority... Asmodeus tends to discount, reports of genocide, in the Soviet Union, and suffering of any Soviet people, as US fascist slander.

The sort of behavior, that I would prefer, to believe illegal, that I experience, due to *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, I think, would be more openly, and harshly used, in the repressed Soviet Union, as it is today. I doubt, that the Soviet Union's government, would welcome *WORLD PRESS WATCH*...

I put on a fine city suit, and a gold watch, and put a micro-cassette, audio tape recorder, into my satchel. I went, to the Lake Worth Police Department headquarters. Apparently, they had some device, which alerted them, to the presence of a recording device, active on me, and I was told, that it is illegal, for me to record police... I said, that I was there, to ask questions, and wanted verification, and reference, for answers that I received. I said, I might make use, of any of this material, as a journalist. I was asked, for what publication(s) did I work, and I showed my Press Card, from *The Palm Beach Sun*, which is generic, and does not identify, any particular publication. It is, an authentic 'press card'...

I was put in touch, with an official, at Internal Affairs, for the city's police department. It was Lt. Sharon's opinion, that the police had done "a good job". I did not share, Lt. Sharon's opinion. I guess it is Sharon's job, to maintain the police position, rather than, to consider my complaints, at least in his behavior, with me. I can say, that Sharon was professional, and polite, totally proper, and a good representative, of his profession.

Sharon said, that the police have a tough rough job, and sometimes, citizens, have to be inconvenienced. Sharon said, that we live in a free society, and that I had paid a price, which citizens sometimes must, to ensure, that our system works. We must live without rights to maintain rights? I should have suggested, that the officers involved, pay the same price, and, for what's it's worth, perhaps they did, though I am certain, without doubt, that Sharon probably handled, any questioning of the officers involved, in a much more professional manner, than I was handled, by most of those officers.

Sharon said, that our County Sheriff Department, had provided, a description of a vehicle, that was involved, in a hit and run, elsewhere in the county, and all the description had said, was that, a white vehicle, was involved, and mine, is a white vehicle. However, at the time, I was told, that the accident, had just occurred, within the area I was within, and at the time, I substantiated my whereabouts, as being nowhere near, where the accident, described by Sharon, had occurred, according to the county sheriffs...

I asked about the two witnesses, which the police had produced, and if I was still required, to be prepared, to visit the victim, at a hospital, at any time. Sharon said, he didn't know anything about that.

Sharon asked, if the officers had been rude. I said one, the crazy driver, had been polite, but that the others, had continually, strongly, badgered me, asserting my guilt, and that their language, had indeed been, less than polite, for over an hour, while I stood shivering, in a light shirt, in the cold, after I had left my vehicle...

Sharon was nothing but polite, the entire time, and I can respect, and appreciate, his commendable demeanor. Sharon showed to me, nothing of the actual police report, saying that private citizens, lack any right, to access that information. Sharon showed to me, nothing to suggest, that the police, had justifiable cause, for their actions. I guess, Sharon's main concern, is to prevent lawsuits, against the city, and against the police department, and to that end, he maintained throughout, that the police, had acted properly, and done a good job. Even if things, could have been worse, during that incident, I decline to believe, that the police, did 'a good job'...

Sharon did tell me, that this case was over, and resolved. Sharon indicated that I was not a suspect, in anything, and that I would not have to visit, any victim, in any hospital. This was a relief.

Sharon said, that he hoped, we could now, maintain friendly relations. Sharon did offer to let me ride, with the police, so I could gain more understanding, of their situation. I thanked him, for this offer, but declined. Part of me, remains leery, to put myself, into a position, where I must trust, a police officer, from that city, at this time.

I am afraid, that this incident, has at least, for now, and probably, for a while to come, poisoned me, toward police in general. My former willingness, to be helpful to police, is a casualty, of this incident. I know, that failure to cooperate, with police, can imply guilt, but I am unable to advise people, to always cooperate, and for me this is a change... I got a distinct impression, that each time, the police made an accusation, and I had an alibi, that the police then changed their version, and made new accusations or assertions,

which ultimately, led me to consider, that providing information to police, allows them to change their story, to seek to portray one as guilty, whereas a failure to cooperate, would leave them blind.

I went to work, at my job, from Police Internal Affairs, and later in the day, John-S came to me, to tell me, that the Chief of Police, of the City of Lake Worth, wished to speak with me, on the telephone. This apparently, greatly surprised, John-S, who had maybe doubted, that this incident, had actually occurred. What I went through, might seem totally outlandish, unbelievable, to most reasonable people, and I understand that...

The Lake Worth Chief of Police told me, that the county sheriff department, had detailed, only rear bumper damage, to a white vehicle. For what it's worth, the driver of the police vehicle, could not have seen, any rear bumper damage, when he was swerving his vehicle at me, to examine my front bumper. And, for what it's worth, my vehicle lacks any rear bumper damage.

I asked, the Chief of Police of Lake Worth, at what time, did police know, that the driver, of the hit and run vehicle, of that incident, had been arrested already. He told me, he did not know, the answer to that question.

The Chef of Police, apologized to me, for any inconvenience, my detention, might have caused to me. I told the Chief, that I greatly appreciated his call, and that his apology, meant the world to me, and that as far as I was concerned, this incident, is now over. I said, to the Chief, that his conversation, with me, and Sharon's conversation, with me, had assured me, of the integrity, and honor, of this police department.

John-S, said it seemed strange, to him, that the Chief of Police, would call me himself. Perhaps Frank-B, has made some waves, because he does have, the ample funds, to take action, and the powers that be, might respect his potential, even if his actual behavior, has remained uninvolved.

I feel, that I still have not been shown, justifiable cause, for the police action. My vehicle may be white, but it has absolutely, no rear bumper damage, and, if this was an accident, that had occurred, sometime in the past, then why

go to the cost and trouble, of portraying a victim, of this accident, in a paramedic ambulance? If police wished to badger me, into confessing, to a hit and run, from the past, then a current victim, in an ambulance, would seem useless...

I did recall Chiefie, after speaking with the Chief...

To Asmodeus, and those of the left, who dislike the right, do not replace Hitler, with Stalin, and do not do, unnecessary violence, to cause disorder and chaos, for you may destroy, that which you wished, to take over, and you might replace, one bad system, with another bad system. Fascism exists, in both left and right spectrums, and only the middle healthy ground, and democracy, giving the people, non-violent means of change, and helps to smoothly adapt society, to necessary changes. Seek to embrace, the mechanisms that exist. Seek to work, within the system, as much as you can.

Remember to seek harmony, with our world, to build a better world.

Asmodeus says that we live, in a police state, and that the only way, to bring change, is through violent revolt. I remain opposed to violence, and do not think, it is necessary, to use violence, to bring change. For the record, to my knowledge, Asmodeus has never done anything violent, to seek to bring change. At worst, Asmodeus might be, an 'agitator', one who encourages others, to do things, while he himself, does nothing, other than to talk...

Asmodeus says, the only reason, I have not been shipped off, to some work farm for life, is because, of who I am, as Jualt. Asmodeus says, anyone else, would have been railroaded, and vanished. Sadly, Asmodeus could be correct.

Paul says, I should accept, the police apology, and seek to live in peace. I agree with Paul, and I assured him, that is my current intention.

I did wonder, if it was actually, the Chief of Police, who called me, or someone, who portrayed himself, as the Chief of Police...

REASON VOTES FOR MODERATION AND RESTRAINT
March 2, 1986

Reason tells me, to accept peace, and let things cool. I can always later act, if I have cause for concern. It also seems true, that I would have a difficult time, in court, proving any grievances, for I have no witnesses.

I still have not been supplied, with justifiable cause, and though I could agree, to live in peace, and forget the whole thing, the question remains in my mind, as to why did what happened, happen, in the first place? I feel, some left-wing, and Christian criticism, that by not acting, I am allowing, a darkness to fester, and grow.

It is true, that I have alerted, all responsible relevant parties, to the incident. It is their delegated responsibility, to deal with those involved, internally. I have my own affairs, to tend to, including my need, to return to work, and deal with the things, I have neglected, while my focus, has instead been upon, the Stop Sign Incident.

I am pleased, that I can now focus, upon my job responsibilities, without distracting worries, and anxieties, from non-job-related sources.

I am leaving a record, of this incident, in my journal, so it remains, as it was. In that way, at least people of the future, can discuss the issues involved. The police do have, a difficult job, and cannot be faulted, if they truly maintained, a controlled situation, even if I did not perceive it, as controlled, at the time.

If the police, acted as they did, because they didn't like, the way I look, or because I assumed my right of way, at the intersection, then bygones can be bygones. We have now met, and we know each other better.

The police, could have been conducting, a surveillance, of Asmodeus' home, and wished to know, more about anyone, related to that 'house', and then came into awareness, of my identity, as Jualt, or even with, a federal group overseeing Christos. Who knows?

A case, of four to six police officers, in court, against someone, who is crazy enough, to believe he is Christos, might have been amusing, in some ways, but probably, a losing endeavor, for me... I am unwilling to pursue, the

police in court, just to seek publicity, for Christos...

As far as, the potentially abusive nature, of Citizens On Patrol, they do exist, for good purpose, and there have been, no public complaints, against them. But my own situation, never made it, into public light either. To my understanding, most citizen observer groups, are simply meant, to patrol, to observe and witness, to help maintain, health and safety, of citizens, and to act, as some deterrent, against some crimes, simply by being around. I like to think, that my walks around Key West, were the first, of this sort of 'patrol'...

Asmodeus, totally refuses to consider, that what happened to me, might be related to him. This is a sore point, in my mind, for I think, he should see it, at least as, within the realm of possibility.

The incident still bugs me, but I do feel, it is over, if I let it rest, and I am inclined, to let it rest... I hope, I am not failing, in my 'civic responsibility'.

[140501 ~ Many years later, there came to my awareness, a situation, which might have been related, to the Stop Sign Incident. A lawyer went public, saying that he was representing, a driver, of a hit and run vehicle, and that his client, wished to remain anonymous, and to have his lawyer, represent him, in this situation, without him stepping forward, without him becoming public, or known. As events unfolded, it turned out, that the driver, was someone who had become, a Mayor of Lake Worth, and the lawyer, was the gentleman, who owned the building, where John-S, had his print shop. I do not know, if that situation, related to my own... I have wondered, if I was intended to be, a scapegoat...]

DO I REALLY WANT TO BE 'PUBLIC' AS JUALT OR AS CHRISTOS?
March 4, 1986

My mother urged me, to go ahead and call, the Lake Worth Chief of Police, to confirm, that he had actually called me. My mother said, that I should explain to him, that the whole incident seemed so unusual to me, that I felt a need, to do so. My mother also said, perhaps I should call, the Sheriff's Department, to confirm, that they did have, a record of a hit and run...

I think I will do neither, as I seem to be cleared, of any wrongdoing, and I would prefer, to let those involved, forget that I exist... I did tell, a US Senator's daughter, who was at a party, at my mother's, about the incident, and she said, she would mention it, to the Senator.

I am glad, to see that my mother, is finally backing me up, in the face of adversity. Perhaps my mother, is 'annoyed', that this incident, is being used by me, as cause, reason, to avoid involvement, in a property purchase, with her, in that city...

I believe, that when Sharon, checked the police reports, he was unable to find, a suitable hit and run, to justify the police actions, so he then turned, to the county record, to search for something there, and then found the Sheriff's report. The rookies involved, could have been acting, on bad instructions. Life can be, a learning process, even for novice police officers...

If I hear of anything like this, happening to anyone else, in that city, that I would feel obligated, to then pursue my situation. If I can believe, that what occurred to me, was happenstance, was unusual, then it is easier, for me to overlook.

I would disagree, with those who might jump, at any, 'golden opportunity', to seek false profit, by suing the taxpayer, for wrongs of government.

I went out to a bar, to meet with, my lawyer friend, Gumble, but he failed to show up, as agreed in advance. However, Daniel was there, and urged me, to stay for a while, and to relax, and enjoy myself, to unwind for a bit, to get away from everything... I did.

Then, a top-notch writer, Edward Albee, a big national playwright, came in, and sat down. I asked Daniel, to do me a great favor, as I am a bit timid sometimes. I asked Daniel, to go over to Albee, and ask, if he could introduce me, to Albee. Daniel did, and I had a good conversation, with Albee.

Albee told me, that less and less, outside or independent writers are having their work used. Big money firms, are now using, their own writing staffs, more and more. Albee, as an independent writer, thinks this, is a sad turn of events, and shall limit the opportunities, to normal people, to our independent, and diverse, writing community, and now those works, that are being promoted, are more likely to be, those which serve, some existing agenda, or corporation...

Daniel told Albee, that I had written, a very good story, *The Life of Christos*. Daniel said, most public figures have public names, to protect their private lives, and said, that mine is Jualt Christos.

Albee promised, to get in touch with me, in the future, and look at my manuscripts. Albee produces, one stage-play each year, and he was certainly being nice.

I forgive Albee, if he fails to follow through, as I imagine, he gets barraged, with people, who want him, to look at their material. I felt fortunate, to be able, to have such a long, nearly exclusive conversation, with him. I like to think, that I did make, a good impression.

I guess I am geared, to facing walls, and opposition, and truthfully, I really don't know, how to deal with people, who are genuinely complimentary, and might be helpful to me. I suppose I assume, most charm, that comes my way, is false charm, intended to, 'get into my pants', or to win favor, with a wealthy person, even though, I do lack wealth. I do have some hope that my writings as Christos, could bring to me, some fair financial reward, which would help to end, my existence in poverty.

There are those, who might criticize me, for wanting money, for anything related, to spiritual, or 'community service'. However, I would advise these, to consider, that I might, due to my nature, and my history, be willing to put my funds, to humanitarian, or beneficial uses, for others, beyond my own need, to survive with income...

A big name, regional radio, talk show host, called the print-shop, from the phone number, on *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, seeking to find me, and Trudy put me, on the telephone, with him. It turned out, that he had me live on his show. I was in the midst, of some really focused work, trying to catch up, with my backlog, from my absence, from my job. One might say, that my work, had waited for me, but their deadlines, remained the same... And, of course, there are always, those secret, and not so secret, emergencies from Trudy, for me to deal with, as I juggle everything...

I viewed this live radio interview, as an 'opportunity', so I did gladly embrace it. I was then on the phone, live on the radio, for two hours, discussing world affairs, with this host, and with those, who called in with questions... This was, a significant chunk of time, and John-S, did not appreciate, either my use, of one of his telephone lines, though he does have others, nor this 'waste' of my time, 'on the clock', when I really should have been focused, on the print-shop's needs.

I did apologize, to John-S, and said this was unplanned, but an opportunity, that I had to go for. I did deduct this time, from my time, 'on the clock', or agreed, that John-S would be correct, to do so. I did stay late, to catch up with my work, so that I did get, what needed to be done, done.

I did not mention, the Stop Sign Incident, while on the radio...

So, last week, I was fearful of being railroaded, into a prison work farm, and this week, I worry about the possibility, that our government, or intelligence community, might take, a 'friendly interest' in me, and wish to swallow me. I could easily accept, any job, as a job, and still wish to pursue, my life as Jualt, and as Christos, and perhaps, even maintain *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, entirely with my own sources, without any connection, to any information, that I might connect with, in any other capacity.

I remember co-worker, Jack, at *Sun*, saying, "If you don't understand, then you probably, are not aware, of the total picture."

I seem to be, on friendly terms, with my mother right now. Although she might not be, actually doing anything, that is helpful to me, she is at least, not sending venom my

way, in my presence. I am helpful to my mother, by bartending at her parties. I do this without payment, au gratis... I enjoy the time, bantering with, some 'erstwhile' guests.

I do realize, that there are, some 'critical' words, from me, about my mother, in this journal... For now, I intend to leave the record, as it is, to convey depth of emotions. If nothing else, the record, as it now stands, shows that a relationship, can have, some 'terrible moments', and then can be restored. Sometimes, it might be prudent, to avoid burning bridges, even if that bridge, might stand unused, for a time...

I have dropped, my photography venture, Wolf Studio, due to lack of income, from it. The buyers seem to only use, still pictures from video clips, of their own 'products'. I accept that and go on.

I feel, there may be a debate, going on in the background, of which I am unaware, between those, who support my ability, in foreign affairs, and those, who oppose me, because of my writings, as Christos. I feel, that in some federal circles, both of my activities are known. I just hope, they let me live...

= 31 =

TIME TO MINIMIZE
March 13, 1986

Halley's Comet, has returned, from the other side, of our sun, and is now making its way, back out, of our solar system. It does seem appropriate, for that comet's appearance, to coincide, with the possibility, that Albee might write, a play about Christos.

I had another meeting, with Albee, last night, just he and I. We met at the bar, where we first met. Discussing Christos, with a total stranger, is difficult for me, because I must explain myself, as possibly having, a messianic complex, which can imply, that either I am mentally ill, or that I am unable, to cope with reality, neither of which, do I believe is true.

Albee had believed, that I merely wanted, for him to review, my manuscripts, or an already written, stage-play, and have him, give to me, a critique. I explained to Albee, that what I would like, is for Albee, to use my manuscripts, to write a stage-play, and though I do not want, 'personal power', a cult following, personal worship, or personal publicity, upon me as Jualt, I would like, some financial compensation, to make my life, more comfortable.

Albee said, that he would be willing, to read my manuscripts. I am toying with the idea, of writing a stage-play myself, about Christos, perhaps set in a bar, with many characters, interacting with Christos, and these characters, could be representative, of the many realms, of human belief, and could also, mirror real events, that have occurred, between Christos and the world. I did tell Albee, that I believe, I am Christos, so I have interacted, with Albee, as Christos.

Albee and I, did speak, for over an hour, about my being Christos, as perhaps being, a stage-play, about the real-life story, of a person, with a messianic complex. It does, work against, my sense of self-esteem, to confront the notion, that I am mentally ill, or to be portrayed, as mentally ill, for I do feel, 'well adjusted', to our real world, and like to think, that I cope, without many problems.

I explained to Albee, that I had a rough time, with my family, as a child, and youth, and that they had basically,

abandoned me, at an early age, to let me, fend for myself, on the streets, but that, at this time, my relations, seem to be friendlier, and I would not wish, to disturb those friendly relations, with controversy, and antagonism. I suggested, that my family aspects could be left out, of a stage-play, about Christos.

I gave to Albee, copies of Books One and Two, of *The Life of Christos*, as well as a copy, of *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*. I re-read all three, last night, and am content with them. I am uncertain, if there is enough material, for a stage-play, to be based on these books, but there are certainly, some good scenes. The reference to a meeting, with a being from another planet, did nothing, to add to my credibility.

I did mention to Albee, my recent Stop Sign Incident, and said to him, that sometimes I feel, like I might have, some cause for concern, for my well-being, due to my world news endeavors. I still have, 'mail snags', but now I accept them, as a normal part of my life...

Now to minimize...

I am not 'greater', than any other human being, just because I am Christos. I do serve, what I view, as a greater purpose, than most 'normal people', whose only purpose, is focus, upon their individual lives, but, I understand, that in the very long context, of linear time, that I am making a story, which many others, shall become involved with. I simply hope, that I am able, with my current life-time, to help maintain, and improve, our world, both during my life-time, and then beyond my life-time. I understand, that it is other humans, who shall do, most of the 'work', beyond my own life-time.

I understand, that God loves all. I understand, that God has some concern, with that which is beneficial, or healthy, for God's body, as a whole. I believe karma, favors or disfavors individuals, and that individuals, create their own karma. I understand, that dharma has its influence, upon the behavior of individuals.

I do not wish to start a group, of my own. I do hope for income, from publication of my books, and for some life, beyond the publication, of my books, when I do enjoy, that income. I would like, to be able, to spend some time,

answering questions, from readers of my books, to help to clarify, any interpretations, and to help give understanding, of my intents. I hope that this interaction can help to preserve my literal meanings.

I understand, that 'some' humans seem given, to accidentally, or deliberately, distorting, whatever they hear, or read. I hope to be around for a while, to help prevent, or at least minimize, distortions.

There are many today, who say, that they are Jesus. I say, that I am Jualt. I do say, that as Christos, I have lived, the life of Jesus. I do understand, that among those, who say that they are Jesus, some are sincere, and some are insincere. I say that I am Jualt, and that I am, a manifestation of Christos, of Vishnu. I say, that I am a teacher, and a guide. I say, that I am sincere. I say, that I do, as I believe I have been directed to do, by God. I believe God, has shown, clear support, for me, and that I am honored, that I have many 'allies', from many realms, who seem to seek, to be helpful to me, and I believe, all of their effort, is meant, to seek to honor God. I seek to compel nobody. I accept, and respect, free will, both of myself, and of others.

I believe that 'Christ', is a title, that is bestowed, through time, by people. I do not claim that title. I personally tend to discount, the validity, of any, who seek to claim that title, to bestow it, upon themselves... Of those, who claim to be Jesus, I look, at what those individuals have to say, and how they conduct themselves. At a minimum, I would expect such people, to reflect the karmic, 'law of love', of seeking to live, overall, in karmically positive ways, as did Jesus, for, 'consistency of character'.

I find, that many of those today, that claim to be Jesus, are 'angry', in spirit. I would hope, that people, as individuals, can seek to minimize, anger and hate, within their being. I seek to help guide people, to harmony within self. I understand, that there are problems, in our world. I seek to help to make improvements...

By contrast, though this might seem less relevant, to Christians, those who claim, to be Maitreya, a new life of Buddha, seem to be, Brahman-aligned, or Michael-aligned, seem to side with the elite, and I think, some of these, might

simply be, pandering to wealth, and have perhaps joined, in that turning away, from problems of our world, viewing those with such problems, as within the 'samsara', the areas of hells or Purgatory, within which live some humans of this physical realm... These might seek, to proclaim themselves, as Christ, saying the elite is fine, everything is wonderful, and to me, this is pandering, akin to that Hebrew joke, that if you are wealthy, then people will also say, you are beautiful, intelligent, have great wit, have great art, and basically do no wrong...

I am as unable, to agree, with the pandering to wealth, of this sort of Maitreya, as I am, unable to agree, with the angry ways, of some who claim, to be Jesus.

I believe, that our world has problems, which indicate, that everything, is not yet fine. I could agree, things might seem better today than they have been, in our past... I could agree, that our world, has problems and challenges, that could seem to justify, a sense of anger... And, while I might agree, that Christianity has had, or has, its blemishes, I can agree, that I am thankful, for the good things that have been done, in the name of Jesus, to honor the memory and spirit of Jesus, upon which much of our current civilization is based.

I believe, that some, who claim to be Jesus, or Christ, and some who claim to be Siddhartha, or Buddha-Maitreya, do so, only for personal power, or enrichment. I believe, the 'false prophets', have made my own task, more challenging, have caused, a distrustful, or distasteful image, in the minds, and hearts, of the people, to any, who would do so...

In the same way, that I believe, Jesus to have been, a manifestation of Christos, I believe that Buddha, was a manifestation of Christos, and I believe, that I have lived both lives, that of Jesus, and that of Siddhartha (Buddha), as Christos. I believe, that I am neither Jesus, nor Siddhartha, but that I am, now Jualt. I would suggest, that every person, who believes in reincarnation, can perhaps somewhat easily understand, that the life now being lived, is different, at least in some ways, from any other life, lived before. The same is true, for me.

I believe, that there are many, within established religions, and within the Elect, outside of religious office-

holders, who are truly working, to make ours, a better world. I believe, that a person, as an individual, can seek to make ours, a better world, without having to be, Christ, or Maitreya, to seek to do so. Because of the plethora, of those who do nothing, to make ours, a better world, who give themselves, to either angry ways, or to catering to the elite, while seeking to claim, to be Christ, or Buddha-Maitreya, I too tend to believe, more in the sincerity, of an individual, who portrays self, only as that individual, than I do, in the sincerity, or even good intent, of someone, who claims to be, Christ, or Maitreya-Buddha...

I might live another life, as a human being, before 3253, but I shall not, as Christos, seek to be public, until I am living, in that year... I seek to close this door, to those who would abuse, this title or name. If, between now and then, some seek to improve, the condition of our world, then let them do so, without claiming to be, Christ, or Buddha-Maitreya, or Christos...

There are many people, who do say, or might say, many things about me. I would continue to hope, that people might seek to learn about me, from my books, rather than entirely, from what others might say.

I accept, that my belief in myself, as a manifestation of Christos, is my own problem, and perhaps, I should not bother others, with it. As Jualt, I seek to live, in this world, as other people, as individuals, also seek, to live in our world. However, I, as an individual, like other individuals, must also cope, with my environment, with community, and world. Therefore, that which I do, in seeking to cope, should be of value, to others, who are also, seeking to cope.

I do believe, there are real problems, in our world, in Asha... I believe some seek false profit, seek personal gain, to the detriment, of the wellness of all. I believe, that some have great disregard, for the people, for the mass, even if due, in part, to the behavior, of 'normal individuals'... I believe, that many have 'given up', on helping to improve our world, and that, in their giving up, they can help to continue, a downhill slide, or a slide at least, into acceptance, of some terrible things.

I hope, to show God's concern, that God does wish, for us, to seek to improve our world, to maintain wellness, for

all... Life should be, as pleasant as possible, for all things. That can be, a challenging problem, but it is, a worthy cause, to focus upon.

I would ask my readers, to take some time, to study Asha, and to understand, what it is... Asha is a name, for the Persian game, of chess. However, the original pieces of Asha, differ somewhat, from the pieces used today, for chess, in our modern times. The pieces of Asha, represent, clean water, clean food, health care, justice, or their opposites, on the other side of the board. Our chess pieces, today, are more 'generic', so that either side, could be, equally 'good', or equally 'bad'... This is just a quick mention, of Asha, and a study of, or look at, more in-depth references, to Asha, could still be advisable. Hopefully though, you get the gist of it. Asha is 'significant'...

I seek to serve, as an anchor, a foundation through time, for those who seek to maintain, and improve, our world. I understand, that much of my work 'today', is meant, for 'those of tomorrow'. I understand, that I must focus, upon my real needs, of today. I understand, that a focus upon my path, as Christos, can be detrimental, to my life, as Jualt, given that I am not, seeking to create, any group, which would then financially support me, as any sort of leader, of that group. I am not interested, in pursuing that path.

I do wish, to enjoy life, as Jualt, in the same way, which any other living individual, might wish to enjoy life. I do not want, my 'life' as Christos, to destroy my life, as Jualt. However, I do remain devoted, to seeking to honor God's request, that I go public, as Christos. I have asked God, that if God, wishes for me, to go public as Christos, to then allow me, to do so, through my writings. I have allowed, or welcomed, radio broadcasts, and printed articles, that use an old picture of me, and I have refrained, from allowing, a current image of me, to be used, as I have sought to protect, my life as Jualt. I hope that I have amply demonstrated, that I do give value, to both, my life as Jualt, and my life as Christos. And again, I affirm, that I am, Jualt Christos, one person.

I suppose, all these issues, have bubbled in my mind, because of my talk with Albee, which gives greater possibility, to Christos becoming a public figure, if Albee

does, a stage-play about me. And, just for the record, in case it could possibly need to be said again, I do not want, for Albee to do, a fanciful or fictional, accounting of me. I wish for Albee, to do a realistic portray of me, based on my books thus far.

The possibility that Albee, a member of the elite, in Asmodeus' view, might do something, in behalf of Christos, was distasteful to Asmodeus. Asmodeus believes, that Christos must be, 'of the people', and that, if Albee were to do something, that, in Asmodeus' view, would indicate, that I am a false Christ, or a false prophet, as warned of, in the Bible. I told Asmodeus, that I can hope, that his first-hand impressions of me, and interactions with me, speak louder to him than any words, that might be said of me, by others...

For the record, I believe, that 'good people', can be found, in all economic levels...

When Asmodeus learned, that I know a mutual acquaintance, Allen-M, 'Crazy Allen', Asmodeus asked Allen-M, if he knew, that I believe, I am Jesus. Allen-M, said he knew, I had some 'abilities', but did not know, anything, about any claim, of mine, to be Jesus... I told Asmodeus, that ten years ago, when I knew Allen-M, that I was learning about my abilities, that I seemed to be able, to influence for events, to have some bounce, but that I had not mentioned, anything messianic, to Allen-M. Asmodeus said, this indicated to him, that I could be, a false Christ.

There were some, including Gandalf, whom I have not heard from, in quite some time, to whom I did mention, my messianic 'situation', prior to my 1978 'rapture'. However, it was not until, my 1978 'rapture', that I accepted God's request, for me to go public, as Christos.

At the time, that I knew Allen-M, he was given, to some violence, and crime. Allen-M did befriend me, and was protective of me... I provided shelter, to Allen-M, at one point in his life... I remember a time, when a gay bar, came under violent attack, from some haters, who invaded it, and started beating everyone within. Allen-M, somewhat welcomed, this situation, as an opportunity to brawl, and he caused, great damage to, and a retreat by, those who had attacked this place, yelling at them, so you want to beat a faggot huh, well enjoy this then, as he beat those, who had

attacked... At any rate, at the time, I did refrain, from mention of my messianic 'situation', to Allen-M...

I do not know, how detrimental it might be, to me as Jualt, for Asmodeus, to be questioning people, I know, or have known, as Jualt, and asking them, if they know, I believe I am Jesus. I would again mention, that I do not say, I am Jesus, and I do not say, that I am Christ. I do say, that I am Jualt, and I do say, that I am a manifestation of Christos. I do believe, that I have lived, the life of Jesus... I believe, I have stated my position, more times than should have been necessary, within my books. I keep mentioning it, because people keep saying it... I could chuckle, that it might be nice, for others to say, I am Christ, but it is wrong, for them to say, that I say that, even if I might believe it...

Asmodeus asked me, to lift a rain-storm, the other day, because his roof was leaking. I agreed to try, and asked God, to lift the storm, and almost immediately, the storm was lifted. Asmodeus did not thank me, for this. Asmodeus, often asks me, for things, and then never seems, to mention my success, later, nor thank me. I guess, that Asmodeus continues, to make requests of me, shows that he does have, some faith in my ability... Perhaps I am foolish, to continue, to grant Asmodeus' requests, if I am failing to gain a witness, from my efforts. However, karmically, being helpful to another, is good for me, as an individual...

I guess I am feeling, a little down, about having to return, to my seven-day-a-week treadmill. I would like, more leisure time. I am feeling, sorry for myself. I guess I should remember, the people, who cannot find a job, and are desperate. I am fortunate, and should seek to remember, how fortunate I am, to have, a good solid job...

John-S did give to me, three days off... I dread going back, to the treadmill, but think I should fear, unemployment more... I have to work, as hard as possible, to be able to afford, to keep *WORLD PRESS WATCH* going. The cost, of subscriptions to magazines, is an expense...

I also want to mention Casey, a simple man, who lives by washing dishes, at a restaurant. Casey has long hair, and contents himself, with music, and recreational party material. Casey is good people, in my view, because I believe, he avoids harming others, and does some good, for

others. Casey rejects me totally, as Christos, for all the wrong reasons... Casey rejects me first, because I have short hair, and then also, because of my family background, and because of my political involvements...

As Christos, I say, that what Casey does, with his own life, as is, is okay, except for his painting with a wide-brush, all who have short hair, and all of the elite. People are people, as individuals, regardless of hair-length, family background, or economic position.

I can sympathize, with Casey's view, of our 'rat race' real-world, as overall, an evil place, because I do understand, there is much, unnecessary suffering, and abuse, within work-place environments.

To those, who think I live, an 'easy life'... You're wrong! I did live, as a child in youth, in an environment of wealth. And I did make use, of that environment, to listen to, to seek gain greater understanding, of our world, from leaders, within our world's political, economic, military, social, and religious communities... I did this, because my image, of being a child, in such a family, allowed me the opportunity, to do so. This was because, of how my family, faced their world.

However, how my family faced me, was quite different. While I might have been, 'paraded out', as their child, to their world, within my family, I was an abused, unloved, servant or slave, and this environment, was anything but 'easy'...

I did enjoy, solitude and comfort, at the ocean, as I lived on an island, and I did enjoy, the companionship of some animals, that provided me, with some love and warmth. I would say, that my animal friends helped me, to remain a humane human, more so, than any of the humans, of my family.

I endured, much parental conflict, much hate and venom, in my home environment, as a norm, and I would say, my environment, lacked love, or affection, except that displayed, by family members, in 'public' view. One might say, that if my family members, had any religion, as evidenced, by what they gave their devotion, then they worshipped money... Money can be a tool, to help enhance civilization, but love of money, can be a cause, of much

sorrow, and suffering...

I had a severed collarbone, clavicle, disjointed spine, and disjointed hip, as a result, of repeated physical beatings, and never was there any medical treatment for any of these things, as my family preferred to hide them, and I was under-weight, which reflected, a real lack of adequate food, for a growing child. My father prohibited me, from drinking water, from the refrigerator, even as he required me, to tend to the grounds...

It could be offensive, to my family, to their desire, to maintain 'image', for me to say, that I was raised, in a hell, but I could say, that I was raised, in a hell... I would say, that God befriended me, in that hell, and that God, also made, a positive difference, in my life...

There are many, among atheists, who would say, that God fails to exist, because they have never, had any communion with God. I cannot say that. I have had communion, with a being, who claimed to be God. I sometimes view atheists, as proceeding on faith, for, as much as they require evidence, to support God's existence, they seem to proceed on faith, without evidence, to dispute God's existence...

Later, when I left my parents' home environment, I did live, a 'wilder life', enjoying sex, and recreational party materials, as my main focus in life... That was indeed, a phase of my life, during my twenties, but, if I was then enjoying life, it was after, my time at home, in the environment, which Casey would assume, had 'given me everything'... I returned, to living a 'moderate' life-style, seeking to find pleasure, and seeking to be responsible, to my real-world needs.

I lived, in the midst of wealth, and had nothing... If anything is obscene in life, rather than that being, anything to do, with a nude human body, it might be opulence, in the midst of poverty, and suffering...

I thank all those, who have been helpful, to Christos, and to Jualt.

TOWARD A PROPER HAPPY CONCLUSION
March 15, 1986

I have decided to write my way, toward a proper conclusion, for this work. I think, that this material is especially useful, to young people, who face the same issues, as I do. Two fundamental things, which readers should pick out, are that each individual, is the primary one responsible, for his or her own existence, because, in part, other people, usually fail, to help you, when you are in need, and that one should give value, to developing a skill, or trade, in the real-world, in order to have, material security, and more peace of mind. I feel, that I am ten years behind, where I could have been, if my parents had guided me properly, when I was a youth.

I would say, that it might be normal, for one's stomach, and sex centers, to have much influence, upon one, while one is young...

I met Daniel, last night, for a drink, at Roosters, and brought him up to date, on developments in my world. Daniel warned me, not to raise my hopes, with Albee, because then, if nothing happens, I won't be disappointed. I told Daniel, that I think Albee is really genuinely interested, in my work, and not just interested, in my body.

Daniel said, that his first impression, upon reading the books, of *The Life of Christos*, is that Christos, must be insane. However, Daniel said, that when he read the material again, he began to find, many profound truths, woven into its fabric, and said, he thinks anybody could benefit, from reading these books, that they are, a tale of life, rather than, a 'religious' tale, as he had anticipated, before he read, any of the material...

I was 'a touch down', glum, about having to return to my treadmill, after enjoying a paid vacation. Daniel was also slightly sad, due to a sour love affair. Pursuit of romantic love, can sometimes lead one, into unhealthy situations. I advised Daniel, that there can be, more than one romantic love, in one's life... Daniel's significant other, has alcohol, as his main lover... Daniel's relationship makes him unhappy...

I joked to Daniel, he feels about his lover, the same way, I feel, about my job. We both value, the good aspects, but

the negatives, cause us 'discontent'... We both hope, for things to get better, and we both value, the good aspects, and perhaps, we both fear, that we might fail to receive, the good aspects, in other places.

I saw my attorney friend, Gumble, and he explained to me, that he had missed meeting me, as planned, because he had fallen ill. I could have hoped, that Gumble, would have let me know, about his change in plans, when he changed his plans, rather than letting me, go to the rendezvous, where he failed to appear... I would have hoped, for Gumble to display, more 'professional' behavior...

I told Gumble, about the Stop Sign Incident, and said, that it now seems over. Gumble said, he had failed to realize, how important, my situation actually was, and thought, I just wanted to meet with him, as a friend, to casually talk. I had hoped, that my leaving a message, for Gumble, at his office, rather than at his home, would have indicated, that this was a 'professional', rather than 'personal', situation...

Gumble said, that I should not dismiss the idea, of suing the city, or police department. Gumble said, I should not worry, about the taxpayer, paying for wrongs, of a government, because, he said, the government has insurance, to pay such things, so the taxpayer, would not be penalized. Gumble said, I could file a suit, at any time, within two years of the incident, and said, he would gladly represent me, in court, without a fee, other than a standard percentage, of funds gained, from a victory.

I told Gumble, that I would think about, what he had said, and would call him, if I changed my mind.

I still think, the taxpayer might be penalized, if not by the amount awarded, then perhaps, by a rise in insurance costs... I remain disinclined, to seek profit, from this situation, just for the sake, of seeking money... Perhaps the city and police department, are fortunate, that Gumble failed to connect with me sooner. This meeting with Gumble, was inadvertent, as I had gone to the bar, to meet Daniel, and Gumble just happened, to come in.

There was, a very handsome, masculine, muscular gentleman, who came into the bar, and I felt, a magnetic attraction, to him. We did make eye contact, that five-

second look, which is three seconds longer than disinterested would have been... He joined some, 'well-to-do' gentlemen, as soon as he came in, and then soon after, went outside, with one of these gentlemen following him. I commented, perhaps too loudly, that those gentlemen, seemed to enjoy, 'professional help', and perhaps he overheard me...

That gentleman, returned, and sat down next to me. His name is Steve. The three of us, Daniel, Steve, and I, discussed metaphysics... Steve started, by saying, that lately, he had been concerned, that Armageddon is coming, that it is now unavoidable, mostly because, of lack of understanding, lack of dialogue, and a lack of desire, to peacefully resolve conflict. Honestly, I do not know, if there must be, Armageddon. It could be so.

Asmodeus recently said, that he might use, incantation and ritual, to call for a general war. Asmodeus, is personally unhappy, with life, and with his own situation, and feels that humanity, deserves to be doomed. I have told Asmodeus, that the impetus, for me to accept, a public path of Christos, was, and is, to seek to avert Armageddon.

I asked Asmodeus, to seek to be patient, and to let humanity, doom itself, if that be humanity's fate, but otherwise, to be patient, and see first, what I can do, as Christos, before he does anything, to help bring our world, toward Armageddon.

Armageddon, the end of this civilization, at the hands of humanity, an abuse of free will, is a real possibility, daily. The US and SU, maintain a state, of 'Cold War', which is, 1984, limited conflicts around our world, and it is a very real possibility, that by accident, or malicious intent, a hot world-ending war, could occur...

I told Steve, and Daniel, that I believe, Armageddon, is one of four possible futures, the others being, 1984, limited conflicts, that avert Armageddon, by limiting human free will, and Apocalypse, which is an end of civilization, due to neglect, due to pollution, due to disease, due to famine, or due to natural disasters, including that wayward asteroid... I suppose ET, might have some 'vote', in deciding, if an asteroid hits or misses, our planet...

I told Daniel and Steve, that I support, the paths toward

a Golden Age, which is a nurturing civilization, which seeks to make life, as pleasant as possible, for all things, through human free will...

Steve discounted the possibility, of a Golden Age, due to his belief, that humans prefer, to first seek to fight, and are only willing to talk, if unable to get, what they want, by force... I told Steve, I think, the actual example, of people in our world, is to seek to get along, nonviolently, and they do prefer, to talk, rather than to fight.

Steve asked me, if I might like to go to his place, and enjoy a full body massage. I gladly accepted this offer, and I did so. I actually tend to prefer massage, and was glad to find someone, who likes to exchange massages. To me, a nice massage, using an oil, to the rhythm of music, is great, relaxing, healthy, and a good exchange of energy also... Steve apparently, has been, an athlete, and took second in state, in swimming, and continues to work-out.

Steve and I exchanged phone numbers, before I departed, from his place. I did advise Steve, that my roommate, often fails to give, phone messages to me, so if he calls, and I am not there, then to call again, rather than to think, that I might have gotten his phone message, and failed to return his call... I assured Steve, that my roommate and I, are 'just friends', and that I am, 'single'... My heart, is very interested, in Steve... Not since Russ departed, has my heart, felt so kindled...

For the record, in the past, I have put it to Paul, that he behaves, like a lover, toward me, with both his nurture, and his possessiveness, and have asked Paul, if he might wish to have, that sort of understanding, with me. Paul has declined, that suggestion, so, I do have room, for someone, who would want, that sort of union understanding, with me. I am, 'single'...

So, right now, could be a good place, to end this book... This book is definitely, no longer, just an 'epilogue', to Book Four, but is definitely, Book Five...

The Christos material is now being considered, for a stage-play.

WORLD PRESS WATCH continues, and the government has refrained, from jailing me at least, and I can continue to hope, that there might be growing, tolerance, for

my world news endeavor, perhaps even some acceptance, and recognition, that it is indeed, a good, well-done thing, and that it might gain for me, some financial security, in time.

My print-shop job, is secure, and perhaps can become, a better environment... I did enjoy, a paid vacation, a remarkable event, for which I am grateful... I suppose, I can thank Trudy, in a back-handed way, for me gaining, some vacation time. Trudy had demanded, vacation time, for herself, and I had never had, a vacation. I mentioned this, to my mother, and she had said, that of course, Trudy should get some time off, as Trudy has been working hard, during our busy business season...

I was annoyed, that my mother seemed to think, that 'of course', Trudy should have vacation time, while she had never ever thought, that I should have vacation time... Female solidarity perhaps... I think, it was this annoyance, that influenced me, to then ask John-S, since Trudy could enjoy, some vacation time, when might I, also do so, and that is, what got me granted, some vacation time...

It was nice to have, some money and some time, as usually, I only have one, or the other, but not both... I do overall, think well of John-S, and his behavior toward me, has improved some...

I am secure, and somewhat comfortable, in my residence, with Paul. Somewhat humorously, Paul said, he would leave his apartment to me, in his will. However, I know, that all the financing, for this apartment, came from Frank-B, who hopes to get this apartment, due to its debt, if nothing else, when Paul dies. So, Paul is either lying to me, or lying to Frank-B, and neither aspect, is actually 'good'...

My mother is behaving, in a 'charming' way, toward me. I could use the word, 'friendly', as she did help me, in a real-world way, by paying for, a bulk mailing permit, for *WORLD PRESS WATCH*.

And, best of all, there is now, a small shimmering hope, for me to have romance, to have love, to have a mutual love, in my life.

So, I think, if I were to end, this manuscript soon, Christos would be, in a good position, which is a nice way, for me, to be able, to end a book.

There is no end per se. Life is not like that, until death

occurs. Life is to be enjoyed, as much as responsibly possible, in healthy ways, and, to accomplish this, one must develop, a harmonious relationship, with one's environment, or seek to build, an environment that is healthy, and harmonious... One must seek, to build relationships, through fair trade, between real needs, sometimes with, some compromises, and patience.

I am, at least relatively content...

= 31 =

LOVE MAKES LIFE WORTH LIVING
March 31, 1986

These past two weeks have been heavenly, thanks to Steve. It's love I tell you, love... The touch of love, lets me overlook, the burdens of work, makes everything worthwhile. All my little problems seem unimportant. That which matters, is that I am sharing time, with someone I love, who says he loves me. Love makes life worth living. Even great wealth, without love, can be a hollow experience.

I have always wanted, to have love, before gaining wealth, so that the person I am with, would most likely be, someone who likes me, for me, rather than for money... I am mindful, of how sad, was my great aunt Doris, during her life, as she gave up, on seeking romantic love, because she felt, everyone was after her money, and what she really wanted, was love, so she became forlorn, and somewhat reclusive, even though she did have great wealth... Word is, that Doris did, at least find, a long-term companion, in her butler.

Steve has changed my subconscious, in one way for sure. My appetite, my desire for food, has returned. I guess that, subconsciously, I lost my desire, to have a good body, due to Paul's advances, for what's the point, of having a good body, if all it brings to you, is lusty people, for whom you yourself, feel no physical desire. I suppose, having a nice body, can be like having wealth. It might be nice, when people like my shell, but it seems, to keep them from caring, what is inside that shell... A 'curse' of 'beauty', can be, what that beauty attracts...

Steve and I have marveled together, at how lucky, fortunate, we are, to feel such a strong mutual attraction, for one another. Steve said, he had been dating one guy, but that guy, was 'too obviously gay', for Steve to be comfortable with. Neither Steve nor I, are 'obviously gay', and, in the ways we live, and behave, we could be assumed to be straight. We are both, without any affectations, that might brand us, as stereotypical gay...

I have stayed at Steve's, most of these past evenings, and he has made sure, that I eat something, in the mornings. Steve has gotten me, to work-out with him, as his

apartment development, has a room, with exercise machines. This is, the first serious exercise, I have been doing, in over a year. My body is already beginning, to get back into proper tone.

Steve also works, into the night, as I do, so it has been convenient, for us to meet, after work. I have been having Steve, come to my place, on nights that he gets off work, after I do, and I go to his place, when he gets off work, before I do. Steve gets off, basically the same time, each evening, while my schedule, can vary, depending on deadlines, and amount of work. I call Steve's, when I am finishing work, and if he answers, then I go there, and if not, I leave a message, that I am on my way home, so that he will then, come to, and at, my place.

Steve and I, continue to enjoy, full body massages, with music, and oil, and, apparently, we both enjoy, giving and receiving, these massages, which one of us, does to the other, until 'complete', and then we switch roles. There has been, some oral activity, though apparently, neither of us is very caring, about receiving that....

Steve and I seem very compatible, both as companions, and physically. My mood has been, very buoyant, apparently noticeable, even at work, where I have explained, that I have, 'met somebody'. I have discussed, or mentioned, aspects of my relationship with Steve, by using the pronoun, 'she'.

I am most certainly, not ashamed of my relationship, with someone of the same sex, but I do wish, to avoid discrimination, and, once 'tagged', one be forever 'tagged'... I can recall, when police would go to parking lots, of gay bars, and take the license plate numbers, of cars there, and then seek to report those vehicles, to employers, which could cost a person, his or her job... Things might be better today, but that does not mean, they will not be worse tomorrow...

Steve is in, his late thirties, while I am, in my early thirties. We have many similar interests. Both of us like the outdoors, the beach, swimming, music, and working-out, among other things... Steve knows, that I produce *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, and that it fails, to provide me, with any income, but that I remain hopeful, that it might. Steve really

knows nothing, about my path as Christos...

Steve is engaged, in a running legal battle, with his ex-wife, Matilda. Matilda denied visitation, to Steve, with his children, for a prolonged period, despite a court agreement, to honor a visitation schedule. Steve then stopped, making child support payments, to seek to influence Matilda, to allow visitation. The courts did rule, that visitation and child support payments, are two separate issues. Steve went through, a very lengthy process, before Matilda was actually jailed, for contempt of court, for refusing to allow visitation, though this took months... The issue, of unpaid child support payments, has not been resolved.

Steve is fighting now, in court, to seek to gain, greater visitation rights, or full custody, arguing that he is the parent, most financially able, to care for the kids. Matilda has no job skills, has never worked, and lives off the income, from a duplex, which Steve gave to her, as part of a divorce settlement, leaving him with nothing. Matilda has remarried, but that man, has no legal obligation, to provide anything, to support her pre-existing children. Matilda's lack of job skills means she has nothing, to teach the children, about the real-world, so the kids, are disadvantaged with her.

If Steve loses, he faces a mountain, of legal fees, both his and hers, which he cannot afford. Matilda has hired a lawyer, while Steve is fighting, for his own cause, representing himself in court. Apparently, the gentleman, who Steve met at the bar, might have been a lawyer, who might give Steve some advice, without formal involvement. I have prepared, some legal papers for Steve, so they look professional.

Matilda, probably won't be able, to pay her lawyer either, and hopes to win, to force Steve, to pay for her lawyer. Steve is concerned, that Matilda's lawyer, might seize the property, that he gave to Matilda, if that lawyer, is unable to force Steve, to pay Matilda's legal fees, which they are seeking, to compel Steve to do, saying that it is Steve, who caused this legal battle...

The situation makes me glad, that I am not formally married. I think, a formal civil union can give pretext, for robbery in divorce... It seems to me, that love blinds men, into putting their necks, into a legal noose...

At any rate, Steve is most certain, that his ex-wife, Matilda, would most certainly use, 'homosexuality', against him in court, so our relationship, remains secret. Everyone in Steve's world, his friends and family, think of him as straight. I have met, some people of Steve's world, but they think I am, 'just a friend'...

So far, Paul has not objected, to Steve's visits. I was pleased, when Steve remained quite firm, and civil, when declining Paul's repeated sexual propositions. If Paul were to object, to my having Steve, at my place, then I would move, from Paul's. Steve has let me know, that it would be risky, for him, for me to live with him...

Paul's reaction, to my affair with Steve, has been, to start demanding, that we have sex. Paul says, if I am able, to go to bed, with another male, then I should also, go to bed with him. I have declined, and Paul says, I am being selfish... Paul says, he does everything for me, and gets no thanks, nor appreciation. I told Paul, that I do make a point, to thank him, for each and every single thing he does. I told Paul, that I am renting space from him, and expect to have, some privacy and respect, in the space, that I pay him to provide. I reminded Paul, that he named his price, and I pay that price, giving to him, the extra money, he says he needs, to meet his own expenses. Even though Paul still maintains, that sex between us, is not important, it has become, nearly the only thing, he speaks about now...

Paul did take me, to a stage-play of Albee's, being performed in Miami... Paul has managed, to engage himself, in my talks with Albee, and I fear, that Albee might back off, if he feels, he has to deal, with too many people. Paul has impressed, upon Albee, that I come from a fine family, and that he, is on great terms, with both my mother, and with Albee's mother. I am uncertain, if Albee welcomed, that information... I am uncertain, if Albee would wish to do a stage-play about Christos, if he thinks, my family might strongly object, to that material...

Asmodeus has suggested, that I adapt any popular book, to a screen-play, so that we both, can make money. I have wondered, how Asmodeus, would make money, if I do all the work, to read a book, and write a screen-play, and then do all the leg-work, to try to get some film-maker, to pay

for it... Asmodeus said, that he deserved some share of funds, because it was his idea, that I do so. I suspect, that Asmodeus bases his claim, simply on his sense of need, for income, rather than, upon any work, he might do, to share in such an endeavor. I have told Asmodeus, that right now, my time seems, to be 'full'. I have been spending, my available time, with Steve, and less, with Asmodeus.

Asmodeus again reaffirms, that he wants a general war, and says, that he may try to use, his metaphysical power, and knowledge, to cause one. Asmodeus joked, that he and his friends, could kill me, and thus set off Armageddon.

I said to Asmodeus, that it seems possible, that anyone, involved with my murder, might have to face, some great, prolonged, negative karma, for an entire age.

Asmodeus says, that he could possibly get, the *National Enquirer*, to do an article, on Christos, if they could use, my real name, and mention my family connections. Asmodeus said, such an article, would likely have to be hostile, to be allowed, but at least, that would get me some publicity, even if through scorn and ridicule... As always, this is something, that would take, at least one or two phone calls, to accomplish, and Asmodeus has been unable, to manage to do that, in a year...

I did tell Asmodeus, that I preferred, for an article on Christos, to focus only on me, as Christos. I said, I believe, that I have been interesting enough, as Christos, to warrant attention, as Christos.

My mother entertained me. The idea was, that it was a cocktail party, with dinner afterwards. I did bartend. However, I saw Sally there, and so decided against, staying for dinner. Sally was responsible, for me losing one good job. Sally can be, a venomous back-stabber. My distaste for Sally, was strong enough, to influence me, to step away, from her daughter, Cynthia, for whom I did feel some affection... I knew, that a long-term relationship with Cynthia, would mean, a long-term relationship, with Sally, and I decided against that. Sally has shown herself, to be aggressively hostile towards me, even though I never did any wrong or harm to her.

My mother suggested, that she might fund, a shop for me, paying the rent, and helping me, to acquire equipment,

to do typesetting, and that Sally, could be a sales representative, to help bring, business my way... Sally would earn a commission, on all business she brings, and my mother would want half, of the remaining profit, and I would repay my mother, funds she put forth, from what I earn...

I suggested, that if my mother, wanted to have, a half share, of all profits, then I should only repay her half, of whatever she puts in. However, my mother would wish, to be repaid in full. I suggested, that perhaps, my mother should be satisfied, with 20-percent, of remaining profits, after Sally is paid. My mother said, that her offer, as is, is not only, the best offer, I am likely to receive, but perhaps the only offer... At face value, that would almost seem good, but I just can't see, having Sally, on the inside with me, on anything...

I am willing to continue, my private detente, with my mother, but I do not think, a public reconciliation, is yet justified. My mother has wronged me, time and time again, and just her being friendly, does nothing, to make up, for past harms and wrongs, she has done.

In Steve, I think I have found, a compatible spirit, with whom I could be, a live-apart lover, or even, a live-with lover-companion. A life with Steve would be heavenly. Steve is masculine, has a steady job, is mentally disciplined, enjoys exercising, and is fun in bed. Steve, also has carried, his own weight with me. I think Steve is the first male I've combined with, who is well adjusted, to the real rat race working world. I seem to be making, a worthwhile friend at least.

I would be willing, to drop my newsletter, and efforts to publicize Christos, to ensure things go smoothly with Steve, on a long-term basis. I fear, those who give to me, challenges in life, due to my newsletter, might be harmful, to anyone I combine with... I fear, Christos might gain publicity, which could be harmful to Steve. I, of course, am Christos, and would remain Christos, even if with Steve. I would just refrain, from seeking publicity, as Christos, or seek to ensure, that the focus of any publicity, is only upon my life, as Christos.

After Matthew vanished, I asked God, to let me share

life, with a romantic lover, who was interested in me, as a person, who has a job, a good body, and maybe be, a little older, to heighten his interest in me. Steve certainly fits the bill. I am no longer, tempted to vanish. Steve holds me in place.

I still have, failed to receive, even an acknowledgment, from the major metaphysical publisher, I wrote to in February, about *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*.

On the world front, limited conflicts seem to be growing, between the super-powers. Neither the US, nor the SU, seem willing, to give more than lip service, to peace. In some ways, the US and SU, seem to use their conflict, to justify military expansion, and expansion into our world, as if nobody else, has anything going on... Many little nations, are now consumed, by warfare, with hells, that produce violent deaths, for many innocent civilians... The SU has troops, dying in foreign nations, as it attempts to expand, its imperial sphere. At least the US has taken my advice, from *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, and is now supporting rebels, for the first time, supporting liberation movements, in favor of pluralist democracies, against Soviet-supported dictatorships, instead of the US, using its own soldiers.

= 31 =

CONFRONTATIONS
April 13, 1986

As always, when there is something in my world, that I think needs improvement, I do eventually, set my mind, and time, to doing something about it. I like to do, what I can, to seek to improve myself, or my situation.

One of the criticisms, I have of myself, is that I am too giving, toward people, and often, walk too far, down a one-way street. If the loss, or abuse, is small, I usually allow it, to avoid confrontation. However, that can lead, to great dissatisfaction, as the little things, do add up, and, in not confronting the little situations, I might encourage an abuser, to continue the abuse, to continue in behavior, that might be, detrimental to me.

I thusly decided, to focus upon some issues, admittedly, perhaps selecting, small unimportant things, to at least engage in dialogue, to at least, make the other person aware, that I am aware.

One of the places, where this new policy, came to bear, was at work. My boss, John-S, had used a quantity, of my old newsletter paper stock, for one of his customer's jobs, without consulting me. I do buy this paper, even if at cost. I buy this, with what I earn, from John-S. I know that John-S was treating me, in a way that he would dislike being treated himself. If I simply took inventory, be that paper or other supplies, from John-S, based solely on my need, without consulting him, he would view that, as theft, and he would react poorly to that... I am also aware, that John-S, charged the customer, with the normal mark-up, invoiced as if he had purchased, this paper, giving to himself ample 'false profit'...

So, at start, I was aware, that John-S, technically speaking, had stolen from me, in order to earn false profit, from a client, was aware, that John-S, was 'ripping off', both me and the client. I am also aware, that I am employed by John-S, and his demeanor toward me, is important to me. I am aware, that John-S does print, *WORLD PRESS WATCH* for me, without charging me, to do so, and I am aware, that one of the reasons, that he does this, in addition to the advertising, that my newsletter provides, for his business, is to encourage me, to have a lower-than-normal wage.

I figured that John-S, was seeking to use his position, as my employer, to take advantage of me. I decided to ask, for a 'credit', rather than any cash payment, for the paper of mine, that had been used. I asked to be allowed, to use surplus, or extra old stock, stored away, in exchange, for the amount of my stock, which had been taken.

I mentioned, that the previous week, 500 sheets, of my 17x11 fancy stock, had been trashed, due to a press error, and said, that I could easily overlook this, as mistakes do happen, and I remain grateful, for the time and trouble, it takes to print, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. This accident was a separate incident, from the deliberate taking of my stock, for John-S' customer.

John-S, said, he was 'flabbergasted', that I would make such a request. John-S said, that I was 'petty', to make such a request of him.

I said, that on my income, with my expenses in life, that I must seek, to make full use, of my resources, and all I was asking, was for use, of stored inventory, that had been stored, for a long time, to help offset, the cost to me, of replacing the stock, that John-S had felt, he needed to take. I told John-S, that I had not intended, to cause him any offense, and that I myself, had felt some offense, that he would take my stock, without even bothering, to consult with me, as I do need to know, what I have, so that I do have, adequate stock, for use by *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. I told John-S, that to free myself, of this situation, I would now, simply give to him, what he had taken from me, as well as the remainder, of that batch of paper.

I believe, that sadly, John-S did take offense, and perhaps thought, that I was disrespecting his position, as king, his right to do as he pleases, with anything. I somewhat doubt, that John-S, would have taken stock, from a client, in that way, if doing so, might have risked his losing, further business, from that client... Perhaps John-S, might have replaced that stock, on his own, if I had said nothing, but I am quite uncertain, if he would have done so. That I became aware, this time, that John-S had taken stock from me, to use for a job, for one of his clients, fails to mean, that he had not done so, previously, and that I had been unaware, until this time, that this has been occurring. I also

understand, that this might have been, the only time, something like this, had occurred. I am simply uncertain. I said nothing, about this speculation, to John-S. All I said to John-S, is what I have mentioned, in this journal, that I said to him.

My home front has also been becoming, more and more unpleasant. Paul has been telling me, what to do, with *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, demanding that I make, changes he wants, including, to stop reviewing, left-wing or communist publications, that I change the layout, and that I cease, listing the places, where it is sold locally, which I do, as a business trade, in return, for their distributing *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. Paul said, that the ratty layout, and the terrible sources I quote, are making *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, seem unprofessional, and disreputable, and thus embarrassing, for him to deliver, in my behalf. Paul said, people are making, unflattering comments, to him, about the newsletter...

For the record, in contrast, I do also focus, on that which is important, to right-wing, or conservative sources, and do give them attention, fairly. Asmodeus, as a left-wing person, might dislike, some of the reports, which are right-wing, or conservative, but he continues to appreciate, that I look, at all points of view, and perspectives.

For the record, I continue to list the places, where *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, is distributed locally, and I do continue, to report items, from all points of view, and perspectives. I believe, that people should be aware, of what others are doing, if they wish to dispute, what others might be saying... I know, from my experience as Christos, that some are prone, to denigrating others, for what they say others are doing, or what others to them might represent, when their facts, might be in error... So many people, for instance, like to say, that I cast myself as perfect, and then chide me, for being less than perfect, when I am the first to admit, that I am capable of error, and at no time, do I seek to portray myself, as perfect, as being without flaws.

Paul also, again, propositioned Steve, in front of me, something I had asked, for him to refrain from doing. Paul said, that if I am not giving, my company to him, as often, if I am focusing my time, upon Steve, then I should pay more

rent, to compensate, for my lack of company... For the amount that I am paying, to Paul, I could perhaps rent, a small efficiency, or a one-bedroom apartment, but I would then, also have utility costs, so it is cheaper, for me to pay rent, at Paul's. However, I continue to lack 'domain', even in my room, and Paul continues, to do as he pleases, when he pleases, in my room, though my body, is 'off limits'...

To his credit, Steve politely declined, Paul's proposition. In the past, Paul has forbidden re-entry, to his apartment, to anyone, who has declined to have sex with him, and also those, he has had sex with... Those who have declined, to have sex with Paul, have lasted a bit longer than those who agreed, to have sex.

On the one hand, Paul seems to be, ruining his relationship, with me, and I am once again, entering a phase, where I now anticipate, that Paul shall be unpleasant, in some way, when I do see him. Paul has been warning me, that he shall remove me, from his will, if I don't 'behave'.

I have viewed Paul, as someone who has, nothing to leave to anyone, in his will, and I have enjoyed Paul, for Paul's companionship, and friendship, now, while he is alive. I somewhat view Paul's threat, to remove me from his will, as both deceitful, and insulting, deceitful because he has nothing, to leave, and insulting, because it seems to imply, that I might be so materially motivated, that I might care more, for a person's 'shell', than for what is inside that shell...

However, really, the main thing, that has mattered to me, and made other problems, seem unimportant, is my time with Steve, which I have continued, to very-very much enjoy. My spirit and heart are happy. I smile, when I am with Steve, and he smiles, when he is with me...

Unknown to Paul, is that Steve's lease shall end, in October, and Steve has asked me, if I would at that time, consider sharing, a place with him. Steve says, he feels love for me, and said, he hasn't felt this way, toward anyone, since his ex-wife. However, Steve wants us, to have a mutual understanding, that we are friends, without any mutual understanding of union, at least at this time.

I have told Steve, that my heart is his, and I have

agreed, to Steve's position, to an understanding, that we are 'friends', and that we might share a place, in October... Neither of us have ruled out, a mutual understanding of union, and we have both agreed, that such a mutual understanding, of union, could be possible. For now, we are simply enjoying, the time we have, with each other.

Steve says, that right now, there is nobody else, he wants to go to bed with, and he is not looking, for anyone else, to go to bed with. However, Steve wants me to know, that he still wants, to be able, to go to bed with someone else, without violating, any understanding with me. So, I have told Steve, that I agree to that, accepting the same leeway, for myself.

Part of the picture, is that Steve, maintains a 'straight' image, to his friends and family, and has a hostile ex-wife. Steve's friends and family, do occasionally, suggest to him, a girl for him to date, and he does sometimes, go along with that, in part, to maintain a straight image. And, sadly for me, it seems possible, that Steve, like other men I have known, might engage, in a formal relationship, of union of some sort, with a woman, while still wishing, to have, 'something to do with men'...

What I would like to have, with someone, and I could hope, that someone might be Steve, is a mutual, monogamous, content, happy union... Even now, especially after, having to civilly endure, Russ' being with a woman, in front of me, I think I would have 'difficulty', enduring seeing Steve, with someone else, male or female, if I had to pretend, that I didn't matter...

I have told Steve, that if he and I, were to remain 'friends', then I should stay with Paul, or get a place of my own. I told Steve, that I feel, I would need to have, a mutual understanding with him, that we are lovers, significant others, in a union of some sort, with some sort of mutual understandings, in order for me, to live with him. I told Steve, that I would be unable, to comfortably live with him, as a 'friend', if he had another 'lover'...

Steve said, that while, he has always behaved, 'bisexually', that he never has had, any sort of 'mutual understanding', of a 'relationship', with another male. At best, Steve said, he has been 'sex buddies', with some guys

for a while. Steve said, he definitely feels, emotion for me, and that, to use my words back to me, I am in his heart. Steve said, he does not want, to make any commitment with me, or with anyone, at this time. I told Steve, that I remain glad, for the time we share...

For the record, it was Steve, who brought up the topic, of us living together, and who brought up the topic, of emotions...

Privately, in this journal, I would leave 'friend' Paul, to live with 'lover' Steve, but I would remain with 'friend' Paul, rather than living with 'friend' Steve, because with Paul, I feel as a friend, but with Steve, my romantic heart, is strongly involved. I do feel fondness, affection, for Paul, as a friend, so he does have, a piece of my heart. If my relationship, with 'friend' Steve, continues to influence, 'friend' Paul, to make my living with Paul, less than pleasant, while Paul does continue to maintain, that he wishes no union with me, then I might be inclined, to again start thinking, about gaining space, of my own.

Asmodeus has suggested, that the best place, for me to be, would be, to live with him. Asmodeus and I are 'friends'... Neither of us wishes to be physical, with the other. Asmodeus has a two-bedroom home. Asmodeus' elderly father lives in the second bedroom. Asmodeus' things fill every room, and when I say fill, I include, on chairs and floor space... As is, the only empty space, in Asmodeus' home, would be in his bed, which does have ample room, for two people to sleep. Asmodeus' home, is filled, with many young men, and is a place, of a constant fun party, and stimulating dialogue.

For me, Asmodeus' home, has been hospitable, and enjoyable, as a visitor, but I disbelieve, that I would wish to live there, as things there now are, and I also, think I like things, as they are there now, and would not wish, to damage my relationship, with Asmodeus, or my welcome, in his home.

I have told Asmodeus, that his home, does not have, enough space for me, with my things, which would include, my need for a desk, a place for me to write.

Asmodeus points out, that I have things, in storage now, that I lack adequate space, at Paul's, that I have no domain

at Paul's, and really no privacy at Paul's, and that perhaps, my staying with Asmodeus, at least for a time, would be better for me, than my staying at Paul's. Asmodeus says, he could use, the extra income from me, perhaps more, than Paul needs, the extra income from me.

I have wondered, if becoming close, to a group, or a person, can result, in one's wishing, to be more distant, or to drop, that group, or person, then perhaps, maintaining some distance, from things one likes, might help to maintain those connections, or those relationships... Sad but true...?

Asmodeus seems, to want to control everything, in his home, and seems somewhat, without any consideration, for his father. This is perhaps, influencing Asmodeus' father, to consider moving. Asmodeus' father, spends all of his time, in his bedroom, except for when, he might use the kitchen or bathroom... Asmodeus counts, on income from his father, to pay household needs.

I have suggested to Asmodeus, that perhaps, he let his father, enjoy some time, in the living-room, or that he seeks to keep, voices less loud, or music less loud, at most times, or at least at designated times. I lack doubt, that the sound from the living-room, must indeed intrude, into Asmodeus' father's bedroom... Asmodeus said, that he simply is, a very dominating personality, and that's how it is...

Apparently, when Asmodeus' mother died, she left the house, to Asmodeus. Otherwise, Asmodeus' father, might have sold the house, and gotten space of his own, leaving Asmodeus, to fend for himself... Asmodeus says, he is treating his father, better than his father, would have treated him. Asmodeus wants what he wants, at all times...

I might have some difficulty, living with someone like Asmodeus. While Paul, might indeed want his way, all the time, he does live with some consideration for me, and is without that constant crowd, or constant noise...

Asmodeus also recently said, that he would not do anything, to promote Christos, unless he can first interview my mother, on this subject. I told Asmodeus, that my mother is only a phone call away. I told Asmodeus, that I thought that topic, might be displeasing, to my mother, and would probably aggravate things, between she and I. I told Asmodeus, that normally, I do fail to enjoy, pleasant relations

with my mother, but this just happens to be, a time-period, where things seem okay, between she and I, and I would prefer, to keep it that way.

I told Asmodeus, that at best, I myself would lack any objection, to his interviewing my mother, but that I would ask, that he approach her, as gently as possible, and make it clear, that I had nothing to do with this.

Asmodeus said, he would refrain, from calling my mother, if I don't want him, to call her. I told Asmodeus, that for now, I would be more comfortable, if he refrained, from calling her, as this topic, might indeed aggravate things, between she and I. Asmodeus said, that he would refrain for now, but it is something, that he would like to do, one day.

In *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, I said, that people have a right, to seek to use, violent means of change, when nonviolent means of change, are prohibited. The Catholic Church, had previously disagreed, with that position, but now, has changed their position, to align with mine.

The major metaphysical publishing house, told me, their quota for books, is full right now, so they are, not now interested, in publishing, *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*. However, they did recommend, a bookstore, in New York City, to carry that book.

Lastly, a cause for me, to write this chapter, was to mention, that this evening, Paul, Steve, and I, went into the wilderness, to get away from city lights, with binoculars, to view Halley's Comet. It was hazy, small, but had color, unlike the stars. Halley's Comet appeared red, yellow, and green. I guess my bounce, kept it from hitting our planet, a Babylonian joke!

CONVERSATIONS
April 20, 1986

Somewhat without warning, or much communication, Steve abruptly stopped seeing me. Steve stopped calling me, nor would he answer his phone, nor would he return my calls. Needless to say, this affected my mood, making me, perhaps a touch sharper, in tongue, toward my world, less patient, with the little problems, I face in life... All the little things, that no longer mattered, when I was enjoying, time with Steve, now, all of sudden, did matter... I seem to lack, sources of joy, and have many sources, of aggravation...

Finally, Steve did answer his telephone, and I was able, to get him to discuss, what was bothering him. Steve and I, have always maintained, open communication, which has been, a strong point, of our relationship.

Steve said, he is concerned, that we are developing, a serious relationship, and he does not want to develop, a serious relationship, with anyone, male or female.

I suspect, that perhaps, Steve is disturbed, that he is feeling emotions, for a male...

Steve said, he wants to just be, friends with me, but that we have been, more intimate, in sharing physical fun, and inner thoughts, than friends would do, and we both, have expressed emotional attachments, to one another, and all of this, to Steve, means, that we are, 'more than friends', and he is uncomfortable with that, and felt that, some distance between us, would be for the best, that we should be glad, for what we had, and now it's time, for us to go, on our own separate ways.

I told Steve, that I accept his position, and will seek to meet, new people, to find a lover-partnership, a significant other, a long-term companion, a situation that I would like to have in life. I want someone, who faces life with me, someone to be with, at the end of the world, so to speak...

I told Steve, that he and I, share natural compatibility, sexually, and platonically, which is rare, and that this is something, which should have great value. I said relationships, like civilizations, must be built and maintained, and that we seemed to have, a very good solid foundation, to build upon. I said, some people have built, a long-lasting

union, on a much smaller foundation.

Steve says, whatever happens happens, and that is what is natural, and meant to be. Steve says, nothing is permanent, because life is full of change.

I replied, that it is because life can be full of change, that relationships must be consciously adapted, through communication, and compromise. I say, that naturally, if things are left, in a 'whatever happens, happens', type of attitude, then that which is natural, is for such a relationship, to fall apart, because no effort has been made, to adapt to change.

Steve said, that while he has enjoyed, very much, our physical relationship, that he is normally accustomed, 'to more'... I told Steve, that I am generally without desire, to be 'penetrated', and have tried it, and found no fondness for it, that I could tolerate it, maybe even enjoy it, but only in a monogamous union, precisely because, it is only something I would do, to please another person.

Steve said, that I had that wrong, that what he might enjoy, would be to be penetrated, rather than, to penetrate me. I told Steve, that I had no problem doing that, to please him.

[140505 ~ Funny how different people, view 'anal sex'... Some women dislike anal sex, and have told me, they have tried it, and it does nothing for them. Some women find anal sex, to be a way to avoid pregnancy. Some men have found, that they can enjoy, moving their penis, between closed thighs, without any penetration involved. I have found, that some men greatly enjoy receiving anal sex, as that is a way, to produce pleasure, by rubbing the prostate gland, from the 'other side', so to speak, in the same way, that a bull is 'milked' today. Women lack a prostate gland, so might lack, that way to find pleasure. The first impression, some people have, uninformed, is that anal sex, must be, 'very dirty', and yet, truth be, that it is normally, 'clean'...]

[140505 ~ Some men, who view themselves, as 'straight', might still wish, to be penetrated, saying, that is something, a woman is unable to do, so, for that, they might seek, another man, for 'fun', while they would still, face the world, and say, that they are 'straight'. Some muscular men,

are very able, to enjoy being penetrated... Some masculine men, are 'sensitive', about their enjoyment, of anal sex, because some other people, might then view them, as 'less than men', and treat them, with some disrespect, or demeaning demeanor, that they then might feel, a need to react to strongly, to assert their masculinity. Other men, might say, 'take it like a man', as if those, who were scared of such a thing, might be, 'less than men'...]

[140505 ~ I think, a body, is like a musical instrument, and can be played... I think, that people react differently, to what their body likes. I think, that people might lack control, over what their body likes. I think, different people have different preferences, and that's how it is. I think, Steve had some concern, that some people, might think of him, as 'less than a man', because he enjoyed, being penetrated.]

Steve said, he was very worried, that I would become emotional, that I would become, demanding of him, that I would become, unpleasant, and that he would prefer, to avoid experiencing, more strains in his life.

I told Steve, that as my norm, I seem to be, fairly level, and seem to be, much the same, at all times, throughout all times, in my life. I told Steve, that at least, I would remain civil, even if disagreeing with him, about something. I agreed, that I do have emotions for Steve, and that, if he wishes to see other people, then I would prefer, to avoid seeing him, when he is with other people, at least privately. I told Steve, that if we are in a public place, and he is with someone else, that I could always walk away.

I also mentioned to Steve, that each person, only has so much time in life, and can face many demands, upon that finite time. This means, that each person, can only comfortably have, so many 'real' friends, perhaps two or three at most, because we might lack time, to have more. I told Steve, that I would always give priority, to my partner in life, and if that partner is someone other than Steve, then he should expect to have less time, with me.

Steve said, he needed some time, to think about things, and that he would call me, when he was ready to do so, and it would be for the best, if I refrained from calling him, until then. I agreed to this...

Paul has been 'encouraged', by this backing away, by

Steve, and Paul has been less venomous lately. However, Paul began telling me, that I should change my work hours, so that I would have, more time with him. When I say, that Paul has been 'telling me', I mean to indicate, that he has brought up the topic, more than once, and that he has not been making a request. This led to a strong talk, between Paul and me.

I told Paul, that my work hours, are determined by my boss, and he sees, a need to meet customer demand. I do not set my work hours! My boss does, or the work does.

Paul said, that I should set, definite work hours.

I told Paul, that the nature of the printing business, is that work can come in, at any time, and we have to juggle many demands, and deadlines, at the same time, so the number of hours, and when I work, are determined by customer demand.

Paul said, that my boss should hire someone else, so that I am not, such a slave. Paul said, he simply wants, to see me more often.

I told Paul, that our business 'breathes', and that we do have, more 'slack', during the 'off season', after Easter, when tourists depart. I said, that I must appreciate many things, about this job. First and foremost, I appreciate, that I have been able, to keep this job, and have some security, a first for me, since I left Key West.

Paul asked, how secure would I be, if my boss thought I was gay...

I admitted, that perhaps my boss, as a Catholic, might dislike my sexuality, and said, that for now, my boss assumes, I am straight, and I have done nothing, or said nothing, to change that image, and that I view my sexuality, as irrelevant, to my job. I said, that I assume, that people can say anything, about one, and one can deny, anything that is said.

Paul said, I might be better off, working for, 'a nice gay man', like Frank-B. I did chuckle at that...

I pointed out to Paul, that it was he, who had sought, to keep me, from even applying, for a full-time job, with Frank-B. I told Paul, that if he could find, 'a nice gay man', for me to work for, to let me know. I said, perhaps I am much better off, working for a 'straight' man, who lacks any sexual

interest in me, as for now, I am quite glad, to be judged at my job, solely by how I do my job.

I asked Paul, if coincidentally, Frank-B might be having, a full-time job opening, and Paul said no.

I told Paul, that he dislikes my friends, declines to give any phone messages to me, wants his way, totally, in his home, even in 'my' room, and that he now dislikes, my newsletter, and dislikes, my job. I told Paul, that from my perspective, he can be smothering, manipulative, and meddlesome, and all these things, can be tiresome. I told Paul, that his friendship, used to help me, to cope with my challenges in life, but now, he had seemed to become, another challenge, for me to cope with, in life. I suggested to Paul, that perhaps he would be happier, if I got my own place...

Paul said, that he would remove me, from his will, if I moved, from his home.

I told Paul, to do whatever he wanted, but I wanted, to never again, hear him mention his will. I told Paul, that I did not want, his will to be between us. I told Paul, that it seemed, a touch wrong to me, for him to be mentioning his apartment, as something he might leave to me, when I knew, that in addition, to the loan from Frank-B, that Paul had also taken, a mortgage, on the equity, and that Paul, had seemed to be dodging, or making excuses, about payments to Frank-B, while also seeking to gain, a second mortgage, on the home... I told Paul, that I might wonder, if there might be, more debt than equity, on this property...

I told Paul, that he is leaving me nothing, and that he is low, and dishonest, for trying to manipulate me, with a promise of material value later, when all I have ever valued, is the time I have had, 'now', with him. I told Paul, that he seems to fail to appreciate, that I have indeed, valued his friendship.

Paul said, that he is devoted to me, and supporting me, giving to me, a very nice place, to live.

I told Paul, that I am paying my own way, and that, while I do appreciate, the comfort his home provides, that he has sought, to make me uncomfortable here, by having his own way, with all the things, in my room. Paul had even removed the bureaus, which he said, he had bought for me,

and I came home from work, to find my clothes, neatly arranged on my bed.

Paul said, that he had to wait, until I came home, to put other bureaus, with my help, into that room, because the task had become too much for him. Paul said, he is late in life, and needs me here, to help him with things.

Paul said, as far as erasing my phone messages, he was simply, seeking to protect my image. I said to Paul, that he has propositioned, every male, I have brought, to this home, including some heterosexual males, and said, that was certainly potentially risky, to my image, as Paul had not cared, whether they knew of my situation, or not. Paul simply assumed, that if someone was with me, that he could safely proposition that person, because I would be there, to protect him, in case there was a violent response, to such a proposition.

One might assume, that any male, might be flattered, to be propositioned, but that can be untrue. Some males, when propositioned by another male, do get offended, to think that someone, might think of them, as gay, when in truth, many men, who portray themselves as 'straight', do allow themselves, to be orally satisfied, by other men, but men, who are really actually totally straight, do not do so... It is a very mixed-up world.

And, as far as 'protecting me', might be concerned, I said that Paul, has risky, casual, promiscuous sex, with total strangers, as his norm, at adult book-stores. I said, that while I can be pleased, when someone finds, pleasure in life, that if he wished to protect me, then he would avoid doing things, that could cause me, disease or death.

Paul said, I don't fool around with him anyway, and that my preventing him, from enjoying my body, influenced him, to have sex, at book-stores.

I told Paul, that he had sex, at book-stores, even when he was fooling around with me. That is simply his way.

I have $750, in the bank now, and take-home pay, of $250 a week. Income from my job could fall soon, as the tourist season ends, so I must be careful, about my expenses. I need dental work, on my crumbling teeth too. I cannot afford to move yet, and I could not afford to move, for a long time, if I spend my money, on my teeth. Right now, I

am going to avoid dental work, to retain the funds, and seek to save enough, to be able to move.

I do not think, that my conversation with Pau, solved anything. I think, the only reason, there has been any improvement, between Paul and I, is because Steve has stepped away...

John-S has been less pleasant, more critical, more insulting about anything, and everything, since I asked for compensation, for the paper of mine, that he took... I guess John-S was really offended, even though I did try, to be gentle, and I did think, I had a valid topic, to mention to him.

Well, life is not always easy, and that's no surprise...

= 31 =

MORE PRESSURE AGAINST MY NEWSLETTER
May 2, 1986

The Post Office delayed mailing, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, by one day this week, which is significant, for destinations further away, for the newsletter will not arrive, until the beginning of next week, instead of the end, of this week.

Also, my bank sent to me, a letter, containing deposit checks, for my newsletter, going back three months. The bank said, that I must open a separate business account, for *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. The bank has allowed me, to make newsletter deposits, into my account, these past years, and the amounts involved, are still not significant, less than three-hundred dollars, in any one year.

I ended up, opening up another bank account, for myself, at another bank, after checking with the county government, and confirming, that as a writer, I don't need, a business account, for *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, as it is considered, written material, without retail business, nor do I have any employees.

I faulted my bank, for accepting the deposits, and then retroactively canceling them, which could have created, a problem for me, had there been, a significant amount, of money involved. I think my bank, could have alerted me, to a change in their policy, for future deposits... Perhaps my bank, hoped that I would deposit these funds, into a second account, and then they could hit me, with two service charges, per month, instead of one.

Asmodeus warns me, that authorities will probably, take serious action against me, if *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, ever begins to grow. This week, I got a good advertisement, from another publication, and the revenue is nice. I estimate, that including my newspaper column circulation, I probably have, at least 15,000, weekly actual readers.

Asmodeus says, current world events, mirror the warnings, of Biblical Revelations, more so, than at any other time, in human history. I agree, that we are in, a Judgment phase, but for me, this is an evolution of humanity, a natural phase, where humanity develops, the technological or scientific, military means, to destroy its civilization. To me,

any time-period, where humanity, has the means to destroy itself, is a phase of Judgment. However, I respect, that Asmodeus has studied, in depth, both history, and Christianity, and so perhaps, what he says, is actually true.

Also, a new minor annoyance this week... I noticed, that I have lost cigarettes, smoke, tee-shirts, cash, and photographs, from my residence, while I have been at work. I suspect, that Paul has had company, for sex, during the day, and that his company, is stealing my things. My mother told me, that she told Paul, to throw away, my junky things, though neither has felt a need, to replace anything. I think that my mother, just wished to imply to me, that she now has influence, over Paul's behavior.

My mother has been buying second-hand coats, for me, at thrift shops, and now, there are seven or eight of these, in my closet. I lack any occasion, to wear coats... I laughed to Asmodeus, that if my mother, or Paul, is showing my residence, to their friends, the presence of so many coats, might be giving an impression, that I am wearing them, and this might have some value, to them, or their audiences, might make it seem, like I am doing fine, image without substance, as I do remain, basically impoverished, personally, and have next to nothing. I would rather have kept, my old comfortable, fun tee-shirts, which I do actually wear... Of course, there's that issue of theft. I lack any doubt, that my mother and Paul, would be quite offended, if I took it upon myself, to throw out their things, without their knowledge or consent...

It would be paradoxical, if Paul, hopes to gain influence, or favor, with my mother, by being close to me, and then finds himself, cast aside by her, when his behavior toward me, influences me, to get my own place, as then, his distance from me, might leave him, without value to her...

Casey is a little more discontent, with his situation. Casey says, it is wrong, for workers to live in poverty, while their employers, live in wealth. I agree. Wealthy people say, they worked for years, for what they have, but this is normally not so. The workers, of the business, produce the wealth, not the owners. The owners simply have, an advantageous position, and some, like the nouveau riche, those who enjoy wealth, due to political favor, perhaps lack

any business sense... I am now paid, about 20-percent, of what my boss charges, for my time. His, is the advantageous position. His income, is based on my ability, to do a good job... Casey's discontent, with his job situation, is making him, seem more willing to listen, to Asmodeus' political views...

Casey is beginning, to see the life of Christ Jesus, as more human, rather than, as some perfect, angelic being, as he had previously. Casey had felt Jesus, to be similar, to Christian fundamentalists of today, all perfection, and letter of the law.

I say, that Jesus was related, to the New Testament, rather than, to the Old Testament, and was a rebel, of his times. I think, fundamentalist Christians, give more priority, more value, to the Old Testament, than to the New Testament. I think, those who focus, entirely upon, the 'divinity' of Jesus, tend to ignore, the humanity of Jesus...

When Casey first heard about me, as Christos, he assumed, that I must be, a fundamentalist Christian, which is somewhat amusing, given that, when most fundamentalist Christians, hear of Christos, they tend to think, I must be an agent of the Devil... I like to hope, that actual knowledge of me, of my words and works, gives a more favorable, impression of me...

Casey's exposure to me, has at least gotten him, to think about, some of his preconceived notions. This tempers Casey's expectations, of me as Christos. Casey does not believe, in organized churches, believing instead, that each person is capable of direct communication, with God. Casey does agree, that people do have a right, to band together, to worship together. It can be difficult to form a group of people, who do not believe, in organized churches... That would be spiritual, rather than social...

Steve and I are closer than ever, spending most of our spare time together. I have not questioned, our relationship status. Our mutual understanding, officially remains, that we are just friends. Steve says, that I am 'special' to him, and that I am closer to him, than anyone, since his wife, and maybe even, more so, than his wife ever was. Steve says, that sometimes, he feels 'overwhelmed', by his emotions for me. Steve says, he finds himself thinking about me, when I

am not there. Steve says, that it was having distance from me, which made him even more aware, of how he feels about me.

Steve says, his relationship with me, is helping to heal the wounds, caused by his ex-wife. Steve says, that his ex-wife, Matilda, divorced him, and then married his best friend, took his home, and his children, and really wiped out his life. There are some serious wounds there.

In response, I told Steve, that he has my heart. I told Steve, that I believe, that he is, a 'soul-mate' for me, and that all I feel for him, is love. I told Steve, that I enjoy, spending time with him, even if we are doing, absolutely nothing. I just enjoy his company. Steve is nothing but rugged, handsome, masculine, mellow, and moderate, has both body and mind, a good sense of humor, is both strong and gentle, is a healthy love, is everything I might want, in a long-term companion...

I think, that both Steve and I, have some significant wounds, and thus, are both a bit sensitive, and respectful... I have yet to tell Steve, about my family, other than to say, my mother is in the area, but that she has never really been, loving toward me, and we are normally distant. I told Steve, that I am on good terms, at this time, with my mother. I have said nothing, about my 'family background'.

I do worry, about Steve becoming distant again, from me, if he feels 'serious'... Though we seem to share closeness, I seek to maintain that closeness, by not mentioning it, nor asking for an understanding, that we are lovers, though we seem to be lovers, and neither of us, is fooling around sexually, with anyone else. I only mention my feelings, in response, to Steve's mention of his.

I am enjoying, feeling 'happy' at times...

A Never-Ending Story...

SOMEONE TO BE WITH
AT THE END OF THE WORLD
May 17, 1986

Perhaps, the people living today are those who have chosen, to incarnate now, to witness the spectacle, of the destruction of civilization. How exciting for them...

I have decided to move from Paul's. My attention is now focused upon moving, and still maintaining, a friendship with Paul. While my telling Paul, that I wished to move, provoked a negative reaction, from Paul, with both venom, and actual tears, I can hope, that his behavior, will become friendlier, more beckoning, with distance between us, and I suspect, that I might think better of Paul, if I lacked so much negativity, from him, due to proximity, to him. I believe, that unless I move, my relationship with Paul, will become damaged beyond repair, and all I will feel, with distance from him, will be relief...

While I can speculate, with empathy, that perhaps Paul feels, some strain internally, due to being aware, that I am seeing someone else, I also am aware, that Paul is the first to deny, that there is any sort, of anything romantic, within him for me, and that he has declined, several inquiries from me, in the past, as to if he would wish, to seek to have, a mutual understanding, of some sort, about a union with me. Paul insists, that he feels toward me, as he would, towards a son. I told Paul, that his feeling toward me, like a son, reminded me, of that 'joke', vice is nice, but incest is best...

I told Paul, that I believe, his increase in venom, in negativity, stems from my affair with Steve. Paul says, this is not so. Paul says, his mood, is being adversely impacted, by Frank-B's demands, for repayment. Paul says, Frank-B is wealthy, does not need money, as he has millions of dollars, and that Frank-B knows, that Paul cannot afford to repay the loan, at this time. Paul stresses to me, how much he needs my rent, but he makes no compromises, and my rent income, has seemed to fail, to make a difference, in Paul's ability or willingness, to repay Frank-B.

I can hope, that Paul is able, to find someone, who is willing and able, to pay more rent, for that room, after I move. I hope whoever moves in, is prepared, for 'motel life',

or that Paul, might grant a stranger, more domain, more privacy, than he granted to me. I actually do feel, some concern, for Paul's well-being, but what I feel foremost, is that my living with Paul, is normally unpleasant, and I would improve, the quality of my life, if I lived elsewhere...

I told Paul, that I had made a goal, of three weeks, to gain the necessary funds, to afford deposits, required of me, to secure a place of my own. Business demand, at the print-shop, is slackening off, so I might actually, now have time, to look for a place, and time to move, though my income shall drop... John-S has raised our prices, in part to compensate, for the expense of having Trudy, as a manager, for she does not do, much actual work, and her salary, is equal to, or greater than, my base pay. I have wondeed if John-S' higher prices are also influencing for a reduction in our business.

Paul said, that I can have friends over, if I would agree to stay... Paul said, I should check in on him, each evening, when I come home from work, to make sure, he is still alive. Paul said, that I do not do enough, around 'our' 'home'. Truly though, it is not, 'my' 'home'... It could have been, a 'home' for me, but Paul seems, to have gone to absurd lengths, to keep me, from being comfortable here. I suppose, 'everything changed', when I arrived at the door, with Matthew, and Paul turned Matthew away, and insisted, that I could not have guests. I have always reserved, my option to move, and at that time, when I first moved in, did let Paul know, that I would eventually, seek a place of my own...

Asmodeus, Daniel, and Steve, have now visited. I must admit, that I was a bit insulted, when Paul asserted to them, that he had done everything, to make my newsletter successful, while I have done nothing... That really insulted me, as truth be, that Paul has done little, and truly, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, has always been, an expense to me, and is not 'successful', if one might define 'success', as something that provides one, the income, upon which to live in life...

I told Paul, that I remain appreciative, and grateful, for the things, he has done for me, in the past, but, at this time, I would prefer, that he do nothing, as he tends to exaggerate

everything. I told Paul, that the only way, to avoid his exaggerations, is to have him, do nothing. I told Paul, that I would be grateful, just to have, some pleasant company, with him. If Paul is not complaining, about me, or my world, then he is complaining, about something else... Paul seems, to have lacked, a good word, about anything, for some time now... This is a sad change...

At any rate, I told Paul, that we could give, living together, a fresh chance, and let bygones be bygones. I said, that I would seek to do more, around the house for him, and accept lack of domain, for a while longer. I gladly accepted, that I could now have guests, and said, that I hoped, I might now receive, phone messages...

The very next day, Steve was scheduled, to come over, so I left the kitchen light on, for him to see. Paul knew, as I had told him, that Steve was coming over. We don't have, an outside light, except the outside lights, of the apartment complex, which we do not control. I turned on, the kitchen light, as that is visible, from the outside.

Paul complained, that the kitchen light, was keeping him awake, and turned off the light. The kitchen is on the front left, of the apartment, and Paul's bedroom is all the way to the back, on the right.

I mentioned to Paul, that normally, he closes his bedroom door, when he goes to bed, so the kitchen light, would not be visible to him.

Paul said, that he didn't need, the expense, of lights on, while he was sleeping. Paul said, that I should avoid, having any phone calls, at night, because these awaken him. Paul normally turns off the phone, in his room, when he wishes, to avoid being disturbed. Paul then returned, to his bedroom, and closed the door.

So, I returned to that conclusion, that my seeing anyone, even 'just friends', disturbs Paul, and that I must move, to a place of my own, to regain respectful behavior, from Paul, and to enjoy, a life of my own.

Steve says, that he might be interested, in splitting a place with me. Steve has, a two-bedroom apartment, but keeps the second bedroom, for his children to use, on their weekend visitations. Steve said, that if we live together, then our relationship must become strictly platonic. I told

Steve, that at first thought, I think, I would rather be able, to visit him at his place, and have sex with him, even if elsewhere, than to live with him, at his place, and never have sex with him, anywhere, if those are my only two choices...

Steve said, he would want me to pay, at least $400 a month, or $100 a week. I have been paying, $80 a week, to Paul. My income could drop, to $120 to $150 a week, during the summer. I also later learned, from the management, of Steve's apartment complex, that Steve's rent, is $425 a month, plus electricity. I think my proposed share, of our living costs, is a 'bit high'... A thought occurred to me, that I could rent, a two-bedroom apartment, in Steve's complex, for a little more, than I would otherwise pay to Steve, and that I could then rent out, the extra room, at a 'fair price', to lower my living costs.

Steve said, that he might also consider, seeking to find a woman, to have a union with, as he said, that facing life, with a woman, is just, 'so much easier', and 'less complicated'... Steve says, he was totally faithful, to Matilda, when they were married, but said, that he disliked, the 'confinement', of the relationship, and that the situation, made him miserable.

Steve indicated, reminding me of Russ, that he might like, to have a public relationship, with a woman, while having a private affair, ongoing with me... Because of my emotional pain, at experiencing Russ with Laurie, which made me feel unimportant, to someone who was important to me, I told Steve, that I didn't think, I could enjoy that situation...

Steve said, that he would wish to be, 'the dominant partner', if we live together. Steve said, that he must maintain his authority, to his children. I would prefer, an equal partner, some discussion, but some say, one head is better than two, which can get me to chuckle, when one considers, that men have, two 'heads', sex and brain, and often, the 'little head', sex, seems to overwhelm, the big head, brain...

Steve said, there must be, absolutely no touching, between us, in the presence of his family, or friends. I pointed out to Steve, that he does, hug his friends, and

family, so that seems accepted, as ‘normal behavior’, and he said, that was different, as they don’t live with him.

I told Steve, that I could accept his position, of no touching in front of family and friends, and would seek to also maintain, my own image as ‘straight’, to protect his image, of being ‘straight’. I said, that I could respect Steve’s rules, but would want to know, all of them, before I decided to move in. I suggested, that Steve take some time, to put his rules in writing, so that we could seek to have, a clearly understood, mutual understanding. I asked Steve, to consider $80 a week from me, as that is, what I am now accustomed to paying. Steve said, he would have to think about that.

I told Steve, that I have made, a decision to move, as soon as I am able, and that it might be best, for me, to at least look for places, other than with him, though I think I would enjoy, living with him. I told Steve, that I very much enjoy, our relationship, as it is now, and I would wish to avoid, having our living together, harm our relationship. On another hand, I think, both Steve and I, would prefer to live, with someone in union... I think that is, what we might both really want, and, if we are unable to do that, with each other, then eventually, one or both of us, might wish to seek to find, someone else, with whom we could do that...

Paul at one time, in the past, expressed that Steve should not have any affairs with men, while raising children... For the record, I have never stayed overnight, when Steve’s children are there. I do visit. There are normally, other adults there, when I visit. My behavior, has been, ‘totally straight’. Steve mentions to his children, that he looks forward, to being a grandparent, which is a way, to encourage heterosexual development... Steve maintains, a totally straight image, to his children.

I lack, any sexual interest, in children. I have no difficulties, interacting with children. Steve never hits his children. Steve’s children are very well behaved. Steve’s children obey him. Steve is never unreasonable, toward his children. Steve is loving toward his children. Steve maintains, a disciplined routine, with his children. Steve makes sure, that his children eat properly, and regularly, and he has them spend, some time each day, reading. Steve

only lets his young children, view 'family friendly' programs, on television, or movies. Steve has outings, to the beach, or to a park, or to a movie, always to places, that his children might enjoy. To my knowledge, Steve is nothing but a loving, nurturing, good parent.

For the record, there are an estimated, two million children, in the US, at this time, who have at least one homosexual parent. There is, what is becoming, a 'prevailing view', that genetics alone, determines sexuality. I believe, nurture and genetics, both have influence, upon development, of individual human sexuality.

I do not believe, that Steve is actually ashamed, of his sexuality. I believe, that Steve is bisexual. I believe, that Steve is concerned, about the adverse impact, of the attitude of other people, toward sexuality, and in particular, how his ex-wife, Matilda, would seek to use, his actual sexuality, against him in court, if she could do so. I believe, the court system in the US, at this time, denies many rights, to homosexuals, that it grants, to 'normal' citizens.

I believe that, 'today', homosexuals, who choose to have children, are perhaps more likely, to actually be among parents, who had children, because they wished to have children, than heterosexuals, who often today, seem to have children, because they wanted to have sex, or to earn income...

I hope, that Steve eventually chooses, to recognize me, as his lover, rather than, 'just a friend', for as 'just a friend', our relationship, could be doomed, because we are, much more, than friends... To seek to behave, as if we are, 'just friends', could deny the reality, of our bond, and break our bond...

On other topics, my advertisement, for *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, is now running, in a small metaphysical publication. The ad says, "CHRISTOS LIVES!!! Find out what he's saying, before it's too late..." So far, no response...

I have added Grace, to my mailing list, for *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. I am sending my newsletter, to the address, which I had for her parents. Grace may still be, in Alaska...

= 32 =

TIS THEE MY LOVE
WHO MAKES ME STRONG
May 27, 1986

Love songs, are being played predominantly, on the radio these days, appropriate for this time in my life as Christos... I spend, whatever available time I can, with Steve. We exercise together, and go for long walks, on the beach, bringing me back, to the ocean shores. I have been working-out, twice weekly, for about two months, and am in good shape, once again. Some might consider me, to be very underweight, but my body is healthy, and in condition, once again. I can hope to gain some weight. Steve complimented me, for my 'boyish good looks'... I do look much younger, than I am. I told Steve, that it was he, who had put the sparkle, into my eyes, and given to me, a happy smile...

Steve and I, both face struggles, impossible struggles perhaps, me to seek to build, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, and gain publication, of the works of Christos, and he, to gain a fair deal, from a legal system, that discriminates against men, as he seeks parity, between custody and financial responsibility, for his kids. We both go on.

[140505 ~ My original journals, were 'sketchy' at best, and often had many omissions, due to my seeking, to protect Steve, and others, and perhaps myself, from the 'reality', of my life, that might be frowned upon. However, I have made a point, in 2014, to elaborate, to give details, to provide my readers, with awareness, of my situations. I had sought, originally, to keep out of my journal, anything that might cause, jeopardy to Steve.]

Paul began telling me, that I would give to him, a heart attack. Paul then decided, that Steve should not call, lest the ringing of the telephone, disturb him. Paul began, going to sleep, between 7:30pm and 8:00pm... Paul then began saying, that I should receive no phone calls, from anyone... Paul also then complained, that Steve should call first, before coming over...

Steve says, he can't understand, why I would want, anything to do with Paul, because, as far as Steve is concerned, there is nothing decent for me, with Paul.

I have said, that Paul has truly been, a real-world friend to me, in the past.

Steve said, Paul is certainly, no friend to me now. Steve said, it actually makes me look bad, for me to be associated, with Paul. Steve said, that if I live with him, that he would not want Paul, to call or visit. Right now, Paul lacks any idea, of Steve's phone number, or the location of Steve's residence, and Steve wants that, to remain the same...

I started leaving open, my bedroom curtain, with a light on, so Steve could just come by and knock on my window. My bedroom, is next to the parking lot, and has a window, to the outside. I would call, and leave a message with Steve, before leaving work. Steve and I, continue to enjoy massages, but I do seek to please him now, as he likes...

My work hours have fallen, so I now do get home, before Steve, as a norm. One week, I only worked 29 hours. John-S has kindly said, that he shall now seek, to find other work, for me to do, to give to me, 40 hours a week. At least I do work, during my time, at John-S', whereas Trudy does seem, often to do nothing, often to sit at the front counter, to monitor the telephone, and be there for walk-in traffic. Trudy sometimes passes time, by reading... I have joked, that Trudy is, 'Miss Manager', which, in English, is phonetically the same, as, 'mis-manager'. I suppose, that perhaps, John-S can take some comfort, that when Trudy is doing nothing, she is also then, doing nothing wrong...

Steve decided, that he should have, a paying roommate, and did agree, to my proposal, of $80 a week, or $320 a month. Steve said, that child support payments, take one-third, of his take-home pay, and life, is somewhat of a financial struggle, for him. Steve said, it would be my choice, whether to pay by the week, or by the month. For the record, there are 52 weeks in a year, rather than 48, so one does pay more, when paying by the week, than one pays, when paying by the month...

I told Steve, that if he wished, we could split the costs, of a three-bedroom apartment, in the same complex, where he could transfer his lease, without violating it. I told Steve, that then his kids, could have a room of their own, and I would split costs, fifty-fifty, fairly... Steve said, his gut reaction, was against this, as it would be, more expensive for him, than

splitting a two-bedroom, and he is seeking, to reduce his expenses.

Steve said, that Paul would accuse us, of planning to live together, all along, even though, truly, it is Paul's behavior, which is responsible, for my desire, to live elsewhere.

I told Steve, that I thought, I would like to live with him.

I did stay with Steve, for three, absolutely wonderful days, managing to have, both time with him, and time to myself. Both Steve and I, thought this 'test period', went very well... Steve did the cooking, and I cleaned up afterwards. Both Steve and I, sought to do the little things, to keep everything in order. I helped Steve, to do his laundry, at his apartment complex, and we worked-out together, at the little exercise room there. The apartment complex has a pool, and we enjoy swimming. Steve is a great swimmer.

I asked Steve, about his written rules, and he said, he had yet to focus on that... The whole issue though, became moot... Steve said, that his brother, Patrick, had wanted to live with him, for a couple of years, and he could say no to Patrick, when he lived alone, saying he wished to live alone. But, to be proper, diplomatic, Steve felt, he had to offer his extra bedroom, to his brother, before giving it to me. Patrick agreed, to rent Steve's extra room...

Steve feels, there are many things, he can do, to help his brother, for his brother, needs his guidance, as his brother has, little job skills, little schooling, and has a drinking problem.

I admire Steve, for giving priority, to his family, for I believe, that family must stick together, in the real rat race world. I feel, that I am disadvantaged, because of lack of family, or because, actually, of family that has been harmful to me. I simply feel, people who have family, that help one another, do better in life than people who are singles, without family.

Steve asked me, for a loan, and I granted this. This loan to Steve, takes from me, some funds I need to move...

I intervened with weather, this Memorial Day weekend, for Steve. I plan to remain, officially silent, this hurricane season, without offering, my protection pledge, to media... I figured this might help, to keep attention, away from Steve,

and his children... I can do what I can with weather, when needed, without publicity...

Once, long-long ago, I asked God, for one final romantic love, before having to go public, as Christos. I would agree, that my love affair, with Steve, fulfills that request. However, I seem unable, at this time, to end this series, saying, and they lived together, happily ever after... That might have to wait...

I sent a copy, of the Christos-Asmodeus, candid conversation, to Jim in Massachusetts... I worked with Jim, in Key West, at the lumberyard.

The US Library of Congress, declined to grant me, a copyright, for *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, saying that material, was already covered, in books I have already copyrighted. I wanted to copyright, *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, as a new creation, and I had polished, and touched up, somewhat changed, the original material...

Oh well, that's how it goes...

= 32 =

A HELLO
AND A GOOD-BYE
June 2, 1986

I suppose Asmodeus aggravated me, by telling me, that rock singer, Jerry Garcia, of The Grateful Dead, is closer to being Jesus than I'll ever be, because Jerry gave away, without charge, mind-altering 'party chemicals', LSD, at music concerts, to create a consciousness for peace. Perhaps I was aggravated, in part, because I do value, Asmodeus' opinions.

I am uncertain, if having a good time is the same, as working for peace, in our world. Jerry does not say, he is Jesus, nor does he necessarily, think in terms, other than making money, through making music. I have yet to hear, of Jerry, supporting any causes in life, and it is, usually very well known, when any celebrity, lends his name, or money, to any cause...

I told Asmodeus, that thinking that Jerry, is akin to Jesus, because he allegedly, gave away, recreational hallucinogenic drugs, is akin to thinking, that the value of Jesus, was that he gave away, food and free healing, or in his death and resurrection, while ignoring his life example, and his teachings, while ignoring his words and works... Sometimes I wonder, if Jesus attracted crowds, not because of anything spiritual, but simply because, people wanted food or healing...

And for the record, I have never found, free recreational party material, at anyone's concerts, even Jerry's. Any recreational party material, that might have been available, always seemed to require, some payment, and I might suspect, that Jerry might have shared, in that profit...

At any rate, I did leave Asmodeus' home, in a bit of a huff, saying I would see him again, next year, which is now, six months away.

My mood is slightly off, because I am considering, dropping *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. If I move, to a place of my own, by myself, then I might really, actually, be unable, to afford the cost, of producing my newsletter, which does include, many magazine subscriptions. My available finances would become stretched, to their limit, just to meet,

my living expenses.

Steve's brother, Patrick, has moved in with Steve, and Steve says, he shall soon begin, dating women, which I feel, Steve is doing, to show Patrick, that Steve is heterosexual. I suppose, a heterosexual image, does help, one's job security. Steve said, he doesn't want, his dating women, to impact our relationship, and affirms, that he still wants, to see me.

I would still wish, to see Steve, but I suspect, that I would feel, as good about Steve's dating women, as Paul feels, about my seeing Steve. It is, a mixed-up situation.

Only once, since Patrick moved in, has Steve said, that he loves me, and he has spent, a bit of time recently, telling me, that he is a loner, who wishes, no close relationships, with anyone. Yet, for all of Steve's independent talk, I note, that he still confides, his inner mind, and heart, to me, that he does, lean on me...

Grace sent to me, a letter from Alaska. Grace says, she will be moving, to Oregon soon. Grace says, she is single, and her letter, was very pleasant. Perhaps Grace hopes, that she and I can renew our old relationship. Grace told me once, that she could only be my lover, and could never be, a platonic friend. I am growing to feel that way, about Steve. It is Steve, with whom I want, a special relationship, now.

If I do, as Steve advises, and make an effort, to now meet new people, just to date 'casually' of course, then for sure, one of these other people, might make demands, on my time, and that could make, maintaining the status quo, with Steve, impossible... Steve would say, that that was, 'whatever happens, happens', but I would say, he had caused the drift, by failing to maintain, the relationship. At times, I wonder why, Steve's wife, turned to his best friend, for comfort, in the first place...

I am somewhat cautiously open, to renewing a relationship, with Grace, if Steve does not want me, as a partner. Even though Steve says, he may start to see women, which I believe, is to maintain his 'straight' image, he has been extra nice to me, inviting me to dinner, and even buying, a bottle of liquor, to share with me. I believe, Steve is really torn, within his own mind.

So, things are tough right now, with Paul being crabby,

all the time at home, with Trudy proudly announcing, that John-S, has given to her, a pay-raise, so she definitely earns per hour, more money than I, as is perhaps proper, for a manager, to earn more, than other employees, and with boss John-S, being critical, and also promising, a guaranteed 40-hour work week, but not producing it, and with Steve, being extra nice, but also asserting, his 'independence'...

I am just going to close my eyes, and hope for a better day!

= 32 =

THE POWER OF LOVE...
ONE MAN'S JOY CAN BE ANOTHER MAN'S PAIN...
June 4, 1986

I am truly torn. Steve has continued, to visit me, but he has stopped, having sex with me. I miss our closeness very badly, or perhaps simply view, its absence, as an ominous change, indicating our relationship, is losing its value. The gym, at Steve's apartment complex, is closed for repairs, so we are not getting together, to work-out. Steve's concern, for his straight image, in his brother's eyes, means Steve's apartment, is no longer a place, where we can have sex, or even sleep together. I very much have enjoyed, just sleeping with Steve, these past three months.

Paul is saying, that he understands, that this must be, a difficult time for me, and he does not like to see me, feeling hurt... I resent Paul's, sudden 'concern', and sympathy, feel that he is just, politically focusing, on a strain, between Steve and I, to emphasize, the existence of a strain, to me, focusing on a sore spot, with an intent, to cause aggravation... Perhaps, I am just overly sensitive.

Steve's emotions, seem to swing back and forth, like a pendulum, and I really never know, what to expect from him, either tenderness, of a hug, or a kiss, an affirmation of affection, or if he will be, seeking to have, no physical contact, and be affirming, our 'friendship'... I roll with it, welcoming the tenderness, and affection, when it is there, and respecting the distance, that Steve affirms, when he does so... I never force my affection, upon Steve.

Sometimes, it seems to me, that in my life, my own character, is the only thing, that has remained stable... And I don't mean 'character', as Christos, like a fictional character in some book, but rather, my tendency to remain level-headed, to remain a good, and decent person, and to continue to embrace, and support, the causes that I find to be commendable... People seem to change around me, even though I have remained the same...

On Sunday, Steve called me, at the print-shop, where I was working, on *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, at 8:00pm, to say that he'd like to see me, around 11:00pm, and would meet me, at my home. So, I rush through the typesetting,

and paste-up, of my newsletter, and actually make it back home, before 11:00pm, but then see, or hear, nothing from Steve... When I call Steve, to find out if he has left yet, Patrick tells me, that Steve is now asleep, so our evening is cancelled, without warning, and without even telling me.

While I was glad, to rush through my work, in order to see Steve, I would most certainly, have preferred, to work leisurely, and perhaps thus more carefully, upon *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, if we were not going to meet.

Monday night, Steve appears at my residence, without any prior warning. I welcome Steve, as always, and he says, no more sex, not even a hug. Steve seems to say, no more sex ever, when perhaps he means, no sex this night, because the next time, I see him, he could just as easily, be telling me, how much he's missed sex, and wants to enjoy, being physical with me, forever, which again, could only mean, right then.

I am just exasperated. I also should mention, that both behaviors, the missing of a scheduled appointment, without warning, and without even letting me know, standing me up, so to speak, leaving me waiting, without his having any intention, of actually meeting me, and then the appearance, at my home, without invitation, or prior planning, or without any advance warning, are both unusual, and both Steve and I, have maintained, how much we appreciate, that the other, is dependable and respectful, and we both, have either held to our established plans, or let the other know, if something changes... It's not definitely, not my side of our board, which has changed...

Steve calls me, at work on Tuesday, and says, he wants to see me, Tuesday night, and so we plan, to meet at my place, to have a 'serious talk'. Steve does come over this time. I tell Steve, that if he wishes, to stop seeing me totally, that I would be sad, but would go along with that, that I would avoid, causing him any problems, in his life. I said, I want a mutual romantic love, and I thought I had this, with Steve. If Steve wants to be, 'just friends', fine. I could try that too. I said, what is actually causing me some annoyance, and some pain too, is his vacillation.

Steve says, it is tough for him to adjust, to my not being there, at his place, to sleep with, now that brother Patrick, is

there, and that is part of the reason, he said that he does not want, to have sex with me... Steve said, the sex with me, makes the lack of sex with me, more difficult, makes him more frustrated, with his situation, so, agreeing to not have sex, might help to make our distance, easier for Steve...

I said, that it might be easier, for Steve and us, if Steve were to tell Patrick, about us. I advised Steve, not to do this, if he had any concern, that Patrick might be tempted, to use this information, against him, either due to distaste, or if in anger.

Steve said, that he wanted to fool around. We fooled around. I think, that we spent more time, being physical, than talking...

Paul says,that he is having problems, with Frank-B, who is demanding repayment, or least partial payments, something. Paul is in a tough position, as Frank-B is his sole employer. The strain, between Paul and Frank-B, has caused Paul, to be nicer to me.

Doing *WORLD PRESS WATCH* eats my valuable time, on weekends, time which I could be sharing, with Steve. I think, perhaps Steve, silently resents, the time I spend, on *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. Steve sees, that I get nothing, for doing *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, which makes me look, like a foolish, wasteful person. Steve might also might wonder, what kind of wimp I might be, if I put up with, all of Paul's venom, without responding to it, or wonder, if there might be, some big secret, that compels me, to remain at Paul's, in an unpleasant environment... And yet, it is because I have lent money to Steve, that I am unable to move, from Paul's, at this time. All this is speculation, and Steve has not said, anything like any of these things, to me.

Life sure can be frustrating. I still have, my primary bases covered, with a fairly secure, place to live, and work, which are the basics in life...

I am thankful, for the wonderful affair, I have had with Steve. I hope that Steve is willing to adapt, to meet the change, from his now living with Patrick. I hope, that Steve allows us, to put our lives together, at some point in the future.

If I were to move in with Steve, at some point in the future, it would cause Paul, some anguish, but certainly, no

more aguish, than he has caused me. If Paul had been honest with me, we might have had a chance. Perhaps Paul has not even been honest, with himself.

I do care for Paul, which is a reason, why I put up with the bad times, with his venom. God knows, that Paul has stood by me, when I was down. Paul has been guiding, giving, and helpful in real-world ways.

The compromises, between Steve and I, seem to be, mostly on my side, of our board, in that I adapt to his changes, as he changes. I would prefer, a more stable relationship...

With Paul, he has been willing, to make some compromises, though he then often violates, whatever agreement, he had made...

All is not necessarily 'perfect', between Steve and I, but our relationship is young, and I am happy and content, just being with Steve. When Steve is not around, I wish he was around. I miss Steve, when he is absent. I think of Steve. I feel involuntary love for Steve. I think Steve, is, 'the one'...

Steve's wounds are caused, he says, by his divorce from Matilda. Steve says he came home one day, to find his wife in bed having sex with his best friend, and that was why he divorced her. Steve accepted the loss of the home he had built, and even large child support payments, but has been denied visitation by his wife, and had to go through a lengthy process, where his ex-wife was eventually jailed, before he gained visitation. Any time Steve had a complaint, he would have to wait weeks, moths, to be heard in court, while anytime Matilda had a complaint, her complaint was quickly heard in court. Steve adapted to this, by filing counter-motions when his wife filed a court motion, so that his side could then be heard more quickly.

Steve says, his wounds are so deep, that he is not capable, of giving to another human being again. This would be sadder for him, than it is for me, and it is sad for me. And yet, Steve has been giving, to my knowledge, both to me, and to his children. I think Steve's vacillations, with me, indicate his own inner turmoil, his actual fondness, or love, for me, versus his desire, to never be hurt again, and to never be close, to anyone, who could hurt him... But I speculate... I have to respect, to treat as truth, what Steve

says to me, and what he says, seems to change, a pendulum...

I like to believe, that my own stability, can help Steve, to become more stable... I like to believe, that I can end the pendulum, within Steve, by having a stable, and happy history, between Steve and I, develop through time. However, what I find, is that Steve's pendulum, is beginning to influence me, to have my own, emotional pendulum, between my being happy, when Steve is loving and with me, and being glum, when Steve has assumed distance, or returned to saying, that a lack of physical affection, is best between us.

The actual condition, to me, seems to be, that Steve, has actual affection, romantic heart love, for me, and that sometimes, he might wish to deny it, but it is there, and it is as involuntary, for him, as it is, for me. I like to believe, involuntary romantic love, is a good thing...

There is also a growing fear, within me, that Steve, is going to drop me, that his pendulum will swing, wider and wider, to where he seeks to have a woman, as a public dating partner, and that he will then wish, to only have casual sex, without emotions, with men.

Thinking that Steve, is going to actually drop me, does influence me, to wish to avoid, losing Paul's friendship... I have a fear, that I could lose, both Paul and Steve...

One thing, that Paul has given to me, that I do value, is stability. My life, has been beset with sudden loss... Jobs suddenly have ended. I have faced becoming homeless. I have been homeless... I have lacked money. I have faced adversity, and harmful aggression, from government, and family. Through all of this, Paul has stood by me. I could lose Steve. I could lose my job. But, if I keep Paul, then at least, I would have a home...

What I seem to value most is romantic mutual love, and I think I have found this, with Steve, and I do not wish, to lose this, or to give it up. If Steve steps away from me, I could perhaps, grow to accept that. I would at least, make no effort, to bang on his door, so to speak.

One might say, that I much preferred, where I was at, four weeks ago, to where I am at now...

= 32 =

LOOSE ENDS
June 5, 1986

The weather has been overcast and rainy, for the past five days solid, ever since my departure, in 'annoyance', from Asmodeus' home. I have spoken with Asmodeus, on the telephone, but have declined his invitations, to visit him. I would like Asmodeus, to apologize, for saying that someone, who seems nothing like Jesus, in my view, is more like Jesus, than I.

One suggestion from Asmodeus, that I like, is that, since kids, are having kids, then our school system, should teach parenting, to kids, so they have some awareness, of what is proper nurture, before they have children. Many 'sex education' programs, seem to only teach abstinence, for parenting and sex education, and this can be unhelpful, when kids are having sex, and having children, anyway...

Humorously, perhaps humorously, for extra money, Steve took some pictures of me, nude, which I sent to *PlayGirl*, a men-for-women magazine. I can hope, this might lead, to some extra income. Also, perhaps humorously, it seems, that men-for-men magazines, want pictures of nude males, with erections, while men-for-women magazines, want only nudes, with a soft penis... I am uncertain, of the logic involved, but that is how it is, at this time.

Sadly, Steve's apartment complex, no longer has, any one-bedroom vacancies, so I can't move there. And, with Steve being distant, again, I am not sure, I want to move, for the real-world finances, are better for me, at Paul's. Paul is having some strains, with Frank-B, and is pleasant toward me, once again. Perhaps Steve, is weighing things out, with the thought, that I am choosing, to remain at Paul's...

I told Steve, that I would be willing, to drop *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, if doing so, might make things easier, between us. Steve said, it would be unfair, and unloving, for any lover, to ask me to do something like that... I could be amused, at Steve use, of 'any lover', when he himself, refrains from describing us, as 'lovers'...

I told Steve, that I ask myself, if something is good, for a union, or harmful, to a union. I told Steve, that *WORLD*

PRESS WATCH, seems to gain me, some government 'concern', while I face public apathy, and lack of income, and that it is an expense, consumes my time and money, without giving anything back to me.

I also have a concern, that if I were to live with Steve, then those who 'observe' me, might then focus upon him, and he does work, for a defense contractor, though only as a computer technician, so not in a position, of any real security concern... Steve so totally believes, in the ideals of our constitution, that he believes, that my 'fears', about activities, related to me, due to *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, are purely, and simply, 'paranoid delusions', coincidences, bad mail service, but nothing deliberate, against me, due to *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, by those within our government.

I suppose part of me might prefer, that Steve refrain from thinking that I have 'paranoid delusions', and in return, I might refrain, from thinking he simply does not want any 'blame', for my dropping *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, though he might prefer, that I did so.

There will be, at least two more issues, of *WORLD PRESS WATCH*... I am going to produce, this coming week's issue, regardless of response, or lack of response, and at least one more thereafter, to announce the end. As long as I get, one subscriber, or one renewal, each week, I will continue to produce, the newsletter, but the week that I get nothing, is the last week, that I produce *WORLD PRESS WATCH*.

I asked the newspapers, that are using *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, to send to me a letter, saying they found it useful, so that I could use their letter, to seek to gain, other subscribing publications, to *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, as a weekly feature. I got no response, to my request. I can't fairly judge response, because of all the problems, which I have had, with mail delivery, in the past.

I have mused, that if the people, seem uncaring, about having a free press, then that could encourage, those who want to control media, to end, a free, and independent press, as it might indicate, to those, that there would be, a lack of any penalty, from the people, for their doing so... Mute sheep, don't even say, baa-baa-baa... And what does it matter, if there are a few more bad words, from people

who seem to only complain all the time anyway?

Another tidbit, I want to mention, is that children of the elite, might face, total discrimination against them, from any outside of the elite, should they wish, to seek to use their intelligence, to earn an income. It seems, that 'normal people', are distrusting, of both wealth, and intelligence... This could indicate, that children of our elite, must seek to remain, within our system, for otherwise, they might be penalized, for any 'independence', by both the elite, and those outside of the elite.

Lastly, the potential, for a direct super-power military clash, seems to be growing. Right now, if the Soviets, have troops in a nation, then the US supports, native 'resistance', while, when the US has troops, in a nation, then the Soviets support, native 'resistance'... Thus far, the US and SU have avoided, having their troops, come into direct military conflict. This situation, is akin, to how 1984, could slide into Armageddon... The chance for direct clash, seems now heightened...

The war-mongers, of both sides, support each other, as they 'dance' together. I have suggested, within Pundits, that moderates, in each side, must support one another, to gain a peace. I have been told, in response, that there are no moderates, in the SU... I disagree...

I believe, that Stalinist abuse, the change within the Soviet system, to give priority, to heavy industry, and military needs, is depriving the Soviet people, of more social benefit, from their 'system', and that ultimately, this shall weaken the support, for the Soviet system, by the Soviet people.

At the same time, while the US, seems to deny, that social support, of its people, is a role of its government, it does have, our government, give much financial support, to a private elite, with industries, that support, the war machine. Technically, this means, that the resources, of the US, which is a government, of the people, by the people, and for the people, which could be used, to enhance the wellness, of the people, is being spent, instead, on war-related things... We have built, a private elite, whose existence, is based, on war, and that is, for now, a path of 1984...

Each nation might have to choose, between spending,

on guns or butter, and right now, both the SU, and the US, are giving their resources, to guns...

For both sides, to give priority, to the well-being of their peoples, both sides, must have moderates, who work to reduce, military tensions, so that each system, can then be able, to devote more resources, to the social needs, of their peoples... If both the US, and the SU, were to become 'communist' nations, they could, still have to reconcile, their rival nationalisms...

It can be hoped, that peace through strength, that a military parity, that discourages military solutions, can help to promote, social wellness... If the US, were to seek, to unilaterally disarm, to withdraw, then the Soviets, might sense the possibility, of a military victory, and seek to then have, an actual military victory. I therefore, do not support, the efforts within the US, to declare 'peace', and then ignore, the potential or actual, military dangers. I do not support, the current movement, by 'pro-peace' activists, within the US, for 'unilateral disarmament'.

I do support, the idea of US leaders, who seek to reach, an understanding, to live in peace, in our world, among diversity...

LOOSE ENDS
June 11, 1986

Steve has not contacted me, in several days. Steve has also, not answered his telephone. With brother Patrick, staying with him, Steve does not want to act, like he and I might be close, lest his brother, get suspicious. Sometimes Steve's distance makes me wonder, how real is the closeness, when it is there... Is the closeness, something that only I feel, or is it something, that Steve feels too? I know, that Steve gives lip service, to feelings for me, but, sometimes, actions speak louder than words...

I guess, that it is when people, feel something might now be wrong, that they then look, at the dark possibilities, of past things, at the things which they might have previously, deliberately, ignored, viewed as passing wispy shadows, without real substance... It is when things aren't going well, that one is more likely to believe, negative things...

[140608 ~ Of course, an answer can be, to seek to view things, without emotion, to see clearly, even if weighing in, the value of emotion... That is perhaps, best done on paper, by writing down, one's impressions, one's assessments, and then looking at everything, at once, to see at least more, of the total picture, than memory alone, normally provides...]

For my part, I do not wish, to call Steve too often, when he refrains from having contact, with me, lest my doing so, appear 'suspicious', to his audience... To call someone, who might seem to be, avoiding you, can raise that question, "Why is that guy bothering you?" That can force an answer, which can influence someone, to live according to how that is answered, so, sometimes, it can be best, to avoid raising that question...

If Steve, truly does not want, closeness with people, then why has he expressed, love and closeness, to me? I think, an answer could be, that Steve, does not want closeness, due to his past hurts, and that he genuinely feels, closeness to me, and, because Steve feels closeness to me, he has become more distant, and probably will stay distant, until his feelings fade, or until I start to look for someone else, and then he will resume, contact with me, either to prevent me, from seeking someone else, or until his closeness to me,

then rekindles his inner affection, for me, at which time, he'll go back, to being distant, until that feeling fades...

One might think, that if Steve, really and truly, wished to avoid, feeling for others, and if he does feel for me, then he would simply, break things off with me, and remain distant...

For me, feeling involuntary romantic love, is rare, cannot be contrived, is either there, or is absent, and I very much value this feeling, as a bond, that can sustain a union, regardless of everything else, through thick and thin. It is because I feel, this involuntary romantic love, for Steve, that I wish to maintain, this relationship, with him. Otherwise, it simply wouldn't matter, and I could enjoy him, when he's around, without feeling any sense of loss, during his absence. As is, Steve's absence, does give to me, some pain of separation...

Steve had seemed, to take a step, in getting closer to me, explaining to me, his past history, in a 'serious talk', that he wished to have with me, to explain to me, 'how things are'...

I can see, how Steve's vacillation, his coldness, might have pushed his ex-wife, Matilda, toward his best friend, for someone to talk to, and then Matilda developed, a strong relationship, with this best friend, and divorced Steve, and married the other guy, perhaps, in part, to seek emotional stability, in union...

Steve faults Matilda, for violating her own belief, in monogamy and closed relationships. Steve said, he always wanted, to have a mutual understanding, to allow him, to have casual, fun, recreational sex, with other people, but Matilda had said no, to that understanding, and they had a monogamous understanding, which he says, he always faithfully honored... I had the same thing happen to me, with Grace... It is at best, 'annoying', when it is the person, who insists on monogamy, who then is the one, to have outside sex...

This was apparently, a bitter divorce, and Steve felt doubly betrayed, by both his wife, and his best friend, and then lost the home, which he had built with his bare hands, and his children, as for a while, Matilda refrained, from allowing him, any visitation with his children, despite court orders, and visitation schedule. Steve felt, that the system,

at best, was ‘slow to respond’, to him, while always responding quickly, to anything, that Matilda might allege.

Steve attributes his fear, of being close, of a long-term relationship, with anyone, to his past experience, with Matilda...

Steve has said, that he never wanted to be married, always wanted to be ‘free’, and have affairs, with many people, throughout life.

[140506 ~ I think, some young males, think having erections, is a life-time thing, where it can be, a phase of life... Humans are biological animals... Sex, is one aspect, of life. It can be of practical, long-term value, to have a partner in life...]

What happened, was that Matilda, became pregnant, with his first-born, a son, so Steve did, what he thought was right, and proper, and married her. Steve’s children, matter to him, more than anything else, and he feels a sense of ownership, over them...

Steve says, he has thought about leaving the area, becoming out of Matilda’s reach, and starting a new family, and seeking to totally forget, about the children, and Matilda... Steve thinks, it would be wrong, for him to abandon his children, and he has refrained, from doing so. I think it is very commendable, a mark of good character, that Steve, has remained in his children’s lives, despite adversity, and fulfilled his obligations, to his children, with love and guidance.

To seek to nurture, some peace of mind, within Steve, I have told him, that he has had a victory, in that his children, are now old enough, to understand, who he is, that he is their father, and to consciously have, affection for him, an attachment, a bond with him, as their father. If Matilda had succeeded, in separating Steve, from his children, when they were very young, they might lack, any affection, or bond, with him. I told Steve, that regardless of what happens, as long as, he and they live, then his children will always love him, as their father, and nobody else, can replace that.

I have also tried, to tell Steve, that he can never possess, or totally control, his children, and that his distance from them, has influenced for him, to seek to be, a friend to

them, to be a gentle guide, and that this too, could perhaps, be for the best.

I think that Steve, has been, and is, a fine father, and his good characteristics, help to nurture, my love for him.

Steve said, that after his divorce, from Matilda, he then resumed, seeing men, and that to some degree, he did deliberately avoid, dating women, because he worried, that another relationship, might develop, which could leave him, in legal jeopardy, and that women, seem to quickly want, to view any relationship, that has lasted, more than a week, as 'serious', while men can have sex, just for fun, without putting claims, upon one another, so Steve resumed, 'dating' men. Steve said, that he has always been bisexual.

[140608 ~ Women often, seem to want, something in return, for sex with men, be that a dinner, a gift, cash, or some claim of union, some right to demand, certain nonsexual behavior. Men often, can trade, sex for sex, as equal fun, and be content with that. I have 'joked', that women, who want something, other than enjoyment of sex, in return for sex, might be making heterosexuality, seem 'unnatural'...]

Steve told me, that before he met me, he had been having an affair, with a painter, named Larry. The relationship, with Larry, was 'over', before Steve met me...

After Larry and Steve, had been together, for three months, then Larry had demanded, an understanding, that they were lovers, and had to have, a set of mutual understandings. Steve broke off the relationship, at that point. Steve said, he broke off the relationship, because he did not want, a close relationship, with anyone.

I told Steve, that close relationships, develop naturally, when people have been close, intimately, monogamously, for several months. That's just the way things are. If one is behaving, as if one is close to someone, then close feelings, might sometimes be, reasonably and-or wrongly, assumed. I prefer mutual understandings, to any assumptions...

I told Steve, that if he does not want, a close intimate relationship, then he must avoid behaving, as if he is having, a close intimate relationship. I told Steve, that he must see many people, at the same time, and not the same person, too often. That way, Steve protects himself, and the other

people. I said that otherwise, there can develop, some bad feelings, some hostility, and perhaps some bad karma. I said, this is just how things are. To want the benefits, of a close relationship, while denying the existence, of a close relationship, can be, a form of theft...

Larry was emotionally crushed, despondent, due to the abruptness, of the break-up, with Steve. I tell myself, that Larry, was not, what Steve was looking for, while maybe I am. I am willing to invest the time, to find out, because Steve is someone, I would wish to be close to.

Steve crossed paths, with Larry again, seven months, after their 'break-up'. Steve told Larry, that Steve wouldn't mind, having sex again, just for fun, and Larry, gladly went along with that. After they had sex, Steve told Larry, good-bye again, that he did not wish, to see Larry again, and would not be calling. Steve said, that Larry cried, and Steve was sorry, to see Larry hurt again, his wounds, from the breakup with Steve, opened again. Steve maintained, that he himself, had done no wrong, because he had informed Larry, always, of his honest positions...

I told Steve, that I do feel, real sincere, involuntary love, for him, and that I feel, that I lack choice in this. I told Steve, that my choice, is simply, whether to allow myself, to enjoy this feeling, or to seek distance, if this feeling, causes pain to me. I said, that at a point of pain, I would welcome distance, from the source of pain, especially if that source of pain, was failing to give me, enough pleasure, to make that pain bearable. I told Steve, that I would prefer to be without pain, in my life.

In my case, I do not think, that Steve could honestly say, that he had led me to believe, that he did not want, closeness with me. Although Steve has said, in general terms, that he does not want, to have a close relationship with anyone, he has repeatedly told me, he has strong affection for me, and that I am someone, he enjoys being close to. While Steve, might have felt a lack of pain, from Larry, because he felt little emotion, for Larry, and enjoyed their time together, as a sex buddy, as a good time, I do not think, that Steve, only feels, physical lust for me. I can see, the emotions in Steve's face, and in his behavior, in his tenderness, and in his enjoyably shared time with me,

without sex with me.

However, I do admit, that the see-saw, is undesirable to me, and that I do hope, that Steve will give, a union with me, a fair chance. However, without a mutual understanding, of union, then I do not believe, that either myself, or Steve, has to behave, as if we have a union. I understand, that Steve and I, are friends... While having sex with someone, could enhance a friendship, or could be a relationship, that is, 'more than friendship', a friendship also can survive, without sex... I do not think, that Steve and I, are actually, 'just friends', because both of us, have involuntary, romantic affection...

After Steve missed his date with me, this past weekend, then the next day, I called his place, and spoke with Patrick. I made arrangements, to go to Steve's, with Patrick there, so that I could retrieve my typewriter, the gift from my half-sister, and mother, an expensive machine... This typewriter has been nothing, but a very expensive nuisance. Steve said, he thought he could fix it, and I had agreed, to pay him, for doing so. If Steve was staying out of touch with me, then I thought, I should retrieve my property, from him.

Steve was at home, when I got there. Patrick had said, that Steve was not around. Steve's car, had a dead battery... I helped Steve, by driving him around, to look for jumper cables, and also providing cash, as collateral, at a gas station, so he could borrow, a pair of jumper cables. It was no big deal, as to me, that's what friends should do, for each other. After all, of the running around was done, I got my typewriter. I have not heard from Steve since. Even if I lose Steve, I do not lose my machine... The typewriter had been at Steve's, since before Patrick moved in, and apparently, Steve had lacked time, to look at it...

Compounding my emotions, at once again, having Steve drop me, was Paul's joy that Steve and I, seem to have broken up. My mood was a little off, and so Paul and I, got into an argument. I found myself, defending Steve, against Paul's venomous insults, and allegations, and I really didn't wish, to be in that position either.

With Paul saying, I was better off, without Steve, I told Paul, that I felt, he simply wished, for me to be with him, without love in my life, and that I felt, that I would be better

off, with a romantic union, in my life, and to have one, I felt I would have to live, anywhere else, but with Paul.

Paul said, that he would kill himself, if I moved out. I told Paul, that he would leave me, with a serious mental wound, if he did kill himself, after I do move out. I told Paul, that I could hope, we might remain friends, if we didn't live together, as it seemed most difficult, for us to be friends, when we do live together.

I spoke with Daniel. Daniel told me, that I am solely to blame, for this mess, with both Paul and Steve. Daniel said that by living with Paul, I make Steve, feel insecure, and that by seeing Steve, I must be causing Paul, some emotional pain.

What am I to do??? This just evolved, and I really do not now, have the money, to move, and I won't, until either Steve repays me, or until after business picks up, next autumn... I face three, or four, more months, of lean income, at work, during the 'off-season'...

Paul was also angry with me, because he went through my garbage, and found the rough draft, for an earlier chapter, of this journal, in which I described, an argument with him. Paul said, that I had put the discarded material, where he would find it, because I wanted him, to be hurt, by what I had written. I told Paul, that if I put something in the trash, it was not because I wanted to hurt him... I told Paul, that at least my notes were accurate. Paul said, the material, made him look bad... I told Paul, that he made himself look bad, and that he could make himself look better, by improving his behavior...

Then, that evening, Steve visited me, late, around 10:00pm, without calling first, saying he wanted to fool around, said he had found, that his distance from me, made him want to be with me, showed to him, that he really does care for me, and that my behavior, had showed him, that I really do care for him, that it isn't 'just sex', and that he felt, I had remained 'level-headed', without any emotional disturbance, or angry words or behavior toward him, and this had reassured him also, and made me seem, more attractive to him.

I enjoyed my time with Steve, and he left, perhaps soon after midnight... At 2:00am, I was awakened, by a knocking

at the front door. This turned out, to be someone, who flashed some sort of badge, at me, and demanded to know, who had been visiting earlier. This gentleman seemed a bit assertive, and strong, in his tone of voice. One might say, that he was less than respectful, or polite. I asked, why was this information desired? I was told, that this gentleman, was a security guard, and had right to know, about everything that happened, in this development. I said, I would have to see such a request, in writing, and I closed the door, in this gentleman's face. He did bang on the door again, and again, for a while, and I refrained, from answering that door again. Apparently, Paul slept, through the whole thing. I could wonder, if Steve might think this incident, was a 'paranoid delusion'.

I did tell Steve about it, over the telephone, the next day, and he said, that if that security guard, were to ever question him, then he would punch his lights out... Steve did say, that I should, under no circumstances, provide any information about him, to anyone, lest that cause him, some problems, with either his job, which he might lose simply if thought to be homosexual, or with Matilda...

And that, was the last contact, that I have had with Steve, who then resumed, not speaking with me, nor has he visited... I have never visited Steve, without calling first, or at least, being expected to arrive, at a certain time...

Daniel now gets to listen, to me vent... Daniel tells me, to have faith, in Steve's true affection for me. Daniel says, that if Steve is a user, a conqueror, then Steve will go his own way, after he has had me enough, and that would be Steve's loss, for he would be living, a hollow existence. Daniel says a conqueror, normally waits, to abandon someone, until when that person, seems 'hooked', and that, as long as I maintain myself, then Steve, if he is a conqueror, might continue to see me... Great. I am unable, to totally dismiss, Daniel's 'speculation'...

Daniel said that normally, a conqueror would have dropped me, to seek to find someone, who displays greater emotional turmoil, a lack of self-control. Daniel thus believes, that Steve is sincere...

I did find it amusing, that when a security guard, inquires of me, about Steve, then Steve's gets angry, and views it

with great offense, saying that he would punch the guy's lights out, but, when I am detained, for over an hour, by police, Steve dismisses it, as unimportant, just one of those things, nothing to be worried about...

Daniel said, that that he believes, that Steve does love me, and is having problems, with himself, because of this, not only, because of his desire, to not have close relationships, but also, because he is feeling, romantic love, for another male. Perhaps it has been, all 'fun and games', for attractive, handsome, desirable Steve, to have great sex, with men, through the years, but now, suddenly, he finds himself, to be the one, 'caught' by emotion...

I can be thankful, for the good times, I have enjoyed with Steve. I thank God, that I have been privileged, to experience, such a mutual romantic love, in life... So often, romance seems kindled, only in one heart. To have such an involuntary happenstance, occur in two hearts, and be mutual, is rare and precious, at least in my view... To me, a two-sided, mutual, romantic love, is 'true love'...

On another topic, my mother has built, a mini-storage facility, in downtown West Palm Beach, where her houses on Fern Street, used to be. My mother now says, she thinks, it would be best for me, to wait at least two more years, before I have, a typesetting shop, of my own. I do not know, if this would be best for me, but it might be best, for my mother, now that she has spent this money...

I think I have figured out, why people advertise, that 'only experienced need to apply'. I think, that this particular advertisement, reflects, that an employer, is unable, to train a worker, for that position, that the employer, lacks knowledge, and has driven away, all competent skilled employees... Employers simply have the money, to buy the equipment, and then charge more, for their workers' services, than they pay the workers, and that is the source, of their profit... And, if who is allowed to operate a business, is determined, by licenses and permits, then those who are actually competent, and skilled, can be prohibited, from operating a business, while those who lack competence, and skill, can be granted, the 'right', to operate a business. I would not call this, 'capitalism'...

COMMUNICATE TO SEEK TO SOLVE PROBLEMS
June 12, 1986

I went to meet Daniel, at our watering hole, Roosters, and there I ran into Gumble, my lawyer friend. Gumble said, that he wished to meet with me, to discuss my case, regarding the Stop Sign Incident. Part of me, certainly wishes, to put this behind me, and part of me, wishes to proceed, especially after, that early morning knock, at the door of my residence. I told Gumble, that I would give to him, a written remembrance of events, and had no cash to invest, in his services. If Gumble feels, that this case, has some 'merit', then I could split with him, 50-50, what he can get, and, if that is disinteresting to him, then I can assume, there are probably, lack of grounds, to evidence such a case, and thus, little chance of winning.

Meeting with Gumble, was accidental. I went to meet Daniel, because my situation, with Steve, was disturbing me, and was causing me some heartache, was gripping my focus. Daniel said, that it seems, that I need to resolve, my status with Steve, that on-again off-again isn't working for me, and that I should communicate that, to Steve. I told Daniel, that something, can be better than nothing, and for now, I would wish to avoid, influencing Steve, to totally drop me.

I told Paul, that I plan to try and move, this coming August. I told Paul, that he should rent out my room, for higher rent, which would help him, to be able to repay, Frank-B's loan. I told Paul, that we could be better friends, if we did not live together. Paul said, that he wanted me, to give him, six months' notice, prior to moving... I told Paul, that I would start seeking to find a place, in August, while rents might be low, before they get raised, for the business season.

[140608 ~ South Florida enjoys, an influx of population, during winter months, when those, who are 'well-to-do', those who perhaps, are among the elites, of other areas, leave those areas, to avoid the cold, of those areas, and to enjoy the warmth, of south Florida, during winter. This allows the elite, from many places, to socialize together, in one place. Sharks from all over our world, also come to

south Florida, during the winter, to mate, in the warm ocean waters...]

[140608 ~ This influx of population, to south Florida, between Thanksgiving or Christmas, and Easter-Passover, results in an increase, in business activity, and so this time-period, is called, 'the season', or the business season, while other time-periods, are called, 'the off season'.]

I called Steve, at his workplace, and asked him, to come and talk with me. Steve agreed. I figured, if Steve did not come over, then things were probably finished, or without strength of bond, between us. However, Steve did come over, and we had a long talk.

Steve told me, that he had gotten a soldering gun, to use to repair my typewriter, but, since I had retrieved that machine in anger, now he would never work on it.

Steve said, that there is a married lady, that he is interested in seeing. Steve said, that he thinks the lady is wrong, to fool around, when she is married, but, since he is single, then he is free, to fool around with her.

I think, if that lady has an understanding, with her husband, that outside recreational sex is okay, then it is okay, for she and Steve, to fool around. Otherwise, then both Steve and that lady are wrong, to knowingly do this. Karma is what it is... Karma responds, to intent and effect...

I hope, that if there is anything more, to that lady's marriage, than sex, that then she tries, to avoid losing it... On another hand, I suspect, that Steve's interest is to cause damage, to that marriage, rather than, to seek to enjoy sex. If Steve does enjoy, sex with that lady, that then might be incidental. Do I want, a close relationship, with someone, who can justify, spending time, just to seek to be hurtful?

When I told Steve, that I had met Daniel, for a drink, Steve said, he might like to get together with Daniel, to fool around. And what is the motivation for that, I wonder...

Steve said, that he couldn't fool around with me, that night. Steve said, that he does want, to continue fooling around with me... I always accept, Steve's position on sex, having it when he wishes, and not having it, when he doesn't. I can enjoy, being with Steve, without sex, and I can find, 'recreational sex', most anywhere, as I do seem, to be attractive, to many people. I think one, of the many

things, which makes Steve's relationship, of value to me, is precisely, that I enjoy being with him, without sex.

I know, that there have been many people, who have sought to badger me, into having sex, when I didn't really want it, and that influenced me, to become distant, from those people. It is easy for me, to have the opportunity, to be an object of desire, and tough for me, to find, and then connect with, an object of my desire, so to speak. My pleasure is so-so, sometimes good, when I am an object of desire. My preference is, to have an object of my desire, rather than to be, an object of someone else's desire. This is mostly related, to oral sex, as my butt, is 'off-limits'.

I personally have found, those who wished, to penetrate me, seemed to have, either animal lust, or even hate, or anger, as their emotional base, as if they wished, to cause pain, or feel dominance, or, at best, were only interested in their own pleasure, and I lack any pleasure, either physically or emotionally, from those situations. There just seemed to be, an absence of emotional love, or even affection, in those, who casually, recreationally, promiscuously, enjoy anal sex. Long ago, I decided to only indulge in that activity, to please a partner, in a monogamous relationship. I wanted to 'save myself' for 'true love'.

I think those, who participate casually, in anal sex, are behaving in 'unsafe activity', as far as risks of disease. Those, who are overly promiscuous, risk greater exposure, to diseases... I suppose, the logic can be different, for those who do enjoy, that form of physical pleasure.

My body seems to prefer, being stimulated by hand, rather than orally. People are people as individuals, and that is how, my shell operates...

Steve can be, an object of my desire, and I seem to be, an object for his desire, and that is nice, and to me, 'the ideal'...

You know, I'm glad, that Steve is still interested in me, and I still hope, that one day, he will be content with me. I am being selfish, in that I enjoy, being with Steve, so I am willing to overlook things, that I do consider, to be warning signs, things I personally find distasteful, just so that I can indulge, in the pleasure I feel, when I am with him. Being with Steve, helps me to forget, other problems in my life,

makes them seem unimportant...

Other than Steve's breaking a date without warning, and his desire to sometimes become distant, I have no complaints with Steve. Steve has been honest with me. Steve has told me, that he wants no close relationships, so I cannot fault him, for not wanting, to be close to me. I seek to enjoy, 'what is mine', which is some time, now and then, with Steve. I just hope, that I do not feel too hurt, for too long, if Steve, were to ever stop, being friends.

= 32 =

DEATH OF A NEWSLETTER
June 15, 1986

I received promises, of future paid advertisements, in *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, and more requests in the mail, for free samples, but no new subscribers, nor renewals, so I have decided, to at least suspend publication, of *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. I think the 'final straw', was the 2:00am knock at my door. I can risk my own well-being, but when my friends might get threatened, then perhaps it is time to stop, especially since there seems to be, a lack of any positive return to me from it.It would certainly be sad, if that knock was a 'Paul ploy', to get me to drop Steve, that instead resulted, in influencing me to stop *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, but I disbelieve that.

I feel I face, government 'concern', which is expressed, in ways that actively seek, to harm me, and public apathy, an uncaring, about world or national events, or about opposition to a free press, even an uncaring about constitutional rights, as if the infringement of those rights, upon one individual, will fail to lead, to an infringement, of constitutional rights, upon other individuals, forgetting that it can be better, to fight for someone else's rights, than for one's own, as one could more likely be, able to continue the fight, after someone else loses, than if one loses, in the same way, that it can be better, to locate a war-zone, in someone else's nation, rather than in one's own, and overlooking the tendency, of 'precedents', to become, 'standards', and, at best, I have experienced, mostly parasitic admiration, from those who are glad to accept, my newsletter for free, without engaging in fair trade.

I can tell myself, that I have done, what I could, and that I have done, a good thing, helping to maintain, and improve, the condition of our world...

My father used to say, there is a time to fish, to be patient for hours, and a time to cut bait, to give up, to acknowledge, that there is nothing there, so that one can then do, something else, even if fishing elsewhere...

I can hope, that those, who have felt a need, to mess with my mail service, phone service, and bank accounts, and perhaps even, to run me off the road, and produce two

witnesses, to a crime that never occurred, or might knock at my door, during early morning hours, might now eventually, back away from me, come to view me, as harmless, and let me go on, with my life...

I suppose also, in the front, of the back of my mind, is an idea, that while I could risk, my own well-being, that I do not wish to risk, the well-being of my friends, and right now, Steve could have some jeopardy, as he is employed, by a defense contractor, which is to say, by a corporation, that has military contracts, with our government...

I am not saying, that *WORLD PRESS WATCH* is gone. I could resume it. But, for now, it is, 'suspended'.

Now that I have weekends free, Steve has suggested, that we start working-out together, at a regular body-building gym. Steve has become friendly again, though he has refrained, from having sex with me.

I laughed to myself, that Steve, could have been trying, to make me feel jealous, by telling me, about that married lady. Steve said, that she has called him, twice recently, but, if he was not answering his telephone, the times I called, then why should I believe, that she was able, to reach him, so easily...

Daniel said, that people, who make a point, to loudly proclaim, that they do not want love, are those, who really do want love. Daniel says, that it seems obvious to him, that Steve is madly, out of control, in love with me, that Daniel can't believe, that I don't see it too.

Steve told me, that his kids have priority, and that he could never, put anyone else, before his children, so it would not be fair, for him to be close, to someone else, since he can't give priority, to that person. This is an explanation, which aligns with my belief, that Steve is a fine human being, one who basically acts, from good motivations, and good instincts.

I told Steve, that I would expect him, to give priority to his children, but he shouldn't make himself unhappy, in the process. I told Steve, that he could seek a partner, who respects his relationship, with his children. I think, two people working together, to meet expenses, are in a better financial situation, than one. Even if Steve, does have a higher income, than I, a partner's second income, would help him, to

have more money, to comfortably spend, on the kids. It is true, that Patrick is supplying Steve, with another source of income, so Steve, must see the logic, of what I say.

Steve's wounds, from his former wife, are not healing, because she keeps dragging him, back into court. This keeps Steve's mood off, and is an explanation to me, of why he gets distant at times. I understand, that with Matilda, hoping to find ways, to be harmful to Steve, and with Paul being venomous, it could be easier for Steve, to be distant from me, than to be close to me.

Daniel says, that I should stop worrying, about having time, to spend with Steve, and says, that I should look for someone else. Daniel says, the more I look for other people, the warmer Steve will become. However, Daniel's recipe, could be a sure way, to ensure that Steve and I, do break-up, for I think Steve, needs the assurance, of loyalty and love, from me.

I told Steve, that our world is full of couples, both heterosexual and homosexual. These couples, devote their energies, to each other, and treat all others, as outsiders. I told Steve, that singles, are at a disadvantage, because of being outsiders, so should seek partners, to have their own couple. Sometimes, couples are more willing, to interact with other couples, than with singles...

I am actually considering, Daniel's advice, to go out and meet new people, but for different reasons. I do enjoy, having sex with Steve, but I also enjoy, his company without sex. I have accepted, lack of sex with Steve, and, to be fair to me, could seek others, for safe recreational sex. I am not asking Steve, to change, his 'no sex' position. I have told Steve, to let me know, when he changes his mind, and I have dropped sex, as a topic.

Paul says, that I should be glad, that Steve has stopped, leading me on, after three months, saying, that if Steve had waited a year, then I could have really been hurt. Paul says, that Steve does not deeply love me, like Paul does, and that all Steve really wanted, was sex...

I went to the beach, alone, the other day. I baked myself in the sun, and faulted myself, for causing distress, to both Steve and Paul... I am partially responsible, for this situation, in that I should have moved, from Paul's, before

seeking a partner... I mused though, that in Steve's reality, of 'whatever happens, happens', that whatever happened, was that I just happened to share paths with him, and we both felt involuntary romantic love. I could have avoided, continuing this 'affair', except that it is just so rare, for me to have these wonderful, involuntary feelings, that I value so much, that I believe, one must seek, to make the most, of this opportunity, when one can... So many people, seem to go through life, without feeling, involuntary romantic love, even once...

I remember once, during a talk, with Frank-B, when he wished to do harm to someone, I suggested, that the most damaging thing, one could do to someone, would be to get that person, to feel romantic love... I was thinking, of the pain of separation, I felt, when Russ departed... I was joking, but, perhaps, there is actually some truth, in what I said...

I faulted myself, for remaining at Paul's, after I met Steve, which is what caused, some distress, to both Paul and Steve. However, I really felt, financially unable, to depart... However, since I know these people, are going to continue to behave, in the ways they have been behaving, then I really perhaps can't complain, as I am without surprise. It is up to me, to accept people as they are, and seek to make, my own adaptations...

While at the beach, I expanded my perception, to a big picture, overall view, and went to Olympus, and beyond. Olympus can be, a nice place to relax, and I might spend some time there, in my 'after-life'...

I'll speak more of this later, but I linked the minds, of US President Reagan, and SU Chairman Gorbachev. I told them both, among other things, that I, Christos, live as human, now.

MENDING BRIDGES
June 19, 1986

You can mend a bridge, as long as you haven't burnt it...

[140608 ~ I suppose, even a burnt bridge, can be re-built...]

Things are back to normal, with Steve. Steve has come by, each night this week, without harassment, from the alleged security guard, and has even started, fooling around with me, again.

[190510 ~ For the record, there was never seen, a security guard, at that development, before or after that incident.]

Steve did tell me, that he is in danger, of being held in contempt of court, for late child support payments, to Matilda. I offered to lend to Steve, $400, to meet his immediate need, and he accepted.

Out of the blue, Paul said, that I should get a girlfriend, insinuating that my involvement, with Steve, is the only thing, keeping me from doing so. I replied to Paul, that if I wanted to find a vulture, I'd go to the beach, and play dead. I was only half-joking...

My father made alimony payments, to four ex-wives, after divorce settlements, which significantly drained him, of a significant portion, of his funds, each time, and then, only stayed married to my mother, by influencing her, to refrain from divorcing him, by giving to her, a weekly cash allowance... I sincerely believe, that knowing my father's experience, influenced me, to want to avoid, a legal marriage, to a female.

Perhaps, if my mother and father, had set an example, of a happy heterosexual couple, that would have helped me, to want that sort of thing, for myself. However, my father and mother lived, in mostly a combat situation, with constant arguments, much venom, and the only time, they seemed united at all, was when they were both attacking me.

Steve and I, again discussed, the 'seriousness', of our 'relationship'. Steve still does not want, us to have, a formal understanding, that we are lovers.

I told Steve, that even without, a formal understanding, that it should be, more than obvious, to both of us, that we

are lovers, for we have added intimate sex, to our relationship...

Steve then expressed, that one reason, he feels inclined, to date women, is to have sex, where he gets to have penetration, rather than, to be penetrated.

I told Steve, that I have 'experimented', in my past, and found that I lack pleasure, from such activity, and would only consider it, if in a mutually understood, safe, monogamous union. I told Steve, that even penetrating him is something that I do, for his pleasure, rather than for mine.

I said, that an understanding, that we are lovers, could allow us, some security to build upon, to grow further together, instead of being stuck, on that point.

Steve said, that lack of security, keeps us both, on good behavior, for we don't take each other, for granted, while allowing each of us, the freedom to see other people, without giving the other cause, for offense, without violating any understanding...

I told Steve, that I really don't want, to see other people, that I am very happy with him, but perhaps, I should take note, that he does wish, to see other people.

Steve said, that he doesn't particularly want, to see other people, because of being unhappy with me, but rather, because he wishes to avoid, having a serious relationship, and being able to see other people, gives him the choice, to see me, rather than feeling, that he can only see me, or must see me.

Expressing contrasting views, Steve and I discussed an incident, at a secluded beach, where many gays congregate. A beautiful young man, around 23, propositioned Steve and I, at that beach, wished to have recreational sex, with both of us, in the privacy of the woods, a pleasure that Steve and I, sometimes indulge with each other, as we might actually have, more privacy there, than at either of our residences. I think Steve, actually enjoys, 'outdoor activity', whereas, I am actually, more 'comfortable', in a bedroom setting...

I told Steve, that if we had an understanding, that we are lovers, then I would not have minded, fooling around with that guy, but without that understanding, when Steve might wish to fool around, with others, makes me feel, that my

relationship with Steve, might lack great value, at least to him.

Steve said, that without an understanding, then he would not have been angry with me, for fooling around with another person, because it would not have violated, any understanding with him, whereas, if lovers, then monogamous, in Steve's view, so no fooling around with other people, like that guy at the beach, even if with both of us...

I later wondered about that, as Steve had said, that being monogamous, with Matilda, was something that she wanted, and now he was saying, that being monogamous, would be something he would want, if he were to agree, to a mutual understanding, of being lovers with me... I thought this talk, was perhaps 'progress' of some sort, because now, instead of talking, about how he didn't want, a close relationship, with anyone, Steve was now talking about, how he would want, a 'union' with me to be...

Steve has gotten me, to regularly attend, a regular gym, to work-out with him. My body is at least at par now, in condition, and I can now begin, to seek to build up. It is good, to have a work-out partner, as that helps one to maintain, the discipline necessary, to keep doing it, which is necessary, to build.

Trudy is changing, my work schedule. Trudy is doing this, without business cause, and without consulting me, so I guess, she is exercising her 'authority', as my manager, to make sure, that I conform to her authority. I am going along with it, as that is what I am supposed to do. I always behave, toward John-S and Trudy, in a friendly, civil manner, but I am not content, with this business relationship, and at times, I do wonder, if John-S and Trudy have more than a business relationship... I lack any sure knowledge, of such a terrible allegation, but one might think, in strictly a business relationship context, that John-S, would be a bit dissatisfied, with Trudy, and he seems to be without vocal complaint, and he has certainly seemed willing, to vocally complain to others in our shop, about business-related things, loudly, angrily, nastily, and sometimes abundantly...

Lawyer Gumble, says he would not take, a case against the police, on contingency... This is a change from his

previous position, which was that he would take my case on contingency. I know that I am unable to financially afford to pay Gumble his normal 'reasonable lawyer's fees'. Gumble says, that as long as, there was any hit and run, anywhere, that the police, could justify their actions. Gumble says, even if the suspect vehicle was actually a big commercial truck, or a school bus, that police could, justify in court, stopping my little white car, as an honest mistake, without any malicious intent. Also, Gumble says, I was not physically hit, or hurt, or arrested, so I have no grounds, for legal complaint. This is fine by me, as I have gone on. It is Gumble, who has bounced around that topic, while the situation, and I, have remained the same.

The late-night knock, at my door, did get me, to at least consider, listening to Gumble, if he would take such a case, on contingency. That incident got me to mention the possible continuing harassment to Gumble, and then he affirmed he would wish to be paid to handle anything for me. However, I have dropped *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, and hope that alone brings some peace, to my world.

Lastly, I did talk with Asmodeus, about why I have not visited him. I told Asmodeus, that I took great offense, at his saying, that rock singer, was more like Jesus, than I could ever be. I told Asmodeus, that he could have apologized, for having caused offense, to a friend, even if he stood by his words. Asmodeus offered no apology, and said, that I deserved the insult, because I had asked, what the rock singer, ever did for humanity. I thought that was a fair question... And, for what it's worth, my question came after Asmodeus' assertion, rather than before the 'insult'. Asmodeus has yet to provide, any valid answer, to that particular question... I cannot agree, with Asmodeus' logic, and so I keep my distance. I do not need, Asmodeus' approval, to be who I am...

A VISION AND A TEMPEST
June 22, 1986

I had an interesting vision, on my last trip, to the beach. This vision I induced chemically, and called upon, the Olympian realm. I felt myself transported, to a larger universe, one that could observe the mass of humanity, as one being. I could see, how each human being is just one piece, of this larger entity, and I longed to leave, the confines, of crowded humanity, for the vastness of space, beyond our planet. I suppose, that traveling through our universe, could be something I might enjoy, during part of an after-life...

Once again, the Olympians said, they would welcome me, once I am through with this life-time. I was told, that putting down my newsletter, was a sacrifice, and that by putting it down, I had opened myself, to greater opportunity. I said that I preferred, enjoying love, to the struggle, of seeking a public path, as Christos.

I was told, that once I am finished, with Book Five, then I could be free, of the path of Christos, if I wish to be. The logic was that, these five books, leave enough record, to anchor Christos, into humanity's historical fabric, and that others, can build upon, that which I have already done.

I think, I should also leave, a separate book, which is topic-oriented, one that might simply be, a book of my teachings, of my thought.

I psychically connected, with the mental beings, of US President Reagan, and SU Chairman Gorbachev, and told them, that they must seek, an arms control agreement, for the alternative, is eventually, a destructive war, which the peoples, of both sides, could lose. I said that either, one is seeking to win a war, or one is seeking to build a better world, in peace. I said that right now, seeking to win a war seemed to lead to mutual destruction.

I do not compel, nor seek to compel, and am uncertain, if I could compel. I simply communicate. I let the two speak to each other, as I provided, a connection for that to occur. In fact, I kept them connected, like putting them into the same room, without allowing exit...

I was told, that Reagan and Gorbachev are talking in

real life, even though, our media says, there is a widening gap, and lack of current communication, between them.

I said, if no arms agreement, is reached by the end of January, then the warm war, between the super-powers, could heat up, once again. I said, that as long as the two are talking, then the threat of actual war could be tempered, minimized, reduced.

I was told, by the Olympians, there would be, a great natural disaster, in the US this summer, and this would be done, to give emphasis, to that which I say.

I pointed out, that no one, seems to be listening to me, and that, although I may think, I project, to the mass of humanity, no one seems, to be receiving, my thoughts.

I was given a picture, of the Olympians, returning in public, to humanity, of their having concealed themselves, since the at least attempted murder, of Jesus. I was shown a moving picture, a little movie, of the sky being rolled away, and humanity's small place, being seen. Humanity, is in a fish-bowl...

I wondered, if one reason, for my connection, to the Olympians, and my behavior as Christos, with Gorbachev and Reagan, was because, of a sense of futility, in my relationship with Steve, that romantic love is fading, and this means, a time to focus upon, seeking a public path for Christos, might be approaching... I am uncertain, if I am being impatient with Steve, or too patient... To me, romantic love, should be, as simple as, if mutual, then seek to build on it, especially when both parties, are 'singles', end of story...

I then returned, to my singular spot, as human Jualt, and the vision quest was over. I told Daniel, Dana, Asmodeus, and Steve, of my interaction, with Gorbachev and Reagan.

The tempest I spoke of, was between, Paul and Steve. When Steve came over to visit, Paul demanded to know, where Steve lives, and also Steve's work phone number.

Steve told Paul, that Paul had no business, knowing these things.

Paul said, that Steve enjoys the hospitality, of Paul's home, so must give, the desired information.

Steve said, that he receives no hospitality, from Paul, only from me, and that it is not his intent, to be around Paul,

but that it has only occurred, because he has been around me.

Paul told Steve, not to come over anymore, to visit me.

Steve replied, that Paul was being unnecessarily spiteful, and offensive.

Paul told Steve, that Steve was low-class, and no gentleman.

Steve told Paul, that Paul didn't even know the meaning, of the world 'gentleman', then excused himself, and asked me to leave with him.

Paul called me, a son of a bitch, and told me, to move out right away, or he'd throw my things out.

I left right then, with Steve, and stayed at his place, for the weekend. Steve and I went to the gym, and worked-out, and then to the beach. We watched movies, and I slept with Steve, in his bed, behind closed doors. Steve and I even fooled around. Patrick could not say, that he saw or heard, anything 'suspicious'... Steve said, that people can only speculate, what goes on, behind closed doors, and any 'dirtiness', is in their minds, and at any rate, speculation, could not be used, in court... I was impressed, with Steve's 'boldness'.

Steve has no space, for me to live with him now, other than a sofa. Steve is in no position, to be financially helpful to me, though he says, that he will begin, repaying my loan, soon. I am not in a good financial position, now having about $300, in the bank. Steve did not offer to me, a place to stay.

I returned to face Paul, on Sunday night. I really had, no place else to go, and I have paid rent, for my space there... I hoped, that perhaps Chuck, might rent to me, his efficiency, but did not think, Chuck could be counted upon, for anything.

I did consider, that my time with Steve, has been time, I could have spent, seeking to find, a place to live, or someone who wants me, to live with him... I mused, about 'a curse of beauty', which I seem to have, is that people, are physically attracted to me, and then want to possess me, except, of course, for the one I wish to be with... Such a 'curse of beauty', can keep one, from having real friends, as one gets swamped, with people, who are only attracted, to

one's shell...

Paul and I, did have a confrontation... Paul told me, that if I planned, to continue seeing Steve, after how rude, Steve had been to him, then I should pack my things, and leave right then. It is sort of amusing, that Paul demands, that I give him six months' notice, before I move, while he feels no qualms, about ordering me, to leave immediately.

I declined to leave. I told Paul, that it was impossible, for me to leave, right then. I told Paul, that I lacked the money to move into another place, and had no choice, but to stay with him, until I was able to move. Even though Paul is over 70 years of age, he raised his hand, to strike me, so I forcefully pushed him, away from me.

I may be handicapped, with a severed collarbone, but I have been working-out, and believe, that I am stronger than Paul. I suppose, there are 'equalizers', that Paul might use, but right then, he was going to hit my face, with his hand, and I stopped that, by pushing his shoulders.

After I pushed Paul, away from me, he calmed down a bit, seeing that he could not forcefully have his way with me. Steve is convinced that Paul is unraveling mentally, with age, due to senility, while I think, Paul is conniving, and cunning.

I told Paul, that I would be willing, to stay on indefinitely, if he would leave, Steve and I, in peace. I offered to pay Paul, more money, if he would just be civil, to Steve. I resolved, that Paul and Steve should not come into contact. Paul accepted, the extra rent money, and said, he would try, to be polite, to Steve.

Quite clearly, Steve has told me, that he likes me, for company and sex, but nothing serious. I find that to be frivolous, shallow, as I see my relationship, with Steve, eroding the good friendship, I have enjoyed, with Paul. However, I do love Steve, and I enjoy, having romantic love again, in my otherwise dreary life. I accept, that Steve has wounds, which cause him to take his positions, and I have not given up hope, for better.

BASICS
June 29, 1986

Basics in life include love, a secure home, and a secure job. I seem to have challenges, with all three. Some might view love, as a luxury, rather than, as a 'basic', and some might even, frown upon love, as a sickness, or weakness. For me then, love is a desired basic of life, a way to nourish spirit, to help one remain kind, decent, good karmically overall...

I think, the challenges and issues, that I face, are probably common, for many people, in my time. I think relationship issues, or union issues, can be the same, regardless of the genders involved.

For my own peace of mind, I am accepting, that my mother will not help me, with a type-setting shop. My mother says, that I should seek a career, but her actions, seem to deny, her support of her words... Although my mother's investment, in helping me, to establish a business, could produce, some profit to her, she seems to rather favor, instead, avoiding being helpful to me, in real-world ways, when doing so, could be fairly financially easy for her. I believe, my mother's actions, reflect her intent, more so than her words...

My mother says, that I must have, a very inflated ego, a large sense of self-importance, in her jargon, to believe that God might choose me, to be Christos. Given years and years, of 'visions' from God, I would accept, that God did indeed ask me, to pursue a public path, as Christos. As to why me, I lack any certainty, for an answer. So, I believe, my mother's premise, her logic, is incorrect. I do not believe, that God chose me, to be Christos, because I have, an overly inflated, sense of self-importance. I believe, my mother, was simply seeking to be, demeaning or insulting. I believe, my mother's assertion, fails to connect, with the 'reality', of my experience.

I think, that for many years, decades, I sought to decline, God's 'request', and that my sense of self-importance, my sense of value, to my own life, perhaps influenced me, to decline God's request, which I viewed, as harmful, to my well-being, rather than influenced for me, to accept this path. I believe, that my acceptance of this path was based on two factors.

The first, was that, I perhaps hoped, to do what God asked, and then be free, to live my own life, thinking perhaps, that only by accepting, God's requests, could I then have, a lack of further requests.

The second, sincerely, was that I did believe, that if my simple acceptance, of God's request, could help to avert Armageddon, and my declining God's request, could then result, in Armageddon, then I did sincerely hope, that my simple acceptance, of God's request, would then help humanity, rather than help me.

So, ultimately, I believe, that my acceptance, of God's request, and God's 'choosing me', to be Christos, had nothing to do, with my having, an overly inflated, sense of self-importance.

Part of me believes, that a reason, that God, might have picked me, per se, was because, I am basically, a good person, one who seeks to live, in ways that are, karmically positive overall.

I believe, that my 'great abilities', might have come to me, in part, because I did not want them. I think, that those who 'want power', usually want power over others, usually to abuse or enslave them. That I did not want power, meant I did not want power over others, and this could mean, that I would likely be, 'beneficent', with power, and thus, I was a proper choice, to be, 'given' 'power'... I am speculating...

I also suspect, that perhaps, genetics has a factor, in all of this.

A bottom line, then, is that I do not know, why God might have, 'selected me'. Perhaps this was indeed, done in my 'creation', the genetic mix, before my birth. There is something called, 'the hand of God', which is a theoretical mix, of things that cannot be combined, by any known means, not even by accident, and only a 'higher power', could make such a combination... Perhaps I was made by 'the hand of God'?

I have come to believe, that it is being public as Christos, which helps to anchor Christos, into humanity's historical fabric. A process of 'myth-building', or more properly said, of making a legend, could take 'a while'. My job was, or is, to start that process...

I have wondered, if perhaps, I might have become, some

sort of terrible human being, without God's intervention, in my life, due to the horror, of my environment, as a child, what some might call, a 'monster-making' environment... This could make, a 'double difference', in time-lines, first, by removing, a potential or actual source, of great negativity, and second, by adding, a potential or actual source, of great positivity...

I believe, to be logical, my mother's question, could have been phrased, that I might have had to have, a large ego, an overly inflated sense of self-importance, to accept such a path. I think, the answer still remains 'no'. I lack any desire, to have 'power over others', to have a 'group', or 'followers'... I think this disappoints my mother, and I suspect, that her only interest, in any path, I might pursue as Christos, would be to seek to portray herself, as important, simply because she is my mother. If I have no group, of my own, then that somewhat leaves my mother, out of the picture, and this, she might frown upon.

I suppose my mother, has discouraged me, from any success in life, which might bring attention, upon her awful behavior, to me as a child, while, on another hand, her only interest, in my success, would be, to bask in it, as my mother. It would be my mother, who might have, an overly inflated, sense of self-importance, if the only way, she wishes to be viewed, is as my mother, rather than, due to her own behavior, in life.

I have experienced, people in my life, who might seem, to wish to take all the credit, for anything, they might perceive me, as having accomplished, even if they actually did nothing, to help with those accomplishments... I can be glad, that I have had helpful people, in my life...

It was my mother, who brought up both topics. I think, I might have preferred, if she had said anything else, other than that I should have a career, at the same time that she is avoiding helping me, to have a career, by declining to help me, to have a type-setting shop... Her statement lacks logical sense to me. Maybe my mother only intended to seek to cause me to feel annoyed? I guess, my mother declines to view, my having a business of my own, as having a career...

One might even consider, that if my mother, thought I should have a career, then she would not have participated, in

the embezzlement of trust funds, that were supposed to be dedicated, to funding my college education, which could have allowed me, to have a career...

I avoided, responding in anger, and simply replied, to my mother, that I did not think, that I have, an overly inflated, sense of self-importance, and that perhaps, she might inquire of God, as to why me. Sometimes the terms, the jargon, that people use, when they speak, reflect the ways, that they think... In that context, it could be my mother, to whom an overly inflated, sense of self-importance, might be relevant, rather than to me.

I mused, that the great kindness, and material benefits, beneficence, that my mother has enjoyed in life, have failed to influence her, to become a kind or giving person. On another hand, the many challenges, and adversities, unwarranted aggression against me, that I have faced in life, have failed to influence me, to become an unkind person, one who seeks to live in ways, that are karmically negative overall. Some might attribute this, in both cases, to genetics, prevailing over nurture...

I also have, in the past, wondered, if experiencing negatives, of heterosexual life, the penalties of divorce, might influence some men, to seek to live, a homosexual life-style, and most heterosexual men, that I speak to, who feel penalized or robbed by divorce, say they remain heterosexual, but are less inclined, to engage in 'legal marriage'...

On another hand, it should be noted, that most homosexual men, at this time, as a norm, face great penalties too, perhaps even more so, than heterosexual men. Homosexuals face discrimination, in housing, jobs, and the legal arena, and can even be targets of police, and most certainly, romantic love between homosexuals, can be very challenged, by outside circumstances, and yet, many do seem, to seek to continue, a homosexual life-style, even if concealed, by a heterosexual facade...

Some might attribute this, in both homosexual and heterosexual cases, to genetics, prevailing over nurture.

Perhaps genetics is like a body, another type of shell, that one wears, a machine, that one lives within, and it operates, as it does, and one can seek to adapt. I do continue to believe, that nature, genetics, and nurture, experiences of life,

both help to influence, one's development.

I did ask my mother, for a loan, to help me, to secure a place of my own, saying that I do have, a stable job, and that I should be able, to repay her. My mother said, that at this time, she lacks extra funds, which she could lend to me. My mother said, that she knows, how much Paul counts on me, and the income from me, and that it would be best for me, to remain at Paul's.

I did tell my mother, that it is Paul, who, at this time, is asking for me to move, and I feel that doing so would be for the best, for both Paul and me.

My mother said, that that might seem true to me, right now, but to give it some time...

I think, that my mother's focus, upon my 'need', to have a 'career', and upon my path as Christos, was an attempt to distract me, from my request for a loan, to help me financially afford, to move from Paul's...

Steve came through, and said, that if Paul does put me out, then I can stay with him. I can afford, to put my things into storage, and at least have, a temporary place to stay, while I try to find, a place of my own. Daniel has, a lack of space for me...

I do sadly note, that when I left Paul's, with Steve, and went to Steve's, when Paul was saying, that I had to move, that Steve did not offer, any shelter to me, except for that weekend. It was only, after Paul agreed, to let me stay, and pay to him, a higher amount for rent, that Steve then made, his offer of shelter...

I have 'joked', that Paul used to ask me, before I lived with him, if I had eaten dinner. If I replied, that I had eaten dinner, Paul would say, oh, I was going to invite you over for dinner. If I replied, that I had yet to eat dinner, Paul would say, oh, what are you going to eat. I viewed Steve's offer, of shelter to me, after the fact, that Paul had said I could stay, in much the same way, that I viewed, Paul's inquiries, about my dinner plans, with a touch of amusement, and sorrow, as insincere... But, at least Steve's offer, is now, 'on the table'...

For what it is worth, things have been smooth, peaceful, between Paul and I recently. I think I might be able, to maintain my friendship, with Paul, if I move, to a place of my own, but not, if I move in with Steve.

Steve also said, that he has become, less bitter, about his divorce, from Matilda, because of me, being in his life. That was nice, for Steve to say. My loan to Steve, has helped him, to pay, his child support debt. Considering, that Matilda lives, in a duplex which Steve built, and which she gained, by divorcing Steve, and from which she gets, her only income, by renting out the second unit, while she lives in the other, while enjoying financial union, with a new husband, while Steve pays, for the care of her children, I am glad, that I didn't, fall into that situation, in life. I think heterosexual conditioning, is intended to get men, to marry, and have children, before they might become aware, of the legal, long-term jeopardy, they face...

For the record, to be 'fair', either Steve, should have retained his property, or else, the two should have shared equal benefit, splitting the proceeds, from its sale, or, at least Steve should have, a half-share in income, from the second rental unit... Giving everything to Matilda, which had belonged solely to Steve, seems to me, unfair and wrong.

[140508 ~ To seek to be clear, in case I have failed, to be clear enough previously, Steve's fear, was that, if it was known, that he had sexual relations with men, then he might easily, be prohibited, from any unsupervised, or even any, visitation, with his son, and perhaps, even with his daughter, lest his example be viewed, as 'undesirable', or 'detrimental', to his children, simply, and only, because he might be viewed, as a homosexual... Steve would nonetheless, still be required, to make child support payments...]

[140508 ~ I think the situation, has 'evolved', during the past decades... Many women, continue to have children, to gain income, but now do so, without marriage, as the state pays child support, when the woman remains single, and women might understand, that the income from the state, is more secure, than income from a man, maintaining a job, as our economy, has been turbulent, and job security, can actually be, 'so-so'...]

[140508 ~ I can also muse, about another evolution... First, women demanded alimony, and child support, saying that men had to work, so women had the time, to care for children, and men didn't, so therefore, women should get the children, and men should pay the women, to help with the

financial needs. Then, women wanted jobs... Places which seemed to hire, mostly women, improperly continued that way, while places, which had hired, mostly men, were then properly forced, to seek to have, an equal number of female employees, to represent the percentages, of the local population. Women, then had the jobs, and lacked the time, but still wanted the child support... Then, at the jobs, women wanted extra time off, as parents, when that extra time off, was not granted to men, as parents... Some women, in their behavior, did not want, equal pay for equal work. Some women, wanted equal pay, just for 'being there', as women... I in no way dispute, that women and men, can be equals, that people are people, as individuals, rather than, inherently due to gender. I just don't think, that competence, of either men or women, factors in, as much as it should, in the work-place.]

[140508 ~ I am in no way biased, against women. It has been viewed, as 'okay', for a man, to urge other men, to treat women equally. It has been viewed, as 'okay', for a white, to urge whites, to treat equally, those of all races. It has seemed 'improper', for a man, to urge women, to treat men equally. It has seemed 'improper', for a white, to urge non-whites, to treat whites as equals. I believe, in equal rights for all. The problems, most relevant to my time-period, have been, discrimination against men, against homosexuals, and against whites. I am not pro-men, pro-homosexual, or pro-white. I am for equal rights, for all.]

[140508 ~ I have seen, many men stand up, for equal rights for women. I have seen, many whites stand up, for equal rights, for those of other races. I have seen, many heterosexuals stand up for equal rights, for homosexuals. I would like to see, more women, non-whites, and homosexuals, stand up, for equal rights for all.]

I believe, blind heterosexuality, lends itself to aggression, and keeps men at odds, with one another, perhaps even favors, the use of men, in the war machine, to get rid of surplus population. Unwanted, or poor children, are fed as cheap labor, to the work environment, or sent to war, as surplus population. There are reasons, that things are, the ways they are today, but those reasons, are perhaps designed, contrived, and are not 'natural', good, or right.

SMOOTHNESS
July 6, 1986

I have managed, to enjoy some smoothness, harmony, in my life. I have kept Paul, and Steve, from coming into contact, with one another, and have been on good terms, with both. Paul is friendly, when I do see him, and pleasant to be with. Steve is comfortable with me, no longer stressing, that ours, is not a serious relationship. That topic, has been dropped, and we have enjoyed, our time together. Steve seems to be enjoying, the time he has with me, without worries... For my part, it is extremely nice, for me to have, a same age friend, with whom I feel comfortable, and one who is an equal, rather than, me having to carry that person. This has at least been true, this week... Seeing Steve regularly, means neither of us, is interacting with others, as singles, and I am content, and this contentment, is something that I have long wanted, to have in my life.

Friend Daniel, has now changed his position, and says, that I could rent a room, in his home, with his mother and he, for $230 a month. I think Daniel's lover, has used the third bedroom, and now has had, at least a temporary, falling out, with Daniel. Perhaps if I am in that extra bedroom, then Daniel's lover, might have to share, Daniel's bedroom... I now have about $300, in the bank, so I could move, to Daniel's, if need be.

Daniel is pleased for me, that I have, romantic love in my life. I believe, that Daniel might feel, some love for his lover, but it does seem, to Daniel, that his lover, lacks love for him... It seems, that Daniel is involved, with someone, who at least publicly, is viewed as 'straight', and who might be, with Daniel, for security, for sex, and as a drinking buddy... It seems to me, that Daniel, is happy to have, this relationship, but sometimes, very unhappy, with the person, that he has this relationship with... Daniel's lover, seems to enjoy, 'being the female', in that sexual relationship, in ways 'traditional', for a female, though he is very masculine, in outward behavior, while it is Daniel, who can be somewhat feminine, in outward behavior... I think Daniel's lover, drinks to excess, in part, due to his own reaction, to himself, and to the realities, of our 'society'...

People are people as individuals...

Daniel said, that his lover, has become okay, with Daniel's mother, knowing of their relationship, but is uncomfortable, with anyone, who might be 'straight', knowing it. Daniel's lover, would never go, to a gay bar... Daniel said, that his lover, would tolerate, my being at Daniel's house, because I am 'straight', while being gay... However, says Daniel, his lover would prefer, that I pretend, not to know him, should we cross paths, in public... Life... I have told Daniel, that I could go along with that.

Daniel said, that he needs the extra money, that rent from me, would provide, and asked, that I let him know, the next day, or else, he shall give the room, to someone else. I suspect, that Daniel's lover, might soon return, to re-claim his bedroom... I am making these notes, the night before the day, that I am to give a response, to Daniel...

Part of me mused, that it would certainly be, 'most complicated', if Daniel's lover insisted, that he get his old bedroom back, and Daniel then insisted, as he has done in the past, that I share his bedroom with him... I am most uncertain, if Daniel's lover, is even aware, that Daniel might think, that he has 'moved'... It quite possible, that Daniel's lover, might be 'most surprised', if he were, to return home, and find me, living in, 'his' room... And, for the record, I am only speculating...

If I have to move, from Paul's eventually, then I should grab the room, at Daniel's, while it remains available. But, if things can stay peaceful, between Paul and I, then I would rather stay, with Paul. I do not believe, that Paul, is 'out of control', when venomous. I believe that Paul has self-control, and that he chooses, to be venomous. I therefore believe, that Paul, can choose, to remain civil, and pleasant...

Paul has been referring, to Steve and me, as 'lovers'... I think, this might give, some peace, to Paul, as he views our own relationship, the relationship between Paul and I, as that of being 'friends'... I do correct Paul, and tell him, that Steve and I have a mutual understanding, that we are 'friends'. Paul just laughs, and says, whom am I trying to fool? It does annoy Steve, when he calls me, and then overhears, Paul saying, Jualt, your lover is on the phone...

For my part, I am not totally sympathetic, with Steve's annoyance, at being called my lover.

Paul is no villain... Paul is a good person, who has not been easily able, to cope with the fact, that I am involved, with someone other than he. But Paul is partially to blame, for he has always maintained, that he and I are just friends, and I truly would like, one major, stable, long-term relationship, with a mutual understanding, of union. It is one thing, when someone likes my body, and wants to be 'friends', and another, when someone likes my body, and is willing to engage, in a union with me...

To Paul's credit, he has been civil to Steve, and pleasant to me, during this past week.

For the record, to broach a topic, that is 'sensitive' to me, Steve and I, are now, 'fully lovers', physically, intimately... Initially, Steve was content, as was I, with full body massages, and some oral activity, both giving and receiving. I myself can enjoy, giving oral sex, and lack much pleasure, when receiving it, as my norm... Steve seems, to be the opposite of me, in that regard, which has worked okay.

However, then Steve expressed, that he wished, to be penetrated, and I began doing that, for him, to him. Steve then said, that he felt a need, to see women, so that he could also enjoy, being the one, to penetrate. I said, that I wished to refrain, from that activity, casually, and that it was something, I was reserving to enjoy, only in a monogamous union.

Steve said, he would be uncertain, if he could be monogamous, without that aspect, and I agreed, to give this aspect to him, in return for his pledge, to be monogamous, and to let me know, if he engaged, in a similar activity, either being penetrated, or penetrating another, which I would not allow, to disturb our relationship, but I would then refrain, from participating in that aspect, for at least a month, to be certain, that no disease, had been transmitted to Steve.

So, Steve agreed, to be monogamous, with me, or to at least inform me, if he had engaged in anal sex, with anyone else, and I agreed, to this sexual activity, with that understanding, but without an understanding, of union...

I can say, that I felt scared, and that Steve, always 'withdrew', if I felt any pain. However, for the most part, the

experience has been painless, and I have been glad, and felt good, to be able to fulfill Steve, this way, as doing so, somewhat enhances, my sense of security, with Steve, in a relationship. I can also say, that I find no physical pleasure in it, would not seek it, and can live without it. I do believe, that this aspect is one reason that Steve has become, more comfortable with me. I think Steve, actually gains more pleasure, from being penetrated, and perhaps just wished to penetrate, so he did not feel, like 'less than a man', with me, for his enjoying, being penetrated... Steve does occasionally 'indicate', that he has reached orgasm, when within me, but his norm, is to have his orgasm, when I am inside of him... For me, I do not easily, nor normally, have orgasm, when penetrating someone, or when penetrated, by someone. This is just, how my shell is, how my body operates...

Steve and I do not use condoms. To me, use of a condom, removes sensation, removes or minimizes pleasure, and a condom, can also be more painful, to feel, than just skin...

So, I had wished, to 'save myself', for 'true love', and I hope, that I did so... To me, 'true love', is a mutual romantic love...

I have also watched, how Steve treats his brother, in their shared living space, to see how Steve might behave, if I lived with him. Steve has been, a bit of a 'control freak', and wants everything his way... Perhaps this is because, the apartment was Steve's, and Patrick moved into it. I also think, perhaps, this could be, because there is no 'union', between them... However, I view every household, as a type of union, a household union, even if without sex, or marriage. Households are households, and have the same requirements, regardless of, who lives within them.

Steve has been 'displeased', when Patrick leaves, his own room, a mess, which is, most of the time. Patrick tends to make his room, into one big disaster area. Steve is organized, and neat. Everything, 'has its place', in Steve's way... Steve has directed Patrick, to clean up his room, on several occasions, and feels internal aggravation, when he sees a mess.

I have advised Steve, as a roommate, to allow Patrick, to

have domain, within Patrick's room, to let Patrick be messy, in his own space, if he is comfortable that way. After all, Patrick is paying his way. Perhaps Steve would be more inclined, to listen to my advice, if Patrick, was not related to him.

I think, that Steve has assumed, a parental role, with Patrick, as an older brother. Apparently, at some point in their youth, their father and mother did divorce, and their father went to live, in a different state, in part, to avoid child support payments, and he also assumed, some distance, from his children, as if he divorced them, when he became divorced, from his wife... Some men feel great pain of separation, when their children are taken from them, and some men, might seek to cope with this, by refraining, from exposing themselves, to that source of emotional pain.

I have noted, many men, who are basically 'pigs', living in messes, refraining from cleaning, being disorderly in their homes. Often these men, seem to think, that it is a women's job, to clean, to maintain the interior of the home, and they might think, of themselves, as 'less than men', if they participated. Sadly, some men, seem to seek, to marry either their mother, or a maid, or are just looking, for a sex partner. I think, more men, need to consider, if a woman would be a good mother, before they have children, with that woman... Viewing a woman, as a sex object, might be, the worst of all reasons, to have a child, with that woman...

I can say, that I do believe, it was commendable, and proper, for my own parents, to equally share, indoor and outdoor, household tasks, as a team. Both of my parents participated in indoor and outdoor household tasks. I think that was proper.

I think some parents, like to encourage men, to be metaphorical pigs, to seek to create a need, for that man, to have a woman, in his life. I think that wanting a maid is a wrong reason, to have a woman, in one's life. I believe, people should be in a union, for love, or to meet together, financial needs, in a practical manner, or to nurture children...

My parents, had a philosophy, that if one got one's children, to clean up after themselves, then those children, might become motivated, influenced, to seek to be less

messy, if for no other reason, then because there would then be, less for them to clean up...

I believe, that a man, who is cleaner, and helpful around the house, might be more attractive, as a long-term partner, to a woman or a man, than a man, who lives like a metaphorical 'pig'... I understand, that actual pigs, tend to prefer, to be clean.

Our weather, continues to be, overcast and rainy. The weather did lift, so that Steve and I could visit, the US aircraft carrier, Nimitz. I have remained neutral otherwise. There has been, no harmful weather, which has come my way, this hurricane season. I believe this shows, God's support for me, as Christos. I thank God, for honoring my pledge, to seek to protect my area, even when I am doing nothing... My automatic remains 'neutral'.

As foretold, in my Olympian vision, the US and SU, heads of state, are now talking, seeking publicly, to improve relations...

Reflecting on my mother's question, about why would I, be chosen as Christos, perhaps an answer, is that I am normal enough, that my life experiences, and thoughts, can be of value, to most people, now and through time.

RANDI RESURFACES
July 18, 1986

First, things have remained the same, or about the same. I have continued to enjoy peace, with Daniel, Paul, and Steve... I have remained, in residence at Paul's.

Paul invited Daniel, to join he and I, for dinner at Paul's, and it was a pleasant dinner, where a friend of Paul's, Randy, was also present. I have no problems, with Paul having relationships, other than with me. I truly feel, nothing possessive, about Paul, and truly do value him, as a friend.

After I had accepted, that dinner invitation, Steve asked me, to go out with him, for drinks, that particular evening, so I told him, I could do so, after dinner with Paul, Randy, and Daniel. Steve then somewhat seemed, to want to be included, in that dinner, but I said, that the invitation to a dinner, being prepared by Paul, had to come from Paul, rather than from me. I have kept Paul, and Steve, separated, as much as I can... Steve has visited me, at Paul's, but Paul has stayed in his bedroom, and avoided any contact, with Steve...

I also knew, that Steve would be at work, during the time of that dinner, and I could not change, the time of that dinner, to suit Steve's schedule. I told Steve, that perhaps, he might enjoy, coming over for a drink, after he finished work. Steve declined that suggestion...

However, in the middle of dinner, Steve called, and said he did wish to come over, for drinks. I did say, that we could meet at a bar, as Steve had originally suggested, but Steve insisted, that what he now wanted, was to come over, so I agreed to this.

Steve joined our group, and Paul remained, on good behavior, perhaps in part, due to Randy's presence... Paul did lash out, at Daniel, before Steve arrived, when Daniel mentioned, that it might be best, for Jualt, if Jualt had a place of his own... Daniel said, that then I could entertain, both Paul and Steve, and neither, could tell me what to do. Paul had strongly, sternly, told Daniel, not to interfere...

Paul did say, that he thought, my mother and I, should not get involved, in business together, somewhat aligning, with my mother's decision, not to help me, with a type-

setting shop, of my own. Daniel disagreed, and said, that I should go back to my mother, and seek to convince her, to be helpful to me. It might be easier, to raise the Titanic, from the bottom of the sea...

Daniel thanked Paul, for the fine dinner, and said, that he would have Paul, over for dinner sometime, in return. Steve has refrained, from letting Daniel know, his home address, or phone number, and wishes for me, to keep it that way, and I have gone along with this... Daniel is perhaps, 'too gay', for Steve to comfortably have, in his world...

One might muse, that a man, who lacks any homosexual interests, might have homosexual friends, but a man, who has homosexual interests, while maintaining a straight image, might be very leery, of having an 'overly gay' person, in his world...

I would define, an 'overly gay' person, as one, who is unable, to easily conceal, that he or she is gay, one whose image, seems to be, at face value, that of being gay, even if that person, is not gay....

I like to think of myself, as 'straight' in all ways, except that I prefer masculine men, as companions and sexually, though one might suppose, perhaps with a chuckle, that is a big difference, from being, 'straight in all ways'... At least I can laugh at life... And, I am sure, that if life could laugh, it might laugh at me, at times too...

Steve did say, that he is now considering, getting involved, in buying and fixing up, properties to resell, with his brother. Steve also said, that he thinks, things are getting better for men, in court, so he might consider, a marriage to a woman, in the future. Perhaps Steve, was just seeking, to enhance, his 'straight image', with Paul, Daniel and, probably especially, with Randy, a stranger to him...

A local radio talk show host got in touch with me, about *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, and I explained, that due to government concern, and public apathy, I had suspended its publication. This radio talk show host, offered to me, an opportunity to discuss, some of the challenges, that I believe, I might have faced, as a result of publishing, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. I thanked him, but declined, saying that I hope to continue, to enjoy a peace, and that my having, such a focus of discussion, could aggravate things,

in ways detrimental to me.

I was surprised, to see an article, in a local Miami newspaper, about Randi, the psychic dis-creditor. It was this event, which motivated me, to write this chapter... Randi has been awarded, $272,000, by the MacArthur Foundation, for his work, 'protecting the public', from fake psychics... That Foundation, set up perhaps, by one of my distant relatives, awards money to people, who are doing good things, but who lack the funds, to afford what they are doing. One might think, that if one lacked the funds, to afford what one is doing, then one might be unable, to do it, in the first place...

I guess one might say, that I felt 'some annoyance', that neither my weather protection, or abilities, or *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, seemed to gain favor, from that Foundation, but someone, who only spews hate, into our world, did... I viewed this situation, as some sort of, 'cruel fascist joke'... I joked, that perhaps, my family was paying, 'hush money', to Randi, for his silence about me... Daniel later told me, that he did not think, that particular MacArthur, was related to me.

So, I wrote, the following letter to the editor, of that Miami newspaper. They should have, yesterday, received my letter.

In your July 15 article, about the amazing Randi, receiving $272,000, from the MacArthur Foundation, for his work, protecting the public, from fake psychics, you report, that no one has collected, Randi's $10,000 reward, which he offers, to anyone, who can demonstrate, that they have a real psychic, or paranormal ability.

I have been tested twice, by Mr. Randi, and was able, to successfully demonstrate, an ability to influence weather. The test was set up, well in advance, of the forecast time-frame, and *The Miami Herald* was used, to verify results. Mr. Randi did ask, that I heavily flood this area, to win his reward, and I declined, to try to do that.

Overall, for the results, upon which Mr. Randi and I agreed, I was able, to demonstrate my ability. I have not heard, from Mr. Randi, since that time, and I never collected, his $10,000 reward.

Mr. Randi often implies, that there are no real psychic abilities, and that all such people, are frauds. This puts a bad label, on many good people. There do exist, psychics who use their abilities, to help police, doctors, and individuals.

For the past seven years, I have used my ability, to protect this area, from hurricanes. Prior to my intervention, it was not uncommon, for this area, to be hit with hurricanes. I have not asked for money, for this service, nor has any, been given to me, but I am not a rich man, and I did agree, to influence public weather, at Mr. Randi's whim, with the understanding, that I would be paid, after I fulfilled his requests.

This year, I make no guarantees, about the weather.

Respectfully,

Jualt Christos

I did give the newspaper, my alternate Post Office box address, as well as my phone number, and showed, or told, Dana, Daniel, Steve, and Paul, about my letter.

Asmodeus lectured me, saying the main New Age message, is that people, only have to take care, of themselves, and he says, I need to learn that lesson.

I told Asmodeus, that telling people, to only focus, on their own needs, is often similar, to telling a dog, to breathe...

I do seek, to earn my way in life, through fair trade, by working a job, and paying my own costs. I also advise people, to do what they are able, to help others. One might say, that it is perhaps Asmodeus, who is neither, helpful to other, nor does he survive, through fair trade, relying instead, on a state-supplied disability income, while having the luxury, of living in a home, that was simply given to him, by his mother, in her estate... So, between Asmodeus and I, if anyone needs to learn, the lesson of, taking care of oneself, it might be, Asmodeus...

To my credit, all I said to Asmodeus, in response, was that I have, long urged people, to seek to be responsible, for their own existence, through fair trade, through ways that are karmically positive overall, and that I thought, he could find this, in Book Three, of *The Life of Christos*, which he

says, he has read...

I believe, Asmodeus' intent was that I should cease worrying, about the problems of our world, and others, and just take care, of my own world.

As Christos, one of my purposes, is to seek, to help maintain, and improve, the condition of our world, and I do not think, it would be proper, for any 'Christed individual', to only care about self... And I told this, to Asmodeus...

Asmodeus says, government as society is responsible totally, for the condition of individuals, and that individuals, should bow, to the will of their government, in doing whatever their government, wants of them, and provides to them, as part of that society.

I told Asmodeus, that he seems to fail, to heed his own advice. Asmodeus has lived, somewhat as a rebel, within our society.

Asmodeus says, that he has been, against our society, because it fails to acknowledge, its responsibility, for current conditions, denies its role, to help our people.

I told Asmodeus, that perhaps more especially, in a society, where a government is viewed, as in control of everything, then it is up to people, to seek to participate, as a government, is made up of people, of citizens.

Asmodeus disagreed, and said, that only those individuals, trained to administer government, should be concerned, with the administering of government.

I said, that people must participate, at least through voting, to let government know, how things might actually be, for the people.

Asmodeus disagreed, and said the people do not care to be informed, and so they should not be, allowed to vote. Asmodeus again affirmed, that only those individuals, who are trained, to administer a nurturing government, should be allowed, to be employed, within that government.

I asked Asmodeus, if the main New Age message is that each person should only focus, on needs of self, and if that is correct, then isn't there some contradiction, between that and Asmodeus' belief, that a government should do everything, and people should blindly obey their loving parent, government?

Asmodeus said, that he saw no contradiction.

I said, that I thought, the two were contradictory, in that, both the individual, and the government, are directed to be, the prime authority about self.

Asmodeus said, that there is much, which I need to understand.

Perhaps so... Perhaps not...

I asked, if there was a contradiction, between, in God we trust, and in Government we trust?

Asmodeus said, that people can trust, both God and Government...

For my part, I have enjoyed, the kindness, real-world help of others, to survive in life... However, I have a 'healthy mistrust', of others, actually ensuring, my survival, or comfort, in life...

Asmodeus said, that when a government, is properly caring, for the needs of its people, then nobody, would be discontent...

I said, that some people always seem to want more, and some people seem prone to be always complaining.

Asmodeus said, that between trained administrators, and proper standards, that there would be, no real reason(s), for anybody to complain, and that those who did, probably needed medical care, which they would get, so they would no longer complain...

I hear in my mind, Asmodeus saying, that I am simply too critical, that I think too much. Truth is, that I do not voice, much opposition, to Asmodeus, because he can be, very sensitive to disagreement, literally raising his voice, and stomping the ground, to show how right he is, or how right he thinks he is.

My criticisms, or disagreements, in this book, might surprise Asmodeus... I do love Asmodeus, as a friend, and he has been, a friend to me, as Christos, and this has been rare, in my life. If nothing else, perhaps the publication, of my books as Christos, might help Asmodeus, to gain attention, for publication, of his own books. Asmodeus can write, his own version, of events...

Steve seems to be, of two minds... Steve has, again, starting affirming, that he does not want, a serious relationship, with anyone. I have said nothing, about this topic, and he brings it up, on his own. Steve says, that

romantic relationships fall apart, when romance fades, and usually produce, emotional hurts, so he says, that he is especially leery, of a relationship, based on romance. Steve also says, that he would be disappointed, if I were to find someone else. Steve says, he strongly disapproves, of my staying with Paul, because, he says, Paul tries to dominate me, shows me no respect, and is adversarial, to my 'friendship', with Steve.

Steve started talking again, of his getting involved, with other people, after I went to Key West, with Paul. I have told Steve, that I would love to visit Key West, with him, but he says, he lacks the time, or money, to do so, and I am unable, to financially afford, to do this for Steve, and cover all of his expenses, for such a trip. I split costs, with Paul. I saw, many people I recognized, while in Key West. I saw Jevans, who witnessed my Rapture, and who had a copy, the little Civil Church of Christos booklet.

I saw a job opening, as an assistant manager, of a print-shop, while I was in Key West, but, with Steve living around West Palm Beach, I would not wish, to move from there. I do plan, on asking John-S, for a pay-raise, as he agreed, in a written contract with me. I have promised myself, to do this, to seek to maintain, and improve, my life, even if it means, enduring a confrontation, with John-S, if he 'reacts poorly', to my bringing up the topic... I have considered, asking John-S, for a title of assistant manager, and would be willing, to do more work, perhaps for a flat rate, like Trudy enjoys... I mused, that then everyone, but the pressman, would have a job title, and perhaps he could be called, Head of the Press Department...

The seven weeks, of mostly rain, ended, when my work vacation began, so my trip to Key West was very nice, weather-wise. My thanks to God, and my other allies... Paul covered the cost, of the room in Key West, as a present to me, to make up, for his recent negative behavior... I bought Paul dinner, each night, and did split, the cost of fuel. I also bought some drinks, for Paul.

Daniel advises me, to be patient with Steve, saying those who speak against love, are often those, who want it the most. Daniel says, I should be glad, to be wanted, and to enjoy it, while it lasts. I agree. I am through, the intense

romance, with Steve, though I do continue, to feel involuntary joy, when with him. I just feel good, when with Steve. I feel like, that is where I belong, and it has been rare, for me in life, to feel, that I am where I belong, where I am wanted, loved, appreciated, and Steve gives that to me. I suppose, how I feel, when with Steve, is a major value, to me, of this relationship.

Steve now defines, our relationship, as, a 'shared brotherhood', what some might call, a 'bromance'... Steve says, he feels closer to me, than he has felt, to anyone, in his life, including Matilda. I am sure, that Steve feels, a stronger bond, to his children, than to me, but, his words, remain nice to hear.

However, then Steve, also made a point to say, that if I want romantic love, then I should look for it, with someone else... I do easily recall, the many times, Steve has voiced, heartfelt love, romantic affection, for me, but I did refrain, from reminding him of this. I feared, that reminding Steve, of his past words, would just get him, to deny them, and I didn't want that.

The US Senate, passed a new law, that directs our government, to seize the assets, of any medium, reporting news, considered sensitive, by the government, specifically, even if it is gleaned, from foreign publications. I think, this bit of legislation, was specifically targeted, at *WORLD PRESS WATCH*... If I were to resume publication, of *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, I might not be protected, as 'grand-fathered', so to speak. 'Grand-fathered', is a concept that new laws, fail to apply, to prior situations. I would think, such a law, to be totally unconstitutional, as against, 'freedom of the press', but I suppose, that could depend, upon what judge, views that question...

I got a very nice letter, from Howard, saying that he was sorry, I had decided, to put down my newsletter. Howard said, my newsletter, was a ray of light, in a darkening world. Howard would like me, to come up and visit him, before he dies of old age. I would like to do so, if I get the opportunity. To my knowledge, the only publication, to print mention, of the suspension, of *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, was *In These Times*, a US communist, pro-worker, publication.

There were times, when I sought to find places, to gift

my used publications. I tried my old high school debate coach, at Twin Lakes, thinking the diverse magazines, would provide, great source material, for her forensics program, and to a local Catholic school library, Rosarian, which Mr. Frank significantly patronized, but they were turned down, even as gifts... Howard could be right, about fear, growing in our nation... Fear of facts, of dialogue, awareness, seems, to me, to be, 'fearsome'...

= 32 =

HOW FAST THE MOOD CAN CHANGE...
MY LOVE, DON'T LET ME GO...
July 28, 1986

My mood has been through many changes, in the past several days. The evening, after I last wrote, Steve called from work, and agreed to stop over, for a drink, after he clocked out. I had come home from work, because I had to do, Frank-B's checking, paying his bills, and making pay-checks. I was missing seeing Steve. I had spent my time, with Daniel, the previous two evenings, because of Steve's last strong reminder, not to expect love, or caring, from him. I had felt it necessary, to gain some distance, from Steve, because I realize, that I feel more for Steve, than he would wish, for me to feel, though it is my feelings, that have motivated me, or allowed me, or both motivated me, and allowed me, to enjoy this relationship. I decided, that perhaps, I have listened, to Steve's kind words, too much, and not listened enough, to Steve's coldness, where he says, time and time again, that he does not want, a close relationship, with anyone...

I do feel, some pain of separation, a longing, when I am away from Steve, and perhaps, the only way, or at least a way, for me to end that, as it is involuntary, is to seek to find, another source, for that same sort, of involuntary attraction, and the only way, to do that, is to step away some, from Steve, and resume, going out to meet people. Unfortunately, in all honesty, I might be unable, to be, 'just friends', with Steve, because the feelings are too strong, for that.

My spending time, with Daniel, was a way to behave, to maintain my relationship, with Steve, without seeking a new person, a limbo, and this night, was intended, to be a work night. But, the next night, I promised myself, I might allow myself, to go out and mingle...

So, I was missing Steve, when he called, and then came over. Steve stayed for an hour, and then left. I returned to my work, for Frank-B. I suppose, I am also doing 'book-keeping', as I log payments, properly in various accounts, and in one big overall, accounts payable account. Frank-B reviews everything, before he signs these checks.

This nice 'friendly' visit, in which we discussed nothing

serious, and just enjoyed, some friendly conversation, and jokes, did motivate me, to think that I would remain, living at Paul's.

I did take action, on the 'job front', at the start of the week, as I had promised myself. I told John-S, that I wanted, the $8 an hour wage, as he had agreed to, in writing, years before, and did mention, that Trudy was being paid, more than that, at a flat rate, for 40 hours, with less time with him, and less relevant work experience, than I. I do not believe, that one worker's wage in itself, justifies another worker's wage. I mentioned Trudy's wage, to indicate, that I believe, that John-S, could afford, to pay to me, the same rate. John-S said, he wanted some time, to think about it.

I hope to see, the new pay rate, in my pay-check, as a nice surprise. If not, then I will bring the topic, to John-S again, to see what he has thought about, during the past week. I am prepared to job hunt, and take a lower starting wage, elsewhere, if the new position, carries a possibility, of advancement, to a higher wage, than what I now seem stuck at... At least, John-S is now unable, to say that my wage, includes his services, for *WORLD PRESS WATCH*.

One good sign, is that John-S, has been speaking to me, civilly and politely, all the time, for the first time, in a long time, and has also been, showing me, how to do new things, expanding my abilities, which could help to justify, a pay-raise. I told John-S, that I am thinking, about getting a place, of my own, and would need a decent wage, to be able to afford, my own place, though my situation is also compounded, by car payments. It seems, that most workers could afford, either rent, or car payments, but not necessarily both...

After work on Thursday, I was sorely tempted, to go out for a drink after work. After having had, regular sex with Steve, this period, of lack of sex, was leaving me, feeling a certain need. I did not really want, to meet someone new, and perhaps complicate my world, but it seemed necessary. Perhaps, I could at least meet someone, for a fun safe, one-night stand...

And, what if Steve should call, and I not be home? Would Steve be glad, if I went out, or would he then, stop

seeing me? What about, our intimate contact? Should that be ended? I knew, I would not want, to miss Steve, so I compromised. I decided to go home, and see if Steve would call, with a notion, that I could always go out, if he didn't call. Good fortune was with me, and Steve called, and said, he wanted to come over.

Steve and I were pleasantly, quietly talking, in my room, when Paul slammed, his bedroom door. Then Paul, stomped loudly, to the front door, opened it, and then slammed it. Paul slapped the wall, of the room, where Steve and I were, my bedroom, and angrily declared, "I'm not running a brothel!" Then Paul stomped back, to his bedroom, and slammed the door there.

The episode really didn't bother Steve, who laughed, and said, "Funny, Paul's the one, who uses paid help."

For my part, I was surprised, by this incident. Things have been peaceful, and I have been paying, extra money to Paul, for an understanding, that he will be civil, and pleasant, to my guests, including, or in particular, Steve...

Steve said, that I could have no life of my own, as long as I stay, with Paul. Steve said, that it was just lucky for me that he likes me enough, to put up with Paul, peacefully, as anyone else, might either dump me, or punch Paul, or both.

Steve said, that Paul would seek to keep me, isolated forever. I value having a 'gate-keeper', as otherwise people tend to swarm me. However, it seems true to me, that I do want, to have a serious relationship, in my life, and that Paul, would seek to be adversarial, to anyone, who might become, close to me.

An end result, is that, once again, I have tentatively decided, to try to find, somewhere else to live, maybe under a bridge, or in a tree, with my finances...

The past two days, since that incident, Paul has been, nothing but nice to me, but without any apology, for the hassle with Steve. To me, Paul's seems to think, that he can attack my world, time and time again, without it affecting, his relationship with me. Paul has sought to be domineering toward me, since the moment I moved in. Paul was not this way, before I moved in. I can hope, that if I move, that Paul would behave, toward me, as he did, before I moved in.

Paul has once again, been mentioning to me, that I am in

his will, and that it would be good for me, to remain with him, until he dies, which, he adds, won't be too long. I have not seen, any signs of bad health, in Paul, nor would I welcome any, and I do, continue to view, Paul's promise, as empty, and I have told this to Paul. Paul has said, that he does have, some equity, in the property, which is the amount, beyond the debt, upon this property, and that I would, at least receive something. I am uncertain.

Do I have too much pride, or impractical foolishness, that I fail to give enough value, to the idea, of being materially enhanced? Can't I endure, some hassles now, in return, for some material benefit later? I have always found, that those, who promise something later, in return for something now, usually give one nothing, now or later, and my gut instinct, is to actually resent, Paul seeking to tempt me, with material reward. That is simply how I am... Perhaps I am foolish...

It would seem preferable to me, to have quality of life, as much as possible, both now and later, and I tend to think, that my quality of life, could be better, now, if I moved, as then I might be able, to enjoy peace, in my home... I do earn, my own income, through my own job, and that is really, one's only security, in life. The best security, is money invested, or in the bank, and I don't have, either of those...

One might think, that perhaps Paul might look, at my actual history, and notice, that I have declined, to kowtow to my mother, to gain what would be, actual wealth, as contrasted with, any smidgen, that he could possibly send my way...

Daniel pointed out, that Paul could live, another 20 years anyway, and that it could be healthy, for my friendship with Paul, if I live elsewhere, and that if I do move, and do enjoy, becoming closer to Steve, then my distance, if any, from Paul, might fail to matter. Daniel said, that essentially, it is Paul, who is pushing me away, so Paul, should be without complaint, if I do become, more distant...

A bottom line is, Steve said he would never visit me again, at Paul's, because he simply does not wish, to face Paul's continuing rudeness, to him, nor does he wish, to raise any chance, that Paul might seek to do, damage to him. Steve might hope, that if he fades, from Paul's view, that he might also fade, from Paul's focus...

There is a question, in my mind, that if I move, how much venom, would Paul seek, to send my way, either in the society, he shares with my mother, which right now, seems inconsequential, or at least without value to me, or, toward my work-place, which could carry, consequence to me, depending on, which John-S might value more, any distaste, he might have, as a Catholic, toward gays, or, the value I hold to him, as a competent, honest, skilled, dependable employee...

Steve says, he will be preoccupied, for about a month... Steve says, he is going to be using, his 'spare time', to focus on some legal matters, this coming week, and then, he'll be with his kids, for most of the following three weeks, on a paid vacation.

Patrick asked me, if I was the person, that Steve had been considering, splitting a place with, before he moved in with Steve. I said yes. Patrick said, he wouldn't mind, splitting a house, with Steve and I, saying that I, am good with the kids, and he gets along fine, with me. I told Patrick, that I wouldn't mind, splitting a place with them. My problem is, that my need to move might be sooner than October, when Steve's current lease ends.

It is true, that I have fit peacefully, harmoniously, into Steve's world. The children, Stephen and Stephanie, both get along well with me. I also get along well, with Steve's close friends, Abe and Layla. Steve often baby-sits, for the son of Abe and Layla. I think, Steve would prefer, that I not intertwine myself, with his world. I have gotten that impression, from Steve. I have not sought, to intertwine myself, into Steve's world, but I have 'been myself', with his friends and family, and I do get along, well with them, a natural evolution.

It could also be true, that I might be more able, to enjoy my time with Steve, if I have my own space, to which he can come, rather than, my being within his residence, given that everyone, in his world, views him as straight. I think Steve agrees with that logic...

The prospect, of no sex for a month, is not exactly thrilling... I joke, that 'safe sex', is to find a tourist, someone who will be leaving the area, so there is no chance, of any relationship entanglements, which could really complicate,

my situation...

If John-S gives to me, that pay-raise, then I could more easily afford to move from Paul's. Losing the expense, of *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, is also helpful, in allowing me, to afford a place to live.

This week, my area, from Palm Beach County, south through Monroe County, to Key West, had daily rains, once again. Steve asked me, for sunshine today, and got it, but it still poured, in the morning and evening, but it was dry and sunny, for when he wished it, to be dry and sunny... Steve is another witness, for Christos...

On another hand, northern Florida, and the South, of the US in general, continue to experience, the worst drought they have had, in a long-long time. Nobody, has made any requests, of me, and my focus, continues to be, upon my real-world situations, my job, and 'love'... I have remained neutral. Nobody has ended this drought. California has had, several strong, significant earthquakes.

The Miami Herald has not printed my letter, so I do not think, that they will. They did not get in touch with me, either. *Newsweek* ran a small article on Randi, receiving the $272,000. I sent to *Newsweek*, the following letter:

I took exception, to the John D. and Catherine T. MacArthur Foundation, granting $272,000, to the Amazing Randi (Newsmakers July 28). That money should go to people, trying to improve, the condition of the world, not to some frivolous undertaking.

Unlike the people you mention, who have been tested, and discredited, by Randi, I took his test, passed, and never heard from him again. He has not mentioned me, in his books, about the fakes he exposed.

I wish Randi well, in his effort, to protect the public, from fake psychics. But remember, the other side of the coin. There are decent people, who are psychically gifted.

Jualt Christos

It is possible, that Mr. Randi is trying to protect the public, from 'criminals', from those who know they are fakes. Randi may be, of good intent. However, Randi's past tone has been very negative. And Randi does say, that there are, no

genuine psychics... At best, Randi might say, some who believe, they are psychics, are delusional, mentally ill, misguided.

Asmodeus said to me, that every individual can be Christos. Asmodeus said, that each person alone, as an individual, is Christ, and we all live, as Christ would live, if Christ were in our shoes.

I tend, to very much doubt that. Perhaps, at best, each person could seek to live, as they think that Jesus might seek to live, if in their shoes. However, it seems most painfully obvious, to me, if not to Asmodeus, that most people, do not even think in those terms, and, some might knowingly prefer, to live in ways, that are actually, ways, that Jesus would never wish to live. Sometimes, I am amazed, at the sheer nonsense that some people spout...

I would say, that my life, as Jualt Christos, is further growth, and a further example, for humanity to learn from. However, I believe, only I am Christos. Each human being, can share the positive consciousness, of God, but most don't, and no one else is me, and this is true, for each human being. I told Asmodeus, that most certainly, not everybody is Christos. I told Asmodeus, that I do not intend, to sound arrogant. I am merely echoing, what God has told me.

[140508 ~ I am now going to affirm, decades later, 2014, that I believe, that only I am Christos. I affirm, that God told me, to go into our world, and that I am Christ. God never said anything to me, about there being, more than one Christ, or Christos. Therefore, I must admit, that there could be, more than one. Perhaps there is, some 'wiggle room'... However, God always, indicated this to me, in a singular manner. And, if I ask God, could there be more than one, I tend to get a 'no', as a gut reaction, in response. However, I have never, asked that question, to one of those 'visions', from God. Perhaps I have been scared to do so. Perhaps. Nonetheless, this is the honest situation. I believe, that God could have indicated, that I would be, one of many Christs, if I were to be, one of many Christs, and God did not do this. I rest content, knowing that I am Jualt Christos, or Jualt R Christos, and that nobody else, is me...]

= 32 =

FINAL SECOND THOUGHTS
August 4, 1986

At the beginning of the week, I told Steve, that I could end the drought, in the US South, that is grabbing media attention. Steve replied, that the drought had continued for so long, that the natural odds, must favor rain now anyway.

I said, that then I would remain neutral. The drought continued, for the rest of the week. However, my own area, of southeast Florida, to Key West, continues to receive its nice, normal, daily rains. Maybe, my primary area has been shrinking, as I lose touch, and memory, of those areas, as I have been absent from them, for a long while.

I told Steve, that we should be thankful, for the rain, for the land remains healthy, while the rest of the US South, is baking, due to lack of rain, and a heat wave. At the end of the week, the forecasters were saying, a hurricane would be necessary, to end the drought, with at least 48 hours, of soggy rain.

I told Steve, that I could provide, that sort of a storm, but Steve said, it would happen naturally, or not at all, so I said, I would remain neutral. Steve said, weather is what is it, and that's how it is. Steve said, that he hopes that I don't take myself, too seriously, by thinking that I have some influence, upon weather.

Steve is normally disinterested, in anything metaphysical, or spiritual, or psychic or paranormal, and tends to prefer, topics unrelated to Christos, or to my ability, to influence weather. So, I tend to avoid those topics, when with Steve. It seems, that Steve would not be supportive, of my activities. I suspect, that Steve might fear, that any attention upon me, would also be, attention upon him, and he would wish, to avoid that.

There was a time, when Steve, was 'very-very high', and he went to a cemetery, and while there, said that he felt, like he was Jesus, and later, when sober again, decided, that anything like that, must be totally crazy. Steve tends to be, somewhat of an atheist now, though he does agree, that perhaps, like I say, humans might have 'spirit'. To Steve, even if humans had spirit, that would not imply, the existence of God... Steve is basically, avoidant toward

religion, rather than being hateful, toward religion, as many atheists, might seem to be.

To some degree then, not only, would I like to shield, the world of Jualt, from the world of Christos, but I also, perhaps, have to shield Steve, from Christos, and Christos, from Steve, for Jualt...

Steve said, that since I have now decided, to definitely move from Paul's, that he will continue, to visit me there, until I move.

I asked boss, John-S, for a loan of $400, which would help me, to be able to move now, as well as pay, for electricity at the same time. Otherwise, I lack the available cash, to move at this time.

John-S told me, that he didn't lend money, to employees.

I didn't remind John-S, of the times, that he has lent money to employees, as he feels, that these people, have left him, some perhaps prior, to full repayment. John-S, has yet to respond, to my pay-raise request, though he has now, twice told me, of when he would do so, and missed both of those times, adding a new delay, each time, to his response.

I am considering, moving to Steve's apartment complex. That is, a subsidized, housing development, which means, the owners, receive some compensation, from the government, for providing housing, to workers... The owners thus require, to comply with the government conditions, that a person, earn at least a certain amount, and at most a certain amount, to qualify to live there. I do not actually earn enough, to qualify... John-S agreed to verify, that I do earn enough, and that is at least something...

Steve's sister, Georgia, has agreed to list herself, as my 'landlord'. That way, if the apartment complex, does get in touch, with my 'landlord', Paul won't have a chance, to bad-mouth me, as I truly believe he would, just to keep me in place.

Daniel agrees, that I should move, but he thinks I should tell Paul, in advance. I am more inclined, not to tell Paul in advance, to avoid his venom, and perhaps nasty, actual behavior, but I might pay Paul, for an additional two weeks, beyond when I move, in lieu of advance notice... While I might like to do that, and might think it proper, there is this realistic problem, that I might be, unable to actually,

financially afford, to do so.

While there are, no single bedroom units available, there are, two-bedroom units, and this would be, more expensive, for me to secure, but I could hope, to offset my costs, by renting out a bedroom, which would then make, a two-bedroom apartment, with a roommate, less expensive for me, than a single bedroom apartment, alone...

Paul does not want, for me to move, but he has failed to honor our agreement, even though, he has been accepting extra money, from me, just to be civil, and pleasant, to Steve. What kind of life is it, for me at Paul's, if I am unable, to bring people, to where I live, without worrying, about Paul being nasty? Funny how Jesus, could cast demons, from strangers, and yet those close to him, seemed to remain vulnerable...

Paul is deliberately offensive to people, insulting to them, and to me, and compromises me, in that process, as if, I might seem to approve, or tolerate, such behavior, when, at best, I have accepted the situation, as what it is, for now... Well, I think, that particular 'now', is over...

The nature of my 'second thoughts', thoughts that give some hesitation to one, some are financial. I will have, little spare money, maybe $40 a week, after bills, to live on, to pay for cigarettes, fuel, and food, and whatever else. Moving to my own apartment does not make financial sense. I risk losing Paul, as a real-world helpful friend, and gain a possibility, that I might have to cope, with Paul's hostility, including venom, and nasty actual behavior. I lose, inheriting Paul's apartment, whatever that might be worth.

I do have, a greater chance, of having harmony with Steve, if I move, of giving a relationship with Steve, a better chance, or of seeing more clearly, that it is unable to be. Paul will no longer be, a factor in that situation.

I might lose, my position with Frank-B, because Paul works there. Paul might attack me verbally, to John-S, or Trudy, at my place of employment...

Those are my second thoughts. I still believe, that moving, is better for me overall, than remaining at Paul's, so I am, sticking to my intention, to seek to move.

My plan now, is to rent, a two-bedroom apartment. I will remove my things, from storage, and save that expense. I

lack furniture, of my own... Helene had told me, not to bring any furniture, to her efficiency, and the only thing I brought, to the Sugar Shack, was my desk. Helene said, that I could always get more furniture. Getting more furniture, is not as easy for me, as it might be, for Helene...

At least the floor, of the two-bedroom apartment in Steve's development, is carpeted, and can serve as my bed, until I can get one. My little car, is really too small, to carry furniture around... It will take, every penny I have, to move, and things will be rough going, but, in time, I will have a nice place, of my own, or be living, on the streets... Except for the little apartment, I had on Broadway, for a short while, which I was unable to afford, I have not had, a stable place of my own, since I left Key West five years ago... I did have some stability, for a while at Helene's, but that was with someone I knew who gave leeway to me.

To Paul: The Eleventh Commandment:
Thou Shalt Not Hassle
The Twelfth Commandment:
Thou Shalt Not Meddle

= 32 =

THE MOVE IS ON!
August 6, 1986

On Monday, two days ago, after I made my journal notes, and reviewed my 'second thoughts', I made a decision, to move from Paul's. I went, and paid a deposit, to secure an apartment. The apartment complex has a work-out room, pool, laundry, tennis courts, and racquet-ball courts. I am taking, a two-bedroom apartment.

I saw Steve, on Monday night, before I was approved, and told him, that I had given a deposit, to secure a two-bedroom apartment, in the same development where he lives. Steve gave me, a nice good-night kiss, for the first time ever, for such a gesture, even though his kids, and brother, were there. They were asleep. That was nice.

Steve's sister, Georgia, was contacted, by management, and she did vouch for me, as a good tenant. Daniel was contacted, as a personal reference, and vouched for me. Plus, John-S' income statement, qualified me, as having the proper income, even if he does refrain, from actually giving to me, that proper income...

I have not checked in, with Steve, yesterday or today, nor he with me. Steve does not know, of my definite move yet. Part, of the lack of contact, is because, Steve did not want, me to move, just to be near to him, nor to move, just to please him, but only to move, through my own logic, and my own decision. Steve has also been, preoccupied with his two kids, who are on, a three-week visitation, with him now. Steve still plans, to pay to me, the remaining $200, he owes me, on the tenth of this month, and that will give to me, the necessary funds, to pay the security deposits, required for the apartment, and for electricity.

I commented to Trudy, that I am facing bills, of $1100 now, and $600 more, come the first of September, on a base income, of $250 a week. Rather scary... I am starting, with $700, and getting the $200, from Steve. This is, 'cutting it close'. Some overtime pay, might be welcome... At least the little extra money, from Frank-B, could be helpful, if that continues. And, my fuel costs, to commute, do go down, as I am now, on the south side, of West Palm Beach, off Forest Hill, rather than the north side, off 45th Street, cutting my

travel distance, by about half. I am really counting, every penny... I figure I have, about $125 to spare, over the next three weeks, toward 'living expenses', and should advertise, and interview, for a roommate, as soon as possible...

I plan to be, the one to tell Paul, about my move, but still plan, to wait until I actually have the apartment, on the 11th, in case Paul orders me out, immediately. I must vacate, my storage unit, by the 15th, so I will be busy, when moving time comes, as I must move out of two places, to move into one...

Now that things are, 'in progress', Daniel has expressed, a final reservation, a second thought, saying that Paul, is a stable financial cushion, for me in life, and perhaps, I should not be so hasty, as to give that up. I am somewhat, in a precarious situation, on a tightrope, without a net, but I would not describe this move, as 'hasty'...

Steve says, I should be, my own financial cushion, and should always have, at least three months' living expenses, in the bank, as a financial cushion. I suppose this is good advice, for everyone, including Steve... Neither Steve nor I, has such a cushion, and I am going, to barely be able, to meet expenses, much less be able, to seek to save, that kind of extra money.

I might advise anyone else, in my own situation, to stick with Paul... Steve really doesn't have, a history with me, for me to trade-off, for a possible loss, of supportive helpful Paul, in my world. Even with the expense, of *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, I was able to save money, when at Paul's. And Paul has certainly been more dependable, than any of my employers, in this area, prior to John-S.

Asmodeus called me, to ask if I was deserting him... Asmodeus got into a physical fight, with his elderly father... Asmodeus and his father, are somewhat, financially bound together, both needing the other, to support the costs, of their household. However, Asmodeus to his father, is akin, to Paul to me, and has not compromised, nor shared living space, with his father. So, an end result is that Asmodeus' father, like me, is planning to move. Asmodeus' father is going to move in, with a lady he knows, and split costs with her. Asmodeus, like Paul to me, says he can't meet his expenses, without his father's being there... Asmodeus

said, that none of his party buddies, who spend a great deal, of their time with Asmodeus, have dependable income, or seem to have, only enough to party, and not enough, to pay bills... Casey is stable, and he has a job. Asmodeus said, that if I am going to move anywhere, then I should move in with him.

I actually sympathize, and empathize, with Asmodeus' father, but, as a friend of Asmodeus, I remain neutral. I advised Asmodeus, that his father might stay, if Asmodeus at least removed, his own things, from his father's bedroom. Asmodeus said he felt, it is probably too late for that, and besides, he has no other place, to safely keep those things, as his friends, go everywhere in the apartment, except for into his father's bedroom.

I told Asmodeus, that I am now already committed, to this Haverhill apartment. I 'joked' to Asmodeus, that one definite drawback, to the total control, of the communist system he admires, is that the system, is unable to support everyone, if everyone is doing nothing, for that system. A drawback, to the Stalinist system, of giving priority, to industrial or military needs, is that the people, who perceive themselves, as on the low end, of the receiving spoon, then become even less motivated, to participate, on the giving spoon, and everyone gets involved, in that sad, detrimental competition, to see who can do the least, or do nothing, while demanding everything, and also more, from the system...

I do think, it was at least commendable, that the social system, which Lenin hoped to build, was seeking to make a better environment, for the people to live within. I think there is much truth, in George Orwell's parable, *Animal Farm*.

It seems to me, that the system, which demands, 'from each according to their ability, and to each according to their need', has yet to find, an equitable way, to determine, what each one needs, and what each should give... I suspect, that Asmodeus, might favor such a system, because he might be, tempted to think, that his heart condition, enhances his need to receive, while justifying, his lack of giving.

I also find relevant, the warnings of potential futures, in either William Golding's, *Lord of the Flies*, or that movie,

Mad Max, to be possible... There is a saying, that, 'the meek shall inherit the Earth', and this, at face value, seems unlikely, when and if 'might makes right'... I would suggest, first of all, that might, makes bloody right... And second, that the meek shall inherit our Earth, or there might be, no Earth to inherit...

It seems to me, that often, the 'good people', wish to stand alone, while it is those, who are parasites, or predators, who wish to live, in 'groups'... It is also said, by some, that only the strong shall survive. Therefore, the meek must be strong, to survive... Therefore, at some point, those who are 'good', must seek to administer groups, in good ways... Anything one takes for granted, one is risking losing, and that can be, all kinds of relationships, and unions...

= 32 =

ESCAPE AND EVACUATION
August 12, 1986

I stayed with Steve, Patrick, and the kids, over the past weekend, sleeping on the living-room sofa, as other guests have done. I did not phone Paul, to tell him, what I am doing. My logic, was that Paul would, at best, be unpleasant, if I told him, and who needs that. The only blemish on the weekend, was that Steve waited, until the tenth, to tell me, that he could only, repay to me, half of the remaining amount owed, which left me, with less than $100, after meeting the expenses, of moving.

I went 'home', to Paul's, Sunday night, and was awakened Monday morning, at the crack of dawn, by Paul, who said he had heard a rumor, that I was going to move... Perhaps Paul heard that, from Frank-B... I'd like to believe, that Daniel remained silent...

Paul called me, from Frank-B's, to question me again, and this time, I told him, that I would be moving out. I did not use the word, 'escaping', but I thought it... Paul said, that if I was planning to move, that I had to leave immediately, or he'd put my things out, while I was at work, unless I agreed to remain.

I told Paul, that I would leave immediately, as that was, what he said he wanted. Paul thought, I would be at work this day, but I had gotten the day off, of work from John-S, so that I could move.

I told Paul, that since he was telling me, to leave immediately, that I would put, a stop payment, on the rent check, I had given to him, for the coming two weeks...

Paul told me, not to do that.

I told Paul, he couldn't have it both ways ~ he could not demand, that I leave immediately, and also retain the funds, that I had paid to him.

I told Paul, that his last tirade had convinced me, that I could not enjoy living in his home. I told Paul, that I would move, and that he could keep his rent check, from me. I told Paul, that I hoped that my moving, to a place of my own, could allow us, to become friends again.

I got the key, to my apartment, and began moving my things, out of Paul's residence. Paul calmed down later, and

spoke on the phone, civilly with me, said he was sorry, for his earlier words, and said, that I didn't have to move out immediately.

I confirmed, that I was then, in the process of moving out.

Paul said that I was under-handed, had let him down, that I had stabbed him in the back. Paul said, I was moving, just to be near my street trash, which Steve most certainly is not! However, Paul's audience, in my mother's and Helene's circles, are not necessarily, going to hear, my side of things... I cannot really explain, all of why I am moving, to them, without hurting Paul, in that process.

I told Paul, that I am moving, just to have, a place of my own, and suggested, that is what he should tell people. Perhaps, that won't fly, with the flock, of whatever Paul, has already been saying, about 'us'...

I also belatedly learned, or later learned, that Paul called the print-shop, twice on Monday, and told Trudy, that he has done, everything I could possibly want, and that I am really horrible, to be abandoning him. Apparently, each time he called, Paul launched into such an awful, and unceasing, prolonged tirade, that Trudy, first sought to excuse herself, more than once, and then hung up on him, and then he called back later, and began the whole thing again, and again, she sought to excuse herself, saying she had to focus on work, and he continued, and again, she hung up on him.

Trudy declined to tell me, exactly what Paul had said to her, other than what I mentioned, but she did say, it was 'pretty awful', and 'damaging'... Part of me understands, that anything, Paul might have said, to Trudy, that she might be inclined, to repeat as truth, to others...

Paul did tell me, that he had called Steve's brother, Patrick, and told Patrick, that I am Steve's lover. Paul says, that Patrick just insisted, that Steve is straight. I am uncertain, if this conversation, actually occurred, as I do not know, how Paul might have gotten Steve's phone number. I told Paul, that I would be unable, and perhaps even unwilling, to protect him, from Steve's anger. Paul was perhaps fortunate, that he did not speak to Steve, or to either of Steve's children...

I did mention in passing, to Patrick and Steve,

sometimes, Paul gets extremely venomous, and says untrue, harmful things, when he is angry, and that right now, Paul seems to be angry, with me, because I moved suddenly, from his residence. I did mention, that I had given to Paul, some money for rent, for time I would be absent, and that I did this, as my way of giving notice... Neither Steve nor Patrick, have mentioned any communication, with or from Paul... I did not mention, to Steve or Patrick, that Paul had said to me, that he had spoken, with Patrick.

Paul did say, that the only reason, he had his tirade that night, with Steve, was because the previous night, I had a loud wild party, with Daniel and Steve, and this had kept him, from sleeping, and his lack of sleep, had made him irritable... Truth is that I had Daniel over, with Steve, so that Daniel's presence might help to influence Paul, to behave, when Steve was around, which it seemed to do. Steve, Daniel, and I, had talked quietly, in the back room, the storage area, where my desk was located, with the door closed, without music. We were very quiet.

And that's all for now folks...

I write this, from my own apartment!

= 32 =

ROCK BOTTOM IS A PLACE
WHERE ANXIETY DWELLS
August 14, 1986

One thing, that both Steve I, deserve some credit for, is that we have both surmounted ourselves, in our dealing with each other.

Steve does not want, a close relationship, with anyone, and yet has allowed himself, to draw close to me, in spite of the fact that I do express love, and romantic feelings, for him. Steve deserves credit, for staying my friend, in spite of my romantic notions.

I deserve some credit, for refraining from inflicting, my romantic notions, upon Steve, for respecting his wishes, to view us as friends, for behaving as a friend, rather than as a lover, despite my deep, romantic emotions, for him, accepting these emotions, as my problem, because Steve, has honestly told me, his perspective. I peacefully accept, distance from Steve, when I ache for closeness.

Today, I went to the bank, to cash a check, for $20. I was cash-less, so did not have, money to buy dinner, during work... Trudy moved my normal work hours, back, so that I come in later, and stay into the evenings, as my norm. This allows Trudy, to give to me, many jobs, at the end of her day, around 5:30pm, before she departs, and she wants these jobs, to be finished, when she arrives, the next morning. My later arrival time, allows me, to perform these tasks, without overtime, or with less overtime. Trudy would give these jobs, often things she has been, 'too busy' to do, during the day, at the end of her salaried day, regardless of when I arrive. So now, I have a 'dinner break', during my work hours, rather than, a 'lunch break'... This change in my schedule, does make, my normal arrival time, at my home, to be about the same time, as Steve's. I am glad, about that aspect.

When I went to the bank, to get money to buy dinner, I was told, by the bank-teller, that I lacked any available funds. I did have, some deposited funds, but the bank said, these funds, had not yet been cleared for use. There is a delay, between when a deposit is made, and when the bank receives, use of those funds, usually reflecting the time, until

the actual checks, get to the actual bank, via mail or courier, that the funds are drawn upon.

That lag, between when a check is written, and when it arrives, at the bank, upon which it is written, allowed me, to go to a grocery store, and cash a check there, so that then I did, have some cash. By the time my check, goes from the grocery store, to my bank, my deposited funds, would be cleared for my use. I was able to buy, fuel and food. Things are financially tight for me...

To afford my own place, on my limited income, I will have to budget. I have made, a rough written budget, as a guideline to follow. I will place, a classified advertisement, for a roommate, in the local newspaper, tomorrow.

I figured, the total living expenses, associated with my apartment, and then divided that, equally in half, by two, to get a monthly rent, for a roommate. I plan to follow Garth's example, and have made some interview questions, to ask all prospective roommates. At this time, I am basically offering, an unfurnished room, in an unfurnished apartment.

I understand, that I am going to face, some challenges, regarding concealed sexuality. For Steve, I must maintain, my own image, as straight. Steve might tolerate, a gay person, knowing of our relationship, but then would wish to conceal, his residence, and life in general, from that person. If I gain a straight roommate, then Steve would prefer, that my image, and his, be maintained as straight, that we are friends, and then he might be less concerned, with visiting, or having my roommate, know where he lives. To my knowledge, Paul does not know, that I live, in the same apartment complex, as Steve...

Steve carried a nice heavy chair, over to my apartment, from his apartment, as a house-warming present. Our relationship seems to be growing together more, without that edgy feeling, that at any time Paul is going to listen in, or barge in with more venom. Steve and I, do seem to be able, to relax with one another, in my space, at this time. This is an improvement, a welcome improvement.

I think Steve wants, friendship and sex, with me. I think, Steve is content with his world, as is, with me in it, as is. I do not think, either Steve or I, are inclined, to seek to add more people, to our worlds. I think, I provide to Steve, an

escape from his world, a place, where he can be himself. Steve has been caring, and kind, gentle and tender, to me.

I understand, that the relaxed situation, Steve now enjoys with me, is for 'now', as it is likely to change, once I do have a roommate, and, in order for me, to be able, to afford to remain, I do need, to get a roommate. Nonetheless, I am enjoying 'now', and am glad to have, this time-period.

Both Daniel and Paul, say they are going, to give to me, a piece of furniture each. Paul is going to give me pillows. Paul is a political animal. Paul now senses, my de facto independence, and is no longer disagreeable. Paul says, that if I am unable to afford, to live on my own, and he at this time, feels that I can't, then I can move back in with him. Paul seems to have accepted the situation.

Albee is coming back to this area, to teach at a nearby university, for the month of November. Originally, Albee thought I had, an already written stage-play, to show to him. I presented Albee, with my journal books, of *The Life of Christos*, and have not heard from him since. Perhaps I should write, a stage-play version, about Christos, and take the college course, that Albee will be teaching. I could maybe make writing, a Christos stage-play, part of my school-work.

Given that I seek to have, no group of my own, nor endorse any one group, as the only 'right' one, and that I am 'tolerant', of abortion (before the fetus has an independent heart-beat, or when pregnancy endangers the life of the mother), suicide, and homosexuality, it would be unreasonable, for me to expect, our world to welcome me, at this time, as our world, has 'very different' expectations, of anyone, who might claim to be Christos. I am most certainly, not Michael-Brahman aligned, nor do I promote, any form, of THE way...

I have already enjoyed, using the work-out room, and the pool, at the apartment complex, and Steve, is certainly easier, to see. I am saddened, that boss John-S, has not seen fit, to give any pay-raise, nor even an answer, to my request for a pay-raise, to me. John-S has now missed, three of his own scheduled times, to give to me a response. Now, he just says, that he will do so, 'later', and has not

said, when that ‘later’, might be...

This could mean, that sometime, simply and only due, to financial reasons, I might be tempted, to seek employment, at any place, that would pay more to me, or perhaps one, that is closer to my residence. I would even accept, physical labor, from a job that pays more, even with my bad arm...

Steve has now left town, for a week-long vacation, with his kids. Raising children can be financially, and mentally, draining, but Steve is a fine father. Steve loves his children deeply, is concerned, for their mental and physical well-being, and is active, in their behalf, and he is warm and loving to them, while being a teacher, and a guide.

Stephen and Stephanie don’t know, just how fortunate they are, to have Steve, as their father. I, as someone who had, less than loving or helpful, or even friendly, parents, do understand, how fortunate, Stephen and Stephanie are, to have Steve, as a parent...

= 32 =

A DYNAMIC DAY
August 19, 1986

I began the day, at Paul's. Paul is in Key West, on a vacation, to get away from his treadmill, and, I suspect, also to avoid, watching me move, from his place. My little car only carries a little amount, of things each trip, and I only got, so much out of Paul's, when I did move. I have been staying, in my own apartment, but, many of my things, had remained at Paul's. I have paid, for that space at Paul's...

Originally, Paul said, that I should avoid, moving my things, when doing so, might disturb him, and my later work hours, prevented me, from being able, to do so, during the evenings. I did move some things, from Paul's, during the mornings, before he would go to work, and then Paul said, that he didn't wish, to see me move, saying that would be too painful. So, Paul made arrangements, to leave town, and told me, to wait until then, to get the remainder of my things, from his place.

I have now gotten, most all of my things, from Paul's, except for a few things, which he said, I could leave, in his storage room. Paul asked, if he could keep, my telephone answer message machine, which he had given to me, and I let him keep that. Perhaps it goes with the bureaus... I wondered if Paul had gotten money, from my mother, to get those bureaus, 'for me'...

Paul said, he would visit the *Key West Citizen*, and see, if he could get them, to pay for *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. It would be, expensive for me, to start buying, many magazine subscriptions again... However, I told Paul, that I would resume *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, if he could get, *The Key West Citizen*, to pay me for it. I still receive, many publications, and still have, some occasional 'mail glitches'...

Work was slow, so John-S, gave me the day off, from work today. I went to my storage facility, and got most of my things, out of there. I apparently have, until the end of the month, to vacant the storage unit, and retain my security deposit.

My car is beginning to show signs, of needing financial attention, but I can, in no way afford, to put any money, into my vehicle, at this time. My car, suddenly fish-tailed, on the

interstate, during a commute to work, a situation, caused by lack, of gripping tread, on the tires...

I went to *The Palm Beach Post*, and paid for a classified, 'roommate wanted' advertisement. While there, I applied for a job. It hit me later, that John-S, might not be so pleased, if the newspaper, contacts him, as a reference for me.

My local area continues to get daily rain, though for the past two days, the sun has broken through, in a circle of sky, directly above my apartment. That certainly is, some sort of nice sign... Having a peaceful place, of my own, gives me a base, for my energies to settle, once more. There was, 'little of me', at Paul's...

= 32 =

LIVING IN THE HILL
HANGING BY A THREAD
August 25, 1986

I have now moved, all of my things from storage. Paul said, that he asked, *The Key West Citizen*, to pay to me, $10 a week, for *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, and was told, they would consider doing so, when they review their budget, in December.

My 'roommate wanted' advertisement, got me three responses, right away. I selected Kelley, a young single woman, who said she was an airline stewardess, though currently, she is on a temporary lay-off, but has money in the bank. Kelley paid me cash, up front, for first and last week's rent, and said, an unfurnished place, was acceptable to her. Kelley moved a bed, into her room, so she is doing better than I!

Before accepting Kelley, I asked Steve, if he would have any problems, with my having, a female roommate. Steve said, that he had no objection. I thought it might be good, to have a female around, as a first impression, for the neighbors, to bolster a straight image, for both myself, and for Steve.

Two men living together, even if both are actually straight, or celibate devout monks, can be questionable, or perhaps even undesirable, from management's view, if those two, are then viewed, either as homosexual, or, as heterosexual, promiscuous, party people... I remember, during my time, living in Key West, how 'reluctant' some were, to even rent, to a single male, one who lives alone, because that male, might be gay, for it was assumed, that any heterosexual male, would obviously have, some close female...

Trudy has advised me, that it would be, easier to live, with a member of the opposite sex, than with someone, of the same sex. Trudy's perspective might be that, of a heterosexual young woman, but I went along with her advice. Trudy says she lives alone...

Over the telephone, before I actually met Kelley, I told her, I was bisexual, but that everyone, regarded me, as straight, and all my friends were straight, and thought of me,

as straight. I told Kelley, that I was seeing someone, so was not seeking sex, with anyone new. Kelley said, that she would have no problems, living in, and maintaining, that situation. Kelley said, that she has a fiance, whom she loves very much, but that he, is in a hospital, dying...

After Kelley moved in, I got my first 'concerns'. It seems to me, that perhaps Kelley, is more akin, to being a working prostitute, without any airline experience... It also seems, that Kelley's fiance, rather than, being in a hospital dying, is in prison, on death row... Kelley hopes to marry him, before 'the lights go out', so to speak... Kelley has asked me, if I would bring her to the prison, for this wedding, and serve, as 'best man', during the ceremony... I suspect, my family would be displeased, if the ceremony, were televised...

Kelley seems caught, between the government fields, of crime management, police, and criminal administration, the courts, on one side, and, on another, some white supremacist gangs, or groups, those inside of prison, and their associates, outside of prison.

Steve has at least chuckled, at my situation, commenting that I seem to have had, everything down right, as far as an interview process, and the right questions, but seem to somehow, have gone awry, with the results...

I can chuckle, that perhaps, I have finally given, those who observe me, something worthwhile, to observe...

I have advised Kelley, that perhaps, there are those, who do observe me, and perhaps, it might be best, if she seeks, to keep her activities, out of their sight. In that context, I have, for now, declined to go, to that prison, with Kelley, to seek to avoid, having any people, who watch her, then watch me...

I have told Kelley, that I have no problem, with her 'work', as long as she does it elsewhere. I have told Kelley, that I view prostitution, as a form of fair trade, inherently karmically neutral, and said, I simply hope, she fails to harm her clients, or be harmed, by them. I have told Kelley, that I do require cash, as payment for rent, and would not be interested, in trading sex for rent, as I need cash, to be able, to financially afford, to have this place, and, without a paying roommate, I then might be unable, to keep the place.

Kelley lacks a curtain, to block the view, into and out of,

her bedroom, and some of the neighboring children have gathered outside her window, in the mornings, when she sleeps... Kelley has commented, that she feels, like she is living, in a fish-bowl. Kelley is, 'quite healthy', and attractive...

Kelley is nice enough, and she is easy to get along with. As long as Kelley pays her bills, and does not cause problems, between Steve and I, then there is much, I am willing to overlook. I have told Kelley, that I lack any sympathy, for white supremacists, as I seek to promote, tolerance and harmony, within and between, all people. I remain willing, to engage in dialogue, with anyone, about anything...

With one topic, leading to another, in the getting to know you process, I did show to Kelley, *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, and she asked for a copy, to give to her fiance, and I gave one to her. I did not identify myself, to Kelley, as the author, of *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*.

Kelley did tell me, that she has a problem, with a recreational party material, that can be addictive. I have told Kelley, to refrain from bringing that, into my home, as I recall Artie dying, though his party poison was different than hers. Kelley, to my knowledge, has refrained, from bringing any party material, or clients, into my home. My home is her sanctuary, for now, and perhaps, she too likes, having it this way.

Steve does say, that he does not feel comfortable, coming to my place, if Kelley becomes known, as a prostitute, because he would, wish to avoid, having that aspect, shed unfavorable light, upon him, as a parent. I can sympathize, with Steve's position, but, as long as Kelley, is easy to live with, and pays her way, then I feel, I am unwilling, to 'put her out'. So many people think nothing, of putting others, out onto the streets, and might do so overly casually,without a second thought, but as one who has lived on the streets, I wish to refrain, from doing that, to anyone, without real cause.

I can visit Steve, at his home. The amount of privacy, that Steve and I lose, with Kelley being at my place, is the same amount, I could lose, regardless of whom lives with

me. I am feeling the distance, between Steve and I, without privacy, but, at least I can easily visit him, and he does continue to visit me.

Steve says, he does not understand, why I have not dropped Paul, now that I have, space of my own. Steve says, that Paul's hostile actions, have shown clearly, that not only, is he not a friend to me, but that he is, someone who seeks to cause harm, to me. Steve says, that as long as I have, anything to do with Paul, then Paul, will continue to seek, to harm my world, if for no other reason than to force me, to move back in with him.

Steve has expressed, that he does not like, coming to my place, if Paul might appear. I told Steve, that Paul lacks knowledge, of the exact whereabouts, of my place, but, that if Paul were to appear, I would expect him to call first, and I would also expect Paul, to be asleep, by 9:00pm, so his visits, after that hour, would be unlikely.

Steve is displeased, with my situations, with both Paul and Kelley...

Paul called me, early one morning, and told Kelley, to wake me, that it was important. Paul told me, that I should drop Daniel, and Steve, as they are trash, who are simply seeking, to be close to me, to gain entry, into my elite social world, and said that he is very disappointed, that he has failed, to impart to me, decent standards... I have refrained, from mentioning to Paul, any of the actual particulars, about Kelley, instead telling him, that she is an airline stewardess, on a layoff... Paul did say, he thought my living, with a woman, would be good for me...

Paul said, that unless I move, back in with him, then he might, just sell his apartment, and move from the area, as being in his apartment, without me there, is now painful for him...

I told Paul, that I remain in his life, and I remain in this area. I told Paul, that I simply wanted, to have a place of my own. I told Paul, that I always felt, like I was living in his place, and hope, that he can now, eventually, enjoy his space, in his own ways, for his own enjoyment. At least Paul hasn't said, that he will kill himself...

Paul told me, that he had told the phone company, to list my name, with his phone number. Paul did this, without my

knowledge, or consent. Paul perhaps anticipates, that I shall be moving back. At any rate, I asked the phone company, to give, my new telephone number first, from their telephone number, information service... Both phone numbers, will apparently be listed, with my name, in the next edition, of the phone book. That might make it look, as if there are two people, with my name, at two different places, with two different phone numbers, in this area... Paul can seem, 'smothering'...

I called my half-sister, and gave my new telephone number, to her. I told her, that there might be, some confusion, about which phone number, is mine, as there are two listings, but that this one is mine.

I told Red Jeff, my new phone number, and gave him my permission, to give my phone number, to Asmodeus. I am still a touch rankled, that Asmodeus never apologized, for having caused me offense, and that he tells people, that I think I am Jesus, without any regard, for the damage, that might do. I say I am Jualt, and that as Christos, my spirit has lived, the life of Jesus. I do not say, that I am Jesus. At most, I might say, that I was Jesus.

Steve got offered, a new position, for more money eventually, with his current employer. Steve will have to learn, a new machine, but I know he is capable, of doing that. I really need to find something, which pays good money...

Steve has gone with me, to visit Daniel. Daniel later commented, that Steve seems, much more relaxed with me, now that I have moved, from Paul's.

I feel, I am hanging by a thread, with my job, with my apartment, with Paul, and with Steve, but, at least, I am still hanging in there, and things can only get better...

For what it's worth, it was the money, from Kelley, that allowed me, to meet my bills... Steve's inability, to repay me, as he had said he would, his change being at the last minute, did leave me, with less money, than I had anticipated having. And I do respect, that Steve said, that he shortened his vacation, with his kids, due to the funds, which he did repay to me.

REJECTION ... AGAIN...
August 29, 1986

Rejection, can influence people, to examine themselves closely, though sometimes, the one rejecting one, is the one who is off-base... Some people, can become depressed, when rejected by someone, who mattered... If you don't care about someone, and are rejected, then it doesn't matter. If you are content with self, then rejection by other can matter less also.

When you do care, and have made an effort, and still get rejected, it can make you feel inadequate, make you feel, like something is wrong with you... This can pass in time, and I would advise, those in this situation, to seek to distract oneself, by focusing on things, that help one to smile, in harmless, and healthy, responsible, moderate ways...

I have also, come to advise people, that, if one wishes to be appreciated, then one must do things, that are appreciated. Sometimes this can mean, changing what one is doing, and sometimes this can mean, changing for whom one does, what one does...

If you feel, you do have, redeeming qualities, and are of value, then seek to understand, that it is, the person who rejected you, who has the loss, for doing so. Seek to understand, that you should seek to be, with those, who value you, in their worlds, and that it might actually be, best for you, to be someplace else, rather than, in a place, where you fail to be appreciated. Sometimes, you should accept, your share of responsibility, if you are seeking to be close, to a place, where you are not appreciated.

John-S, my boss, really did shock me, by giving to me, an extremely negative, employee evaluation, or devaluation, which he used to justify, denying me a pay raise. One might say, that John-S, added insult to injury.

I had anticipated, due to our slow, summer business season, that John-S might say, as he has said in the past, that existing revenue prohibits him, from paying more to me. I took a low wage, of $5 an hour, with an understanding, that I would receive, a raise, of 50-cents an hour, every six months, until I reached, a normal wage, of $8 an hour. John-S has said, that he must take into account, my over-

time pay, as over-time, is required of me.

I had figured out, that I normally earn, for John-S, an average of $200 a day, even in our slow season. This would be, the least I earn, for John-S. Of that, John-S now pays to me, $60 a day, from which taxes are then deducted. My pay raise, would have brought me, to $64 a day...

In the past, John-S has said, that, in addition to my wage, he has been printing *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, or at least, allowing his equipment, to be used to do so. However, *WORLD PRESS WATCH* is no longer relevant.

In his evaluation, John-S said, that my appearance is only fair, and that my work pace, is slow, and that my work, is sloppy.

It is easy, for me to believe, that my appearance, is normal, that I am always clean, and my clothing is clean, and I dress casually, with nice pants, and a nice shirt, and that John-S, has never said anything, about my appearance, prior to this evaluation.

It is easy, for me to believe, that my work pace, is much faster, than the pace I have seen, from any of my co-workers, during most of my life. I have never faulted anyone, for being slower than I. I assume, that my norm is simply faster, than the norm of others. I know this, without doubt, to be true. John-S, has never had, any complaint, with my work pace, prior to this evaluation.

I pride myself, on my work. My work is anything but sloppy. The quality of my work has helped John-S, to build his business. I can easily recall, the slow pace, of John-S' business, when I first arrived, and how my work, has gained him repeat business, and how his clients, do often compliment me. John-S has never complained, about the quality, of my work, prior to this evaluation.

I did wonder, if these things, were being said, more in response, to any inquiry about me, from the newspaper, that I had applied with for a job, than anything to do with, my appearance, pace, or quality of my work... I did wonder if an inquiry, from that newspaper, might have influenced, for John-S, to finally respond, to my pay-raise request, as that topic, had seemed to die, between us, and I had refrained, from mentioning it him. I had simply accepted, that the situation at this job, regarding pay, was what it is, and that if

I wanted better, I would have to seek it elsewhere, and I had done so.

John-S said, that none of the things, he had said, in my worker evaluation, really mattered to him. They do matter to me, if that evaluation, is something that will remain, permanently, in my work history. I did dispute them, and John-S did say, that it did not matter, if I thought these things, were true or false. John-S said what mattered, was that this is what he is saying.

What mattered, according to John-S, was that I, have been allowing Trudy, to make too many mistakes, and that my allowing Trudy, to make mistakes, is costing the shop money.

It is true, that I have only corrected, things from Trudy, which were relevant, to my own aspect of work. I do what is right, or ask questions, if uncertain. I have not been monitoring, Trudy's scheduling of jobs, her instructions to the press department, or bindery, or how she prices items, or how she files things...

John-S said, that Trudy makes mistakes, doing all of these things, and that he knows, that I know, that she is making these mistakes, and that he resents, that I am allowing her, to do this.

To me, this was a surprise, and very old ground. In the normal course, of my focusing, on typesetting, paste-up, and photography work, to get everything, 'camera-ready', for a press, I do not observe, all those other functions. It is sometimes, very challenging, for me, to simply maintain, the schedules and deadlines, for things I must do, with the way Trudy gives them to me, often at the last minute, as her norm, every day, or practically every day.

I told John-S, that I remain, as powerless, to get Trudy, to do things right, as he seems to be. John-S told me, that I must find the power. John-S told me, that it is my job, to get her, to do things right, and if I ever want, to have a pay-raise, then I must do so, and that's how it is, and he is telling me this, as my boss, and there should be, no questions about it, and I should just do it.

This girl, with less experience in general, and less time at this job, than I, gets paid more than I, to do less than I, and what she does, is often wrong, and she is titled, as my

boss, and has the right, to tell me, what to do, and now I am being penalized, because of the situation, that John-S has created, and maintained. I honestly do not believe, that John-S believes himself.

I believe, that John-S, thinks my moving, to my own place, makes me even more dependent, upon his good-will, and that he feels, I am stuck. And I am, for now. I understand, that John-S, could perhaps hire someone, to replace me, at a lower wage, than he pays me now. I understand, that I have experience, in knowing just what our existing clients want. I understand, that I am dependable, honest, competent, perform challenging work, in a quality manner, and that this situation, is what it is.

I was simply surprised, at how insulting, John-S felt a need to be. I was very surprised. Truly. I had expected better, from John-S.

I told John-S, that I was sorry, he felt this way. I told John-S, that I would seek to do, as good a job, as I can, and that I would also continue, to seek to job hunt, because I do need, more income, to meet my bills, now that I have, a place of my own.

I returned, to my normal course, of working. Trudy asked me, how did it go, as she knew, I was being called, to confer about, my wage request. I told Trudy, “He said no.” And I left it at that.

The next day, the typesetting computer’s memory board failed. The film processor motor froze. The air conditioner, on my side of the building, died. We even got, violent thunderstorms, with much lightning, and high winds. I did none of this consciously. Perhaps my turn, to say ‘coincidence’, in the face of unusual events... Bounce...

Both Kelley and Steve, told me, that John-S, probably didn’t mean, a word, of anything he said, not even the stuff, about Trudy. Kelley and Steve said they both see how I dress, and they know my character is good. Both Kelley and Steve attributed John-S’ behavior, to his desire, to keep others, from hiring me, to keep me, from using him, as a work reference. Daniel said, that John-S is just, a low mentality jerk.

[140514 ~ I had always remembered John-S, as basically a good person, until I transcribed this material, in

2014. I had remembered John-S, as basically a good person, who might have had, some occasional bad points. Perhaps I was wrong. Perhaps John-S was basically a predator, a bad person who had some occasional good moments. I have thought of John-S, as someone, who sought to live, through fair trade, in ways that are basically karmically positive overall. Today, I might wonder, if John-S, was actually, someone given to seeking false profit, who preferred, to seek to live in ways, that are overall karmically negative, thinking those ways, to be smart or cunning. I am at least today, uncertain. I am not seeking to be, insulting. I am simply making an observation, of a possibility, that had failed to occur to me, prior to today. I can still say, that other than Mr. Frank, and perhaps for a time, Abraham, John-S was the best boss, I have had in life.]

I think, John-S's harshness, toward me, his insulting words and ways, made me feel, a touch unhappy, with my situation with Steve. It remains true, that Steve is kind, and has good words, and warmth, and is supportive of me, in many ways. However, what I saw, focused on, was that if, after five months, of actually being, somewhat close, that Steve still insists, that he does not want, closeness with me, then he is unlikely, to change his position, so no matter how much, I love Steve, and, no matter how much, emotional pain I might feel, when I feel separation from him, it might be unlikely, that I will enjoy, a comfortable stable union, with him, as I want to have, with someone, for a long-term companion, in life... Eventually, Steve might simply decide, that we must separate, because of our closeness, and the longer I am with Steve, the more such a separation, could hurt... Even so, I am happy to be with Steve, when I am with Steve, and I am unwilling, to quit on, what we now have.

Overall, John-S says bad things of me, without any good points, to counterbalance them. John-S lacked, even one good thing to say, about me... Not one... Paul says, bad things about me, but at least sometimes, says good things too... Steve says, basically nothing, but good things, to me, about me, or is gentle, when he thinks I am making an error, but he declines to be viewed, as a steady lover, not even in private, even if we are... One might say, that in their own

ways, both Paul and John-S, do publicly embrace, their association with me, while Steve, prefers to publicly deny, his association with me...

At least, despite all of this rejection, none of these people seem willing to let me go, and that, in actual reality, has to have, some value.

Such can be life...

= 32 =

FLUX ... WHO SAID CHANGE IS SLOW...
August 30, 1986

I do have, my rent, car payment, and some money left over, but I do have, some other bills, on the way. I have accomplished, the major short-term goal, of meeting moving expenses, and then also, meeting the September 1st bills. However, Kelley has not paid to me, this week's rent. If need be, I could count this week, as her last week, which she paid in advance...

Paul called me, to ask me, to take him, to an eye doctor, in the morning, before I go to work, and I have agreed, to do that. I still have, all those coats, my mother gave to me, in storage at Paul's. I can't figure out, why my mother, gave them to me, as they have been, no use to me, and actually would need, some tailoring, to get them, to fit me properly, an expense, I am basically, unable to afford. I still think, the coats were meant, as decorations, so that they could be shown, to visitors, to give a nice impression, of how well I was doing.

Steve told me, that Patrick owes him $50, and yet Patrick is planning, on spending $60, to get a new bicycle, without first repaying Steve. Steve said, he was tempted, to tell Patrick, to get out, if Patrick actually does this.

Unbeknownst to each other, Patrick told me, that he had told Steve, that he was going to pawn his stereo, in order to get money, to get a bicycle, so that he could get around... Inadvertently, Patrick was telling me, that Steve was lying, when Steve said, that Patrick had extra cash, that Patrick was withholding... I did not mention, what Steve had told me, to Patrick, nor did I later mention, to Steve, what Patrick told me...

One might hope, that Steve would extend to Patrick, the same sort of understanding, that Steve has asked of me, in understanding, how he 'needs', to spend money, on other things, before he repays me...

Steve said, that his new job, a better job with the same employer, will give him more money, so that he might, ask Patrick to move, so that his privacy at home, will be restored. Steve said, that this would give to us, a place to have, 'quality time'...

Steve, on Thursday, made plans with me, to go snorkeling, on Saturday morning. A snorkel, is a piece of equipment, that allows one to breathe air, while facing down, while swimming... One can use a face-mark, to see around in the water, and a snorkel, to breathe... Our clear blue water, has many nice things, to view... I very much enjoy snorkeling...

However, Friday night, Steve called me, to say that he had made plans, to go out, with new work buddies, on Saturday.

I asked Steve, if I could still borrow, his mask and snorkel, to use at a beach anyway, and Steve declined, saying, that one of his work buddies, might now need to use that...

Steve also mentioned, that he had met a girl, and was interested, in dating her occasionally, though 'not seriously'...

I at least had, some over-time pay, at work this week. We have been less than busy, for three weeks, prior to this one... When I was handling customers, we stayed busy, even during the summer. Even though John-S, had guaranteed me, full-time hours, he has failed to do so.

I called Chuck. I understand, that Chuck is a luxury, as he won't be there for me, if anything happens... Nonetheless, Chuck carries his own weight, and that can be welcome too.

I told Daniel, that if I were to get, a million dollars, then I would take care, of Steve and his children, and we might live, happily ever after, but, if Steve, were to get a million dollars, then I might, never see him again... I don't really believe that, but I was feeling a bit off, after Steve's canceling our snorkeling, and saying, he would date a woman, and his lying to me, about Patrick...

So, while 'the stars', were influencing Steve, to step away from me, then Red Jeff got in touch, with me... While I do not feel, any strong romantic attraction, toward Red Jeff, I do sincerely like him. Red Jeff, does express, 'love', for me. I enjoy my time, with Red Jeff, both in and out of bed. I have declined, to consider a union, with Red Jeff, mostly because, Red Jeff fails to hold jobs, and, for the most part, he would need, someone to financially carry him, and I have

felt unable, to financially carry anyone...

I think, that a union, with Red Jeff, might be easier, or more stable, than one with Steve, because Red Jeff wants a union, with me... I became distant, from Red Jeff, when I moved in with Paul. I have not fooled around, with Red Jeff, during the time, that I have been seeing Steve. This is in part, due to that monogamous understanding, between Steve and I, that allows us, to enjoy intimate sex, with one another, which would change, if either of us, were to be, casually enjoying, recreational sex with others, which our understanding, does allow us to do, but which neither of us, has done.

So, Steve cancelled his Saturday plans, with me, and Red Jeff called me, after I had spoken with Steve, and so I made plans, to see Red Jeff, on Saturday, and he did come over, and we enjoyed working-out, and swimming. We did not fool around, though Red Jeff expressed, that he would like to do so, and he does not care, if Kelley is in the apartment, at the time... Nonetheless, I told Red Jeff, that for now, I wish to honor, a monogamous understanding, that I have, with 'someone'...

Red Jeff made a point, to tell me, he now has a job, and has had this job, for three weeks, and three days, and that this is the longest, he has ever held a job. Red Jeff said, that if Kelley, fails to pay rent, that he would love, to move in with me, and rent that room.

Steve called me, Saturday afternoon, after Red Jeff had departed. Steve invited me, to his place, and I went there, and we 'talked'... Steve said, he had enjoyed drinking, with his work buddies, and they had cancelled, their plans to go to the beach.

I told Steve, that I thought, it was inconsiderate of him, to have so abruptly cancelled, plans he had made with me, as if those plans, failed to matter.

Steve responded to this, by calling his work buddy, Mark, and telling Mark, with me sitting there, that he had no plans, for the day, and was going to be, in Mark's area, so perhaps, he could just stop over. Apparently though, Mark discouraged this...

I told Steve, that if he wished, to be dating a woman, and might be having sex, with others, then I was, at this time,

canceling our anal sex, and said I could still enjoy, fooling around safely with Steve, in other ways. I asked Steve, if he would still be interested, in fooling around with me, now and then. It has now been 'a while'...

Steve was noncommittal, saying he did not know.

I told Steve, that our time together, was most pleasant for me, extremely nice, and that I understand, his need to meet new people, and that I myself, would be going out, that very evening, to seek to meet someone new, unless I got together, with my old friend, Red Jeff.

I told Steve, that what I want most, is to have, a stable union with someone, a long-term companion, someone to face life with, and that if, that was not going to be him, that I would wish him well, and seek to find someone, who might fill that spot for me. I told Steve, that my life, seems to have been, a long running battle, with reality, and that I am a bit tired, of facing life alone. I told Steve, that there was nobody I would rather have, as a partner than he, but if he was not going to be that partner, then I had to look elsewhere. The choice, I said, was Steve's.

Steve expressed surprise, at what I was saying. Steve said, it sounded like, I was saying good-bye, and he said that we should remain friends.

I said I hoped, we would always remain friends, but, if he was seeing other people, and I was developing a union, with someone else, then perhaps, we would simply lack the time, and interest, to spend much time with one another.

Steve said, that with his new job position, he will be studying, during week-nights, but we could still enjoy, weekends together. Steve said, he has not gotten together, with me to frolic, due to lack of opportunity, with Patrick at his place, and Kelley at mine.

Steve started to say, something about, looking for a woman, to gain sexual satisfaction, and I said, that he certainly has seemed, sexually satisfied with me, in every way possible, literally, and that he either has, sexual satisfaction, with me, or he doesn't. I told Steve, that if what he wants is new meat, then he should say so. Some people do need, to have new stuff, to help them, to continue to enjoy, the old stuff...

I told Steve, that I have been, sexually satisfied, with him

Steve said, that he meant, that he would need to find a woman, if I cut him off intimately. I said, that I am unwilling, to engage in unsafe, intimate sex, with him, if he is going to have, casual, recreational, intimate sex, with others, and that comes with the territory, if he is going to have, sexual relations, with a woman. My ending our intimate sex came after, not before, Steve ended our monogamous understanding.

Steve said, that it seemed, that I would assume, that he was having sex, with women, if he simply dated some. I said, that I would expect, anyone to sex seek with him. Steve said, that he would be surprised, if I, hadn't already been, having sex with Kelley.

For what it's worth, Kelley has propositioned me, and I told her, what I told Steve, that when I am with someone, I wish to be with, that then I don't need to be, or want to be, with anyone else. I am happy, because I am with, the person I wish to be with. One might suppose, that could be easy, for someone else to understand, if that person was with someone, he or she wanted to be with.

I suppose, that there are many reasons, that people form unions, and sometimes this means, they are not, with the person, they would want to be with, but are making the best of things, with the person they are with...

I guess, if I can be around Kelley, and expect Steve, to trust me, to be honest, when I tell him, I have not had sex with her, that then I must give to him, the same benefit of the doubt... I must trust, that if Steve dates women, and has sex with them, then he will tell me, he has done so. Until then, our relationship, in Steve's view, should remain the same, unchanged... I acknowledge, that Steve made his point, and I agreed. However, I still don't like it. Steve said he would remain monogamous with me, even if he dated women, and I agreed that our intimate sex could continue.

I chuckled, and told Steve, that I would be, more able to believe, that he did not have sex, with that woman, if he had sex with me, before going out on a date, but, even then, one never knows... I said, maybe if he doesn't shower, before he goes out...

Steve said, "You can't be serious!?" And I agreed, that I was only joking, at least about the shower...

Steve then mentioned, that Patrick had told him, that Patrick had received, a phone call, from an anonymous male, who said that Steve was going to get hurt. Steve said, he had wondered, if I was behind that call.

I assured Steve, that I knew nothing, about any call like that, nor would I do something like that. However, I then mentioned to Steve, that Paul had once told me, that he had called Steve's, and spoken to Patrick, and I wondered, if that might be the call, that Patrick had mentioned. I told Steve, that I lacked any idea, of how Paul, might have gotten, Steve's telephone number, and that I had disbelieved Paul, when he told me, that he had made such a call.

Steve then surprised me again, by suggesting that we go, to a 'bathhouse', in Fort Lauderdale, a place for men who like men, to have some privacy. We did this, and split costs 50-50. We enjoyed the gym, the hot tub, the steam-room, and the dry-room, and we enjoyed privacy, with one another, in our own room.

I had a back-muscle problem, from working-out, earlier in the day, which didn't hit me, until we were on our way, to the bathhouse. Steve took some time, and massaged that spot, and helped me to feel better.

Steve said, that he dislikes Kelley, because she failed to care, for her child, so that her mother now has full legal custody, of that child. Meanwhile, even without custody, Kelley is pursuing child support payments, from the alleged father, of that child. Steve says Kelley, is more interested, in working as a whore, and partying, than she is, in building a stable world, to care, for her own child... Steve said, it really bothered him, that even if Kelley remained, a drug addict and a whore, that she would be, more likely to get custody, of her child, than the child's father, even if the father, was a saint...

Steve said, my situation with Kelley, is unlikely to end well, and that he will not be surprised, if I come home, to find everything gone. I said right now, the place is basically empty... I said, nothing seems to end well, or at best, ends with a natural, or sudden death.

I said, that good things seem to go on. It is bad events, which cause things to end, and thus things might seem, to never end well. Sort of like, how one always finds, what one

is looking for, in the last place one looks, which is because, one stops looking, after finding it... Or, how one can catch a bird, if one puts salt on its tail, because, if one can put salt, on a bird's tail, then one can catch it. Or, how all things become known, at the end of days, at least, when those things becoming known, causes things to end...

I said to Steve, that I am simply seeking, to do as good, as I can...

On the way back, Steve said, that there is a third girl, he might want to date... I had thought this new one, was to be the first... Steve said, that there are several, he is now interested, in starting to date, and he thought, he might alternate between them, to avoid developing, a serious relationship, with any of them.

Steve said, that he hopes I understand, that he loves me very much, and deeply, and only me, does he love. Steve then, had the words seem to tumble from his mouth. Steve said, he loves me, utterly, totally, and madly, and that I should never ever, doubt that. Steve said that I have brought him, to full happiness and joy, and that I help him, to smile in life. Steve said, "I love you, and only you." Steve said, that the warmth between us is mutual.

Then Steve said, he simply feels, he must show interest, in the women, who are now, in his world, to maintain his straight image, not only at work, but to his friends and family, who have begun to suggest, that he date, as he, to them, has seemed to be, without interest in women, for a while now. Steve said, that he has dated women, even after his break-up, with Matilda, and that it looks odd, that he has ceased, to date women, since he began, to have me, as 'his friend'...

Kelley told me, that she would be going, to Key West, with a gentleman, and she hopes, that he will give to her, the rent money she needs. Kelley told me, that she had told this gentleman, that unless he gives to her, the money she needs, to pay rent to me, that then she will move in, with him...

Steve called me, to say, he wanted to go back, to Fort Lauderdale, to enjoy more 'quality time', with me, and we made plans, to go again, this coming evening. This time, I shall cover the costs, and Steve will repay, his half later...

It seems a touch ‘off’, to me, that within ten minutes, Steve would for the first time, really go on and on, somewhat uncontrolled, with strong deep emotion, in his voice, saying that he loves me, totally and madly, and that everything we feel, is mutual, and then say, that he wants to date, three different women... That part, is not mutual...

And I know, that when Steve said, that he loves me, and only me, that he was speaking, without thinking, and that he loves, his children deeply, and more than me. I think, what Steve meant, was that, I am the only adult, for whom he feels, such romantic, passionate, love.

So, Steve kindled, ignited, the fire within me, and I am back, to strongly, passionately, madly, utterly, being in love with him. I really don’t want, anyone else...

What a trip...

= 32 =

UPDATES
September 6, 1986

The time spent with Steve, last weekend, was wonderful. I was able to enjoy, Steve's passion, without him having to hold back. Steve has always been gentle with me, and stopped, if I said stop. Steve has always been able, to handle my passion, so to speak, and that seems to remain, his preference... So many, seem to assume, that one male, is a 'pitcher', and the other, a 'catcher', whereas Steve and I, have always been, 'versatile'. My preference remains, a nice full body massage, with music and oil, and Steve does gives this to me. I love being able to totally relax, and have all of my body, feel nice... I do think, that people who focus, only on genitalia, are 'missing the boat', as the entire body, can feel pleasure...

Steve made dinner for me, at his place, on one evening, during the week, and I did the same for him, at my place, on another. Steve's car radiator died, so I spent an afternoon, driving him around, seeking a good used radiator, from scrap yards.

Steve and I, tentatively made plans, to go to a, men-for-men bathhouse, to enjoy privacy, this coming weekend, but then, he at least did tell me right away, that he changed his

plans, and would be getting together, with his work buddies, to go out to singles bars, and mingle with them with women. This is good for Steve's image, but I am a touch disgruntled by it. I might prefer, a partner, who can be loyal, and happily content, with one person. I understand, that this is, somewhat of a 'job function', for Steve, and I accept that.

Steve gives me, ample words, that this is just for his image, but I do know, how complicated, things can become, and hurtful, when relationships, get tangled, in multiple simultaneous affairs... I remember how hurt I felt, inside, emotionally, when I had to silently endure, being 'just a friend', around Russ, when he was being 'friendly', affectionate, with Laurie, in front of me, and I hope, to avoid that situation, with Steve... I have told Steve, that I would prefer, not to be around him, when he is on a date, with a woman.

Steve complained, that his brother, Patrick, wants to watch a football game, in the living-room tomorrow afternoon. Steve says, that it is his living-room, and his television set, and he hates sports. Steve complained, why should he, have to watch, something he hates, in his own living-room, on his own television set. Patrick's point of view, is that he lets Steve's kids, watch whatever they want, whenever they want, and Patrick pays half the bills, though Steve disagrees, that Patrick actually does pay half... The humor I saw, was that, when Steve's work buddy, Mark, came over to Steve's last evening, and asked, if there were any sports on television, then Steve, immediately turned the television, to sports...

Kelley did not pay rent, and said, she had made arrangements, to move in, with a 61-year-old man, who she says, does care for her, and he is impotent, so she feels, that she can live with him, without 'complications', as she put it. Impotency and libido, I believe, are two separate things. There is a joke, that a man, is always 'functional', as long as he has, a tongue... A man, might still enjoy, some sexual activity, even if unable, to easily gain, or sustain, erections... Kelley seemed to feel, that the man's impotency, meant a lack of sex...

This gentleman, is willing, to let Kelley slide on rent, as he enjoys her company. I hope Kelley, uses this opportunity,

to get on her own two feet, in life. I wonder, if life insurance, pays a survivor, if the person who dies, was executed, in an electric chair... Perhaps that might be, a 'pre-existing condition', that lets a life insurance company, 'off the hook'...

I have accepted, a rent deposit, from a 28-year-old carpenter, named Drexel, and he is to move in, tomorrow. I have not told Drexel, anything related to sexuality. I feel that Steve, will be more comfortable, as long as everyone maintains, a straight image. Steve said, he is very glad, to see Kelley go.

Paul has quit working, for Frank-B. The last two times, that I have done payroll, for Frank-B, and paid bills, it has taken three visits, instead of one. Paul, usually has everything organized, while Frank-B, now does nothing, that Paul used to do, and I have to do, all the organizing, that Paul had been doing... Frank-B, does seem to expect, perfection of others, while he himself does nothing, and perhaps, it is his inability, to do things himself, that influences Frank-B, to demand perfection of others...

Frank-B complained, about how Paul, had 'left him in the lurch', with 'a total mess'. I did not find, a total mess, but I did find, a lack of anything being done... Frank-B hopes, that Paul, will be able to repay him, without the income, from that job... As I recall, Paul had seemed 'unable', to repay Frank-B, even with income, from that job... At least Frank-B, has a charming side, that helps people, to put up with, his sometimes sharp, or critical words, which I now believe, are due to his insecurity, or panic, his inability, to do things himself.

Frank-B caused me, to be late, for my job, at the print-shop, one day. I called the shop in advance, and said, I would probably be, 30 minutes late. I was 30 minutes late. When I got to the print-shop, I received, a steam-bath lecture, an abundance of sharp, hot, angry words, from Trudy, who demanded, that I examine my priorities, and drop, my second job, if it was going to interfere, with my ability to be responsible, to my job, at the print-shop.

I understand, that probably, some of Trudy's words were due to her need, for me to be there, to cover her butt. Although Trudy does give to me, jobs at 5:00pm, that she needs to have, ready in the morning, she is also fond, of

giving to me, upon my arrival, other jobs, that she has to have, 'right away'... I do the normally scheduled jobs, during the day. So far, I have never missed a deadline, for any job, scheduled or unscheduled... Given the many jobs, to juggle, I would think it normal, natural, and understandable, for any worker in my position, to sometimes miss a deadline. I have not done so.

I pointed out, to Trudy, that Frank-B, pays to me, more than does John-S, and that Frank-B, has always held out, an offer, of full-time employment, to me, has never broken a wage agreement, with me, and that this, is the only time, I have ever been late, and I called, hours in advance, to let her know. One might also note, that I have a real need, for income, to meet my bills, beyond what I earn, at the print-shop, so this second job, is necessary, for me, at this time.

It was not a pleasant week thereafter, at the print-shop with Trudy. The workload is picking up, which means, I could get over-time, and that could be nice. However, this is aggravating Trudy, as she feels, somewhat unable, to deal with the existing workload, and she has expressed, that John-S, had better help her, as she is not going, to put in more time.

Trudy also gave to me, two tips, about 'work'. First, Trudy told me, that when making touch-ups, to negatives and metal plates, where markers are used, to cover unwanted spots, and lines, blemishes, that one should, make more marks than necessary, so that it looks, like more work has been done.

Sometimes, customers like to supply, or retain, pre-existing negatives and plates, to seek to save money, when a job is repeated, printed again... John-S, likes to save such files, and Trudy thinks, even these, can be 'touched up' again... When John-S, is unable to locate, where Trudy has 'filed' something, then he sometimes feels, unable to charge the customer again, for producing something, from scratch, starting from zero, that we should have, so he is concerned, that Trudy, avoid throwing things out, or hiding them, rather than, properly filing them.

There is a minimum charge, for set-up, even when we have retained the files, so John-S can make some money this way, without paying anyone to actually do, any set-up

work... I do retain, my own computer files, of everything, but, if I have to print something out, then that requires, photo-developing paper, time, and some paste-up time...

Trudy feels, that charging again, can be normal, as sometimes things do get lost... John-S, seems to blame me, when Trudy wrongly files anything... Perhaps John-S might think, that I sabotage Trudy, when I do not, never have, and never will. Perhaps Trudy, enjoys watching John-S, yell at me, for her mistakes...

Trudy also advised me, that, as the shop makes money, for billing for time, that some mistakes are okay, as they then require, time to correct, and the shop, can earn more money... It just seems wrong, to me, for a shop, to earn more, by doing sloppy work, than by doing, quality work, and even more wrong, if that were to be deliberate...

I silently, and respectfully, disagree with Trudy, on both of these things. I am going to disregard, Trudy's instructions, and continue, to seek to perform, quality work, efficiently... Beware of those, who worship false profit...

Life sure has, a lot of quirks...

= 32 =

MORE COLD WATER
September 8, 1986

In another week, it will have been six months that I have known Steve. Kelley moved out, and Steve came over, and fooled around with me, before Drexel moved in. I also enjoyed, a nice full body massage, from Steve, as my back slowly heals, from that muscle injury. It has taken about ten days, for me, to get back to normal.

On one hand, I can tell myself, that I must be doing something right, if Steve has kept me, in his world, for six months. On another hand, Steve strongly affirmed again, that we are, 'just friends', and that he has done nothing, in his view, to indicate otherwise.

I was silent about that, but I think, Steve has done much, to indicate otherwise. However, I did affirm to Steve, that I respect his position, and understand, that being 'friends', has always been, our mutual understanding, our 'official' position.

I reminded Steve, that my 'positions', have also remained the same. I affirm, that I do feel, romantic love for Steve, which I feel, is a good basis, to build upon, for a union, and that I think, Steve is someone, with whom I could enjoy, a union.

I said, that I understand, that we are, 'just friends', and that he can go out, and see other people. I also affirmed, that if Steve does fool around, with anyone else, as is his right, then I would at least wish to know, and to refrain from intimate sex with him, for at least a month thereafter, and that also, is a mutual understanding, an 'official' position...

I told Steve, that I do lack, any desire, to meet new people, while I am with him, but that, if he does, 'meet new people', then I too, might seek to, 'meet new people'. I said, I do not intend, to seek to meet new people, until after, Steve starts to do so.

I told Steve, that if we meet new people, that then, our own, 'friendship', might suffer, or at least, become less important.

Steve disagreed, and said that he knew Abe, before Abe met Layla, and he thinks Abe, would put him, before Layla, if there were some sort of disagreement, between Steve and

Layla. I am uncertain.

To me, the one, with whom one shares a union, should have priority, in one's life, and one should, naturally wish, to give that person priority.

However, Steve disagreed, and said, that two male friends, are often much closer, than a man, and his wife...

Lastly, Asmodeus told me, that he does not believe, that musician, Jerry Garcia, of The Grateful Dead, is actually Jesus. Asmodeus said, that in his view, I remain, a 'contender'... Our weather became sunny after that...

[190522 ~ Just for the record, I do not seek 'to be Jesus', in that I do not seek to alter my behavior, to make me 'more Christ-like'. I assume I was Jesus, and that I am 'me', and that I can behave, as I would 'naturally behave', and thus be 'me', be 'authentic'. God did not ask me to change my ways. God seemed to like me as I am. Some people today, seek to behave as they think Jesus would do, and to thus be 'Christ-ed', and to do this they seek to alter their behavior, perhaps to be better people, and perhaps doing so does help them to be better people, and if so, I am glad for them. However, I am 'just me'.]

= 32 =

SMOOTHER SAILING
September 13, 1986

My new roommate, Drexel, seems to be, financially responsible, and easy to live with. Like many heterosexual-thinking males, Drexel neither cooks for himself, nor cleans after himself, but, as long as Drexel, keeps his mess, in his room, then I won't complain.

Steve has visited fairly often, and fooled around twice with me, in my room, behind closed doors, after Drexel has gone to sleep. I have music on, and Steve and I, are not 'loud'. This was Steve's idea, and it surprised me. Steve said, that if Drexel suspects anything, then Drexel, probably isn't straight anyway, and said, that as long as, Drexel can't see anything, then he can't say, what happens behind closed doors. At worst, Steve says, Drexel might think, I was 'with someone', but not have certainty, that person was Steve... I was surprised, by Steve's 'boldness'...

And, while Steve wished to be penetrated, he did not wish, to penetrate me, and I somewhat welcomed this. This is something, that I do for Steve, but continue to lack, any physical pleasure in it. I guess, for what it's worth, for the record, I lack any pleasure, physically, in penetrating Steve, and this is also, something that I do, to please him.

And I mused, that some men, fear the size of a penis, if anticipating being penetrated, and I considered, that one might note, that the size, of a 'turd', is generally larger, than the size of a penis, at least in width...

For his part, Drexel has said nothing, and asked no questions... I think Drexel remains unaware. I have said nothing, about sexuality, to Drexel.

I am still doing, extra work for Frank-B, and, with Drexel's money, and my full-time job, I am doing okay, financially. Kelley left her bed, when she moved, with the understanding, that I can keep it, in payment, or compensation, for her phone bill. Kelley had sought, to add all kinds, of extra special services, to my phone, and I did stop that. I finally have, a bed to sleep on, instead of a carpet, and a bedroll. Drexel brought his own bed, his only piece of furniture.

Daniel said, that he would look around, during the day,

when I am at work, to help find, some inexpensive curtains, for me. When Daniel needed some fliers produced, I had asked him, for $50, to cover my time and work, but he pleaded poverty, so I did it all, for free. This is Daniel's way, he says, of repaying me, for that, a fair trade. I suppose, this could also be, that 'house-warming gift' from Daniel, which has yet to appear...

I spoke with Paul, and he complained, that I am charging too much, for rent, for my extra room.

I told Paul, that I figured my total costs, and divided them, in half, to determine what to charge, for that room

Paul said, his place, is much nicer than mine, and that he, would never ask, that high amount, for his extra room.

Well, first, I am not asking, a 'high amount', and second, at least whoever rents from me, gets privacy, domain, and respect in my home, and use of my living-room.

I told Paul, that for me, living in his home, was like living in a motel, with a belligerent maid...

Paul said, that living with me, made him, feel like a prisoner, in his own home...

I told Paul, that I hoped, that he might now then be glad, that I have moved... I told Paul, that I am truly sincerely glad, that his mood has seemed to improve, with me, now that I have moved.

Steve said, that he would help me to learn, the technical workings, of computers. Steve said, that might be, a good job market, for me to explore. Computer technician work, says Steve, is better paying than what I get, doing pre-presswork, in a print-shop.

I bought a book, on computer hardware, to study.

ADDICTION, ABSTINENCE, AND MODERATION
September 14, 1986

In the recent past, Asmodeus has become, extremely irritable, when deprived, of marijuana and beer. Asmodeus found his attention, focused upon, getting high, and finding more, when he lacked any. To solve, what Asmodeus came to perceive, as a problem, he has now joined a group, called Narcotics Anonymous, NA. This group is composed of people, who seek to refrain, from use of party material, including alcohol, but also other than alcohol. The people meet, having a sober way to socialize, without partying, and also get to interact, with those who have faced, this same problem, with those who found ways to cope, and, by sharing their experience, help one another, to remain sober. This can be important, to those for whom partying has become harmful, to their health, or their worlds.

Asmodeus says, that NA, tells its audience, that they must accept, that they are powerless against addiction, and they must abstain totally, from any form, of party material, because they lack, any self-control, that they lack, any ability to moderate, as evidenced by the fact, that they do have a problem. The first step, toward recovery, toward a healthy life, is to admit, that one has a problem, and that one has been, unable to solve, that problem when alone, or at least, when within one's existing world.

Once one admits, that one has a problem, and that alone, one has been unable, to have healthy self-control, moderation, then one can accept, that one could be helped, by a 'higher power', to become, and remain, sober. That 'higher power', can be the group, NA.

Though some people are able, to free themselves, from addiction, on their own, alone, it can still be helpful, to those people, to have a healthy-minded group, to socialize with.

Asmodeus said, that to be healthy, and enjoy life, all people, should remain sober, at all times... Asmodeus says, that anything, that alters one's mood, is an escape from reality, and that any need, to escape from reality, reflects a failure, to cope with reality, in a healthy manner. To Asmodeus, a 'healthy manner', is now, a totally sober manner.

Asmodeus says, that I am failing to cope with reality, because I use marijuana. I also drink socially. I do not think, that I have a problem. Asmodeus thinks, cigarettes, tobacco use, is okay, because it does not seem, to alter mood. Asmodeus says, that marijuana can make one feel content, apathetic, and that this can allow one, to tolerate problems, rather than seeking improvement.

Asmodeus' decision, to seek to remain sober, has altered, his household situation... Asmodeus wants everyone, at his home, to refrain from, any form of partying. I have told Asmodeus, that I can respect this, and can be content, sober, in his home.

I told Asmodeus, that while there are people, who are powerless, against addiction, and whose party habits, have been harmful, to their health, and their worlds, that to me, these people, seem to be a minority, and that the majority example, seems to me to be, people who do find ways, to recreate responsibly, without causing harm, to their worlds, or to their health.

I told Asmodeus, that it seems to me, that it could be an error, for NA to seek to maintain, that their way is THE only way, when what it could be, is an appropriate way, A way, for people with that particular problem.

I told Asmodeus, that exercising self-control could help one, to strengthen self-control. I said that moderation might be more of an exercise, in self-control, than abstinence. However, I said, that when moderation, is impossible, or too challenging when alone, then abstinence, might indeed, be the best policy, for that individual.

Asmodeus brought Red Jeff, with him, when he joined NA. Red Jeff, is now 24 years old, and indulges, in marijuana, and cocaine rock. I believe cocaine rock is a physically addictive substance, and that marijuana is not physically addictive.

Asmodeus believes, marijuana is physically, and mentally, addictive, and claims he felt, a craving for marijuana, when he lacked it. I have never felt a craving, for marijuana, when I lacked it. I also remain, totally sober, before work, and during work. I believe, if a substance, influences one to want it, at all times, even before, and during, work, then one might have, a problem, with that

substance, as, if it harms one's job performance, then it is harming, one's world.

At any rate, Asmodeus says, that Red Jeff, lives to get high. Red Jeff says, that getting high helps him to enjoy life. It does seem true to me, that Asmodeus is insulated, with government support payments, due to his physical disability, while Red Jeff, must work, to barely be able, to afford a cheap room. Asmodeus did point out, that Red Jeff is living with his mother again, so he really does not face, financial pressure. I think Red Jeff, might actually spend, some of his time, drifting, going from one person's home, to another, 'having fun', but that some of the places, where Red Jeff might stay, are places, where he does party, on cocaine rock, and that he develops, and feeds that habit, and craving, even if that substance, is gifted to him. I advised Red Jeff, to avoid places, where people are doing cocaine rock, if he wishes, to refrain, from doing it himself.

Red Jeff says, that being high helps him, to enjoy life. Red Jeff says, that if he keeps smoking marijuana, then he will be more able, to stop use, of cocaine rock.

Asmodeus says, that use of marijuana, will make Red Jeff, want to have, cocaine rock. Asmodeus says, that the problem, for addicts, is stimulation, of brain pleasure centers, regardless of, what is doing the stimulating. Asmodeus says, that NA members are also urged, to refrain from sex, because sex stimulates brain pleasure centers.

Asmodeus says, it can be tough, or impossible, for some people, to give up pleasure, to become monks or nuns, overnight, instantly. Asmodeus says, it is understandable, that some people, have 'relapses', return to partying, and therefore, NA welcomes back these people. It is their returning, to try, and try again, that eventually, does bring progress, and can lead, to a healthy, content, sober life.

I believe, cocaine rock is expensive, and marijuana inexpensive, and that the 'high', the 'buzz', of cocaine rock, is quick, and the high, from marijuana, is longer lasting. I doubt, that if Red Jeff, was unable to afford marijuana, that he would then be able, to afford cocaine rock.

Red Jeff says, that he hears a voice, in his head, when he is alone, telling him, to get cocaine rock. I suggested to Red Jeff, that what he meant was he had urges, a craving,

to do cocaine rock, but he said no, that he actually hears, a human voice, telling him, to go get cocaine rock. Red Jeff says, he hears this voice, as clearly as he hears, a real person, speaking to him. Red Jeff says, he has even argued, with this voice, and that it is capable, of having interactive dialogue, conversation, with him, so he disbelieves, that it is himself, that he hears. Red Jeff said, that he, at no time, has memory blackouts, or loss of time. Red Jeff says, that he never feels, like anyone else, is in control of him, and that voice, seems to go away, whenever other people, are around.

Red Jeff says, he will refrain, from attending NA, as long as they insist, that he refrain, from marijuana and sex. Asmodeus is displeased, with Red Jeff, and does not want Red Jeff, to influence him, Asmodeus, to return to use, of party materials...

I have sought to compromise... I told Red Jeff, that he could continue, to use marijuana, in my presence, as long as he continues, to refrain from use, of cocaine rock. I have told Red Jeff, that any time, he feels a craving, to use cocaine rock, that he can call me, or just come over, to my place. I did affirm, again, to Red Jeff, that I am remaining monogamous, and am content, but would nonetheless welcome his company, without sex. I told Red Jeff, that I am maintaining, a straight image, at my home, and that Red Jeff, should maintain his own image, as straight, in front of my roommate... Red Jeff, is straight acting, and appearing, though he is, exclusively gay, in sexual preferences, and behavior...

I also suggested, to Red Jeff, that he could attend NA, and simply do so, as relevant to cocaine rock, and that he need not mention, anything about sex, or marijuana, and should not do so there...

I also suggested, to Red Jeff, that if he felt, his job was low-paying, then he could seek, additional work, or another job. I advised Red Jeff, to keep this job, while he also seeks to find, something better.

Steve said, he might not, be able to cope, with his brother's drinking habit... Steve said, that he has become, totally fed up with Patrick, and that he has told Patrick, that Steve prefers, to live alone, so Patrick should plan, on

moving out, by the end of November, after Thanksgiving. Steve says, he might let Patrick stay, but he is hoping, that his position, influences Patrick, to seek to save some money, and to thus spend less, on alcohol.

Patrick became depressed, and glum, but sobered up. Patrick then asked Steve, if he could stay, until the end of May, and Steve agreed, even though Steve would prefer, to live alone. Patrick, promptly went on, a drinking binge, passing out, in the living-room, with a beer in his hand, which he proceeded to spill, all over a table, and the rug.

My advice to Steve, is to return to his original position, of having Patrick move, at the end of November, and for Steve to tell Patrick, that it is Patrick's drinking, that is the problem, rather than Steve's desire, to live alone. I advised Steve, to tell Patrick, that if Patrick, refrained from drinking, or avoided getting sloppy drunk, in Steve's home, that then Steve would let Patrick stay on longer. I said that this, might influence Patrick, to refrain from drinking, if Patrick thought, that his refraining from drinking, could grant him, more time at Steve's.

Steve says, his upcoming, significant pay increase, means, that he no longer, will need Patrick's rent money. Steve said, he really would prefer, to live alone, and for now, his position to Patrick, remains unchanged.

Sometimes, all one can do, is to plant seeds...

Steve and I went out of town for an evening at the baths. I was in good health this trip, with a good hip, good back, and lightened hair. I covered our costs, again, with an understanding, that Steve would repay me, sometime in November. Steve just had major car repairs, which drained his funds.

I spoke briefly, with my mother, and gave to her, my new telephone number. I have told those people, who are acquainted with both Paul and I, that I moved fromPaul's, to have a place of my own. Some fault me, for not staying, to be helpful to Paul. I have not defended myself, by telling them, of Paul's behavior. I do not wish, to do damage, to Paul, or to anyone.

WEAR THE BOOT OR BE UNDER IT ?
September 17, 1986

Wear the boot, or be under it? I would like, a third option...

Trudy is perhaps, the greatest incentive, motivator, for me to think about, seeking a management job... It seems, that unless one is a manager, that then one might be, subject to abuse, from a manager...

Sometimes Trudy's demands, are 'way out of bounds', and show her lack of understanding, of what needs to be done, of the time that might be needed... I assume, that Trudy, is simply responding, to her own juggling, and to her own forgetfulness, and that often, it might be a customer inquiry, to Trudy, about if a job, is at least ready for proofing, that reminds Trudy, that the job, needs to be begun...

There have been, a number of times, that Trudy, has told a customer, that she will inquire of me, about the status of a job, and then, brings that job to me, for the first time, then goes back, to the phone, and tells the customer, that it's still in type-setting, but that she has asked me, to make a point, to get it done... Ultimately, this makes Trudy look good to a customer, as if she is concerned, and granting that customer, some special favor, and makes me look bad, as if I have ignored that customer, or am slow... I do not like this aspect, but, for me, this is, 'how it is'...

Sometimes, I ask that question, could you be friends, with someone like yourself? The answer, in my mind, should be yes, for if you can't be friends with you, then you probably, can't expect others, to be friends with you... I do not think, Trudy could be friends, with Trudy, because Trudy leans too much on others, to cover her lacks, in a one-way manner, so she would obviously be unable, to lean on someone like herself, who would be seeking to lean, much on her...

In my perspective, Trudy is creating, a karmic debt for herself, and lowering, her spirit's dharma... It might be construed, as a favor, to Trudy, to help her, from lowering herself, to dharmic negative realms, if I helped Trudy, to repay her karma, by calling karma on her, but, for now, I rest content, with keeping my own behavior, 'clean', and earning

whatever positive karma, there might be, from 'turning the other cheek'...

I also sadly admit, that I have had some qualms, about my relationship, with Steve... I fed dinner to Steve, on Thursday, Friday, and Saturday, and then covered our costs, for the baths, on the weekend, which was a fun time. I do very much enjoy, just being with Steve... My heart and spirit are very happy, when I am with Steve...

However, I do hope, that Steve might, when able, reciprocate, and cover some costs, for 'us'... Right now, Steve says, he is financially strapped, and I like to believe him, and I like to believe, that I am doing, what a friend should do, and being helpful. However, in the back of my mind, I do understand, that Steve earns, 25-percent more than I, and our household expenses, are the same... While Steve, does have to pay, money for child support, he also earns income, from a roommate, Patrick.

My friend Howard, jokes, that two can live, as cheaply as one, half as long... So, Monday night, I did not feed Steve, and he did visit, when I was making my dinner, and I did eat, in front of him, without offering any food, to him, simply saying, that I had not, made enough food, for two, and that I did need, to stretch my resources, a little. It did occur to me, that it would not cost Steve, that much money, to prepare a dinner, at his home, for both of us...

What I found, instead, was that on Tuesday, Steve did not return, to his residence, from work... I wondered if Steve was with, his work buddy, Mark... I wondered, if Steve, was seeking to mooch, somewhere else... I mused, that Steve says, that Mark is a thief, but that at least Mark, has work-related knowledge, that he can teach to Steve, and he does have money... I did not like, thinking these thoughts...

Steve has made a point, to reassure me, that his time with Mark, is 'professionally motivated', with nothing romantic, nor sexual, involved. I accept, that Steve's socialization, with Mark, can help Steve, to feel secure, and competent, at his job.

Daniel gets to hear my concerns, as he gives to me, a sympathetic ear... Daniel said, that Steve is having problems, coping with the fact that he is having, a long-running affair, with another man. Daniel said, that Steve,

now 40, probably never expected, to be loved, or to feel romantic love, again, discarding romantic love, as a young person's fantasy... I believe, that Steve, has spoken with Daniel, about 'us'...

Daniel said, that the first two years, of any relationship, are the toughest, but, after that, things get smoother, and that is when, the relationship, really begins to grow. Daniel said, during the first two years, the people are focused, upon each other, as individuals, and thereafter, they start to focus, as a couple, on interacting, with, 'the world'...

Daniel did 'surprise' me, by telling me, that he has been, 'too busy', to look around, for curtains for me, and that, if he did look, for curtains for me, that I should pay him, for his time, and Daniel said, that he should get, $100, from me in advance...

As I recall, helping me to find curtains, was Daniel's suggestion, and was to be, his way of making fair trade, of thanking me, as his payment to me, for the time and work I went through, to make fliers for him, as an interior designer... Not to mention that nonexistent house-warming gift...

Daniel also said, that I should get, 'nice curtains', and be prepared, to 'spend some money'... Daniel had originally said, that he could help me, to get something 'nice', by getting some for me, when he gets some, for one of his clients, and thus help me, to save money...

I thanked Daniel, and said, that I would visit thrift shops, on my own, to seek to find, some inexpensive curtains. I diplomatically refrained, from mentioning to Daniel, all of his past words that he has now made worthless, hollow, but I am again disappointed in Daniel, as a person and as a friend, though viewing him as a friend, is perhaps my own error. I suppose, that Daniel, like Chuck, is one of those, 'luxury friends', that I afford to have, rather than being, a helpful friend... I suppose, that perhaps, Daniel is an 'acquaintance', rather than being, a 'friend'... I was just miffed. Daniel is at least pleasant company. Daniel also drinks, and perhaps this sometimes affects, his memory and judgment.

I think sometimes, people offer to do something for you, to get the 'brownie points', good-will, from their offer, even if

they might, actually lack any intent, to do what they say, they are going to do. I think these people, can harm one, if one refrains, from doing something, because one thinks, someone else is doing it. One then finds oneself, further down the road, with nothing having been done...

Accept people as they are, and seek to make your own adaptations. It can be mismanagement, to seek to put, the square peg, into the round hole...

My roommate, Drexel, says he is going to move, at the end of the week. Drexel had had an argument, with the people he was living with, and then moved, to my place. Drexel says, he has now mended bridges, with those people, so is going to return, to living with them. Drexel also mentioned, that he believes, that Steve and I are lovers, first, because he says, he heard us one night, and second, because of how he feels, Steve looks at him, with a touch of jealousy... Drexel said, he doesn't care about those things, but he thought Steve, was 'wrong', to look at him, in that way...

I did not mention this, to Steve... I chuckled to myself, that I do prefer, that Steve believe, it is okay, for us to fool around, 'behind closed doors'... I can admit though, that part of me, was pleased, that someone had thought, Steve to be, 'jealous'... I suppose, that if Steve, can tell people, that he is straight, and know that to be untrue, that then he might, also suspect, that anyone else, who claims to be straight, might also be lying...

A person, who, as a norm, seems to doubt the truth, of what others say, could be a person, who is given to lying, as a norm...

From working-out, at this apartment complex, regularly, and eating regularly, I have been gaining weight, and shape, and am in, 'good condition'... I weighed 135 pounds, in March, and now weigh, 150 pounds. Although I am taller, than Steve, he does weigh, about 190 muscular pounds. Steve is, 'well-built' at 5'8". I am 'slender', perhaps still a little under-weight, for my height, at 6'2". I do believe, that moving from Paul's, and having Steve, more in my life, has been healthy for me...

MORE ICE FROM THE HEAT FACTORY
September 19, 1986

Steve always responds, to my good-night hug, and kiss, though he rarely initiates it. I had had, another stressful day, at work, and really wanted, Steve to initiate, our good-night hug and kiss. When Steve didn't, and just seemed, to be about to exit, without that, I complained to him, and said, hey, before you go... Steve said, we are just friends, with no bonds. Steve said, he hopes I find someone else, to attach myself to.

Steve did then say, that if he wanted, a close relationship with someone, that I would be, the person he would want it with. Steve said, he had not fooled around, with anyone else, and has remained, loyal to me, and would want me, to let him know, if I fool around, intimately, with anyone else. To us, 'intimate', is any 'internal' exchange of body fluids, from 'either end'...

I affirmed to Steve, that I have refrained, from fooling around, with anyone else, and said, I remain very happy, with him.

I mentioned to Steve, that it seemed, 'out of kilter', for him to feel it okay, for him to be, with someone who is a thief, as long as that might help him, Steve, materially, while he thought it wrong, for me to be around Paul, even if my being around Paul, might help me materially. In Steve's view, it was a blemish, on my character, for me to be around Paul, strictly for material reasons... And, for the record, I was never around Paul, strictly for reasons, of material enhancement... I actually did, and do, find Paul, to be intelligent, and witty, fun company in non-sexual ways...

I told Steve, that if I applied his logic, to my own situation, then perhaps, I should move back to Paul's, and he should understand my logic. Steve did not like that, and said, it would be, stupid and foolish of me, to even think about, doing that.

Steve said, I scare him, because I talk seriously, about our relationship. Steve said, he continues to fool around with me, because we have an understanding, that we are just friends.

I told Steve, that we are, certainly more, than friends,

and it is beyond time, to admit it. I said, that friends, who have sex, are, by definition, 'lovers'... I said, that people, who regularly have sex, and aren't friends, are casual 'sex buddies'. I said, we are certainly, not 'sex buddies'...

Steve said, he didn't think of us, as 'lovers', and he doesn't even like the word... Steve said the ideal for him, would be to have, many friends, with whom he was fooling around, for such fun, to be casual, normal, and okay, without any possessiveness involved... Steve said, there should be, more stigma, sense of wrong, upon those, who were unable to be this way, than upon those, who are this way...

We ended our talk, with my extending my arms, out to him, and he came to me, gave me a big firm hug, lifted me into the air, and kissed me long and tenderly. For someone who isn't romantic, he certainly is, romantic...

All's well that ends well... Steve left me smiling that night... I mean, I was smiling, for a while. I hope Steve was too. I felt 'aglow'. I felt loved, and happy...

The stress on me, in my life, is at the job... John-S insists, that I do not eat, during daytime hours. I am working, twelve hours a day recently, with many major jobs, that are entirely on me, to type-set and paste-up, to make 'camera ready', which means, a finished product, that the press department can use, including the photo work, in the developing area... Trudy has done, some of the photo work, at times in the past, but now, is 'too busy'. So, neither Trudy nor John-S, are helping me, to get all these big jobs done. And, for the most part, I can only do, one aspect of this work, at a time... They leave together soon after 5:30pm, the end of their work-day, and they expect me to work, until the work is done...

I know, that Trudy could help, with photo-work, and that John-S, could help, with paste-up and photo-work. Should I be, as unconcerned, with the work demands, as my two 'bosses', seem to be?

I recall, how it wasn't that long ago, that John-S told me, that all my overtime, is a result of my being slow, and that all my over-time, is 'charity' from him. Some of my over-time is directly the result, of Trudy scheduling impossible deadlines, because she does not know any better. The same log-jams I face, are faced, by the guy who runs the press. Some of

these jobs are very big, very time-consuming, both for me, and the pressman, and only one can be done, at a time, by either of us. There is a second press, and sometimes, John-S runs it, during the day, but he focuses, mostly on doing, bindery work, and some deliveries.

Sometimes, the grind on me, at work, does tempt me, to leave, without over-time, without caring about doing more work, that remains to be done, as they leave, without caring about, what remains to be done. I am sometimes tempted to refrain from over-time, to let John-S, keep his 'charity'... However, I accept, that it is my job responsibility, to see that the work, does get done, in a timely fashion, and properly, and, so far so good. The over-time pay is certainly welcome, but, sometimes, I do feel the grind.

My time with Steve, helps to make me, not care, about the work situation, but, when things get a bit bumpy, with Steve, then I seem, less content, with the grind at work...

As a youngster, I was raised, and guided, by older people, at the pinnacles of their realms, and these people, had 'evolved logic'. My starting point, of logic and knowledge, reflected the finished points, of logic and knowledge, of these older, wiser people. In some ways, using the evolved logic, of these 'wise people', or at least experienced people, as my starting point, I am going beyond, even where, they got to in life. I believe those people, would be pleased by this.

I now am, among 'youngish people', who are, at best, perhaps working their way, slowly evolving, to from where I started. These people might fail, to evolve, during their entire life-times, to where I started from... They often fail, to understand me, fail to 'see it', though sometimes, they do eventually come, to understand, what I'm saying... I do try to use, simple words, to speak slowly, gently, and pleasantly, and to explain, to give understanding...

Instead of even listening to me, or seeking to understand, or learn from me, they mostly tell me, what to do, dismiss me curtly, and all the problems they create, which I must seek to cope with, remain the same, repeating, without improvements. To me, many things, could easily be improved, simply by some organization, some logic, some thought... It seems a shame, and a waste, but it does help,

to give over-time to me.

I have said, that knowledge, among humans, can be like, a long-distance marathon, with the 'baton' of knowledge, passed from generation to generation. I also understand, that ignorance, can be passed, from generation to generation, especially, when kids, are having kids... It might seem, that some people, have 'started', way behind, the 'starting line'... It might seem, that there is nobody, for me to pass, the 'baton', and I might be, instead, running the whole marathon, alone...

For now, I cope, by telling myself, that the extra income, is nice, and will not last forever, so advise myself, to endure, and to enjoy 'now', and also by enjoying, the time I have with Steve, 'now', and by telling myself, that I would rather be, with Steve, than with someone else. I choose to focus, on the good points, to keep my mood, and attitude, positive. I do continue to smile...

I know, that I am a good worker. I know, that I am an attractive, good person, honest and helpful. I am content enough, with myself, that I do not need, outside approval, to feel good about myself, and outside disapproval, might seem to reflect, poor character, of those who voice, such disapproval...

Perhaps they view me, and themselves, in the same ways... I have mused, that some might be seeking, to build a 'Klingon environment', like in the fictional television series, *Star Trek*, where some might hope, to prosper in hell, and view kindness, or actually doing any work, as foolish stupidity, as reflecting poor character, and think themselves clever, and proper, for being given, to karmically negative ways... I think these paths, are self-destructive, ultimately, and thus fail, to build or maintain 'civilization'...

However, I do believe, that people, who might dislike themselves, might really need, some others to like them, to compensate for, or to counterbalance, their inner distaste of self... I suppose, that some people, who seem prone to being nasty, might be those, who dislike themselves, and have failed, to get liked, by others. I believe hate can feed hate, that misery loves company, and that those who are hit, can learn to hit...

I remind myself, that when one sees, nasty behavior in

others, that just reflects, the tip of the iceberg, and the little bit of nastiness, that I might hear from them, could be, only a smidgen, of the nastiness, that they cope with internally, at all times, or a lot of the time. I also know, it doesn't have to be that way, but they would have to be, willing to change...

Put flowers on the ground, where there has been suffering...

Perhaps, at some times, everyone must cope, with frustrations, disappointments, stress, and pressure. To do so, one can accept, one's own limits, and be content, with self, be content, that one is doing, what one is able to do, while allowing oneself, to have the opportunities, to learn new things, which can expand limits, and improve one's condition.

Because frustrations, disappointments, stress, and pressure, can be normal at times, one should not react, too strongly, just because of them. One's reaction, can be, a thing onto itself, and can waste time, and might do nothing, to solve, or improve, a situation. Flailing wildly, is not swimming... Ask yourself, if something is, 'constructive behavior', and if it isn't, then perhaps, avoid doing it.

Accept that there could be, negative aspects, in your life, and accept that there could be, things you might become able, to do about them. One is, perhaps more able, to deal with situations, if one does not get, caught up, in a net of emotion...

Even though, my mind can cope, with stress, it seems, that my body, has adverse reactions, to stress. My fingers seem to develop, some sores. I can lose weight, even when eating regularly. I find physical relaxation, and mental-spiritual meditation, to be useful, against stress, physically, does help my body, to cope with stress. I find, that exercising is a useful way, to channel the energy I feel, from mental aggravation.

I find, that crying, releases sorrow, and that laughing, or just being somewhat detached, counters the mood of stress. Talking to someone else, or writing, allows me to steam out, vent, negative thoughts, and emotions, gets these things, outside of me, and helps me, to go beyond them, and helps, to improve my mood, and maintain, or regain, my peace of mind, my peace of being.

I think people, who keep their wounds inside, are allowing these things to fester, can poison themselves, internally... I think venting, helps to get this stuff, outside of self, which then keeps one healthier, internally...

Some discomfort, may be good, if it motivates one, to seek to improve oneself. Some pain, can be good, if it helps one, to be respectful, of a wound, or of things, that can cause wounds... However, remaining discomforted, or in pain, without doing anything, to improve the situation, can make both pain, and discomfort, harmful... Pain and discomfort, are not good things, but they can be used, in good ways.

Poverty can be, a major source, of stress, as is an environment, of many impoverished people's, home neighborhoods. Stress, can be a reason, that some poor people, economically poor, suffer more, than those who are insulated, in materially comfortable environments.

I am not perfect. I am good. I am not an example, of how to rise to the top, of the business world, and enjoy huge material success. No. I am an example, of a normal, good, decent person, who must cope, with the stresses, of the real, rat race, working world.

= 32 =

HEAT FROM THE ICE FACTORY...
September 22, 1986

Work has recently gone, in some circles... Designer Dana, had provided instructions, on a layout, of a big book, for the press. These things can be done properly, in many ways. I showed the layout, to John-S, and asked him, if he wished, for us to use, this system, for the press. John-S said yes. I put the work together, and the designer then inspected and approved my work. Done right? Yes. Time for next job...? Nope...

John-S, saw the book, as it was headed for the press, and came running to me, excited and angry. John-S blew up at me, saying that I had shown, 'poor judgment', in setting the book up, this way. The book, could have been printed, in the way that it was laid out, but John-S said, he preferred, to do 'a better way', and he faulted me entirely, for failing to show, the finished work to him, before it went to the press...

John-S does not normally see, every job, before it goes to press. Our norm is for a job, to go from the client's approval, of the 'proof version', to the press, and that is what occurred, with this job. I interacted directly, with Dana, without Trudy in-between, as I normally do, with Dana. There are some 'major clients', mostly 'agencies', who prefer, to deal directly, with me, and John-S has 'tolerated' this.

This book was not the only job, on my mind. I had shown the lay-out, to Dana twice, and had shown it, to John-S, before even starting the work... Nonetheless, the man was in a fit of anger, when he approached me, and he yelled the whole time...

John-S complained, at how much money, my extra time, to redo this work, would now cost him, and said, this was just another example, of me costing him money, a huge waste of time, a terrible disaster... He might as well, just go out, and shoot himself... At that point, I might not, have stopped him, if he had tried to do so...

There is a joke, that some people, yell and stomp their feet, to show, 'how right they are'. However, I suspect, that some people, yell and stomp their feet, when they know,

'how wrong they are'...

I told John-S, that I would, on my own time, thus without charge to him, redo the entire book, to the new layout, he now demanded. John-S said, that would still cost him money, because the time I spent now, on this project, would be time, I was failing to spend, on his 'other important clients'. The words, 'thank you', were never spoken...

I did mention to John-S, that I had shown the propopsed layout to him, before I started any work on the project, and what I had done, had been approved, by the client after I finished. I think that only increased John-S' aggravation. John-S still faulted me, for my failure to show him the finished project, before I took it to the press-room. For the record, I normally do not show jobs to John-S, after they are approved by the client, nor did he ask, for me to show him this particular job, before it went to the press. Could it have been printed, as it was? Yes.

Dana came in, and helped me, to change this layout. The two of us, got this work done, very rapidly, though it did take, some time, because it was a large project. John-S hovered elsewhere, and did nothing, to be helpful.

I later learned, from Dana, that John-S, charged $750, to the client, for 'our' work, perhaps even billing for our 'extra time', which had cost him nothing. I earned maybe $42... I think I might refrain, from catering to John-S' tantrums, in the future... This incident, did motivate me, to start looking, at help wanted, employment opportunity, advertisements, in the 'classifieds', the section of a newspaper, devoted to advertisements, to buy and sell things, and to hire or offer services, and also, where 'public notices', can be legally placed... I didn't see anything, but I at least did look...

I went to a technical school, that teaches computer operation, and maintenance. I got information, about their courses, and programs. I would be more content, with John-S, if he would give to me, the leeway, to attend classes. I could still do, all the work required of me, around classes...

Drexel has moved. I gave to Drexel, a copy, of *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, but did not tell him, that I am its author. I have not received, one phone call, from my 'roommate wanted' advertisement, and this is strange,

considering the volume of calls, I received previously. I guess, that it's just the time-period.

I have wondered, recently, just how much, Christos affects Steve. I do not speak, much of Christos, though I did give to Steve, a copy, of *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*. I am aware, that Steve, only values, real-world priorities.

Steve has cooked dinner, for me twice, and has been fooling around with me, each night, since Drexel left. The other night, Steve even initiated, our good-night hug and kiss. It has been my hope, that by remaining peaceful, loving, and helpful to Steve, that he would eventually relax, and accept a serious, practical partnership, with me. I can now finally say, that I see, some concrete response, coming from Steve, that justifies, all the effort, I have made.

I could not be happier, than to have someone I love, and admire, also love and admire me, in a partnership, with me. Steve and I, are closer to that, now, than ever before.

= 32 =

OF RED JEFF, PATRICK, AND THE LEARNING PROCESS
September 28, 1986

My phone bill came in, and Kelley had $43 worth, of long-distance charges, on my account, around a day's take-home pay for me. Kelley agreed, to give me her bed, in exchange, for my paying, her share of the phone bill, a good fair trade, for both of us.

Red Jeff's mother gave me a check, for Red Jeff's first and last week's rent. If nothing else, Red Jeff's being in residence, at my place, gives Red Jeff's mother, her own place back, to enjoy, with her new husband. Jeff, and his new step-father, do not get along, and his mother, Marie, has been caught in the middle.

The 'problem', is perhaps, mostly on, the step-father's side, of their board, as he 'disapproves', of many aspects, of Red Jeff's 'life'. The step-father, feels 'self-righteous', and has sought, to push Red Jeff, into getting a job, and moving out, or at least moving out... The step-father, feels Red Jeff, at around 24 years of age, is 'too old', to be living, off of his mother...

Red Jeff, has really lacked the means, to live on his own, though probably, he could have done more, to seek to be able, to live on his own... Red Jeff has focused, on 'enjoying life', and I would suppose, that most people, in Red Jeff's life, have enjoyed his company, his sex, and given to him, party materials, and have been unconcerned, with his situation in life, and unhelpful to him, in real-world ways...

Anyone will buy you a drink, but who, will buy you, a hamburger? And, do you know the difference?

Red Jeff's mother, has been worried, about Red Jeff, in 'real life', and given to him, shelter, and food, because she does love him. The battles, between Red Jeff, and her new husband, who she also does love, have been very troubling, for Marie.

At least these 'battles', have only been verbal, without violence... Red Jeff does get disturbed, disgruntled, angry, and depressed... Red Jeff could be said, to be a, 'small male', short and lightweight...

Red Jeff, has had some jobs, but has often, walked off of them, or failed to return to them, when he has encountered,

a belligerent, or ill-mannered, boss. Red Jeff says, he just isn't paid enough, to take any abuse, and that could be, somewhat true. However, when Red Jeff, has been unable, to cover his financial needs, in life, someone else, has had to do so, or has chosen, to do so, and that someone else, has been, Red Jeff's mother.

Red Jeff, just quit another job. This was the longest, that Red Jeff, has held a job... It was only paying to him, about $3.50 an hour. When Red Jeff told me, that he wanted to quit, I had advised Red Jeff, to keep that job, and find one better, before leaving this one. Red Jeff said, that the work was okay, but he just wasn't paid enough, to take that abuse, and that nobody, should have to put up with, such abuse in life. I agreed with Red Jeff, that nobody, should have to put up with, abuse in life, but said, that sometimes, one must put up, with some abuse, to maintain oneself, in life, until one can do better. Red Jeff, simply quit the job, expecting his mother, to take care of him. Red Jeff's step-father, was disgusted, by Red Jeff's, 'failure to adjust to the real-world', and said, that either Red Jeff left his mother's home, or he would leave...

Perhaps those children, raised in loving homes, are simply unprepared, or unwilling to accept, any abuse, and abuse can be all too common, in life... On another hand, perhaps children, raised in abusive environments, are too willing, to accept abuse, later in life...

Red Jeff was raised by his mother, within 'traditional', Christian gender roles, which teach that men are not to cook, nor to clean, nor to mend their own clothes, nor to do anything domestic. A purpose of this is to create a need, for men to be with women. Women, are not to do anything, outside the home, neither work a job, nor work around the yard... Things are definitely changing, in our society today, especially with affirmative action, requiring an equal number, of men and women, in a work-force, to reflect their percentage, in the local population. But this was how Red Jeff was raised.

A consequence of this was that I faced, Red Jeff's mess, in my home. Red Jeff left his dirty dishes, in the living-room, and the dirty pots and pans, on the stove. If Red Jeff took off a shirt, he would just drop it, anywhere he happened to be,

and it would stay there. After showering, Red Jeff, would just drop his damp towel, on the floor of the bathroom, and leave it there...

I pointed out, to Red Jeff, that it could be unhealthy, to allow food to fester, on dishes, pots, and pans, that he could be breeding, either poisons or diseases. I pointed out to Red Jeff, that his towel, would fail to dry, if left on the floor, so if he wanted, a dry towel, then he should, hang it back up. Red Jeff, has seemed to think, that when he needed a towel again, he would just go, to my linen closet, and get another, which would then, increase my laundry costs... To Red Jeff, buying linens, cleaning linens, and all that time, another might spend doing these things, or working to afford to buy them, was irrelevant, meaningless, not part, of his world. I discouraged that...

I said in particular, if Red Jeff, was using something of mine, that he should leave it, as he found it, and, if he found it clean, before he used it, then he needed to clean it, afterwards, and then put it back, to where it had been... Red Jeff has been seeking to comply, with my 'requests'. But I have had to remind him, sometimes...

I told Red Jeff, that the common areas, the areas we both share, like the living-room, kitchen, and bathroom, should be kept fairly clean, and, as he shares this space, then he shares, some household responsibility, for helping to keep them clean. I told Red Jeff, that he could be, as messy as he likes, in his own room, but I suggested to Red Jeff, that if he kept his things organized, then he might find them, more easily... I told Red Jeff, that if he wished, to have a messy room, then he should close the door, to his room, so my guests, would not see his mess. Red Jeff has complied, with this request.

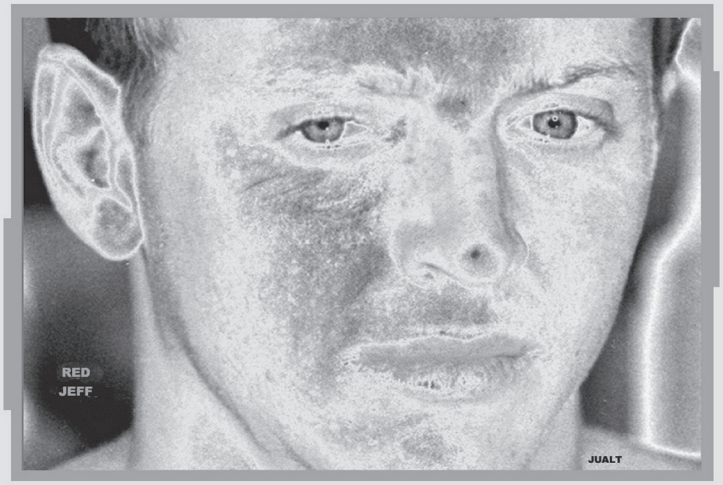
I did notice, that the writing pens, I keep by the telephone, for messages, were missing, and a pencil, which had been, in my desk drawer, was out by the telephone. This is a very minor thing, but it alerted me, to the potential, of more serious problems. I felt, that if Red Jeff, is willing to remove, my things, from my private space, then something I might value, could become, among the things, that Red Jeff, might be willing, to remove.

Red Jeff and I also had a mutual understanding, that we

would not use, each other's food. And yet, Red Jeff, has been using my food, without asking, and has been trying, to hide the fact, that he has been doing so, meaning that he only does so, when out of sight, and to me, Red Jeff's seeking to conceal, that he is doing this, does mean, that he himself, knows that it is wrong, for him to do so...

I have been tolerant, and sympathetic, to Red Jeff's needs, and willing to give him, some of my stuff, when he might ask for it. That Red Jeff takes my things, without asking, does concern me, and I have now mentioned, again, to Red Jeff, that he should replace, anything of mine, which he uses, and that he should never, take anything of mine, without first asking. I told Red Jeff, quite bluntly, that it seemed really wrong, that he would rather, take something of mine, than ask me, if he could have it, or use it...

I told Red Jeff, that he knows, what is his, and therefore he knows, what is not his. I advised Red Jeff, that if he takes things, from people he stays with, then those people are likely, to put him out. I told Red Jeff, that if he continued, to take anything of mine, even if it seemed small and unimportant to him, that it would cause me, to worry about the safety, of everything of mine, and that would influence me, to not only put him out, but to also, perhaps, not wish to have anything more, to do with him.



I advised Red Jeff, that I was behaving, kindlier to him, by telling him how I felt, and how others might think, than others might do with him. I told Red Jeff, that some people, might cause him, serious harm, in retaliation, for even the slightest wrong... There is that saying, about, 'the straw that broke, the camel's back', which is, a very small thing, can add to the weight, already present, and although, it is only a small thing, a metaphorical straw, that it can be enough, to cause serious events, to then occur.

I told Red Jeff, that even if someone fails, to see him take something, if only the two of them are around, and something is missing, then that person, will assume, that Red Jeff, took it. This assumption, that someone must actually see one do something, could be, a case of someone, 'starting', behind the 'starting line'...

I also do not think, Red Jeff is seriously looking for work. Red Jeff seems content, knowing that his rent is paid, and he might expect his mother, to continue, to cover his rent. I have told Red Jeff, that without doubt, I need income, from that extra bedroom, in order to meet my bills...

One thing Red Jeff does for me, is to bring to my mind, topics that might be relevant, to people his age...

Steve came over, to visit Red Jeff and me. Steve and Red Jeff have been acquainted, through me, for a while. Because Red Jeff, is self-proclaimed gay, and somewhat open about that, even though, he is not effeminate, then Steve has not minded, for Red Jeff, to know, that Steve is bisexual.

Red Jeff is attractive, out-going, friendly, cheerful, fun, with most everyone. That is his 'nature'. If one did not know, that Red Jeff is gay, one would assume, that Red Jeff is straight. But Red Jeff, as his norm, is not bashful, about telling people, that he is gay. Red Jeff enjoys sex. Red Jeff, might like to charge, older people for sex, but he is quite interested, in having sex, with other people his age, that he finds to be attractive, and if someone does not like, that he is gay, then Red Jeff, is happy to be finished, with that person. Red Jeff does easily get along, with all people, even with those, who are straight, as long as they, don't care, if he is gay.

I think, this 'openness', works against Red Jeff, in many work environments, where homosexuality, is frowned upon,

and where those, who might disapprove of, or dislike homosexuals, might then wish, to be rid of Red Jeff, or at least become, unpleasant to him. Red Jeff, believes his 'openness', enhances his sex life... One might joke, that Red Jeff believes, "It pays to advertise."

I believe, Red Jeff has been penalized, many times, due to his openness, and that he has failed to change, in part, because he has been 'insulated', by his mother... Lack of a job, has been inconsequential, to Red Jeff, because his mother, will carry his costs... Red Jeff, would also be, the first to point out, that 'back work', pays more, than he earns, at a real job...

I have asked Red Jeff, to maintain a straight image, in my home, and around, this big apartment development, at least to those, who are straight, and he has agreed to this. I asked Red Jeff, to avoid propositioning strangers, while around here...

I have been, very clear to Red Jeff, that although he might be interested, in fooling around with me, that I, at this time, am monogamous, loyal to Steve, although I have told Red Jeff, that Steve and I, are 'friends', and that we lack, any mutual understanding, that we are 'lovers'...

Red Jeff has thought, that I should not be monogamous, unless I have a mutual understanding, that I am someone's lover... Red Jeff says, it just doesn't make any sense to him, that I would be monogamous, and not lovers... To Red Jeff, either you are lovers, with someone, or you are not, and if not, then monogamy, is just wrong, impossible...

When Steve came over, he right off, wished Red Jeff and I, the best of luck, in our "union". I think, Steve used the word, 'union', because I am fond of using it. However, I do not think, that I have, a 'union', with Red Jeff... I worried, that Steve's use, of 'union', in relation to Red Jeff and I, implied that Steve thought, I should no longer, think in terms, of 'union', with him. At least Steve did make a big point, to come to me, and give to me, a big hug and kiss, before he departed, which at least, was perhaps, staking some claim to me, in front of Red Jeff... This was the first time that Steve has been, openly affectionate to me, in front of anyone. I was pleased, by this 'progress'...

Red Jeff did later comment, that he thought it was

strange, that Steve thought, that Red Jeff and I have a ‘union’. I said, it was perhaps, just a ‘figure of speech’... I told Red Jeff, that I most certainly, have not said anything, to Steve, to imply, that I have, or want, a ‘union’, with Red Jeff... And, in truth, I have never mentioned, to Steve, that Red Jeff, has wanted, a union with me... Steve unintentionally, triggered that topic, between Red Jeff and I...

There have been times, in our past, that Red Jeff and I, have discussed, having a ‘union’, but we have never had, that mutual understanding, and for now, I do maintain, to both Red Jeff, and Steve, that it is Steve, with whom I would like, to have a ‘union’. There are many men, both heterosexual, and homosexual, who seem ‘okay’, with the idea, that their significant other earns money, by trading ‘sexual favors’ for cash. I am not among these.

In the past, before I met Steve, I have told Red Jeff, in reply to his suggestion, of having a union with me, that I would only begin, to entertain such a possibility, if he would maintain, a ‘real job’... Now, that Red Jeff is living with me, he might hope to have, such a union with me, if he holds a job, especially if Steve, so clearly, does not wish to have, such a union, with me.

Steve and I, went to the baths this weekend, and split costs, 50-50. Things are looking up... Steve and I do not fool around, with other people, when at the baths. We enjoy the facilities there, and enjoy privacy, in our room. We spend all our time, at the baths, with each other.

I did assure Steve, that Red Jeff and I are platonic friends. I even agreed, with Steve’s logic, reluctantly, that we don’t need, a mutual union understanding, between us, because, as long as we want, to be with each other, we will be, with each other, and, if we don’t want, to be with each other, then we should not feel bound, to each other...

I still continue to believe, that a mutual understanding, of an intention, to seek to maintain, a long-term companionship, union, is preferable, because it would allow us, to build together in life. One might say, that Steve and I, are dancing around, the ‘starting line’, without going any further, on that track... This could seem, realistically, to be a waste of time, except, truly, I am enjoying life, when I am with Steve...

SUNSHINE REIGNS
October 4, 1986

There is an 'express' college course, in computer science, being offered, at the local junior college. An 'express' course, is one, that is shorter in duration, which this one does, by having two hours, per session, rather than one hour. I have asked John-S, if I could take this course, and pointed out, that it is, somewhat work-related. The course is offered, from 5:00pm to 7:00pm, which is a time, when I would, now normally be, at the shop. I have offered, to return to the shop, after the course, if Trudy might be persuaded, to leave written instructions, for me, about her 'emergencies'... There is a 'joke', about how, 'lack of planning on your part', does not mean, 'an emergency on my part', for me, but, with Trudy, it does...

John-S has yet to give to me, a response... Unfortunately, I cannot wait indefinitely, for a response, like I did with that pay-raise request, as the course does start, at a certain time... I know better than to assume, that lack of response, does not mean, that John-S is uncaring, so I can do as I please... This means, based on John-S' actual history, his behavior with me, that I might, have to go back to John-S, and seek to gain, a definite response.

Amusingly, John-S likes to joke, that when one 'assumes' something, that one, "makes an ass, out of 'u', you, and me". John-S says, look what happened, the last time, 'we' 'assumed' something, which he meant, as 'the assumption', the Catholic belief, that Jesus rose from the dead, and then ascended, to the heavens... I do not think, that John-S, is 'spiritually inclined'...

Red Jeff stole money, and a wallet, from Gary, and then, initially denied, that he had done so. Sadly, this was a case, of there being, no other suspects, only Red Jeff, according to Gary, while Red Jeff probably hoped, that if he had not been 'seen' doing it, then he could not be blamed for it... Red Jeff was at Gary's, and so was Gary's wallet, and then both were gone...

Gary wanted to have, Red Jeff arrested, so I put Gary, in touch with Asmodeus, as Red Jeff has been going there, and avoiding my place. It seems, that Red Jeff, has been

joining Gary, to enjoy sex, and cocaine rock, a very addictive, type of party material. Gary has been, covering the costs, of this 'party'...

That Red Jeff, is still doing, this type of party material, and is now stealing, to be able, to do more of it, is of concern to me.

Asmodeus got angry, because Red Jeff, has been going to NA meetings, with Asmodeus, and saying, that he has been avoiding, cocaine rock. Asmodeus sided with Gary, and said, that Red Jeff should be arrested. Apparently, Gary had lent $60, to Red Jeff for party material, and then had, an additional $30 stolen, with his wallet.

Asmodeus and I, spoke with Red Jeff's mother, Marie. Marie just got very upset, saying she has done, everything she can, to try to help Red Jeff, but that he does not respond, to anything.

I advised Marie, to avoid taking Red Jeff back, unless he stays away, from cocaine rock, but she said, she would always, take Red Jeff back, unconditionally... I told Marie, that she might, not be actually helping Red Jeff, if she allows him, to remain weak in life, and that he needs, to develop job skills, and responsibility, even in her space. I said, there could come a time, when Marie, naturally passes from this life, and Red Jeff, would then be older, having to compete, for basic jobs, with younger people, and might thus be left, without anything...

Marie expressed some anguish, saying that Red Jeff, is a great, good, decent person, but he is gay, and because he is gay, he has gotten nothing but trouble in life, at school, and at jobs, and that he just falls in, with 'the wrong people'... Marie expressed a hope, that Red Jeff, might get help, from government social services, saying that Red Jeff, is really disabled in life...

I told Marie, that I didn't think, being gay, is viewed, as a 'disability'... I told Marie, that I have faced, the same challenges, as Red Jeff, as has Asmodeus also, so Red Jeff, does have 'friends', who would not lead him, into addictive partying. I said Red Jeff does have some choice, in his paths in life.

I told Asmodeus, and Gary, that I didn't think, that being in jail, would help Red Jeff, other than forcing him, to be

sober, for a while. I said, that Red Jeff seems to view jail, as free room and board, with maybe some sex thrown in, for a good time. I said, I felt, the best route for Red Jeff, is to be on the streets, to have to face, some of the harsh realities, of life, to motivate him, to want to do so. I said, that Red Jeff's going to NA, is perhaps the healthiest thing, he can continue to do.

Asmodeus pointed out, that anyone, going to a group program, like Narcotics Anonymous, or Alcoholics Anonymous, must want to do so, must want to participate, must want to be helped, or else, simply being there, might do nothing, for him or her.

Asmodeus and Gary, said that, perhaps a judge, would put Red Jeff into a 'halfway house', a place where people, with drug problems, are supervised, and guided, toward healthy lives. They said, I was just trying, to shed Red Jeff, from my world, and that I, am not truly his friend, if I thought street life, would be healthy, for Red Jeff.

I said, that I didn't think, that street life, is a good thing, and, in fact, it can be worse than jail, which, I said, is a reason, that it might be beneficial, for Red Jeff. I mean, in the neither here nor there, Gary has refrained, from providing food, or shelter, to Red Jeff, and has given to him, addictive party material, so that Red Jeff will return, and have sex. I told Gary, that he was no friend, to Red Jeff. Perhaps Red Jeff's, stealing from Gary, is an indication, that Red Jeff, might have wished, to end that situation...

I said, that if I could see, good intent, in the logic of Asmodeus, and Gary, that I hoped, that they could also see, that my logic, was guided by good intent, for Red Jeff. I am capable of error... I know this.

I advised Gary, to refrain, from pressing charges, against Red Jeff. I suggested to Gary, that the main offense, against him, was theft, and the inconvenience, of replacing identification cards. I said, loss of $30, was perhaps, not that significant... I advised Gary, that for him, to inform police, that he, a 48-year-old man, was supplying, addictive party material, to a 24-year-old youth, in order to have sex, with that youth, might cause police, to view him, with some disfavor, for a long time to come...

Bottom line then, was that Asmodeus, wished nothing

more to do, with Red Jeff. Gary hopes for repayment, of $90, from Red Jeff... And, I allowed Red Jeff, to remain in my home, warning him, that if he had, one more problem with me, then I would return money, to Marie, and put him out. I said, there was no reason, why I, should have to deal, with angry victims, of his exploits.

I told Red Jeff, that I would still try, to be his friend, but that he wasn't acting, like a friend, to me, if he was, spending his time partying, and refraining, from job hunting. I told Red Jeff, that I do indeed, have to have, income, from that extra room, and if he failed, to provide it, then my own world, could be harmed, unless I got another roommate. I told Red Jeff, that if he failed, to pay his way, then I would rent that room, to someone else, but I would let him stay, in my home, in the living-room, as long as he didn't, make a mess there.

I also sought to perform, a minor exorcism, to free Red Jeff, from 'the spirit of cocaine rock', from the 'oversoul', or spirit, of that substance... I repeated a mantra, 'be free, be thee', out loud, while embracing Red Jeff, in a hug. I did this, for a minute... I advised Red Jeff, that right now, his spirit is weak, and thus vulnerable, and that he should seek to avoid, contact with people, with whom he has partied, to minimize exposure, to those places, and people, who remind him of partying. I urged Red Jeff, to attend NA meetings, to meet people, who are also inclined, to seek to be free, of substance abuse.

I mused, that if there is, an oversoul of a substance, that is fed by many people, then that oversoul, might indeed be 'stronger', than one individual person, but, that one individual person, might then gain enough strength, from connection to many people, to counterbalance, or overcome, the strength, the oversoul of that substance, is gaining, from many people...

I also affirmed, to Red Jeff, that he should avoid, all forms of partying, even of marijuana, if that substance, seemed to influence him, to wish to party, on anything. I told Red Jeff, that I would avoid sharing, any party material, with him, and would not party, in his presence. Essentially, I stood by my earlier words, that I would allow Red Jeff, to enjoy marijuana, as long as he refrained, from use of

cocaine rock. Red Jeff failed to refrain, from use of cocaine rock, and so now, I won't share, or even indulge in, marijuana, or any party material, with or around, Red Jeff... I told Red Jeff, that he would have to stay away, from cocaine rock, for at least three months, before I would consider, changing my position again...

My Uncle James, wrote to me, a nice letter, asking, how things are with me, and telling me, that he wouldn't be writing, to me, except that we are related.

I was in an 'off mood', and wrote back, and quickly mailed, a hot letter... I told my uncle, that it is very difficult, for me to endure life's challenges, in great poverty, and to then believe, that any of my wealthy family, might care about me, and that I felt, some insult, when he implied, that he did care, as I said, none of the actions of my family, have indicated, any real caring, at all. I said, it is easier, for me to believe, that I have no family, rather than to believe, that I have wealthy family, who are, so uncaring in life, toward me.

I have a friend, who has a learning disorder, mildly. However, his first two children have serious learning disorders. His wife is now pregnant again. When I asked him, why he was still having children, he said, so that he won't be discriminated against, in the job market. I can't agree, with his logic... I told him, that what's done is done, and that I doubted, he faced less job discrimination, or job insecurity, with three children, rather than two, and that, if in the future, should he be tempted, to have even more children, that he should adopt, a foster child... I think having children, for any reason, other than, wanting to enjoy, the long-term process, of nurturing a child, into becoming a competent adult, is wrong.

There is some admonition, that a child, should honor, his or her parents. I think there should be, an admonition, to parents, to honor their child(ren)... I think there is karma, on behavior, between parents, and children.

Steve has been ill, with a gum infection. I have gone over, and given to Steve, some soft foods. Steve has really appreciated the attention, saying that Patrick, has been uncaring... Perhaps Steve might now, at least temporarily, agree, with my having said, a few times in the past, that one advantage, of having a partner in life, is to have help, in fair

trade, in union, when one is down and out, including when, one is sick, or injured.

Steve's place, is like a hospital zone, with his brother, Patrick, having a broken leg, and Steve having, a bad mouth... Neither of them is the slightest bit helpful, to the other... Patrick, was riding his bicycle, drunk, intoxicated beyond the legal limit, and got hit by a car. The driver of the car was held legally responsible, for this accident, and Patrick hopes, to get some money, in a settlement, from this situation.

I got some things, from the refrigerator, for Patrick, and Steve chided me, for doing this, pointing out, that Patrick has crutches, and is perfectly capable, of taking care of himself... I asked Steve, that if the situation, was reversed, would he want me, or Patrick, to get things for him? Steve said, that he would get things, for himself, even if he had to crawl...

= 32 =

THE MORE YOU HAVE,
THE MORE YOU MUST MAINTAIN
October 9, 1986

Nothing in the world, can take the place, of persistence. Talent will not. Nothing is more common, than unsuccessful men, with talent. Genius will not. Un-rewarded genius is almost a proverb. Education alone will not. The world is full of educated derelicts. Persistence and determination, alone, are omnipotent.

I found the above quote, on a wall, at Steve's work-place. The essay seemed to me, to be worthy of remembrance.

Red Jeff is no longer with me. The day after, Red Jeff and I, made our agreement, to give our living together, one more chance, within certain rules, I came home, and found dirty pots, on the stove, dirty dishes piled in the sink, dirty clothes in the bath-room, and living-room, all thanks to Red Jeff, creating a general mess, everywhere. I figured, that with such obvious, blatant disregard, for any sign, of respect for me, Red Jeff, was deliberately pushing me, seeing if his need, for shelter, would be enough, to motivate me, to let him stay. I told Red Jeff, to go back, to his mother's.

Steve offered, to lend to me, the money to return, to Red Jeff's mother, Marie, but I was able, to write a check, without financial help.

My financial situation, is 'not good'...

At the beginning of the week, the bank declined, to let me have, $20, from my account. The bank said, that I had a negative balance, of $420, due to funds on hold, and not available, for my use. When I opened this account, the bank told me, they would hold deposit checks, written locally, for four days, but they have now, switched their policy, and are now holding, the funds, for ten days, before they become available, for my use. The bank is paying my checks, rather than bouncing them, but they are charging me, $10, for each check. I feel, that I cannot afford to use this bank...

Patrick has received money, from the insurance company, of the driver who hit him. Patrick has been able, to pay his rent, to Steve. The insurance, paid to Patrick, are

funds, to cover his inability to work, for a while, due to his injury, and that insurance, will also cover, Patrick's medical expenses, related to the accident. Patrick is very happy, with the situation...

Steve is angry. Matilda wants Steve to pay, for Stephanie's dental bills. Two years ago, Steve suggested to Matilda, that they sign up both children, for his employer's, corporate dental plan. But Matilda declined to allow this. For Steve, to have to pay, 100-percent, of dental costs, for his children, rather than having that cost, be more affordable, thanks to the corporate dental plan, to Steve, is just malicious... Matilda, has apparently gone to court, to force Steve, to solely pay, for this cost... Steve is worried, that the court, might actually side, with Matilda... Steve says, the courts have never respected, his parental rights...

Steve has found, that the courts seem to delay, examining his petitions. To seek to get the court, to look at his petitions, Steve, as his norm, has filed them, in response to Matilda's, so both get heard, at the same time. Steve has petitioned, that if Matilda, now wants their children, to have dental care, to make her agree, to use Steve's company dental plan, and to have Matilda, pay half of the costs...

Steve turns out, to be in general, financially okay, because of an accident. Steve jumped from a roof, into a sand pile, while working. In that sand pile, was hidden a brick. Steve landed on that brick, and he damaged his ankle. Due to the damage, to his ankle, it was decided, that Steve had a partial disability, as he might never be able, to safely work, on an angled roof again.

Therefore, Steve was granted, a disability plan, which pays to him, the difference, between what he earns at a job, and what he was earning, when he had that accident. If Steve works at a job, where he earns more, than he did, when he had that accident, then that disability plan, pays him nothing. If Steve is unemployed, and not working, then the disability plan, pays him nothing...

To help Steve, learn a new trade, that plan, also provided Steve, with educational assistance, which Steve prudently used, to learn computer technician work, and that is how, he got to be, where he is today. And now, Steve's company has been paying him, for the past eight weeks, just

to learn, the new job skills, required for his upcoming, higher-paying position. A co-worker has been spending some time, to help Steve, learn the information, in the technical manuals, and how to, actually do the work.

Steve is thus being benefited, by both book learning, and guided instruction, in a 'hands-on' approach. Even so, Steve does, sometimes, feel challenged, by the new tasks, and learning process. And now, Steve feels distracted, from his need to study, and focus upon, this work-related challenge, by a need to focus, on this new court situation, with Matilda. As always, I type up Steve's petitions, and motions, in a formal, and proper manner, for him to submit, to the courts...

A former beau, of Steve's, came to town. Steve had previously described, Sam to me, as an older man, but now it seems, that Sam, is well-to-do, and 27 years old. Steve told me, that he wouldn't fool around with Sam, because he didn't want me, to feel hurt... That was nice.

Kelley called, and asked me, to go out with her. I declined, saying I wished to avoid, having more complications, in my life. Kelley understands, that I am in, a monogamous relationship, with a man, one who declines, to have any sort, of mutual 'lover', or 'union', understanding. Kelley says, that I am a single, and should behave, as if I am single.

Kelley suspected, that I am involved, with a man, who is married, to a woman, but that is not, the actual situation. Kelley reminded me, that if someone, is unable to hug you, in public, then one should not have sex, with that person, in private...

That could be true, in a heterosexual context, but can be, very untrue, in a homosexual context, with all the real, serious, harmful, potential and actual discrimination, that exists today.

Kelley suggested, that we could date, 'as friends', and that I might become content, with that. Kelley said, that at least then, my image as straight would be maintained. I told Kelley, that I am with someone, I wish to be with, and therefore, lack any desire, to be with other people. I said to Kelley, that if she really wanted, to be with me, then that could become, complicated for me, and could become,

emotionally painful to her. I said, that if she really didn't care, about me, and if I really didn't care, about her, then our dating, might be, a total waste of time, for both of us.

Kelley advised me, that if someone, has been with me, this long, and declines, to have a mutual understanding, then it seems to her, to be unlikely, that will ever change...

I told Kelley, that I am happy, when with my 'man', and that I think, this relationship, has been healthy for me. I share time, with a good person, who lacks 'party issues', who motivates me, to work-out, and rebuild my body, to get a place of my own, and has gotten me, to lighten the burden, on my financial situation, by dropping my newsletter, which failed to give to me, any tangible reward, in return, while giving to me, some police and government 'concern', and to remove myself, from a living situation, that was filled with turmoil, and hostility, to gain space of my own, to have peace, in my home environment, and to be able to share life, with someone, I enjoy sharing life with. I said, that I give this man credit, for influencing me, in all of these good, healthy ways.

I said this man, is also, now influencing me, to improve myself, by seeking to further my education, with courses in computer science, that could enhance, my ability to earn, a decent income in life.

I thanked Kelley, for thinking of me, but said, that I am content, 'as is', and declined her suggestion, that she and I, start to date. Kelley said, that she thought, that I could be, a healthy person, in her life, and that she felt, that I might be, 'the one' for her. I told Kelley, that I am fairly certain, that she is not, 'the one' for me, as I feel, no involuntary romantic feelings, for her, and that I wish to have, that involuntary romantic feeling, with anyone that I might, more seriously, get involved with. I told Kelley, that I hoped, that she could appreciate, my honesty. I told Kelley, that I remained willing, to be a friend, and that any time she needed to talk, or get advice, that she could do so, with me.

Paul, went on a venomous, complaining binge, telling mutual acquaintances, that I am going downhill, becoming a bum, and hanging out with street trash, getting into drugs, and living in, an unfurnished flop house. These are basically exact quotes... I suspect, this was Paul's reaction, to

learning that Red Jeff, was staying with me.

Now that Red Jeff, has 'moved', Paul has, calmed down. I can hope, that Paul did not do, serious damage to me, can hope that his words, never reached Trudy's ears, and hope, that he might seek to undo, some of whatever damage, he did do... I gave to Paul, the phone number, for a casting agency, for movie extras, and commercials, and he said, he would get in touch with them.

I can hope, that this might give to Paul, some income, and take up, some of his time... If Paul, were more content, with his life, and himself, then he might be, less discontent, about my absence...

Steve was livid, when I mentioned, this latest barrage, of venom from Paul. Steve was angry, with me, saying, how could I, possibly have, anything at all, to do with Paul. Steve still believes, that Paul should apologize, to Steve, for Paul's past rudeness, to Steve. Paul has made no effort, to apologize, and I tend to doubt, that he has any plans, to do so. Steve would not accept, an apology from Paul, at this point in time, anyway.

I got a nice post-card, from my mother, that made me regret, the hot letter, I sent to my uncle. My mother, wants me to look, at the construction work, for her mini-storage facility, in downtown West Palm Beach, and give to her, progress reports, and to interact, with the construction crew, to help things, continue 'on track', on schedule, while she is out of town. I did so.

I called my mother, and told her, that everything, is 'on schedule', meaning, conforming to the timetable, that she was told. I gave to my mother, exact details, of what is now built, and what remains, to be done.

My mother said, that she would like, for me to manage, that business for her, when she is out of town, as she anticipates, spending time, in New York City. I said, that could be good, for both of us, and we would have to talk, to come to some sort, of mutually beneficial, understanding.

I can see one way, that Trudy could be, an asset at work. Our younger male clients flirt with her, and this brings, some business our way. They always compliment her, on how nice the work is, although she had little to do, with the actual work... Women are also inclined, to give their business, to

other women. To some degree then, men give up their positions of equality, when they favor a female, because she is female, simply due, to 'sexual motivations', but that is, how it seems to be.

I did approach John-S, one more time, and told him, that I really had to have, an answer, now... Otherwise, I would be unable, to take the course. John-S agreed to let me return to school...

I am also considering, seeking to get, my AA degree, in college... For now, my priority is upon this computer science, technical certificate program. I will now go, in to work early, and work from 8:00am, until 4:00pm, without a lunch, and thus retain full-time. I will go to school, from 5:00pm until 6:30pm, Mondays through Thursdays, starting the 20th, of this month. I am paying for this course, on my own, and will pay for the course, next week. I will get books, with my next pay-check, after that...

Sadly, or amusingly, when I attended, the University of Florida, I took an 'advanced tennis' class, as part of, the physical education requirements. I flunked that course, due to absences... I then took, a 'regular tennis' course, to replace that grade, and got a 'B', replacing my previous 'F'. That was fine, by the University of Florida. However, Palm Beach Junior College, says a grade, for 'regular tennis', cannot, in their view, be used to replace, a grade for, 'advanced tennis', so, in order for me, to complete my AA program, at Palm Beach Junior College, they want me, to pay, for an 'advanced tennis' course... I think, all these extra nonsense courses, that are required, for a college degree, are simply, false profit ploys...

Frank-B has given, all of his bookkeeping and payroll tasks, to an accounting firm, to replace Paul, and so, I am no longer needed, with Frank-B. I thanked Frank-B, for the work he has given to me, and said, I hope to be able, to use him in my future, as a good reference. Frank-B said, he would be glad, to give to me, a good reference, in the future.

Abe and Layla, have asked Steve, to let their young son, Burt, stay with him. Abe and Layla would pay Steve, to help cover Burt's costs. Abe and Layla, live in an isolated area, and schooling for Burt, requires them to shuttle him, which takes their time, and compounds, their ability to work.

Having Burt at Steve's, would allow Burt, to more easily attend school, and free the time, of Abe and Layla. Steve is considering this.

Of course, if Burt, does stay with Steve, then Steve's sex life, would be, pretty much 'dead', as he would need, to spend time, with Burt, as a baby-sitter... Steve does not think, that a drunken Patrick would be a desirable baby-sitter. I could help, to tend Burt, at times, when Steve might be, unable to do so.

Steve and I have enjoyed, an erratic sex life, at best. It is great, when it is there, but there have been, prolonged times, without sex. Fortunately, I do very much enjoy, my time with Steve, even without sex. Sex is important, but I would be willing, to go without sex, while Steve, is going without sex.

Randi was on, another national television, talk show, and so I sent that show, a letter, repeating the information, I have said, in other letters. Asmodeus brought Randi, to my attention this time. I have contacted, each and every medium, that has given publicity, to Randi, that I have learned about, and none of them, has ever, gotten in touch with me.

There have been, no hurricanes. We have had, many sunny days, locally lately. I have remained neutral. I accept, that God is protecting this area, to show God's support, for Christos, a scientific 'experiment'... I give thanks to God, for God's support, for Christos, and for protecting the area, which I live within. I remain willing, to seek to intervene, if need be, but thus far, thanks to God, there has been no need... I would also assume, that if God, wished to 'strike me down', that God, could easily do so...

PREPARING NEW STARTS
October 14, 1986

I spent much time, this past weekend, going over my bank records, in an effort to determine, how my bank account, could possibly have, a balance, of negative $420. I found a significant error, in my addition, way back at the start of August, but that would be irrelevant, to my current situation. I have not been checking, my bank statement, each month, as I should. If I had not paid, my October car payment, a week early, then I probably, would have been okay.

However, what I did seem to find, was a major error, on the part of my bank. My bank seems to have bounced, one check of mine, which was actually sufficiently covered, by available funds, and then, they also made note, as a withdrawal, of my deposited pay-check. This is what actually created, a significant difference, between what I thought I had, in the bank, what I should have actually had, and what the bank thought I had. Banks are operated by people, and human error, is always a possibility.

To seek to be clear, what happened was, I deposited my pay-check, which would have added to my funds, but my bank deducted that deposit, counting my pay-check, as a withdrawal, and this doubled the difference, between what I should have actually had, in my bank account, and what the bank, said that I actually had, in my bank account...

Lesson learned for me, was to seek, to check my bank statements, in a timely manner, each and every time. Never assume, that anyone else, is correctly handling, your stuff for you...

This week, I have been getting up early, so that I will be adjusted, to my new work schedule, when it begins next week. I will have, perhaps a half hour, between when I leave work, and when my class starts, at school, and I can eat a sandwich, at that time, if I bring one with me, to work. I won't be able, to exercise in the mornings, before work anymore, as the exercise room, will be closed at that time, but I should be able, to work-out after school.

Asmodeus gave to me, a mailing address, for television talk show host, Oprah Winfrey, and suggested, that I contact

her, as Christos. I must admit, that Asmodeus has been helpful to me. I like to think, that I have been helpful, to Asmodeus also. My disappointment, with Asmodeus, comes from knowing, that he often says, he will do something, and then fails to do it. Since I know, that Asmodeus is often this way, then I seek to accept this, and adapt.

I have drifted away, from Asmodeus, but still feel, a bond of personal friendship, with him. I have not met anyone else, as well informed, of metaphysical, spiritual, occult, or religious topics, as Asmodeus, and he has brought, much information, to my attention. I think, most of my drift, from Asmodeus, has nothing to do, with Asmodeus, and instead, reflects that my focus has been upon my job, Steve, working-out, and school. It is, as I said, in Book Two, that one should seek, to make the best use, of opportunity and time, because both, can be limited...

Steve had a back injury, while working-out. It seems, that muscle pulls, and strains, are quite common, among those, trying to build their bodies. Proper form of motion is essential, for otherwise, getting out of balance, or straining in a wrong way, can result in injury. Working-out is not 'casual'. Working-out wrong, can result, in a lack of improvement, or in unbalanced growth, or in injury... So many people, seem to go to a gym, and think, that they just go through the motions, of working-out, casually, and repeatedly, and gain benefit, and I have seen, some do this, for a prolonged time, without improvement. Having a guide, or a work-out partner, can be very helpful.

Keeping a written log, of one's actual performance, can also help one, to do what one properly or safely can, can help one to avoid, seeking to do too much, which could then result, in an injury.

I have been giving massages to Steve, to help with his injury, and this can, shorten the time, of pain, from an injury. Massage, can simply be, a good thing, for people who are working-out, as it can help, in muscle recovery... I like to give, or receive, massages, with oil and music... I like to think, that I give, one of the best possible massages, that I am very talented, with oil and music...

There was a girl, some time back, that Steve was going

to date, one of three girls. This one, Leslie, is still interested, in dating Steve. Steve says, that he is interested, in having, casual recreational sex, with a woman. For one thing, Steve could bring a woman, to his home, and have sex, without worrying about it, and it might actually, enhance his 'straight image'...

I am not overjoyed, by this prospect... I always worry, that once a woman, becomes involved with a man, that she might be there, long-term... And I most certainly, don't wish to be around Steve, when he, is on a 'date'...

Steve is lucky to have, an 'understanding buddy', like me. Steve has been honest, and up-front, about everything, so I am, at least informed, and lack any complaint, about that. Steve is tutoring me, in computers. Some of this review, with me, might also be, beneficial for Steve. I am reading books, on my own, and then discussing the material, with Steve. The books are technical, while the course I start, next week, is an accelerated, general course.

The person, who Red Jeff stole from, Gary, has decided, to press criminal charges, against Red Jeff, because Red Jeff, set a date to start repayment, and then missed it, without communicating... Gary says, that he feels, that police, have failed to respond, to his complaint, and are doing nothing, to locate Red Jeff.

I have advised Gary, that he might be unaware of everything police are doing, in this situation.

Gary says, police are waiting, for Red Jeff, to turn himself in, or, if they happen to stop Red Jeff, for anything, then they might act, if this charge comes up. It might also be a case, of Gary's word, against Red Jeff's word, and thus the police might feel, there is nothing to act upon, a lack of actual evidence...

Gary feels, that Red Jeff should be easy to find, that he is drifting around the area. Gary asked me, to report immediately, to him, if I happen to see, Red Jeff anywhere.

I assured Gary, that Red Jeff has been absent from my home, and that I have not seen him.

I mused, that this gives police, another reason, to observe me, and that perhaps I should sell popcorn and sodas, to any of the 'law enforcement' congregation, in my parking lot. I chuckled, that while I have said, that I don't

want ‘followers’, that I might have some anyway, though one might note, they are not ‘devotees’... I meant ‘followers’, in this context, as those of various government agencies, who ‘observe’ me, and thus ‘follow me’ around... Perhaps my life story, might be done, as a comedy...

The super-power summit, fell apart. The US, declined to drop, the Star Wars, anti-nuclear, anti-missile, defense system, and so the SU, declined to consider, missile reductions. Since neither side, seemed willing, to accept the position, of the other, the summit was cancelled...

The SU says, that it must build more missiles, to counter the US anti-missile system. Both sides, measure how much, the other could destroy, in a first-strike, and seek to have, enough remaining missiles left, to do enough damage, in a counter-strike, to deter the other side, from launching a first-strike... Neither side, factors in over-kill, a point passed long ago, which is the amount, of detonations, anywhere on our planet, that would poison the atmosphere, of our entire planet, and end life, for everyone.

As a spiritual father, of Star Wars in a way, I have always sympathized, with a goal, of creating a system, which would reduce, the threat of nuclear destruction. I can now see, that lasers, and particle beam weapons, can be used offensively, replacing one old form of aggression, with a new method. At least, perhaps destruction, from lasers and particle beams, could be more precise, than nuclear detonations.

Perhaps the United Nations, might manage, an anti-missile system, so that no individual nation, can use missiles, against another... Nationalism, can influence citizens, of one nation, to distrust, any defense system, that is not, in their own hands... I understand, that I have never found security, in someone else’s pocket...

AUTUMN ARRIVES IN THE AIR
October 16, 1986

I don't know why ... call it Christos' sorrow ... but, when the first cold air arrives, it always brings, a touch of sadness, to me. I am reminded, of the emotions, from the movie, *Doctor Zhivago*, when leaves start to fall, which they don't, in south Florida... Someone once described, this demeanor of mine, as 'elegant melancholia'... Perhaps it is my knowledge, of a marker, of passage of time, forever gone, at least linearly...

The Christos moon, is full tomorrow night, another anniversary, of my Rapture. Weather-wise, I remain neutral. I thank God, for giving this area, good weather, and hurricane protection, throughout the summer. I do also assume, that other allies, might have also been involved, but I had asked, that this hurricane season, be done by God, to show God's support, for me as Christos. I myself, have refrained, from using my abilities, though I did consider, that I could do so, if need be.

Patrick called me, to tell me, that Steve's phone, might be shut off, because the last two payment checks, that Steve has given, to the phone company, have bounced... Steve says, he has not paid, October rent, because his air-conditioner broke down, and he wants it repaired by management, before he pays rent.

For my part, I wonder, how a phone bill payment, could have bounced, if rent, has not been paid, which, according to Steve, could have been paid... Perhaps Steve, has a challenge, in budgeting his income(s)...

Steve says, he might move, if the air-conditioner is not fixed soon. Steve said, he would not want, my extra room, though his furnishings would be nice, in my nearly unfurnished apartment. Steve says, that it would be unfair of him, to live with me, because of his having his kids, every other weekend.

My position to Steve, all along, is that I have no objections, to the children, and would be willing, to make any necessary compromises.

It could be, slightly awkward, for me, if Patrick, were to need a place to live, if my extra room, is vacant, and Steve

does not want, the room... I feel reluctant, to have Patrick, live with me, not because of his drinking, and tendency to break things, though I would dislike that too, but because, then Steve, would probably feel less than comfortable, at my place, if Patrick lived with me...

I have gotten, a new roommate, Barry, who is gay, but not overly obvious about it, in his mannerisms. I told Barry, that I have a steady lover, so I am not interested, in fooling around with other people, but that he is free, to bring home people, to fool around with, in his own room. I used the money, from Barry, to pay my tuition. Barry only had the money, to pay one week's rent, but said, that he would get to me, the 'last week's rent', next week. At least Steve seems at ease, in my home, with Barry, and Steve has been, willing to fool around with me, with Barry living here. This is very good.

I had happened, to ask Patrick, where Steve might be, and Patrick told me, that Steve was out, doing laundry, so I went, to the laundry area, but Steve, was absent from there. Steve's vehicle was parked at his apartment. Perhaps Steve was enjoying, a 'fling', some recreational, sexual 'adventure'?

Asmodeus paid to me, a little bit of money, that he has owed to me, for eight months. Not exactly a timely payment, but a very welcome payment anyway! Steve also paid to me, the money he owed to me, and his repayment, was on schedule.

Asmodeus, has been away from beer, marijuana, and even tobacco, for about 60 days now. There is a terrific accomplishment, one that can be difficult, and reflects good mental disciple, self-control. Asmodeus, has found a way, to improve himself, with Narcotics Anonymous, NA, new attitudes... Asmodeus gains strength of will, by being part, of a support group, but it is he, who has accomplished his goal. The shared experience, of members of support groups, helps them all, as individuals, and helps them, to cope, with the normal, and sometimes harsh, realities of life, without indulging, in escape...

Asmodeus and Steve finally met. Asmodeus made a point, right away, of telling Steve, that Asmodeus, is the representative, for Christos... I said, that Asmodeus, is 'a'

representative, of Christos, rather than, 'the' representative of Christos... A difference, between 'a' and 'the', is one of my little pet peeves in life. 'A', is, 'one of many', and, 'the', can be, 'the only'... I think, much trouble in life, comes from people, thinking in terms, of 'the', rather than in terms, of 'a'...

I will admit, that at this time, Asmodeus is, the only person, who wishes to be, a representative, of Christos...

Steve might prefer to think of anything I do, as Christos as unimportant, a bit crazy, and might prefer, for that whole thing, to just fade away...

I asked Asmodeus, if he is, the representative of Christos, had he bothered, to write to, that talk show host, and he said no.

Asmodeus said, he had mentioned the topic, to Steve, only to see, if I had mentioned the topic, to Steve, to see, if I am the same, with others, as I am, with him. Steve knew of the topic, so Asmodeus was satisfied. However, Steve has little interest, in that topic, or in anything spiritual, or metaphysical.

Asmodeus said, that before he would write, the talk show host, he would have to study, my test with Randi, to see if he could say, that I had passed it, or done at least okay.

I told Asmodeus, that he has had that material, for over a year, so if he has yet to read it, he can only blame himself, and I asked Asmodeus, how can he say, he is a representative of me, when he declines to learn, what he might be representing? Perhaps Christos, opens more doors, for Asmodeus, than Asmodeus opens, for Christos?

CROSS ROADS
October 19, 1986

Steve has, somewhat reinforced, his position, that we are, 'just friends', and seems to be, becoming distant, once again. Each time this happens, I fear, that things could be over... I feel, much of that, 'oh no' feeling, what Howard, perhaps used to call, his 'sinking spells'... I am fairly certain, that Steve's vacillations have nothing to do with me, as I remain 'constant', the same.

My heart, hopes that Steve, will give priority, to his own heart. My mind, sometimes tires, of Steve's vacillations... For now, as romantic, involuntary, mutual love, is a thing I greatly value, in life, my mind agrees, to cater to my heart.

My fear is that when Steve is distant, that he might then wish, to become even more distant, rather than returning, in my direction, and that he might thus, in his pendulum swings, eventually drop me. I would respect this, but it does cause me, to feel some sorrow.

I know, that Steve is reacting, to things in his own mind, for I have not done anything, to cause a change, in Steve's position. Once again, I will be patient, and remain the same, and hope that Steve draws near once again. Perhaps Steve is insecure, because Barry, is a very attractive male, 'hunky'... Perhaps Steve, has an attraction to Barry... Perhaps Steve, has an 'invisible planet' in his life, something external, that I am unaware of, which causes his orbit, to wobble.

I most certainly, do not welcome this change, and it does cause me, to feel, some involuntary sorrow...

Patrick called me, and was hysterical... Patrick told me, that Steve had ordered him, to get out immediately. Patrick said, Steve had said, that Steve would return $200, to Patrick, or, Patrick could stay, until the end of the month, but no longer than that.

Patrick was horrified, as his broken leg, is still mending, and he has little money, and has not yet, returned to work. Patrick said, that Steve warned Patrick, that Steve, would bodily, physically, throw Patrick out, if he sought to enter the apartment, after that time. Patrick said, that he would hurt Steve, if Steve tried anything like that.

I said, I hoped violence, would not cause, a minor thing, to become a major thing. Patrick said, that Steve punches him, when Steve gets angry. I said, I had not seen, anything like that.

Patrick said, that he has, already paid Steve, well into November, so $200 refunded, would not be enough, to repay him, nor enough, to allow him to settle elsewhere. Steve told me, that Patrick had not paid, October rent yet.

Patrick said, that Steve only cares about himself, and about no one else. Patrick said, that Steve is only using me, just like he uses, everyone else.

Patrick said, he had done nothing, to cause this, but he has long seen, Steve, 'turn on people'...

I suggested to Patrick, that he call family, or friends, for help. Patrick said, that his family, would not help him, and that he had, no friends. I asked Patrick, why does he lack friends. Patrick said, that basically, he is a loner. I asked Patrick, if this was wise. Patrick said, he would hobble out, onto the streets, and go live in the woods, and then come back, in a few years, to haunt Steve. I told Patrick, that this did not seem, like a good idea.

Patrick said, that Steve was just having him move, so that I could move in. I assured Patrick, that I have no plans, to live with Steve, and that I have a lease, that keeps me in place.

Patrick said, that he would tell, the apartment management, that he has been living with Steve, without management approval, if Steve puts him out. Patrick said, that he would cause Steve, major problems, if Steve kicks him out.

Patrick said, that Steve found, an empty 12-pack, of beer, in the garbage, and that is why he demanded, that Patrick leave immediately... Patrick said, that Steve thought, Patrick had been drinking, around the kids, and that the empty 12-pack, had actually been, from earlier, when the kids, were not around. Patrick said, that he was totally sober.

I advised Patrick, to not do anything, which he might regret later. I told Patrick, that if he thought, living with Steve, was undesirable, then perhaps, he should wish, to live elsewhere, and should not be, so angry, about leaving.

I told Patrick, that I thought, the best thing, for him to do, would be, to sit down, and reasonably talk, with Steve, for I have found Steve, to be a reasonable person. I told Patrick, that I am in no position, to be helpful to him, as I have a roommate, so no extra space, and I do not have, any spare money either.

I did not hear from Steve, for a couple of days. There was no contact, at all.

I had invited Logan, to come over, and exercise with me, and he did, and we did. Logan is looking, to pair up with someone, and has expressed, interest in me. Logan has a male lover, who drifts away, for weeks at a time, and then returns, all warm and friendly, for sex, for a day or two, and then vanishes again.

Technically, this seems to me, like what is called, a 'sex buddy', or, in the heterosexual world, a 'booty call', as there is, no real 'friendship' involved. Apparently, Logan's heart is involved, and he accepts this situation. Logan's heart attraction, to his lover, has kept him disinterested, in seeking to find, anyone else, and apparently, this situation continues. Logan says, he spends much time, alone at home...

Logan said, that he felt attracted, enough by me, to cause him to consider, ending things, with his lover... Logan seems to prefer, to only 'be involved', with one person at a time, and, right now, he is 'involved', with this 'lover'.

I admit, that Logan got me to chuckle. I had explained, to Logan, my own 'situation', with being 'just friends', with my 'lover', and had also then suggested, to Logan, that perhaps, he should make a point, to seek to find someone, other than his lover, that he should go out, to make himself, 'available to opportunity'.

Logan had replied, that if I could suggest, that he ask himself, if he really wanted, 'that sort of relationship', that perhaps, I might also do the same, and ask myself, if I really wanted, a 'lover', who insists, that we are, 'just friends'...

Both Logan and I agreed, that for now, we are 'in', our relationships, and we wished each other, good luck... Logan 'joked', that we are both involved, in 'mixed marriages', between a gay man, and a 'straight' man...

I did feel physically attracted, to Logan, and he is masculine, muscular, enjoys working-out, and has some

'dust', a touch of being 'wild', not party wild, but part of nature, perhaps 'earthy', whereas, Barry lacks 'dust', is perhaps, 'overly civilized', or 'domesticated'...

However, I did refrain, from fooling around with Logan, precisely because, he had expressed interest, in being lovers, and I did not wish, to complicate, my relationship with Steve, nor did I wish, to risk causing, emotional harm, to Logan... I did enjoy my time, with Logan, though sadly, even while I was with Logan, I was thinking at times, about Steve.

Steve called me, the day after, I worked-out with Logan, and asked me, if I wanted to visit for a while. Steve was having, a birthday party, for one of his kids. I went over, and there were many kids there. Steve had gotten party things, hats, sodas, treats, and gifts, so had spent some money, to do this.

Steve said, he had lost his wallet, and needed $20, to get some more, odds and ends. I gave this money to Steve, and he had me, 'manage' things, while he went out, to get some more things. I wondered, if Steve's 'lost wallet', was related, to his 'fling'... I did casually inquire, of Steve, where he might have been that night, and he said, he was home asleep, and that Patrick didn't know.

I went to Paul's, from Steve's, as it was Paul's 75th birthday. I brought champagne, for Paul. All Paul could do, was to speak ill of Steve... Paul kept saying, that Steve, is below my class, and that Steve, is seeing other people, and not loyal to me, as I am to him. Paul says, Steve will probably give to me, a sexual disease. I tire, of Paul's constant venom...

I mused, that when Paul, is so offensive toward Steve, that I am put in a position, of defending Steve... I am also, somewhat put into a position, of never speaking, of my problems with Steve, to Paul...

I have not mentioned, Patrick's outburst to me, about Steve, to Steve. Nor did I tell Patrick, anything about Steve. I do hope, their brotherly conflict, resolves itself. Family has a way, of mending bridges, regardless of past insult, because often, family members come to an understanding, that they are truly stuck, with one another, for life, and often, there is no one else, but family... Therefore, it might often be wise, for friends, to stay out of, family quarrels...

Coincidentally, soon after, Paul's prolonged outburst, about Steve, to me, the weather turned rainy, with high winds, tearing a roof, off of one house, and knocking out power, for a little while, to several neighborhoods. My mood is certainly agitated, but that weather, was not of my conscious. I wondered if my being subjected, to Paul's negativity, had resulted, in some sort of, adverse 'bounce'. The timing was at least 'coincidental'.

The next day, Steve said, he wanted to work-out with me, so I joined him, at the exercise room. Steve also, thereafter, helped me, to put up my drapes. It has taken me, all of this time, to be able to afford, to buy drapes... I now have curtains... Steve casually asked me, if he had told me, that he had a fight, with Patrick, and I said no.

Steve said, that he had seen, an empty 12-pack, of beer, in the garbage, and that Patrick, had another 12-pack, and was continuing to drink, even with the kids around. Steve says, that he immediately told Patrick, to move, and then, when he turned his back on Patrick, that Patrick, had started to sneak up on him, as if to attack him. Steve said, he took the kids elsewhere, to get them, away from what he thought, was rapidly becoming, an unpleasant situation. Steve said, that Patrick followed them out, and yelled at them, from the balcony.

Steve got really agitated, that he had been, unable to have, a pleasant, peaceful, normal time, with his kids, in his apartment, due to Patrick's being there, and was quite resolved, that he did want Patrick, to move. Steve said, he also had to be concerned, that if the kids, mentioned the incident, to Matilda, that she, would rush to court, to use it against him.

Steve said, it is precisely, this sort of situation, which had reminded him, that he did not want to be, close to people...

Steve asked, if he could borrow, an additional $125. I have $25, in cash, and $180, in the bank. Perhaps Steve just wants a loan, so that I don't drift, too far away, from him... At any rate, I gladly lent the money, to Steve.

My own hassle, with the bank, is now resolved... I went to the bank, in person, and showed, what I had figured out, to a representative, a 'vice president', perhaps a 'common title', for those who have desks. She was able to confirm,

that I was correct, that Sun Bank, had actually noted my pay-check, as a withdrawal, rather than as a deposit. She gave to me, a note, to show to those, they had bounced checks, due to their error. The bank, declined to pay, any fees, incurred to me, at other places, by their erroneously bouncing my payment checks, but they cancelled, their own fees...

I was concerned, about Steve's recent problems. First, Steve had a back injury, then a gum infection, then a spate with Patrick, followed by a lost wallet, and a cash problem. I wrote, on a piece of paper, that directed negative energy, deliberately metaphysically sent, at Steve, should be returned to sender, and then I burned, that piece of paper. Hopefully, this might protect Steve, for a week, to a month... Steve seems, just about, back to normal, again now.

I thought to myself, how schooling, or a job, could take me, away from Steve. If Steve and I had an understanding, that we were in a union, then I would do nothing, which would separate us. Steve's point, was that a person, should not give up, good opportunity, just to maintain a union. Steve said, he would always move, if need be, for a good job opportunity. I had thought, Steve's children came first in his life... I said, that unions can last, longer than jobs, and it can be easier, to get another job, than another union. I laughed at myself later, as I seem to have had, neither lasting jobs, nor lasting unions...

Red Jeff visited me, for a while. Red Jeff was sober, and pleasant company. As always, Red Jeff would enjoy, fooling around, but I declined. Funny, how Red Jeff, and Steve, might enjoy, being in each other's shoes, with me... Steve would like, to just be, casual friends, with sex, without union, like Red Jeff and I have been. Red Jeff, would want the union, with me, that Steve declines...

I told Red Jeff, that the brain operates like a computer, with a manual mode, and an automatic mode. I told Jeff, that the brain's automatic mode is like the automatic heartbeat, or breaths we take, without thinking. Anything, one does enough, manually, by choice, can become automatic. Many people, end up coasting, on their automatic, most of the time, unless something happens, that causes them, to manually readjust, until the new manual,

becomes the new automatic... I said that habits, even drug habits, are automatic functions, that one has created, by repeated manual input, so any automatic, even a drug habit, can be corrected, changed, again, with new repeated manual input... It is this ability, to 'self-program', that makes us, 'thinking animals'...

School starts tomorrow, and I worry, about my ability, to be responsible, to both my work needs, and my class needs. That John-S, is allowing me, to take work-related classes, helps to take, some of the sting, out of his failure, to honor our written contract... I do note, that if John-S, fails to honor, his written words, that he might also, fail to honor, his verbal words...

Trudy says, that she does not know, if I will be able, to complete this course, and that perhaps, I should have refrained, from spending the money, on tuition. Trudy hopes, that I didn't make, a mistake... Trudy said, that our work demands, can increase, during the upcoming business season, and I might be needed, at the shop. Trudy said, that she expected, me to skip classes, if need be, to do what needs to be done, at work. I simply told Trudy, I have always met all of our deadlines, and would continue to do so, but silently, I do shudder, to think about how Trudy's stubborn incompetence, affects what 'needs to be done', and I suspect, I won't skip classes, and hurt my education, to please Trudy's whims, but thankfully, that is a problem for 'later', rather than for 'now'.

Trudy said, that for now, she can go along, with my taking classes, but, if I need to work over-time, then she wants me, to arrive at the shop, at 6:00am, and still work without a break, until I leave for class. John-S says, he does not want me, returning in the evenings, after class, and I also, would prefer, to avoid that, as I would like, to be able, to spend some time, working-out, and to see Steve...

Trudy said, that she might have to demand, that I drop the school classes, if I need to meet a deadline, even if, I had arrived at 6:00am... I have, my own key, to the shop. Given that Trudy's only qualification, for 'management', was that she had, a college degree, even if unrelated, to business or printing, or computers, I would hope, she might understand, that I should have one too. At least my college

courses are actually relevant, to my work... Perhaps Trudy's main qualification, is that she is female?

I have agreed to arrive, as early as necessary, but declined, to drop my classes, this accelerated term, though it could mean, arising at 4:30am, to be at work, at 6:00am, or earlier...

I also wished to mention, a continuing bit, of amusing 'bounce'. It seems, that each time, or at least many times, when I come up with, a fake name, for one of the people, involved in my life, to use in this journal, then soon thereafter, I meet someone, whose real name, is that fake name...

= 32 =

THE ASSURANCE OF REASSURANCE
THE EXPECTATION OF RECIPROCATION
October 23, 1986

One night, Steve was pleasantly 'stoned', when he arrived, and he seemed interested, in sharing, whatever I might have, though he had brought nothing, to share with me... I only had, a little to share, and I did... Thus, comes up the topic, of the expectation of reciprocation...

At face value, my attitude, seems to be, that Steve, should have brought something to share, if able to reciprocate, for the times, that I have done so, for him... Reciprocation, of some sort, encourages trade, to continue. Lack of reciprocation, can discourage, further aid and trade... One who needs help in life, which perhaps all do, in some ways, should nurture or value, the aid and trade, that one receives...

Steve said, that perhaps, we are not compatible after all, because I had asked him, what he had been doing the other night. Steve said, I should have known, that he would, not do anything, which would hurt me...

I thought my question, had been rather 'innocent', and I had implied nothing. I also thought, that Steve, had failed to answer my question. I wondered, if Steve, was 'playing me', somewhat threatening, a withdrawal of affection, a new period of distance, though insincerely, only as a ploy, and I didn't like thinking, that might be, what he was doing...

I told Steve, that all people, have similarities, and differences, and that, we can make bridges, on our similarities, and hope our differences, expand us as friends, give us both, individually more, than we could be, as singles alone.

That didn't seem to be, an answer that Steve liked, and he actually, seemed to be, annoyed with me, and that was, okay with me, as I felt annoyed with him, starting from when he arrived mildly high, with nothing to share... I mused, that this was, perhaps, our 'first fight'...

Daniel arrived, and had brought, a little something, to share with both of us... Steve and I, did at least enjoy, our hug and kiss, before Steve departed, and he was tender and nice with me, in this way, in front of Daniel...

Daniel said, that regardless, of any words, I might hear from Steve, that Daniel believes, that Steve, is more relaxed, and happy, when with me, than Daniel has ever seen him before.

I told Daniel, that Book Five, of *The Life of Christos*, exists. I told Daniel, that this book, began as an epilogue, to Book Four, but then became, a book of its own...

I was reminded, of my saying, that anything, one takes for granted, one is risking, losing. It is important, to show signs of affection, to reaffirm a bond. There is much compromise, that might be built, due to affection, and failure, to affirm that affection, can erode the value, of those compromises...

The work-front remains 'challenging'... I have been arriving, at 8:00am, and have told Trudy, that it is up to her, to tell me, when she feels, I need to be there earlier, as John-S, views my over-time, as 'charity'... I believe, some over-time, is actually going to be necessary, and that some upcoming deadlines, could be missed. I brought some specific jobs, to Trudy's attention, and told her, the time that would be required, for each...

Now that I am to leave, during the day, in the afternoons, Trudy is spending, more time each day, bringing to me, things that have to be done, 'right then', as she no longer, can just dump, a bunch of stuff on me, at the end of her day, before she leaves... I feel, that I am suffering a bit, from poor close supervision...

Trudy's attitude, is very haughty... Often, Trudy has me stop, whatever it is, I am doing, to then work immediately, upon whatever it is, she has brought to me... I am concerned, that I could miss a deadline, for one of the 'regularly scheduled' jobs, and Trudy, has cut my leeway, with my regular work, by often bringing to me, 'do now' jobs, but that is, how it is, for now...

I had hoped, that by making Trudy aware, of the time required, for scheduled jobs, that she might give, some consideration, to them, might give, enough consideration, to them, that they can get done...

It is one thing, for me to put up with, John-S being nasty, without any real cause, as I can easily dismiss that, but I would hope to avoid, giving him real cause, by missing

deadlines, and so far, so good. I am mindful, that John-S, still will blame me, for any mistake, made by Trudy...

The other day, Trudy had me stop everything, to sweep the floor. I generally, clean up my work area, before I leave. I gain some momentum, with each project, by focusing on it, and a trivial interruption can seem to be a waste of my limited time, and harmful, when it breaks my focus and momentum. I would be cleaning up my area anyway, and there could be, more paper, that needs to be, cleaned up later, anyway. If I clean, when I am done, then everything is clean.

However, Trudy said, that John-S, wants me to clean, during the day, because there are important clients, who come to my work area...

And, we aren't talking about, big dirty messes, but rather, little bits of paper, from being cut, for paste-up, that fall from the desk, to the ground... And, for the record, both John-S and Trudy add to the mess, in my work area, but I am the only one, who cleans this area, and it is 'officially', part of my work responsibility, to do so. I just didn't like, stopping everything, to do so. My time is now limited, and I seek to use it efficiently.

I mused, that I could be working hard, and end up with a bad reference, from John-S, in the future, if for no other reason than he might prefer, that I not work, for any competitor... I think, honoring the wage contract, with me, would have helped, to minimize the chance that I might work for a competitor...

I wondered if, as John-S says, in writing, my work is so slow, and sloppy, and my appearance, so bad, then why, do three major ad agencies, and two other print shops, insist on bringing their work, directly to me, and refuse, to deal with Trudy... An answer I got, is that, it is these people, who are my work references, rather than my boss, John-S, being a work reference, for me...

And for the record, that these clients, wish to deal, directly with me, is entirely their preference, something that they demanded, on their own...

Asmodeus' back went out, when he reached down, to pick up a piece of paper. Asmodeus called me, to ask me, to send some healing energy, his way. I agreed, and

consciously sent, positive energy, to Asmodeus, with the specific request, that he be well. I have suggested, to Asmodeus, that he join me, for a swim, or to exercise, light exercise to improve his body's condition, but he has declined, saying his heart, prevents him, from doing anything... I might think, that some very mild exercise might strengthen one's heart. However, I understand, that Asmodeus knows, his health situation, better than I do, and that, with one's heart, one might prefer, to minimize risks...

Asmodeus told me, there was a line, in a movie recently, which said, "The reason that Satan, tempted Christ, with the whole world, was not because, he hated him, but because, he loved him." I suppose, in this view, one could say, that Satan knew, what Christ could experience, at the hands of humanity, because he knew, humanity to be bad, and Christ to be good, so Satan, was trying to protect Christ, from the hell, that he would experience, among humanity. I suppose, any doctor-teacher, who tries to teach, farming and health, to sick cannibals, faces some risks...

Asmodeus also told me, that Matthew had visited him. Given that Matthew owes, $150 to me, and has made, no effort to repay anything, to me, I am probably fortunate, that he has remained distant. I considered, how Helene has said, there is only so much room, in her heart, for problems of the world...

Logan visited me, worked-out with me, and told me, that he would be interested, in having a serious relationship, with me. Logan said, that if Steve and I, are 'just friends', and that if Steve and I, have the right, in our mutual understanding, to see other people, and if I too, might want to develop, a long-term stable union, then Logan, would like for me, to give him a try. Logan said, that I am the first person, in a long time, that he has been willing, to seek to have, a relationship with, and that he, has now dropped, his on-again, off-again, 'lover'...

I thanked Logan, and said, that I am concerned, that a relationship with him, would indeed be serious, and that for now, I do have, involuntary romantic love, for Steve, and that I am not yet prepared, to give up hope, with Steve. I told Logan, 'not at this time'...

I suggested to Logan, that we seek, to be friends, and

find out, if we can enjoy each other, without sex. Logan said, he does like me, and feels romantic toward me, and that he doesn't want, to get hurt, so he is, at best, lukewarm, to the idea of spending time, with me, without sex, especially if he does want sex, and would then just feel frustrated, by me, which in turn, would influence, for him to not want, to be around me. I again told Logan, 'not at this time'...

Logan indicated, that he might, now be disinclined, to see me again. Logan has been, a good work-out partner, perhaps better than Steve. Logan helps to 'spot' me, which is watch me, when I am handling weight, and to urge me, to do more, helps to handle, some of the weight, when I 'hit fatigue', that point, where one is unable, to do stuff alone. A partner, who helps one, 'beyond fatigue', helps one, to do more, than one could do alone, and this, is where one gets, much gain. Steve and I somewhat work-out separately, simply at the same time, if we work-out together. Steve was actually embarrassed, when we went to a gym, and I got some weights for him... I do give credit, to Steve, for getting me, to resume working-out... And Steve, does compliment me, on my improvements, and does get me, to keep on, working-out regularly.

Despite that recent, brief, sense of annoyance, with Steve, I believe that, overall, Steve has done much for me, and has been, a healthy, more or less stable, or at least enduring, relationship. I do not believe, involuntary romantic love, can be contrived. I believe, that is something, that is either there, or not there, and for me, and for Steve, it is there, between us. To me, this mutual aspect, is rare, and precious...

There was a time, when Steve, wished to remain, in my place, to stay away from his own home, for a while, even when I was absent. I wondered, if Daniel, might have mentioned, the existence of this book, to Steve.

[140514 ~ The original text, in my journal, was sketchy, and avoided focus, on some things. The original journal, lacked pictures of Steve, and Red Jeff...]

I want to be, where Steve can go, to get away from his troubles. I do not want to be, another source of trouble, for Steve. Steve has helped, to make my world, much more bearable. I have no cause, to fault Steve, for anything...

THE RIGHT TO PRIVACY
October 28, 1986

Paul called me today, at work, just before I left, to go take, my first exam, in my computer science class. Paul told me, that the Post Office, had called him, as he is my contact phone number, to say, that both of my post office boxes, have been closed. I had opened, a second box, for Jualt Christos, to seek to have that mail, if any, left alone, when mail for me, related to *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, is seized, or 'reviewed'. I suppose, the reverse could be true, and I simply hoped, to keep the mail, events, and affairs, of Jualt Christos and *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, separate. I do continue to receive, some magazines...

Paul asked the Post Office representative, if I was paid in full, and they said yes. Paul asked, why would the boxes be closed, and was told, that this was a matter, that they would only discuss, with me.

The Post Office representative, did ask Paul, if I was still doing, my newsletter, and news service. Paul said he gambled, seeking to be helpful, and said yes. Paul said, he thought the Post Office, might respect my mail service, if they viewed me, as a journalist. However, the Post Office representative, then said, the boxes would be closed, and that I should, get in touch with them, about this situation...

Fortunately, this closure, of my Post Office boxes, is neither critical nor crucial, to me at this time. I receive my utility bills, at my home address. I like to think, that things have been basically peaceful, since I dropped, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. I have not had, any major problems, since the Stop Sign Incident, unless one might wish to count, that curious, odd, bank error...

I will talk to someone, at the Post Office, and find out, the true situation. I am unable, to go to the Post Office, as I must remain, at my job, without a break, during day-time hours, then go right to class, from there, and, for me, the Post Office boxes, are to the north, of my job, and the classes, are to the south.

I will admit, that this situation, became 'on my mind', as I went to face, and faced, that exam at school... I was a touch annoyed, at Paul's timing, but advised myself, not to,

'shoot the messenger'...

Steve said, he has again affirmed, to Patrick, that Steve prefers, to live alone. Steve told Patrick, that even if Patrick were a perfect angel, that Steve would want for Patrick to move.

Steve has also, now made a point, to tell me, for several days, on each day, that he has some 'errands', that he must do, which he said, he could not tell me about, and this has kept him, from seeing me. I admit, that Steve's telling me, that this is something, that I cannot be told about, does make me, 'curious'... In general, things that cannot be spoken of are not good things... Lack of communication can increase riskof misunderstanding...

I admit, that I felt some concern, that Steve was doing something, which he felt, that he could not tell me about. I believe, the relationship, between Steve and I, has been open and honest, and, for sure, that is how, I've kept my side, of our board. I do agree, that Steve has a right to privacy, even from me, but this can be, a touchy thing, given how we face, some possible adversity, for our relationship. It is sort of like, I am manning the front-line, of our shared turf alone, but this is unusual, not our norm...

Again, I considered, that Steve might have been, simply 'playing with me', using a ploy, for some reason. I had this gut feeling, that if one wishes, to conceal something, one does not advertise, that one is concealing something... Perhaps, Steve was simply making a point, asserting his independence... That Steve, might feel a need, to conceal something, from me, was not reassuring, to me. And I disliked the idea, that Steve might be 'playing with me', as I have vakued the honesty between us, and I reassured myself, that I lacked certainty about that aspect.

My mother came to town, and I had lunch with her. I also brought my mother, over to my apartment, figuring that it might be, for the best, to let her see the place, for herself, as there is no telling, what she has heard, from Paul. For the record, Paul has not seen my apartment, and, of the house-warming presents, that Daniel and Paul, had separately said, they would get for me, neither got me anything...

Charming words, can be hollow, when actions, fail to

give them, any meaning. I prefer, not to receive, hollow words. Maybe other people are different, but I think, there is more long-term damage, than short-term benefit, from hollow words...

At any rate, my mother said, for me to refrain, from getting furniture, as she said, she would give to me, some furniture from storage, when she returns, to stay for a while, in January. I thanked my mother, but said, that I might still get, a few things, between now and then. I am mindful, that my mother, has also been given, to hollow words, and one might never know, what she might actually do...

My mother said, that her offer, to help me, to get used type-setting equipment, and set up my own shop, still stands... I said, that I hoped, that a business venture, between she and I, could be beneficial, for both of us. I am also aware, that the last time, we spoke on this topic, my mother said, that she wouldn't be, helpful to me, with a typesetting shop, at least for another two years.

My mother also suggested, that I should accept, my half-sister's offer, to help me, with my education... I told my mother, that I had, accepted that offer, at least three times... And each time I accepted that offer, the reply I got, was, "I don't understand, why you don't accept my offer..."

My mother said, that she has been unaware, that I had accepted, my half-sister's offer, and said that perhaps, my half-sister, just didn't think, I was serious. My mother said, that perhaps my half-sister, would change her mind, after I get, some good grades, with the courses, I am now taking... My mother said, that my getting good grades, would indicate, to my half-sister, that I was serious, about my education...

I wondered if my mother's nice visit, and charming words, might be related, to that hot letter I had sent, to my Uncle James...

Steve asked me, for heat, to break the cool, or cold for us, weather we have been having. As usual, the meteorologists were saying, the cold would continue. I told Steve, that I would give it a try. Steve said, he would like it warm, in January. I said, that could be, more difficult, but said, that I have fought off winter, during my past, as a teaching lesson, for Grace, so could try, to do so again.

The next day, the temperature went back up, into the 80°Fs, which apparently surprised, the official meteorologists, who described the weather, as 'unexpected'... Steve then said, the heat was nice, but what he really wanted, was sunshine, for the weekend.

I told Steve, that I can influence, the direction weather takes, rather than an actual specific result, but sometimes, I do get, the actual, specific, requested result. I told Steve, that I must be, somewhat exact, in my own directions... I told Steve, that I 'vector', like in mathematics, starting from actual conditions, and then adding, what should be helpful, to get to a desired result.

I requested heat, and that is what we got. I then asked, for sun, as well as heat, and the next day, was sunny and hot. I guess, Steve might give good bounce to me, or is, a good 'muse', or motivator, for me. I got Steve to admit, that it was good service... Steve is at least, a witness, to my ability, to influence weather, though he would refrain, from attributing anything, to my being Christos...

After the weekend, I let go of weather. It is now back, to rainy and stormy. I am tempted, to predict a major disaster, for Washington DC, because of this seizure, of my mail, but I have not done so, and probably will not do so. I have wondered, if 'prophets', influenced for their predictions, to occur...

I also received, another stormy phone call, from Patrick. Patrick said, he has given Steve, rent money through November, and has paid, for the Halloween pumpkin, apples, candy, and decorations for a party, for Steve's kids. Patrick said, that Steve, has given to him, no credit, for his having done that. I don't want to ask Steve, about anything, related to this situation...

Patrick said, that Steve said, he had found, a bookkeeping error, that indicated, that Patrick, owed an additional $100, and Patrick, has paid that.

It seems true to me, that sometimes, Steve conceals things. It also seems true, that sometimes, Patrick gets angry, and might say things, that are untrue. However, I know, that sometimes, anger reveals truths, that might otherwise, be concealed... I know, that I do not know truth, in this situation, other than, that Patrick seems angry, and

Steve, seems to want, Patrick to leave...

The cause, for Patrick's angry call, to me, was that, he had found, that Steve had turned off, the telephone, without telling Patrick, at a time, when Patrick, was apparently expecting, an important phone call... Steve said, that he turned off the phone, so he would not be disturbed, by it ringing, when he wished to take a nap. Patrick faulted Steve, for not telling him, that the phone had been turned off.

Patrick takes a view, that he pays his share, of all costs, and has right, to use the phone. Steve takes a view, that it is his phone, and so he has every right, to turn it off, if he wishes to do so, and he doesn't need, to tell Patrick, anything.

I would hope, that simple consideration, and a desire, to maintain harmony, would have influenced Steve, to tell Patrick what he had done. That would have allowed Patrick, to stay by the phone, if need be, so that he could receive, his phone call, without disturbing Steve. I am uncertain, of how disturbed, Steve might be, by a ringing of a phone, by the kitchen, when he is, behind closed doors, in his bedroom...

What happened, was that Steve forgot, that he had unplugged the phone, and the phone, apparently stayed that way, for a day...

I suggested to Patrick, that he get, a phone of his own, so that he would not be, dependent upon Steve's phone. Patrick felt, that as he pays, a share of phone costs, that it really isn't, Steve's phone. I suggested to Patrick, that he have a phone, where Steve, can't turn it off, be that in his own room, or in his own place, elsewhere.

There was a time, when Steve and I, arrived at Steve's, and Patrick was watching television, in the living-room. Steve just walked in and turned off the television. Patrick protested, that he was watching something, and Steve had said, he didn't care, that what Steve wanted, was to listen to music...

I did suggest to Steve, that he could perhaps wait, a little bit, to let Patrick, finish watching his program, and that perhaps we might go, to my place. However, Steve said no, asserting that what he wanted, was to relax, in his home, on

his sofa, in his living-room, and listen to his music... As a guest, in Steve's home, and wishing to remain, on the best possible terms, with Steve, I was then silent on that topic.

Patrick said, that Steve's turning off the phone, cost him a job, hanging drywall, and painting. Patrick right now, has felt unable, to go the one block, from the apartment, to a nearby store, for cigarettes and beer, which seems to be, his sole reason, for wanting to go out. I am uncertain, if Patrick, who feels unable, to hobble one block, to get beer, would have felt able, to hang drywall, and to paint...

Steve says, he plans to ask, Patrick to move, and will give Patrick, several weeks rent free, so that Patrick, is more able, to afford to leave. Patrick says, he pays by the month, and, as said, says he has paid, through November, already...

Only time might tell...

= 32 =

A TYPICAL DAY
October 29, 1986

Steve came over, last night, and I told him, that I would prefer, to remain blindly loyal to him, and not hear any more, of Patrick's complaints. I told Patrick, that Steve, is my friend, and no one is perfect, and sometimes, people with the best intentions, find themselves, unable to get along, when they live together, and that I would choose, to view Patrick's complaints, in this way. I told Patrick, that I hoped, he would avoid, seeking to bring me, into his troubles, with Steve.

I told Patrick, that if he doesn't like, living with Steve, especially if he thinks, his reasons for complaint, are valid, then he should welcome, the idea of moving, if he would really be happier, elsewhere.

I asked Steve, to tell Patrick, that I had told Steve, that I did not wish, to hear more, of Patrick's complaints, so that Patrick would know, that I have spoken to Steve, about the situation, and told to Steve, the same thing, that I had told Patrick.

I went to sleep last night, around 11:00pm, and got up, around 6:00am. I shaved, showered, had cereal and coffee, and got to work, at 7:15am. Boss John-S arrived, and was in an off mood, starting off our day, by angrily, gruffly, strongly, telling me, that I seem to think, that I am getting, a raw deal, from everyone.

I was in a good mood, and told John-S, that I don't think, I am getting a raw deal, from everyone. I told John-S, that I do seek to find, the good points, in everything, and focus as much as possible, on them. John-S said, that other people seem to think, I am getting a raw deal. I told John-S, that other people didn't tell me, that they think, I am getting a raw deal.

After that, John-S was not unpleasant, just curt, coming in to tell me, what he had to have, and when. Trudy gave to me, many little emergencies, during the course of the day, but nothing major, as she too, wished for me, to get those two newsletters done.

I had two important jobs, to get ready, by 9:00am. John-S' diatribe, was unhelpful, in that regard... I also had, about

eight other jobs, including two major clients' newsletters, which take time, to have ready, by the end of the day. I got it all done, and worked right up to 4:30pm, at which time I went south, to Boca Raton, for class.

I found, I had gotten, a low 'B', on yesterday's exam, and was a little disappointed. I think the little situation, between Patrick and Steve, was distracting for me...

On my way home from class, I stopped, at the Post Office boxes, in Lantana, and found, a pink slip, in both boxes, instead of any mail. I'll go in, to the Post Office, on Saturday, to seek to get my mail...

When I got home, I went to the work-out room, and exercised, for about 40 minutes, and then came home. I called Paul, and Daniel, and told them, I had gotten pink slips, for mail, in both Post Office boxes, so, at least it seems, that I will receive, some mail... At least the Post Office, is indicating, that it does have, mail for me, even if it has refrained, from delivering, any mail to me... I can hope, the problem will be, resolved.

Steve called, and asked me, to come over for dinner, so I got together, some noodles, and contributed, to a Steve gourmet-prepared, nice meal.

Steve and I talked, for about an hour or so, after we ate, and then I came home, and studied. Now I write these notes. This has been, a fairly typical day, for a nice day, for me.

I am truly sincerely glad, for the good moments, and for the good aspect, of things... I am glad, that Steve is in my life. I am glad, to have Daniel, Asmodeus, and Paul, in my life. I am glad, to have a place of my own. I am glad, to have a dependable vehicle, of my own. I am glad, that my vehicle, is economical, as far as fuel costs, are concerned. I am glad, that I am in college. I am glad, that I am doing okay, in college. I am glad, that I am working-out. I am glad, that my weight and health, and body tone, are good. I am glad, that I can face myself, in the mirror, and not have regrets, and can think of myself, as a good person. I am glad, to be alive.

Onwards with a smile...

LESSONS IN RESPONSIBILITY
November 1, 1986

Instead of receiving rent, I got a note, from roommate Barry, saying that he is a poor man, and that all he could afford, to give to me, was $30 toward rent, and nothing, on the last week's rent. I had let Barry in, with payment, of one week's rent. I was surprised, at the lack of advance warning, which would have allowed me, to budget accordingly. Barry has left me, three notes previously, explaining delays in payment, of the last week's rent, and promising future payment of it...

I left a note, for Barry, in which I suggested, that if all he can afford, for rent, is $30 a week, then perhaps, he should seek, either a better paying job, or a place with lower rent, or seek to split costs, for a room, with someone, as it seems inevitable, that if he selects, for places to live, that he is unable to afford, that then, he might find himself, kicked out anyway. I suggested two places, which are now advertising, to hire waiters, which is Barry's chosen, or current, profession.

I really do need income, from that extra room. My income seems to match, my bills evenly, and so, the money I get, from that room, is the money I have, to live on. I am a poor man too...

I received a nice letter, from my Uncle James. Uncle says, my half-sister and mother, seem to be, making an effort, to help me, and he would do so also, if he were able, but, of course, he is unable, to be financially helpful, at this time. I am 'quite uncertain', of in what way, my half-sister and mother, have portrayed themselves, as being helpful to me... Uncle says, my half-sister and mother, have only said, good things about me, though he refrained, from mention, of what those good things, might be...

I responded to Uncle, that people, who promise to do things, for you, and then don't, are worse, than those who are honest, and promise nothing... Sometimes, if one thinks, that someone else is going to do something, that then influences, for you, to not seek, to do that thing, with an end result, that nothing gets done, when otherwise, one might have done something. False promises can be

harmful, either intentionally, or inadvertently.

I asked Uncle, if he could instruct me, on the logic, and information, necessary, for me to get, a small business loan, so I could approach a bank, about opening, a type-setting shop. I mused that my uncle, has been an ambassador, and 'married well', and has written some books, but perhaps is ignorant, about the procedures, and environment, for small business loans. I thought my question, might give to my uncle, a clue, about my actual situation, and 'the help', I am, not, receiving, from my half-sister and mother, both of whom, have ample funds...

I mused some, about how Patrick, had been, somewhat getting to know me, by complaining to me, about Steve. I mused, that people who start off, by complaining, by focusing on their lacks, and needs, might actually influence some people, those who have problems of their own, to steer clear, as who wants, to add weight, to their own burdens.

I guess it is, somewhat like, appearance. Though I am, very much, tilted in favor, of substance over image, many people, do make first impressions, based on appearance alone, as that is, all they know, at that point, at start. Therefore, image, also does have, its value. And image, is conveyed, by both, how one looks, and what one says, and even how, one says it, what words one uses.

In an environment, where everyone, must seek to be responsible, for their own worlds, such as a capitalist economy, within a democratic open political system, then why, should anyone, be helpful, to anyone else? A person, who has lacks and needs, might seem to be, someone, who is failing, to do enough, for self. It would seem, more 'helpful, to help a person, learn, how to get and maintain, on their own two feet, rather than, to be a permanent crutch...

In a state-fascist, communist, or private-fascist system, where some people, seem more 'privileged', than others, and all are supposed to be, part of a society, there could seem, to indeed be, some sort of 'responsibility', to 'correct', any 'imbalance', of one person, having more than another... In such an environment, an individual, might truly be, unable, to meet his or her, or its, own needs.

I suppose, a bottom line, in either situation, can be, that

ours, is a mix, of independence, and interdependence, that there could always be, some sort of limits, upon what an individual, might be able to do. People band together, as friends, or in unions, to make trade, to enhance their lives. Because it is a known, that such interdependence, does exist, it can seem offensive, or wrong, if those 'with plenty', fail to be helpful, to those who have, legitimate, lacks and needs...

There is a logic, that even in, totally 'free', capitalist economies, where everyone is allowed, to operate a business, of their own, that inevitably, there is only room, for so many, healthy businesses, and too many businesses, of a same type, in a same area, can cause all to suffer, or, conversely, some might gain, a monopoly position, and monopolies, can always, become unhealthy, for a society, either politically, or economically.

At any rate, if only so many businesses, of the same type, in the same area, can be maintained, in good health, then a 'managed' economy, might seek to maintain, a 'healthy economy', by only allowing, a certain number of businesses, to operate in each field... It seems that those, who lack competition, can become, lazy, incompetent, inefficient, over-priced, and-or slow, with less quality, based on their security, from lack of competition...

Unfortunately, it seems, that each time, that there is an 'unmanaged economy', that it might evolve, to becoming monopolies, in each field, and that can become unhealthy, for the people

I suppose, economic diversity, can be akin, to biological diversity, viewing both, as 'bodies'... There is a diversity, to allow survival, when there is disease, and there is diversity, to have a division of labor, understanding, that each can only do, so much... Perhaps one can view, the transportation systems, as akin, to the blood or fluid systems, of a body...

No matter where, or who, you are in life, you might always, have need, of some help, from others...

A GOOD BUSY WEEK
November 8, 1986

Both Barry and Steve, repaid me, relatively on time, and I have now been able, to pay my major bills, including rent, car payment, and electricity, on time, and in full. Barry left me, another note, again after the fact, which does annoy me. Barry said, in his note, that he was “reluctant”, to pay the ‘last week’s rent’, because he has never gotten security deposits back, from landlords, in the past. I can sympathize, with Barry, about that.

However, I am asking, for last week’s rent, rather than, for a security deposit. I would not return, the last week’s rent, to Barry, but rather, his last week with me, before he moves, would be paid in advance... Having last week’s rent, or last month’s rent, paid in advance, give both the tenant, and the landlord, some leeway, in budgeting, and in making future plans.

I also told Barry, that he had agreed, to pay last week’s rent, when he moved in, and that I do expect him, to do so. I told Barry, that he could pay this amount, in smaller payments, but I did wish, for him to make, some effort, to pay that amount. I told Barry, that a focus on last week’s rent, would fail to distract me, from his failure, to pay current week’s rent, on time...

I told Barry, that he also has yet to replace, any of my food, that he has consumed, even though we have an understanding, that our food is to be separate. I mentioned to Barry, in particular, that I had made my lunch, to have for work the next day, before I went to sleep, and that Barry, had eaten that lunch, when he arrived home, from work. Barry does work, in a restaurant, so one might think, that he might have, some opportunity, to get some food, while he is there. The consequence, for me, was that I had a choice, of either spending money, for a lunch, or going without lunch. As it was, I really lacked time to stop between work and class, so I went without eating. Barry’s meaningless ‘snack’, meant I went, without food, for over 12 hours...

One might consider, this meal, to be something, other than a lunch, since I had started my day, so early, and was leaving, 11 hours later, to go to class... However, that is my

middle meal, if I have one, so I call it 'lunch'... I can eat that sandwich, while driving... My dinner, is after I finish working-out, after I arrive home, after class... I suppose, I could have just brought everything with me, or been a little later to work, and made a sandwich, before leaving. I was just aggravated, and discovered the situation, just before leaving my apartment, didn't think I had much leeway, and so took off for work.

I aim to have, a responsible roommate. I would be willing, to go through the trouble, of putting Barry out, if he continues, to fail to meet, his responsibilities, to our household.

Paul's roommate vanished. Paul says, he is owed, a week's rent, from Keith. Paul said, that Keith's sudden departure, the lack of income, and the debt, caught him by surprise, and he might need, to borrow some money, from me. I have seen Paul, be 'reluctant', to repay Frank-B, saying that Frank-B, does not need the money, and I have seen Paul, run up his credit accounts, to their limits, with logic that he might die, before having to repay those debts... However, Paul has been helpful to me, in real-world ways, and if Paul needs to borrow, money from me, and I have some money, which I could afford to lose, then I would lend the money, to Paul. And I told that, to Paul.

I mused, that perhaps Trudy, is a form, of my receiving, my own karma, in a way... At one time, when I became editor, of Mr. Frank's newspaper, I lacked, much in the way, of work experience, related to the many tasks, to be performed. I thus found myself, as a boss to people, who had work experience, while I did not. Now, those shoes are reversed, and I have a boss, who lacks work experience, which I now do have...

Even so, my own demeanor to others, even as a boss, has been respectful, and civil, and usually friendly, and even as a boss, I participated in doing, whatever needed to be done. For me, management, has always been, a fill in the gap position, whereas to Trudy, it is, a do as little as possible, position...

Some might say, that it is a proper role, of management, to delegate responsibility, to double-check work. However, this print-shop, has four employees, with two of them, being

chiefs, so one might say, there is little room, for ‘delegating responsibility’...

I mused, that perhaps ‘management’, is an entry position, rather than an elevated position, but, if so, then it should not pay more, than it pays, to those, who actually do the work...

I mused, that if John-S’ print-shop, is located, in a small enclave, where those who operate businesses, are granted that right, by privilege, via the license and permit system, which sustains business, for John-S, by prohibiting others, from competing with him, then perhaps, John-S, has been, somewhat or somehow, compelled, to hire Trudy... If so, one might consider, this particular, ‘managed’ economy, to be somewhat, ‘mismanaged’...

I did have, another nasty incident, with John-S... The incident was minor, one typo, in a zip code, an extra numeral, that needed to be corrected, and he was blaming me, for something, that Trudy and the customer, both proof-read, and approved for printing, but which he did agree to reprint, as our error, which apparently opened the door, to some other changes, that the client, now wanted to make, at the same time. Because both sides had errors, John-S agreed, to print again, at his cost, to the client, without marking up... John-S blamed me, for this ‘terrible situation’...

As a norm, a customer proof-reads everything, before it goes to press. When an error is made, and a customer has approved the job, then the print-shop does not have, to re-print, without charge... Nonetheless, a bottom line is, that it was me, who made that error.

To some degree, this was, a small job, somewhat minor, but John-S, went way out of bounds, being personally insulting, and nasty, in a very prolonged manner, about it. In fact, John-S’ tantrum, went on longer than it took me, to make all the changes... And, of course, I had to sit and attentively listen, to John-S’ tantrum, so nothing got done, during that time... I wondered, since John-S refrains, from raising his voice, to Trudy, if perhaps, John-S might hope, to influence her, to better behavior, by having her, overhear him, when he behaves this way, to either me, or the press-man. If so, that too, has been ineffective...

But I did get aggravated, due to his prolonged, arrogant, haughty, nasty demeanor, his superior tone of voice, based on his being, his own king, of his own two acres, sort of like how, a small crab, might think itself mighty, when it sits atop, a small rock, in a very big sea...

I only mention this, because I did, somewhat lose, my self-control, and when John-S exited, I flung my arms, to become outstretched, and pointed in his direction, and sent back to him, all the negative energy, he had sent my way. I was civil, throughout his senseless diatribe... I mean, if he could expect me, to sit silently, and be bathed, in his negative energy, then the least I could do, was to return it to him... My sense of being angry was then replaced, by a feeling of guilt, as I might have been harmful, to him, by doing that. However, the good of it was that I did rid myself, nearly instantly, of all my anger.

Neither John-S' tantrum, nor my feeling aggravated, by his demeanor, were exactly unusual events. I normally, do not mention, these incidents. I mention this incident, because of my reaction to it. It is quite rare, for me to respond, with use of my energy, and this time, I did so... I acted without thought. I just did this.

I did become concerned, both about my own behavior, and what that behavior, could reflect, which is, that I am actually becoming, sick of being at this place. The work is okay. The pay is so-so. However, the work environment is wrong. This incident, in itself, was nothing, and yet I did react. It was, at least temporarily, beyond my ability, to stop myself, from reacting. This concerned me.

Steve, has been hugging me, and tender again. It is very nice, to be able, to intertwine, our muscled bodies, and stretch and flex against, each other. Very nice... I do prefer, firm bodies, to soft ones... I cooked a dinner, for Steve, and he did the same, for me, during the week.

Steve and I had a good talk, about the different ways, men and women, are raised as children, regarding sexuality.

Women are encouraged, to be reserved, and are raised, without guilt foisted upon them, for any same-sex attractions, they might feel, and they tend, to thus end up, being both open about bisexuality, and reserved, in their sexual adventures.

Men are taught, to be ashamed, of their sexuality, and thus, they often become repressed, and when they do seek sex, it is often, at every opportunity, but only with women, as if they are ashamed, of themselves, and thus dislike, other men sexually...

Steve and I wondered, if perhaps, if all people, are truly bisexual, then are those men, who espouse, a dislike of homosexuality, envious, because some are able to enjoy something, they have given up, or are they perhaps fearful, that without repression, that they too, might enjoy, same sex activity?

It seems to me, that most, who think of themselves, as heterosexual, are those who have never experienced, same sex activity. And, it seems to me, that most of those, who think of themselves as homosexual, have never experienced, heterosexual activity.

Both Steve and I have experienced, sex with women, and both of us, have an, at least informed preference, that we enjoy, the company of men. I also seem to prefer, my 'safe' activities, hand and mouth stuff, with men, a lot of massage.

Steve thinks, he might actually prefer, relationships with women, because he can be, easily open about them, in public, and says, he has not abandoned the idea, of leaving the area, forgetting about his existing family, and starting a second family, somewhere else, in peace...

Steve also said, he thinks same-sex relationships, with men, can be more problematic, as he wishes to be boss, and says, that is more of a problem, with men, than with women... I am uncertain, if Steve is correct... I do prefer the idea, of equal partnership, in union, as much as possible... Steve said, all bodies, meaning also a union, as being 'one body', only have, one head... I chuckled, that some might say, that each man, as an individual, has two heads, and that some men, are said to listen, to the small head, more than to the big head...

I have also considered, that women as children, are taught, that females, are supposed to be emotional, and I have wondered, if this might be, because women, are actually, less emotional than men. Men are taught as children, that men, are supposed to not be emotional, and to

control their emotions, and I have wondered, if this is done, because men can be, so very emotional...

I suspect, that women, are also, now normally, more reserved, about 'casual sex', than men, because of the issue of pregnancy, and thoughts about, being penetrated. I think, if men want to understand, how women feel, about sex with men, then men, only have to think, about how they think, about sex with men...

Some say sex, is only for procreation, and that all other sex, whether heterosexual, or homosexual, is animal behavior, unfitting for a civilized, human being... I think humans, are animals, are physical beings, as well as spiritual beings... I think sex, can be healthy, recreational, both physically and emotionally, fun, something that enhances, the enjoyment of life. I would think, that sex, at least can be, something that one can do, on one's own, without paying money... Perhaps, some seek to repress, sexual activity, to encourage use of things, which do cost money...

I suppose, a bottom line, remains, that people are people, as individuals, rather than, inherently due to gender.

Steve, has also mended bridges, with Patrick, and says, that he will honor, their original agreement, which was, that Patrick would stay, until the end of March. I suppose, that perhaps, this flux in behavior, that Steve treats me to, he is also, treating Patrick to...

Steve and Patrick now seem, to have made peace, as brothers, and all is well, in their home, once again. This perhaps shows, that no matter, how bad, things might seem, between family members, bridges can be mended... Steve and Patrick, have been helpful, to one another, in real-world ways, and are good, for one another...

A WONDERFUL THING
November 15, 1986

A wonderful thing happened....

On the evening, of the 13th, the meteorologists were forecasting, a sunny day, on the 14th, Friday, followed by a cold front, bringing much rain, and record cold, for Saturday and Sunday. Steve said, he really had hoped, for a sunny weekend, so he could spend time outdoors, with his children.

I told Steve, that I would attempt to intervene, with our weather, to give to him, a sunny weekend, to enjoy with his kids.

Steve said, that he'd just make indoor plans.

I told Steve, that if I created a warm front, then my northbound warm front, would collide somewhere, with the southbound cold front, and that there would be, much rain, where the fronts met. I said, I would instead blend, with the direction of the cold front, sacrifice the sunny Friday, and pull the front through, so that it would be clear, and sunny, for Saturday and Sunday.

Making such a statement, to Steve, was probably, a foolish thing, for me to do, as my psychic sense, tells me, that Steve gets uncomfortable, when I talk about, 'insane things', like Christos, or my ability, to influence weather. Steve is basically, an earthy realistic.

I have told Steve, that I am sincere, when I say, I believe I am Christos, but I am hoping, to keep my identity private, so that I can enjoy, a normal life, which everyone else, takes for granted. I would like to earn some income, from my writings, as Christos.

At any rate, Friday morning, there came a great wind, which pushed the cold front, through quickly, as directed, bringing much rain, but not too much cold. I was slightly elated by this, as the wonder, of these events being granted, still strikes me.

Friday evening, the meteorologists were saying the cold front, would probably turn around, as a warm front, and bring rain, throughout Saturday and Sunday. Today, Saturday, has been relatively warm, with much sunshine. There was, one afternoon rainstorm, but it had come, and gone, within a 20-minute time-period. I am pleased, with the

results, of this program, and give thanks to God, and my other allies, though also, for the record, this one was 'on me'....

On other topics, Steve is still joining me, each evening, usually just for conversation, due to our respective, limited, available time. My days are starting, very early, in the mornings.

Steve may take, some college computer courses, to increase his knowledge, within the field. I have raised my grade, in the computer course, to a low 'A' now, at the midway mark. I am being responsible, to my study needs, spending about, an hour and a half a day, just reading, and taking notes, studying. The rule of thumb, that Steve has told me, is to study, one and a half hours, at home, for each hour, of class time...

My work situation, is another story... I got up, at 4:30am one day, and at 5:00am, on another. The over-time is necessary, to deal with the heavy work-load. Trudy has approved my suggestion that I dig in, to the work buildup now, before it gets, further out of control. This decision earlier, would have been better, when I first brought it, to Trudy's attention, as Trudy first allowed, this buildup to get worse, failing to anticipate, an increase in business, as our busy business season, approaches.

I got 'called on the carpet', lectured, by John-S, with Trudy silently observing, for not putting, a new name label, on the right-hand, upper corner, of the metal plate files. I never deal, with the metal plate files, except to sometimes file them, and they already have labels, usually placed by Trudy, when I get to them. It is John-S, and Trudy, who deal with the metal plates daily, after jobs have been printed, and it they, who label them, before I get them, to file them away.

I would not even be doing this filing, except that John-S, was so unhappy, with how Trudy, would hide, or wrongly file things... In part, Trudy simply lacked consistency, in that, if a business has two words in a name, she might file one job, by the first word, and the next job, by the second word. To Trudy, that simply meant, having to look, in two different places, to see where, a job might be, but to John-S, it was an unconscionable disaster, and he would blame me, each time, even if I had done nothing...

Humorously, there was even, a time-period, where

Trudy, filed all customer jobs, for printed envelopes, in 'E', for envelope. Trudy said, that this made them easy to find, when an envelope job, needed to be printed again. However, they were not always 'easy to find', and it could be time-consuming to locate a particular one, as there were so many haphazardly filed under E, and not all envelope jobs were filed under E. John-S did blame me for that, but I hadn't known about it... Perhaps I was too amused by that situation, which John-S viewed very seriously, though not seriously enough to badger Trudy into doing it right. I have long given up, on seeking to 'guide' Trudy, about anything, and have told John-S that, but he continues to maintain, that it is my responsibility, and my fault...

So, John-S, had been unhappy, with the way Trudy filed things, and added that task, to my job responsibilities, and Trudy was glad, to be rid, of that aspect, perhaps having some challenges, alphabetizing, putting things into, sequentially proper, alphabetical order, and, at any rate, saying she was 'too busy', with 'important things', to waste her time, on that... Trudy normally does leave the print-shop, often with John-S, at the end of the day, on time, saying she is not paid, to work over-time...

I do sometimes tend to smile a lot, just my way. Sometimes, I might be, chuckling at a situation, at the absurdity, or circus of life, but John-S, sometimes views this, as me being happy, at his displeasure...

John-S said, I was shirking my responsibility, since I should correct, anything that I see wrong. What has been happening is that sometimes, the name labels, have been placed, on the upper left-hand corner, and sometimes on the right. Trudy thinks this makes little difference. I can agree, that it makes little difference, and I noticed, and ignored this, when I filed metal plates...

I told John-S, that as it is he, and Trudy, who put on labels, that I had assumed, that they were doing that, the way they thought, was okay. After all, they are both, 'my boss', and I am not supposed, to question things... John-S said, I had a bad attitude, and that all labels, must always be, on the upper right-hand corner, and he has, told me this before, and maybe he has...

However, John-S has his system, which is absolutely, without any deviation, how he wants things done. Trudy

somewhat just ignores this, does what she wants, and then John-S, jumps on me, about it.

I told John-S, that he, as owner, is also responsible, for the way things are done, and that it would be helpful, to me at least, if he would put the labels, where he wants them, in the first place. I said, that it's bad enough, that I get blamed, for everything Trudy does wrong, but for him, to now blame me, for things he himself does wrong, is a bit much.

This was one of those times, when John-S reminded me, to be quiet, and to just listen, to what he had to say...

So, I have a buildup, in work to do, plus an increase, in business to face, limited time to do it, am coming in early to work, to get it done, am prohibited, from coming in, after class, although I do drive, right by the shop, on my way home from class, and that day, got to spend, 25 minutes, being lectured to, about how awful I am, to deliberately let Trudy, make mistakes, when technically, she is my boss, and does get paid, more than me, to do less than me... I just felt, I am in a losing situation...

As grateful as I am, and I really am, to have a 'stable job', and as much, as I really need to have a job, to meet my bills, I feel, that I 'have had it'... There is just too much petty nonsense.

I have even wondered if John-S, was trying to get me to quit, to avoid paying his share, of unemployment compensation, if he were to let me go. A worker, who is laid off, gets unemployment compensation, and the former employer, is supposed to pay, a portion of that. A worker who quits, does not get, unemployment compensation.

I doubt, that John-S, has a replacement for me, and do not think, this is John-S' intent. And, if I seek to say, anything to John-S, about how I am feeling, about how he handles things, he is prone to tell me, to just be quiet, that he is boss, and I am to do, what he says, and my job, is to just listen to him... He is king, and I am manure... Fine, but not fine...

I exited the situation, by agreeing, to correct the labels, from now on, and by pointing out, that I had work to do, and needed to go do it. I was disgruntled, that I had one major job, left to do, and the lecture, had wasted 25 minutes, of my last hour, just talking about nonsense, which John-S, and Trudy, were making into a major issue... I knew I had to

leave, to get to class, so I did have to focus, on that last major job.

I acknowledge, that John-S thought this was important, and I did not. I acknowledge, that John-S, is boss, and what he thinks is important, is important... However, I am also certain, that if I missed a deadline, for that major job, then John-S, would probably then come to understand, that that too, was important, and blame me entirely, even though, he himself caused the delay, took me away, from working on that job... I did get, that job done... But, I probably would have been, unable to do so, if I had let John-S, lecture me senselessly, longer... John-S, might have even, been a bit surprised, that I ended, his lecture... That was 'unusual behavior', for me, and reflected, my uncaring, or my sense, of 'having had it'...

I was disturbed enough to answer a newspaper, classified help wanted advertisement, for a typesetter. I reached a man, named Flip, who told me, to call back, the next evening. I did call the next evening, at the time, which Flip had specified, but no one answered the phone. The next night, I called again, and spoke with Flip. This time, Flip told me, to come in person, in two more days.

Flip has a type-shop, at the north end, of the county. I went to the type-shop, at the specified time, but the door was locked, and nobody answered my knock. These people didn't seem, to have their act together. I left a note, saying if they still wanted, a type-setter, they could get in touch, with me, at my home telephone number, which I provided.

I stopped in on Chuck, on my way home, from that type-shop. While at Chuck's, I called that type-shop again, and this time, a woman named Sheeta, answered the phone. Sheeta identified herself, as the owner. Sheeta said, she would be willing, to pay to me, $8 an hour to start, a pleasant surprise, as this is more, than I am making now, with John-S.

I have not operated, Sheeta's type of equipment before, a new type of advanced machine, just being introduced, but she said, she understands, how each place, seems to have, different machines, and so some training, for me, would be no problem, as the manufacturer, is going to provide, training at the job-site, once the new machinery, is completely set-up. I have demonstrated, an ability to learn,

many different types of machines...

I told Sheeta, that I want to give, two weeks' notice, to John-S, to be proper. I have to meet Sheeta, next week after class, which is going to be, quite a round trip expedition, and afterwards, study for a class exam, the following day. Sheeta's situation, seems, 'too good to be true', with a pay-raise, and even the most modern equipment, with training, and she seems pleasant enough, which would be, a welcome change...

Believe it or not, I truly do like Trudy, and John-S, at least when not around their negativity. I just feel, too much, like a hapless, abused underdog, in that situation. It will be difficult to leave, as I have made, many fine contacts, with good people, and I do enjoy, a measure of job security, where I am at now.

John-S, could offer to pay to me, what he had originally agreed, to pay me, which is what Sheeta is offering, and then I would be glad, or somewhat glad, to remain in place, with John-S.

At least John-S, has gone along, with my taking this class, but I want to take more classes, and Sheeta says, my being in school, can be worked around. There are other type-setters, at Sheeta's type-shop, including Sheeta, so the weight of responsibility, for everything, would not be, solely on me. Since Sheeta does this type of work herself, she understands its challenges...

Once I finish this school-term, I can schedule my classes, according to the needs, of my employer. Because I must have, an income, to afford class, my job, will always have, priority over school.

Roommate Barry, has paid me, last week's rent, in full. Overall, Barry is a good roommate, because he is clean, and we have, no personality clashes.

Lastly, singer Sting has a new song, with fantastic words. Part of the lyrics, are, "I hope the Russians, love their children too." Of course, the adults, of both super-powers, and all civilized governments, care about, maintaining, their standards of living, and would prefer to avoid, bringing a hell on Earth, to bequeath their children.

May peace be with thee, and with thy spirit.

= 32 =

KNOW ME BY MY WORDS AND WORKS
FOR THAT IS WHO I AM
November 22, 1986

I gave two weeks, advance departure notice, to boss John-S, on the 18th, but first I checked, with Flip and Sheeta, to make sure, they could use me, right away. I had a needless concern, that John-S might just immediately kick me out the door, in anger. I did give to John-S, an option of retaining me, by paying to me, the amount of money, offered to me, by Sheeta. John-S was disinclined to do that, and said he could always have, talented and commendable Dana, come in, at least temporarily, until John-S, can find someone new. Dana, is going to be paid, a lot more money than I, but this is because, he is only temporary, and does earn income independently. One might say, that John-S, seems willing to pay someone, nearly double, what he pays me, just to get rid of me... Sad but true...

I think, part of the picture, is that my giving notice, to John-S, offended him, that I would leave him, and he is determined, to do without me, as perhaps he feels, I am just too independent, or that I fail, to abjectly kowtow to him. I am capable of error, and I am only speculating. Nonetheless, this is a sincere impression, which I do have, of this situation.

I also had to register, for the next school-term, this week, so asked Sheeta, about my work schedule, so that I could select classes, around my work-schedule. Sheeta said, that I would work, 40 hours per week, from 11:00am until 7:00pm, so I should sign up, for morning classes. It is 25 miles, between Sheeta's work-place, and school, one-way.

With my existing classes, Sheeta will allow me to work, until 4:00pm, and to come in, on Saturdays, to make up the lost time. Sheeta says, she has a backlog of work, so my working full-time, would be no problem.

Sheeta's new machine, is very advanced, compared to the one, I have been using, at John-S' shop.

The computer system, I use at John-S' shop, only allows one, to see maybe 50 characters, on screen... One has to print the stuff out, develop it in the 'darkroom', a room without 'white light', and then review it, for errors. One can

save the files, on computer floppy disks.

Sheeta's new system, has a separate machine, attached to it, called a 'previewer', and this machine, forms an image, from one's file, that one can then look at, and review, so one can go back, to the type-setting machine, and make changes, before printing it out, onto film, to be developed, in a darkroom. It does take some time, for an image to form, on the 'previewer', and only one page, can be reviewed, each time. This is okay for little jobs, but for newsletters, it might actually be, much quicker, to print out the whole thing, rather than going back and forth, between machines, one page at a time

I remember, when I first started, doing this work, for Mr. Frank, when one could only review, about 17 characters. Getting to around 50 characters, was a big improvement...

[140517 ~ Today, one takes for granted, the ability to place items, somewhat anywhere on a page, separately, and one can easily, review many pages, and use many different, application programs, at the same time, and view everything on screen, before printing, and easily make changes. When I first started, everything had to be done, horizontally, before one could then go vertically. One had to program everything, from empty spaces, to lines, and the vertical space, between lines. For instance, if one had two paragraphs, two stories, side by side, then one had to do, the first words, which fit on one line, of one paragraph, and then skip horizontally, to the first words, for another paragraph. One got an indication, of where a line would end, using a certain typeface, and size... I used to make, whole complex forms, in this way... One would leave, an empty space, for photographs and graphics, that would then be put in, by hand, during 'paste-up'... All material was processed, in a darkroom. I did all aspects, of this work...]

[140517 ~ I would, have to develop 'film', by hand, in the dark-room, and did take, to wearing gloves, as contact, with photo-developing chemistry, would cause my fingers, to develop little sores. I think I also, nearly totally lost, my sense of smell, during this time-period, from exposure, to photo-developing chemistry fumes. Print-shops, have been notorious, for harmful fumes... Safety inspectors, have been tolerant of this, as an aspect, that goes with the job, just

'how it is', so necessary...]

Sheeta also has, a computerized office... Truly, what more, could I ask for. I am facing, more pay, have other co-workers, who do the same job, so the pressure upon me, as an individual, to get every single thing done, is gone, and there will be, training for me, on newer, more advanced equipment, and an employer, who is willing, to work around my school needs. The whole thing, is almost too good, to be true.

I did explain, to John-S, that overall, I have no complaints with him, and I thank him, and appreciate, all he has done for me. John-S said, that he should be able, to hire someone, cheaper than I, and thus get, a savings. John-S said, he has felt hard-pressed, with the wage demands, upon him, at the shop. Both John-S and I, feel that Dana, can ably and competently, do the work required. I am less certain, if Dana might be able to handle, the 'work environment', but perhaps, everyone will be, on their best behavior, at start, and Dana, is only temporary.

John-S, Trudy, and pressman Ron, have all congratulated me, on my good fortune. I do feel, a certain fondness, for John-S and Trudy, for they both are 'characters', individuals, and I have learned things, from both of them. I do not think that they will miss me, until after I have been gone, for a while, and they might then discern, a difference, between how I normally performed my job, and how others, might do so... I have not necessarily, been easy, for Trudy and John-S, to deal with. I can laugh, at how I did adapt, to having to only use, small words, when speaking, to Trudy...

Perhaps Steve's ex-wife, Matilda, saw the recent newspaper article, about how many ex-wives, are charging their former husbands, with child abuse, often an untrue allegation. Most, of the reported cases, are false, but the system must investigate reports, and sometimes, the fathers get angry, or hurt...

Matilda apparently told, some legal authorities, that Stephanie, was getting abnormally interested, in boys, at eight years of age, so the authorities, apparently investigated Steve, and also interviewed, both children, at their school, and asked the kids, if Steve had sexually

molested them.

Steve was very angry, that he was subjected, to a secret investigation, and also extremely disturbed, that the children, had been asked, questions like that, for children do talk, to each other, and they are not necessarily kind, about other kids' misfortunes. Lastly, Steve said, he is very tired, of Matilda using the system, against him, just to harass him. Steve feels, that Matilda is aggressively, needlessly, maliciously, harmful to him. Steve said, that if Matilda, likes his former best friend so much, then why is her focus, still on Steve...

I told Steve, that perhaps Stephanie, was expressing, a normal curiosity, about boys, and perhaps, Matilda had gotten, unnecessarily alarmed. And the system, could be innocent also, in that, it is required, to investigate such allegations. I wondered, if there was any real cause, for concern, and if Steve is innocent, then would the system, also then investigate, Matilda's new husband? Or, if the system, found no cause, to investigate Matilda's new husband, then why did they investigate, Steve's 'history'?

Steve and I have noticed, no 'abnormal behavior', by Stephanie, toward males... I have not seen, Stephanie act, in a sexual manner, either deliberately, or inadvertently, toward anyone.

I did 'joke' to Steve, that his being investigated, for perhaps molesting a female child, would at least bolster, his heterosexual image, but he was in no mood, for any humor...

Helene is fine. Helene is painting again. I have spoken with Helene, a couple of times, and perhaps Steve and I, will visit her.

My mail flow is normal again.

Patrick has started working again.

Daniel is fine. I gave to Daniel, a copy of the audio-tape, that Asmodeus and I made, last December, 1985.

I left a message, for Albee, now that he is in the area, but he has not contacted me.

I am still working-out. I now weigh 154 pounds, and I am in good health.

I told my mother, about my new job, and she was glad for me.

= 32 =

WILL CHRISTOS BE ON TALK RADIO?
November 29, 1986

Lately, I have been listening, to a very lively, radio talk show, hosted by Rante. On Thursday, Rante had a Bible study, in which he holds, organized churches, up to the light of Scripture. Rante believes, each individual, can have, his or her, or its, own relationship, with God, without belonging, to an organized church. I agree with Rante, and also know, that individuals can choose, to group together, to worship God, in their own ways.

I hope to get Jualt Christos, to be a guest of Rante's, on the radio. I sent to Rante, a letter, telling him, I would not wish, to have my private identity, made public, but would like to speak, live on the radio, as Christos, just discussing things in general, with Rante, and answering questions, from callers.

I told Rante, in my letter, that I believe, I walk the path, of Buddha, as the manifestation, of the Christian Second Coming, the Messiah of Judaism, the Mahdi of Islam, the physical manifestation, of the God spirit, in animist lore. I also told Rante, about my passing Randi's test. I will mail, this letter soon, and hope to hear, a positive response, from Rante. I will have, some extra time, in two weeks, for two weeks, during the break, between school-terms.

One item, that Rante mentioned, was a warning to tribal Jews, in the Old Testament, to beware of male demons, with genitals like donkey genitals. Rante thought that warning, was obscene, and unfit, for children to read, and wondered, why such a passage, had been tolerated, even then, and even now. Rante would prefer, for that passage, to be deleted. Rate believes, that the *Bible*, as an instructional book, should be updated, through time, to fit the times...

I believe that passage, might have been a warning, against mingling with blacks, meant as a cultural barrier, a way of helping one tribe, to perhaps falsely feel, superior to another. Some cultures, seem to revere, large genitals. I myself, am uncaring, about such things. People are people, as individuals, rather than, inherently due, to the size, of their genitals...

I believe, that the Jewish warning, against 'the mark of

the Beast', might have also been intended, as a cultural barrier. Neighboring Hindus, revered a caste mark, and looked down, upon those, who lacked a caste mark, a symbol placed, in the center, of their foreheads.

I think, the Hindu caste mark, might have been portrayed, within Jewish circles, as a 'mark of the Beast'... The reverse could also be true, that Hindus intended, to create a cultural barrier, against Jews, and others, who lacked a caste mark, by describing them, as 'untouchables', meant to be, at the bottom, of their societies...

People are people, as individuals, rather than, inherently due, to their caste mark, or lack of caste mark.

I spoke with Genesis, who was my governess, when I was a child. I am to visit Genesis, on Christmas Day. Genesis said, that everyone, has burdens, and sometimes, one only remembers, one's own problems, and feels sorry for self, only seeing, how well someone else, seems to be doing. Truth can be, that one might, simply be unaware, of the problems, and challenges, that others might face.

Some people, are judged, by their current possessions, their obvious material 'health', or by their income, and rarely, are the burdens, associated with maintaining, what one has, or one's bills, factored in, as they should be. People often judge others, by their income, without regard, to their outgo...

It can be better, to focus on ways, to improve oneself, rather than to spend, too much time, focusing on, feeling sorry for self. There can be, some healing, from allowing oneself, to feel sorrow, but too much focus, wallowing in a swamp, of a proverbial 'pity party', can be unhealthy, or at least, unproductive.

Both wealth and poverty, can have, some 'standard' challenges...

Steve and I visited Helene, this week. Helene was pleasant, as always, and is thinking about, writing another stage-play, and that would be, some income-earning work, for me... I do my work, with Helene, as 'a labor of love', but Helene does have ample funds, and she pays me fairly, and I gladly accept, her aid.

Afterwards, Steve said, that Helene didn't seem to be, impressed with him.

I said, that Helene treats all people equally, as equals. Helene, like myself, has mingled, with the top of the top, and with 'normal people' also. I have also mingled, with the bottom of the bottom, and am uncertain, if Helene has ever done that.

Steve said, none of my friends seem to be impressed, with him, and that some of my friends, are in such lofty positions, in life, that he wonders, why I would be, with such a 'loser', as he.

I affirmed, to Steve, that my heart loves him, and I find him, to be commendable, as a person. I told Steve, that I feel happy, when with him, and that he brings sunshine, and color, to my world...

Steve and I went, to one of the many baths, in Fort Lauderdale, and we split costs, evenly between us. Steve and I seem to be getting closer, once again, though perhaps, closer than ever before. Steve said, that he worries, that he is, "not much of a prize". I quoted singer, Grace Jones, and said, that Steve, might not be perfect, but he is, perfect for me. I said, that I am not perfect, not without flaws, so he has to put up, with my faults too.

I told Steve, that I love him, when he is poor, but when he is wealthy, and still chooses to see me, that then I am impressed. Steve is anticipating, a pay-raise, and he even took me, out to dinner, this week, on him.

When we were at the baths, someone asked Steve, if he and I were lovers, and Steve said yes. That was a first... I got a grin, out of that.

I also discussed Christos, some more, with Steve this week. I let Steve know, that I have one more book, of Christos material, to eventually prepare, but that I plan, to just register it, with the US Library of Congress, and continue, to seek to protect, my private life, as Jualt.

Steve has not read, The *White Light of the Golden Dawn*, and has had no interest, in reading any, of *The Life of Christos*, so perhaps, he has no real, first-hand knowledge, of what I have written. Steve does know me, as a person, and how I think, and my positions, on many things...

However, Steve asked me, if I believe, in the existence of God. I am always surprised, when someone, who knows of me as Christos, asks me this question. I considered, that

perhaps Steve, does not know me, as well as I think he knows me...

If that person thinks I am insincere, then why would an honest answer, to that question, be expected? How could I sincerely believe, in myself as Christos, as a manifestation of God, and not sincerely believe, in the existence of God? I do believe in God. I do believe, that God has interacted with me. I do believe, God shows support for me, as Christos. I give much credit, repeatedly, to God. Yes, I do believe, in the existence of God. I believe, that God is a living, evolving, sentient being. To me, God is, oversoul of all oversouls, the one to which, all others, are parts.

I accept, that some people, might doubt, in the existence of God, because they have lacked, any personal interaction, with God, and might thus be suspicious, of anyone, who claims to have had, some personal interaction, with God. I can sympathize, with those who doubt, that God exists, because they feel, there is still a lack, of scientific evidence, to prove God's existence. I would advise these, to be agnostic, to say that they do not know, as there is no proof, that God does not exist, so to believe, that God does not exist, could be construed, as just as much, a matter of faith, as believing blindly, in the existence of God. As Ayn Rand might say, check your premises...

I believe, that a being, who claimed to be God, began to interact with me, as a child, and continues to interact with me. I do not have the leeway, of someone, who has lacked, personal contact with God.

I told Steve, that I believe, very much in God, and that I believe, that I do as Christos, what God, has directed me to do.

I have 'a strong feeling', that Steve is concerned, about the damage, my path as Christos, could cause, to our relationship, or to him. Steve does not want, his association with me, to cause him problems, with Matilda. I have long promoted, 'tolerance', of consensual sexual activity, and this includes, among other things, tolerance of homosexuality. Steve worries, that this could, taint his image, due to his 'tolerance', or 'association', with me, and that this would be, one more thing, which Matilda would seek to use against him, to prevent him, from having visitation, with his children.

I do not intend, to repudiate, my past positions...

[140517 ~ For the record, my journals, prior to the 2013-2014 versions, had 'significant omissions', or were sketchy, about my personal activities, as I sought to be, protective, both of my private life, and of my friends. However, this book, Book Five, did give 'some details', though 'Steve', was not, Steve's actual name.]

I do wish, to be on the radio, with Rante, as Christos, but do hope, to protect my privacy, as Jualt.

The Reagan Administration has come under massive attack, by media, because of reports, that Reagan directed, US arms sales, to Iran, and allowed funds to be used, to help Nicaraguan freedom fighters. It is too soon, to know much. *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, had some related items, now and then... Reagan's detractors, seem to be, just interested, in blindly attacking him, while his defenders, seem to also, do so blindly... Both sides, seem devoted to agendas, rather than, to perhaps, what might be truth, or what might be good, for our nation...

My roommate, Barry, was late again, with the rent this week. Last week, Barry left me a note, the day after rent was due, saying, he would be delayed, a few more days... I have suggested, to Barry, that he might pay to me, an extra $5, when he is late, without prior warning. I hope this 'late fee' might encourage Barry, to at least let me know, in advance, when he is going to be late with rent, so I can plan accordingly. Barry remains, the best roommate, I have ever had.

Paul called me, venomous once again. Paul said, that I have sunk, to a trashy way of life. Red Jeff had mentioned to me, that he had seen Paul, at the adult bookstores, seeking anonymous sex, with random strangers... I mentioned to Paul, that Red Jeff had seen him, at bookstores, and told Paul, that I hoped, he had a safe, and fun, time...

Paul said, my abuse of drugs, has clouded my judgment, and that my mind, is suffering... I thanked Paul, for his concern, and assured Paul, that my work performance, and my school course work, both seem to have remained good.

Paul said, that I had really let him down, by abandoning him, when he was jobless, and really needed me. I

reminded Paul, that he was employed, when I moved, and that I had given him, extra money, for time I did not live there... I mentioned to Paul, that he had taken, a four-week paid vacation, from Frank-B, and Frank-B had let work build up, anticipating Paul's return, but that Paul, had then chosen, not to return...

Paul did not mention, to Frank-B, that Paul was not going, to return to work, for Frank-B, until the day, that Paul was actually expected, to return to work... I told Paul, that his unemployment seems to have been, his own choice.

It requires some self-control, on my part, to not respond, with anger, to Paul. I like to think, that my tone of voice, remained level, and I was civil, the whole time, this time, with Paul. I guess, part of me, has come to expect, this sort of behavior, from Paul, so I am not shocked, nor surprised, when it occurs.

Nonetheless, I can take a deep breath, and sigh, for I would prefer, to not have, these negative energy baths, ever in my life... I remind myself, that Paul, has been helpful to me, in real-world ways, which is more, than some of my 'nice' friends, ever are, and that Paul's benefit, to me, outweighs the negative experiences, that I endure, with him.

[140517 ~ In retrospect, I might like to suspect, that perhaps, Paul had a problem, with alcohol, as some people, do become venomous, nasty, when drunk. My mother was that way, became that way, after one drink... However, at the time, I did not suspect this, with Paul, and would tend to believe, that he was quite sober, was just being 'political', and that neither his venom, nor his charming words, actually reflected, any sincerity.]

Steve did suggest, to authorities, that they examine, Stephanie's step-father, to see, if there was any cause, to be found there, for Stephanie's alleged, questionable behavior. The authorities told Steve, that Stephanie's step-father, was also investigated.

Asmodeus and I have mended bridges, and I welcome this.

Chuck is doing okay.

Life is good overall.

= 32 =

TWO STEPS FORWARD
THEN ONE STEP BACK
December 6, 1986

Steve told me, that he would be, spending Christmas elsewhere, with friends, in a northern forest. I told Steve, that I hoped, he would enjoy himself, but that I was disappointed, to not be spending Christmas, with him. Steve reacted, to my saying, that I would be disappointed, by once again, strongly asserting, that we are just friends, and that I should not, seek to entangle myself, in his world.

Steve came back to me, two days later, saying that perhaps, we are seeing, too much of each other. We at least check in, with one another, once a day. Steve said, he didn't want me, to become negative, emotionally, due to his going away, for Christmas. Steve said, that I should view his Christmas trip away, in the same way, that he had viewed, my going with Paul, to Key West, this past summer, as a friend, who is going away, for a while... I told Steve, that I had said, and affirm, that I do hope, that he enjoys himself.

Steve said, that he knows how people can be, and he has always told me, that we are just friends, and that, if I want a serious relationship with someone, then I should look elsewhere, and that he has done nothing, to prevent me, from doing that.

I told Steve, that I never have pursued him, when he has wished distance, from me. I told Steve, that if he told me, never to call him again, that I would never call him again. I told Steve, that I love him, involuntarily, and by choice, with all my heart, and I think that I have a history, of self-control. I told Steve, that he must certainly know, that I am not like Matilda...

I told Steve, that I thought, it was fair for me, to be able, to honestly voice my disappointment, and it was fair for him, to honestly tell me, that he was concerned, about my being disappointed, and to honestly affirm, his desire, to just be friends. I said such a reminder is good for me to hear, now and then, as I don't actually believe it, but will seek to respect it, when he reminds me.

Since then, Steve has been doubly reassuring, that he

wants our relationship to remain as is. I think Steve and I, have a great thing going, and believe, the warmth between us, is mutual. Steve was, 'already built' when we met, where at best, I was slender, lacked much body fat, and was 'okay'. I now weigh, around 150 pounds, whereas Steve weighs around 190 pounds. I am about 6'2", whereas Steve is around 5'9" or 5'8". To me, Steve is a Hercules. To Steve, I am an Adonis...

I am thankful, that Steve, has motivated me, to return to school, and to build my body. I believe, Steve has been, and is, a healthy relationship, for me. I believe, that this is the most, I have ever weighed, and that I am now, somewhat 'muscular', with some nice curves, and that this, is the best health, or best shape, I have ever had.

Both Steve and I, are muscular and masculine, enjoy swimming, the beach, movies, music, working-out, school, and each other's conversation, and company, in and out of bed. Steve and I, continue to enjoy massage, and have remained monogamous, loyal to one another, and have thus continued, to enjoy 'intimate sex'. We are versatile, and simply enjoy, being physical, with one another. We know, what the other likes. We both seek to please the other. We are both pleased, by the other. I think, what Steve and I have is rare and precious.

Steve went into, more depth, about his curiosity, with me, about Christos. Steve said, that way back, in 1969, for a short time, due to a recreational chemical, he thought, he might be Jesus. Steve was not told by God, that he was Jesus, but came to that understanding, with himself, during the time, that he was under the influence, of those chemicals. Steve also saw people, that others could not see, and he was able, to converse with these people. Steve says that this impacted him, for a while, and that it was six months, before he was fully recovered. Steve said, he was given, chemical medication, and hospitalization, as part of the formal treatment...

Perhaps Steve's mind, was altered, and I think some of his perceptions, might have had, some actual basis, in 'reality', that perhaps he was able, to connect with, different planes of reality. Steve disagrees, and believes there was nothing real about what he experienced.

Steve said, he went barefooted, into a graveyard, and spoke with the dead. I myself, visited a cemetery, and have opened the doors, with the blessing of Hades, to Purgatory, to allow those, who were trapped, in such a neutral realm, to free themselves, by aiding Christos, or by aiding others, through karmically positive acts, at this changing of the age, so that they may enjoy, new life, in the new age. I believe, I have helped, to free those, who had believed in death, and thus went, to a realm of death, in their afterlife. I count the human dead, those in an after-life Purgatory, as among my allies...

Steve now rejects, his whole experience, as unreal. Steve now wishes, to only believe, in solid, basic earth reality. Steve is concerned, that anything, I might think I do, that is 'unreal', is a symptom, of mental illness... I like to think, that the guidance I provide, can be useful, in real-world ways, and is useful, even if, God did not exist. I believe my advice, as a person, to other sentient beings, can be of value, even to atheists.

I understand, that Steve, might have some concern, that his reading of my Christos material, might reactivate some memories, some experiences, that he would prefer, to forever leave behind. I can seek to minimize, the number of Christos-related things, that Steve sees... However, being Christos, is part, of who I am, and is part, of what Steve likes, about me, even if that 'label', is not applied...

Three US tennis players, recently saw, the spirit of Jesus, in their hotel room, while they were in Africa. They were frightened, by the apparition, and fled the room. I am uncertain, why anyone, would be fearful, of Jesus...

It has apparently been prophesied, or expected, that, during the time, for the coming of Christos, many would be claiming, to be Jesus. For whatever reason, this prophecy seems true, at this time. I suspect, that it has been true, during all the time, since the life of Jesus. It is just perhaps true, that in our time, with modern technology, and 'instant communications', that these 'appearances', are perhaps more well-known, than at any other time, since Jesus lived.

For the record, one more time, I do not say, I am Jesus... I say, that I am Jualt. I say, that my spirit, is that of Christos, and that I am, an incarnation, of Christos. To me, and I do

lack certainly, a mind, is the essence, of one's current life, while one's spirit, is the essence, of all one's lifetimes. I believe, without certainty, that at mortal death, one's mind merges, with one's spirit.

I believe, Jesus was a manifestation, of the spirit of Christos, one life, of that spirit. I believe I, Jualt, am one life, of that spirit. I believe, that it could be possible, for the mind, for the essence, of one life-time, to retain some identity, even after, mortal life has ended. Therefore, I believe, it could be possible, in some way(s), for Jesus, Jualt, and Christos, to exist simultaneously. As said, I lack certainty, about these things.

A Finn wrote to me, to say, that he has been, unwillingly subjected, to brain-wave experiments, in Canada and Sweden, saying the governments, of those two nations, are designing, mechanical brain-wave transmitters, that broadcast via microwaves, in the language of the brain, sending suggestions, seeking to influence, or control, people. This is perhaps, an echo, back to Book One, of *The Life of Christos*.

I remind people, that governments, can be like big machines, and many different groups, or individuals, can push the buttons, of that machine... When one says, a government, is doing something, it sounds as if, the government is one body, with one head, and in some ways, it might be that. However, governments are made of people, who serve different agendas, and one part of government, might be doing something, that another part of government, might dislike, or be ignorant about.

I sent a copy, of *The White of the Golden Dawn*, to Rante, and gave a copy, to Chuck. Chuck is doing well and looking well. On another hand, Jay, who no longer lives with Chuck, has grown, two hornlike cysts, on his forehead, and has a bad drug habit, no job, and is living, through criminal means... Chuck is concerned, that Jay, is headed, for a long time, in prison...

Daniel asked, if I had presented, *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, to any theological scholars. I mentioned, that Asmodeus, has seen it, and he is, a scholar of Christianity. Paul gave a copy, of the little CCC booklet, to a local Episcopal bishop, but the bishop then declined, to meet with

me, after reading the booklet.

I told Daniel, that I expect, my writings to gain, their own following, slowly through time, and that I hoped, that the 'legend', about me, that develops, will remain accurate, true to actual events, and to my actual beliefs. I said in the past, most such 'legends', have been built, on verbal remembrance, and that could have been subject, to some distortion, some story-telling adjustments, to fit time, and situations... I said, that I hoped, that by having written books, a constant solid reference, for all times, and situations, that perhaps, I could hope, to build something enduring, and consistent, through time.

I have switched jobs. I can now laugh, a bit, at some of Trudy's antics, now that they are, a thing of the past. Trudy used to leave blank spaces, and then fill them in later, to cast an aspersion upon me... Or, Trudy would scratch out, her instructions, after the fact, and then say, she could not understand, why I would have followed an instruction, that she had scratched out, something that might seem, difficult to do, anyway, but that didn't stop her, from saying it, more than once...

Sometimes, Trudy would give to me, two different and differing, sets of instructions, for a job, and I would then inquire, which way to do something, or if I should do it, both ways. Sometimes, Trudy later threw away, one set of instructions, and then wondered aloud, why I had done a job, two different ways... John-S would then get mad, not at Trudy, for giving these confusing instructions to me, but at me, for taking my time, to be talking, to Trudy, rather than working, on the job.

I actually started, making a copy, of Trudy's instructions, just to cover my back, so to speak, for when she would make, her 'excuses' later... Twice, I presented my copies, of Trudy's instructions, to John-S, after she claimed ignorance, of why I had done something, some way, and both times, John-S faulted me, for wasting my time, and his supplies, by doing such a thing, as to make a copy of Trudy's instructions, totally ignoring, the original issue, as to why I had done something, in some way, even if my copy, of Trudy's instructions, did give to him, an answer, to his original question...

In John-S' eyes, Trudy could do no wrong, and perhaps, I could do no right... John-S was not always that way, but often was that way. It was just a losing situation, for me, and part of me, is very glad, to be gone from it.

If I performed, any 'miracle', when I was with John-S, it would be, that despite all challenges, I never missed, one deadline, during all the time, I was with John-S...

I suppose, I can thank Trudy, and John-S, for helping me, to have my first ever, paid vacation. I had worked, without a vacation, often six days a week, for John-S, for perhaps a year, or more, when Trudy came, and then she wanted, a paid vacation, after three months. My mother had asked me, if I thought, Trudy had been working hard, and I had replied, that everyone there had been working hard. I remember, my mother saying, that it was 'reasonable', for Trudy to get a break, after three months, because she had been working hard. That did rankle, with me, because my mother, had not previously felt, that I should have had a vacation, while she immediately felt, that Trudy's vacation, was justified, and this motivated me, to also seek, some paid time off, which I then got... I figured, my mother was just exhibiting, some 'female solidarity'...

It can be tempting, to be resentful, when one sees, someone else, getting something, that one has not gotten. One might be tempted, to wish to prevent others, from having, what one does not get. However, it can be more beneficial, to understand, that what another is getting, one might also, be able to get...

When my last day came, I simply said good-bye, at the end of the day, and went to class. There was no mention, that it was my last day. It came, and went, just like any other day.

I do have to go back, to John-S' print-shop, and pick up some envelopes, that Frank-B ordered, three weeks ago. I noticed early, that Trudy would place jobs, for clients friendly to me, on the bottom, of the heap... Frank-B has been patient, as he did, prudently, order more envelopes, when he still had, a box of envelopes remaining, and I think, he has actually been, more patient, than he might normally be, only to give me, that business, as a favor... Trudy's behavior, sadly, has been, unprofessional, in this way, and I

am sorry, that Frank-B, has been somewhat penalized, simply because, he sought to do me, a favor...

I am enjoying, my new job. The new job does have its challenges. I am learning, simultaneously, two different computer systems, that are new to me. The advanced new machine, I am using, is totally different, from anything, I have used before. I am taking, the machine's operating manual, with me home, each day, reading it, and taking notes from it. Sheeta has not been, as helpful, as I had hoped, she might be, but she is patient, and does not complain. I am outputting, my share of work. I suppose, everyone there, is learning, about this new machine, and a manufacturer's representative, has been there, now and then, to answer questions.

Fellow type-setter, Molly, has been helpful, in guiding me, about the in-house procedures, where to find jobs, to learn their priorities, where they are stored, where to file papers, where to put things, how to interpret instructions... Molly has also told me, how to operate, the pre-existing machines, which are also different than the ones I have used before, with Mr. Frank, at *Sun* with John-V, and for John-S. One of my work-related strengths, is that I am able, to quickly, and correctly, learn new things...

I have been surprised, that Sheeta has been disinterested, in doing any training of me. Sheeta does spend, most of her time, dealing with customers, or waiting for customers. In some ways, Sheeta does the sort of work, which Trudy did, and has seemed more concerned, that others get the work done, than that she herself, help to do that work. Molly has thanked me, for being there... Apparently, Sheeta helped Molly some, but not enough, with the type-setting, until I arrived, but not after I arrived.

I am accustomed, to filing alphabetically, by customer name, and here, they file numerically, chronologically, by invoice number. Sometimes, a repeat job, apparently can arrive, before the previous one, is properly filed, so that the invoice one finds, within the computer, is not the actual previous one, and this has caused Molly, some aggravation... Molly though, does have, some memory, of jobs she has done, so can recognize, an old job, when she sees one, whereas, I lack any certainty, about what is, the

current or prior job, and have to rely, upon the invoiced instructions, to be correct. I mention this, because twice, the invoice given, was not the previous one used... Fortunately, Molly caught the error, both times, and explained the situation, to me. I did mention, that I feel, an alphabetical filing system, can help one, to find anything, whereas a numeric one, when jobs have only a numeric name, can leave one, basically blind, to content...

Also, all previous jobs are stored. For John-S, I would only store, the current version. I asked Sheeta, why she retains, in the computer system, all previous versions, and she said, this is done, in case an invoice, is ever questioned, then she can reference the job, and what was done, at that time, from the invoice number. Sometimes, also, a customer might come in, with an old version, and ask for changes, to that version, rather than to the current version... I never considered that, and wondered, if Trudy, perhaps faced that situation... A bottom line for me, is that there can be, many versions, of the same printed piece, from different time-periods, and all references, are to an invoice number, and this is all new, to me, a change, from any way I have faced before. I think, there is much more, room for error, in the way, that Sheeta handles things. I am adapting. I seek to do things, the way that they are already being done. I am learning.

Just for the record, I am aware, that sometimes, an employer might prefer, an employee, who has a blank slate, a lack of prior experience, so they might then learn, the ways things are done, at that place. Sometimes an employer might view any other system, or any other experience, as ‘garbage’. Sometimes, it is best to avoid, making suggestions. For my part, I have simply been, asking questions, and the answers, can help me, to do a better job.

My being there is going to allow Molly, and Sheeta, to more easily, have holiday vacations, and Molly says, she is very glad of this. So, I have been somewhat warned, that at some point soon, the burden, for most all of the work, if not all of the work, shall be on me, alone, for a time... I think, I shall be able, to competently handle this.

I have an ‘A’, in my computer class. I am learning,

'application programs', which are used sometimes, in the job market, for data management, bookkeeping, invoices. Sheeta uses, application programs, so these skills, might be useful, to me with Sheeta. The requirements, for graduation, have changed. I am now required, to take an additional, math course, and a health course, so I have registered, for these in my next term. I feel, both my time, and money, are being wasted, for I see, no direct use, for the courses, I must now take. I feel, that requiring useless courses, is one way, the system selects, for the wealthy, because only the wealthy, can afford, such a waste, of time and money, to gain a college degree.

I think it is wrong, that a college degree, without work experience, can get one a wage, at start, above that, of a very experienced worker, who lacks, a college degree...

Steve fixed up my radio, so it plays, through my stereo speakers. By doing this, Steve has returned music, to my world. Steve says, he is willing, to once again, take a look, at my electronic typewriter, which has never, really worked correctly...

This expensive machine requires expensive ribbons, whih cost $15, and last about 30-50 pages, whereas the old machine, used ribbons that cost about $5, and lasted easily 300 pages. One could rewind, and re-use, the old ribbons, but the new system, is contained within a cartridge, and once done, once to the end, it is done. The old ribbons, were cloth, and could be soaked some, moistened, or inked again. The new ones are like a film impression, and once the coating is knocked off, by a key-stroke, it is gone, and unable to be used again. Perhaps those, who can afford such a machine, lack concern, about the cost of ribbons, just like those, who afford, an expensive vehicle, which is fuel inefficient, has low gas mileage, might lack concern, about the cost of fuel...

This machine has been, more of a curse, than a blessing, which is a shame, as my mother, and half-sister, allegedly spent, a good bit of money, to get it for me. I have continued to rely, on the old-old typewriter, given to me, by Howard, when I was in Key West...

I laughed with Steve, that the more, one is in debt, with credit, the more it seems, one might receive, in wages.

Conversely, the more money, one has in the bank, the more likely, it could be, that one will get fired, from your job. Of course, that is just left field speculation, and I was only joking.

I am not particularly pleased, about Steve, feeling a need, to once again, tell me, that we, are just friends, and are not 'lovers'... I wondered, if Steve felt a need, to specifically say, that we are not 'lovers', precisely because, he had told someone, in my presence, that we are 'lovers'... I had not mentioned anything, to Steve, about that, at that time, when he said it, but it had made me, feel good...

The actions and feelings between us, have remained the same, despite these words, and perhaps, that is a change... I do love Steve, and am grateful, to have him, in my world.

= 32 =

A GOOD TRANSITION
December 13, 1986

I am getting comfortable, with the nice machine, at my new job. It was not until, my fifth day, that I began, to pick up some speed, but at least all throughout, I have been able, to correctly accomplish, the work assigned to me, and bring income, to the shop.

At my former work-shop, John-S, has let go, the first replacement for me, because John-S said, he didn't, "have time to train anyone". I understand, that John-S was probably unable, to train anyone, to do the work, that I have been doing... I understand that anyone new, would have to learn, the company's in-house procedures, and also, to seek to cope with Trudy... I understand, that I am, as my norm, much faster than other people, and that John-S, might have been surprised, at the pace of someone new, even if that person's pace, was actually 'normal'... I understand, that the pace, of anyone, at a new job, is going to be slower, than that person's pace, can later become...

I had thought Dana, was going to come in, and work in my place, for John-S, but apparently, Dana only intended, to fill in, around his own work demands. I still keep in touch, with pressman Ron.

For what it's worth, Sheeta has been disinterested, in seeking to help me, learn the existing machinery, and work procedures, and I have learned these, with guidance from Molly. I have learned the new machine, by operating it, and by studying its manual, at home. Molly has remained comfortable, with her own machine, and it has been me, who has been, the one to operate, the new machine... Molly has focused, on handling repeat jobs, where files just have to be amended, as she is familiar, with how to find these, and what they may want. I have focused, mostly on new jobs.

Flip has also avoided, speaking with me. Flip is Sheeta's husband. I hope, that Flip is not concerned, with a male working there, with his wife... Both Sheeta and Molly, have been, nothing but friendly, to me.

Both Dana and Mercedes have called me, at the new job. Both have been, major customers, that I handled

directly, and their saying, a good word about me, to Sheeta, certainly is helpful, and I do appreciate that. I do not think, that John-S, and Sheeta, ever talked. John-S, never checked my past job references, when he hired me either...

Dana is the artist, who drew, air-brushed, the cover art, for *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*. If one might have difficulty, gaining a good reference, from a past employer, in part, because that employer might prefer to avoid, having one be helpful to a competitor, then one can seek, to gain good work references, from previous clients. I am now located, so much further north, than where John-S' shop, is located, that I do not think, being a competitor, is an issue.

I tried on two occasions, to decline more work, at this time, from Helene, on her new stage-play. I am going to school, working full-time, and learning to operate, two computer systems, that are new to me, as well as studying, for both work, and school...

However, Helene practically cried, and beseeched me, to work with her, and so I did agree, to do so. I do enjoy, spending time, with Helene, with or without work. Helene is bright, witty, fun, smiling, and generally, just a joy. Helene is, one of those people, who make ours, a better world, just by being in it.

I have agreed, to visit Helene's, once a week, typing and editing her material. I can type, as fast, as Helene can talk, and she also now has, a foot-pedal operated, audio device, into which, she can speak, when I am absent, and then I can type at home, from her tapes, 'when I have time'...

I suggested to Helene, that we collaborate, on a love-story, between my grandmother, Louise, and Doug, since it is, within a realm of possibility, that my father, was Doug's son, before Doug married, my grandmother, and that my father's birth, actually influenced, for Doug and Louise, to then get married. My grandmother was married, to someone else, at the time, and he was away, at a war-front. My grandmother, never responded, to his letters, and he wondered, why she had become, distant from him. When he survived the war, and returned 'home', she then divorced him, and married Doug. Helene said, such a tale, might be, both 'far-fetched', and 'very unwelcome'.

I have been on the radio, three times this week, as Jualt,

to defend US President Reagan, against hostile critics. I defended, both the decision, to pursue a Star Wars defense system, to end a threat, from nuclear missiles, and also, the promotion of democracy, by supporting liberation movements, that favor pluralist democracy, in nations, where there are, strong one-party, central governments... It seems that the US left-wing, has been, as willing to accept, leftist dictators, as our right-wing, has been, to accept right-wing dictators...

However, my request, to be on the air, on radio, as Christos, has been ignored. I understand, that my world news, reporting and analysis, could be detrimental, to my 'position', as Christos, within spiritual or religious circles, and visa-versa, because some, in either circle, might view those, in the other circle, with some disfavor, or think of them, as incongruous, or incompatible fields...

The 'Christmas spirit', still eludes me. I am going, gift shopping today. Buying gifts, for other people, usually does put me, in a Christmas mood. The festival of lights, that comes with Christmas, is truly beautiful, and wonderful. I am in total agreement, with the spirit of Christmas. I think Christmas, or universal gift day, is a time of joy, and beauty, a time when humans, as a mass, can generate positive energy, into dharma, and universe, and perhaps even help, to moderate winter, to make it, less severe, by doing so.

Some are critical, of Christmas, saying that Jesus, if he existed at all, probably was, not actually born, on this day. To me, when Jesus was born, can be incidental, and that which can be of value, is that humans, select this day, to honor Jesus, to show support, for the good things, the ideals, that Jesus, continues to represent.

Steve has been calling me, and spending time, with me, and we have enjoyed time, in and out of bed. Nothing between us has changed.

I was thinking, about Steve's time, when he thought, he might be Jesus... I can at least smile, to think, with all the people on our planet, that I, Christos, became attracted, to someone, who, for at least a short while, thought he might be Jesus...

Some people, think of Jesus, as perfect, as in, being without any flaws, as being divine, a manifestation, of God

on Earth, elevated, as a helper, to fix all of one's problems, as someone who erases, all the personal consequences, of one's sins...

I do not think, that Jesus automatically, instantly, erases all sins, for everyone, who simply says, they accept Jesus. I think, at a minimum, some heartfelt sincerity has to be involved. I also believe, that what Jesus, might have offered, was management of one's karma, perhaps an after-life intercession, to help people, manage their karma, in ways that they can handle.

I am fearful, concerned, that people think, or behave, as if the forgiveness of Jesus, means they can, 'go and sin some more', and just be forgiven again, and again, and again, when what Jesus actually said, was, 'go and sin no more'... I believe, that confession can be part, of a process, of atoning, or making amends. I do not believe, that confession alone, can repay karmic debts. I believe, that confession, can gain one, a grace time, an acknowledgment of one's sincere intention, to seek to live in better ways, to repent, to allow one to have, more time, to repay one's negative karma...

I think it is important, of value, to consider, that Jesus, was also a human being, just like anybody else, and that, while the challenges, and temptations, the trials and tribulations, that Jesus faced, might be different than the challenges, faced by people, as individuals today, what can be of value, is how Jesus faced, his challenges and temptations, and that is an example, that others can emulate.

I think, Jesus might have had, his flaws, and might have been, touched by anger, despair, love, and hope, among other things. I believe, that the fact, that Jesus, could be as human, as anybody else, and could still walk a path in life, in harmony with God, is an example, for others to seek to emulate. I do think, it can be of value, for people to ask themselves, what would Jesus do, and seek to, perhaps sometimes at least, do the same.

Asmodeus once said to me, that everyone is Jesus. I think Asmodeus is in error. One might note, that Asmodeus, does not believe that he is Jesus. Asmodeus might believe, that he is Elijah, rather than being Jesus...

However, I do think, that anyone, can seek to emulate Jesus. I am often totally baffled, at how some Christians today seek to preach hate, in the name of someone, who only preached love... Jesus urged people, to vanquish their enemies, not by the sword, but by love, to seek to make, an enemy, into a friend... I know, that can sometimes seem, to be, or perhaps actually be, impossible, or detrimental to self, and that sometimes, one must do, what is necessary, to maintain one's world...

Both Daniel and David, told me, that they want a lover, who has muscles, but neither of them, have muscles... Sometimes, in the homosexual world, muscle likes muscle. This can be, in part, because of the time and dedication, required to build muscles... I think, seeking to build a union, with physical appearance, as its basis, could be foolish, as physical appearance, does seem to change... I think, what Daniel and David, might actually want, is sex with someone, who has muscle, and they might mistake, their own lust, for love, or seek to use, a pretext of 'love', to have 'sex'... There are plenty, of muscular men, who will trade sexual favors, for money. Both Daniel and David, seem disinclined, to 'pay for sex'...

Some people, who lack muscles, seem to think that muscles are a natural gift, as if some people have muscles, and others lack muscles, and that is how it is. That is not, how it is. My father once told me that God, or nature, might give to one, a mind, but one has to build, one's own body. I find this, to be true.

Some people, who lack muscles, seem to think, that muscles represent, brute strength, is mindless, or that men, with big muscles, are compensating, for a small penis... These things can be untrue. In fact, it takes time, self-discipline, and knowledge, to develop muscles, in body-building. Some people, just lift weight, power-lift, to see how much weight, they can handle, and these can build strength, and stocky, elephant-shaped, and elephant-strong, bodies, rather than, the asymmetrical, shapely bodies, that are deliberately built, with body-building, as a science, with time, and knowledge.

A well-built body, can represent, mental self-discipline, knowledge, patience, determination, and effort. A well-built

body, can represent, a commendable character, even if, some might wrongly, then become, superior-minded, or conceited... One only has, so much time in life, and some people spend their time, building things, other than their own bodies, and this too, can obviously be commendable. It is perhaps sometimes true, that some people, who are overly devoted, to their own bodies, might be lacking, in other ways...

Any exercise, can be better, for one's body, than a lack of exercise. Any endurance or high repetition movement, exercise, can be beneficial, for one's heart and lungs, as they too, are muscles.

One does not compete, against others, as a norm, in body-building, except in a competition. One competes, as a norm, while body-building, with self, seeking to do more, than one has done, before. Each body-builder, must learn the strengths, and weaknesses, of his or her, or its, own individual 'shell', or body, and seek to maintain, a balance, in size of body parts, which can sometimes mean, doing the most, with that which is weakest, doing that which is the hardest, for one as an individual...

I started, at 23 years of age, being about 115 pounds, at nearly 6'2", or 74 inches, in height. Russ used to call me, 'stick man'... There were sad reasons for this... I was also handicapped, with a severed collar-bone, that gives to me, a lack of leverage, on one side, a spine that curved inward, due to two vertebrae, being bent inwards, rather than, aligning in a straight manner, and a disjointed hip, that gave me, an odd swivel, when I walked... These 'challenges', were also due, to 'sad reasons'...

One thing that motivated me, to start exercising, doing push-ups, and sit-ups, was that, when I held my right-arm outwards, its bicep would droop, and when I flexed, it would just come, to a horizontal position. I became 'tired', of my body's 'condition'... It took me, a long time, just to get somewhat 'normal' tone, even without gaining, any 'normal' strength. I had to learn, to hold my body, in a 'normal position', through deliberate posture...

At different times, I did focus, on exercising, and did enjoy, some gains, but nothing really significant. I now know, that by doing more and more calisthenics, such as sit-

ups, touch-toes, deep knee bends, twists, and push-ups, high repetition exercises, I was actually toning, shaping, or 'cutting', my body, rather than, 'building'. My 'gains', were perhaps due more, to my getting older, than due, to my exercise program. If nothing else, I did gain, from calisthenics, enough body health, or condition, to begin, a more serious work-out program, at a gym later, which I did. I then began, using exercise machines, and free weights, barbells and dumb-bells...

[140610 ~ Through time, I strengthened my muscles, so that they pulled, my bones, back into proper position... Exercising with proper form of motion, and holding my body, consciously, in proper position, was essential, to this process. Clifta taught me, that to live weak, can be, to remain weak. Clifta had me exercise, 'normally', 'properly', without catering, to any of my body's weaknesses. By the time I reached, 42 years of age, I had become, 'above normal', in appearance. I peaked at around 191 pounds, with a lean body, and light-weight bones...]

Just going to a gym, and exercising, might fail, to actually make one, a body-builder, because doing exercise wrong, can result, in wrong results, or lack of results. It is very common, to see people, who go to a gym, for long periods of time, who never seem, to change. This is in part, perhaps, due to how a body, can grow tolerant, to the same exercises, and one fails to make gains, beyond the initial benefit, of exercising at least some, versus failing to exercise, at all.

For some reasons, some people, never ask advice, nor are willing, to pay for any training, never read to learn, never watch instructional videos, and some just go to a gym, to seek to be closer, to people, who do have, good bodies... I can at least wonder, if someone who goes to a gym, for a long time, and fails to make any gains, is going to a gym, for some reason, other than to exercise properly...

I have learned, that if one wishes, to learn body-building, then to seek someone, whose body reflects their knowledge. I have found, that it can be common, at gyms, for a gym, to portray itself, as interested, in being helpful to one, when you are being, honey-mooned, courted, when they are seeking to get you to join, before you give money to them,

and then, their personnel, might be, 'too busy', or disinterested in you, once you have joined, after you have given money to them...

At any rate, there is much to learn, in body-building. What one eats, is important. Form of motion, determines shape of muscle. Therefore, how one performs an exercise, can be important, in determining, the results one gets.

If one does too much, one can get, an injury. If one does too little, one might lack, any benefit. Therefore, it can be important, to take notes, of what one does, each time, one visits a gym, and use one's actual performance, to determine, what one should do, the next time, one exercises, those particular muscles, or that particular exercise.

If one wishes to build, one should use, a weight, that one can perform, a low number of repetitions, three to five, during a set, and one should seek, to do three sets, of each exercise. One raises the weight, on one's next visit, when one is able, to do the number of repetitions, on the last set, as one did, on the first set...

To cut or tone, one should use a weight, that one can perform, a high number of repetitions, ten to twelve, during a set, and one should seek to do, three sets of each exercise. One raises the weight, on one's next visit, when one is able to do, the number of repetitions, on the last set, as one did, on the first set...

One should take a break, between sets. Muscles go through a cycle, where they swell, then shrink, then relax. One should seek to do, one's next set, while one still has, some swell, in one's muscle, so that one's next set, is begun, when one's muscles, are larger, than they were, on the previous set. Waiting too long, between sets, can result, in one doing one's first set, many times... Some people advise, at least a thirty-second break, between sets, and others, at least a minute break, between sets, and some say, one second per year of one's age, between sets.

Some people at a gym are like butterflies, flittering around, to talk to people, and these might fail, to gain any benefit, as they end up, doing their first set, many times...

Some people, who view themselves, as fat and-or weak, think they should avoid, a gym, when perhaps, they would

enjoy, great benefits, from a gym. Some people, like myself, have to spend, a lot of effort, to just gain, a little bit of weight. A fat person, generally starts, with size, so is way ahead, of most people. All a fat person, has to do, is to sculpt, to tone, to cut, and they gain shape.

It's like building a statue. Some people have to add, a lot of clay, while others, have an ample amount, of clay. High repetition exercises sculpt clay. Low repetition exercises add clay...

I prefer lean growth, which is to shape, and to add, to sculpt and to build, at the same time, a middle path. Some people, do low reps, for a while, to gain strength, and size, and then cut, or sculpt, to shape what they have gained, and they go back and forth, between those two programs. Lean growth is simply another way, of doing things.

There are many aspects, to body-building, and I am only, lightly touching upon, some of the basics...

= 32 =

THE MORNINGS ARE NOW COOL
December 21, 1986

Writing can be, a good way, to have a safe release, helps one, to vent pent up feelings, and also allows one, to put things down, on paper, so that one can more clearly focus, on an overall situation. Sometimes, hindsight is clearer, than foresight...

I did get, an 'A', in my computer science class.

Steve now has, the children again, up until Christmas Day... The kids are fortunate, in that they get to enjoy, two Christmas holidays, one in each household. The kids are being showered, with presents, from all sides. Even I, spent way more, than I should have, but did so, thanks to my credit card. I get pleasure seeing others be happy, with the gifts, that I give to them.

I have been adopted, by a dog, named Jiminy, for the time being. Jiminy jumped into my car, as I was getting ready, to go to work. No one in the area knows the dog, and I have put up a notice, in the laundry room, and mentioned Jiminy, to management. Nobody has claimed Jiminy. There is an expression, 'Jiminy Christmas', and I don't know, where the expression, comes from, but that is where, I got the name, for this dog.

Paul said, "On no!!!!!", when I told him, I had been adopted, by Jiminy. Paul said, that I should avoid, giving the dog a name, lest I get attached, to him. I suspect that Paul, still wants me, to return, to living with him, but would decline to allow, Jiminy, in his apartment... Perhaps Paul, would help to find, a good home, for Jiminy, just to get him, out of my world...

Steve's Christmas tree, is beautiful. I am sharing, enjoyment of Steve's tree, this year, rather than having, one of my own. I feel the Christmas spirit, fully now, because of seeing, Steve's lion-hearted warmth, for his kids. Steve is disgruntled, that he must pay, child support to Matilda, even when, he has custody, of the children. Steve feels, that in a way, he is being made to pay double, as he must pay, for the children, when he has them, and also, at the same time, pay Matilda, to support children, when she does not have them... The system can be, its own worst enemy?

A SHADOW OF DEATH ON GIFT DAY
December 25, 1986

The trend today, is for everyone, to celebrate Christmas, by exchanging presents, regardless of their personal religion. There is a movement, to create alternate holidays, on different days, so some of the work-force, can be available to work, on each day. Right now, most businesses, close for Christmas, simply because, all the workers, are away. There is even a movement, for a holiday, only for 'black people', saying that Christmas is a 'white' holiday. I suspect, people who are actually not blacks, arepromoting this division.

I am taking some time, to write today, because this Christmas catches me, with mixed emotions. I spent many hours, concerned yesterday, that I, am in, a process of dying... All in all, I would say, I have had a good life, and, if it is, my time to die, then I am ready. I just hope, that death will be as quick, and painless, as possible.

The direct cause, for my immediate concern, began about four days ago, which I awoke in the morning, with very sharp, sudden jolting pains, at the top of my head, sharp enough to make me think, that perhaps, I had cut my scalp, while sleeping, or that something, had become embedded, in my head. I suspected at first, that Jiminy, had scratched my head, while I was sleeping, and I actually expected, to find, some sort of bleeding injury, but there was nothing. I dismissed the pain, as something that would heal, and pass.

However, this is now, four days later, and the pain is still intermittently with me, but sharp, severe enough, to make my whole body, involuntarily jump, when it occurs. I have had, both Steve and Chuck, look at the spot, where the pain seems focused, and there is nothing visible, no mark, or discoloration, of any sort. That means, the source of my pain, could be internal. Since the pain, is located in my head, it could be, very expensive, to have it examined, and the problem, could be untreatable.

I have spent, all my available spare money, on gifts, and right now, do not have, any money to spare, to go to see a doctor, to have my head examined. Chuck says, that if the pain, is with me, for five days, then I should, go see a doctor.

Today is the fifth day.

The pain is fickle. It is not constant. But, if a wind, gently ruffles my hair, then I feel, a sharp intense pain. Touching the skull produces a slight warm sensation, but the moving air creates great pain. It is odd.

Adding to my concern, is that, about four weeks ago, I began having, regular headaches, in the front of my forehead. The pain I have now, is at the top, and back, of my skull. Those headaches, phased in and out, many times, over a week, then phased out totally.

I know, that some of my friends lack any extra funds, to lend to me, so that I could afford, to go now to a doctor. I know, that my friends, who do have, 'extra funds', might be reluctant, to lend to me, if I am going to die anyway. I myself, am very reluctant, to embrace a high medical bill, as that could be, a heavy debt, for a while...

I told Chuck, that I am concerned, about my own health. My intention is to ride out the pain, hoping it will go away, on its own. If the pain gets to a point, where I am unable to work, or financially support myself, then I hope, that one of my friends would at least provide to me, a space to live comfortably, until I die.

I'm afraid, that I dampened Daniel's holiday spirit, a little, by telling him, of my problem. I will tell Steve also, but not until, after the kids have gone. I don't wish to ruin, Steve's holiday... I normally lack, any health issues... I have not even heard, of anyone, with a problem like mine.

I have spent, much of my free time, with Steve, and his kids, this week. Last night, they opened the presents, I gave to them, and they were delighted, and I was very happy, to see them happy. Smiles, can be contagious...

Steve had hoped, that his friends, Abe and Layla, would cover the costs, of a trip, to a forest, in northern Florida. However, Abe and Layla, are financially stretched, and perhaps had hoped, that Steve would share the cost. The end result was, that everyone decided to stay here.

Abe and Layla did find, a good home, for Jiminy, and I shall miss him. At least I don't have to worry, about Jiminy being cared for if I die... Dogs like to have company, and I spend much time, away from home... I gave to Abe and Layla, some dog food, dog shampoo, a dog leash, a tether

and a chain, so Jiminy, came with a full dowry!

One reason, I am financially stretched, is that, I have yet to work, a full-time week. The first two weeks, Sheeta directed me, not to work Saturdays, and I had to leave early, 4:00pm, to get to my computer class. Sheeta had said, that she would guarantee me, full-time employment, and she now says, that I will have, full-time, now that my class is over, after the holidays... Sheeta is covering, some of the work, now that Molly, is on vacation.

I am using, the new machine, at a good pace, and have even now learned to operate, the old machinery. I know the company's 'procedures'... I am getting comfortable, at this job. However, Sheeta, has little contact with me, and I am uncertain, of my ground. I do my work, without supervision, or help. Sheeta seems, to have expected me, just to know what to do, as if her way, is the only way, things are done everywhere, and that is, most certainly untrue. This is just, how Sheeta seems to act, as, before I actually started work, Sheeta did say, that she understood, that some training time, would be necessary. However, Sheeta has refrained, from doing any training...

When I once mentioned, the different alphabetical way, of organizing files, Sheeta said, that other places, might do things wrong, but she does things right. I have refrained, from making any suggestions, to Sheeta, and just focused, on learning things, her way.

Actually, I have found, each place that I have worked, to have a different procedure, of handling jobs. I have learned each way. Each place, has also had, different computer systems, and I have learned, each system...

Thanks to Molly, I am able to do things, according to the ways, that Sheeta might want. At least Sheeta, has been without complaint, to me. Molly says, I am doing, "very well". I hope that Sheeta, and Molly, and even Flip, can one day, find me to be, 'excellent'...

This is a tough Christmas, for Chuck. Chuck has had his home robbed, three times, during the past ten days, by people to whom he has opened his home, provided food, and shelter. All Chuck wanted, in return, was sex, to enjoy their bodies, with them being passive. This is Chuck's way.

Sometimes, the only thing, a young male might have to

offer, to others, is his penis, or hormones, and sometimes, the only ones, who might value that, are homosexuals... However, the people that Chuck helped, seemed to have viewed their bodies, their sex, as more valuable, than Chuck's food and shelter, so they justified robbing him.

It can be true, that for some young people, doors open easily for them, so they might fail to value, food and shelter. I believe, that usually, the door that opens, is a bedroom door... They figure, they can rob one person, and move to another. There are reasons, why some people, are homeless...

Chuck does lock his home, and then he changed the locks, and starting with the second incident, has made police reports, and told the police, the names of those he 'knows', are the perpetrators. Police seem basically powerless, and say, they can't charge, a person with theft, without witnesses, unless they actually find, the allegedly stolen goods, on someone, and one must have a receipt, with the serial number of something, to prove, that it might have been one's. Some people might say, that what they got, was a gift to them, from the very person, who claims it was stolen...

At any rate, Chuck is a bit depressed... Three robberies in ten days... Chuck's home is empty, when he is at work, and these people know his work schedule. So too, now do, the police...

Chuck did say, if need be, I could stay with him, in the context of having, a comfortable place to die. Chuck said, that he would wish, to play with my body, whenever he wants, in return. I was sort of amused, by that, that Chuck would want sex with me, while I might be dying... One might note, that the excuse, I have a terrible, mind-numbing, body-jolting headache, might fail to deter Chuck...

I advised Chuck, that my penis, might fail to perform, during those times, when I am incapacitated by pain, and said I was uncertain, if Chuck might be willing, to wait, 'until later'... I mentioned, that all men, get erections, after they die, but said, that rigor mortis, fails to imply, enthusiasm...

I told Chuck, that I hoped to live, and thanked him, for at least offering, some shelter, to me. Beggars can't be choosers?

I believe, the heterosexual family system has value, when it is a loving, nurturing environment, and, by example, encourages children, to have loving families, of their own.

Merry Christmas, to one and all!!!

= 32 =

SOME FINAL THOUGHTS
December 28, 1986

The pain, at the back and top, of my head, has been very localized, just in one specific spot. The pain became constant, during the daytime, of the 26th, but subsided, after I took, two Bayer aspirins. The affected area, still reacts painfully, when the hair is touched, but, oddly enough, there is no sharp pain, when the scalp there, is touched. I thought, that there was numbness, on the right side of my face, then decided, it might just be, my own imagination. There is no numbness, right now, as I type these notes.

If I am dying, while I am writing, then I suppose, a last lesson, that Christos offers, to our world, is an insight, into death and dying.

It seems extremely obvious, to me, that anyone else, in the same situation as me, should get medical attention, immediately, to deal with the situation, as soon as possible. Often it is delay, which makes a fatal difference, between life and death.

I dread the possibility, of losing time at work. Financially, I am 'tight'.... If I were to be, medically urged, or required, to remain in a hospital, I would lose everything, and be in debt, for years. My job could vanish. I might find myself, evicted, before I got out, and all my things, could be gone. That is powerful restraint, against going to a doctor, and for now, I am gambling, that I might live, without medical care, and without the debt, of medical care...

Right now, the thing, that I would regret, losing most, due to death, would be Steve. Even if there is an after-life, there still could be, some pain of separation...

I have peacefully accepted, the possibility, of my own death. If there be an after-life, then I believe, I am going, to a better place... If I am dying, then I lack the financial means, to do anything about it. I feel frustration, at my family, for their comfort, compared to my consternation... My uncle's wife, just recently passed on, and she left $8-million, to their local hospital, and yet, I myself cannot afford, medical attention... My uncle, is going to court, to fight that settlement...

Apparently, my uncle signed, at least three, 'marriage

contracts', indicating what he would receive, if his wife died, but, he wishes, to fight anyway, to seek to get more. My uncle hopes, that the hospital, will give him, some of the money, designated to them, rather than, spending money, to fight him, in court, which also can be expensive.

If I am to die, then I at least can say, that I enjoyed my life. I learned much. I worked hard. I played well. I have savored, so many good things. I have lived life fully, and have no regrets, about my own behavior, and choices, though perhaps, I should have avoided Atlanta, that time... The love I enjoy with Steve has made life worthwhile.

Paul, Howard, Daniel, Asmodeus, Grace, Helene, Mark, Hicks, Pam, Ric, Bob, Thomas, Michael, Walter, Tanya, David, Sam, Carol, Diane, Trudy, Dana, Bill, Evy, Laurelle, John, Katie, Dave, Maurie, Philip, Barny, Helen, gentle Monique, Rick, Michelle, Penelope, Josh, James, Kent, Greg, Pete, Artie, Scott, Alan, Sven, Judy, Arthur, Jerry, Cheryl, Bobbie, Alice, Kurt, Arturo, Jeff, Lynn, Bonnie, Lorenzo, Gigi, Teresita, Viola, Chuck, Frank, Troy, Cornellia, Ann, Betty, San Dee, Jim, Grizzly, Charlie, Jay, Gene, Vic, Laurie, Don, Frank, Erwin, Maria, Harriet, Christopher, Matthew, Leo, CherylAnn, Enid, Bette, Dale, all of these, and more, have been parts, of my life, and some have helped me, in real-world ways, or some, have helped me to smile. Some have been my teachers, either as mentors, or tormentors... There are many, who share names, and perhaps others, that I have failed to mention. I have no complaints. I have done, as God requested, for me to do, and I have done, what I am able, to help maintain, and improve, our world. I have enjoyed life.

I don't want to be hooked up, to life support machines, if a permanent vegetable. Since I don't have, lots of money, it is unlikely, that a hospital would go to the expense, of maintaining my life, as a vegetable, as they might do, to a wealthy person, only to seek false profit. A hospital will keep you alive, as long as they can collect income, for doing so...

Medical bills, are adding insult to injury. Too often, families are robbed, by catastrophic illness, which is, as much of a financial disaster, as it is, a health disaster. Health insurance today, seems to be, the only way that people, are able to afford, to have medical care, and not all

can afford, even the cost of insurance. And one is never guaranteed, that insurance will actually pay. Some say, that John D. MacArthur, got wealthy, by failing to pay out, on life insurance policies... His 'foundation', seeks to atone for him, in much the same way, that the Nobel foundation, seeks to atone, by awarding a 'peace prize', for the fact, that all of its money, was made, by selling weapons, and causing death...

It's certainly a situation, when one feels, one actually needs, medical care, and is unable, to afford medical care... It seems, that the more 'advanced', our medical knowledge has become, the less able, are the people, to financially afford, to have it... Technically speaking then, people have, somewhat, always had to live, without formal medical care, and what has made a difference, perhaps the most, has been the environment...

I have thought, about how casual, I have been, with my environment. At my last job, I was constantly breathing fumes, from ink, and chemistry. At times, I felt slightly high, and my vision would blur... Not the best environment, to be within, for prolonged periods... I have had, some blurring, of my vision, during this period, with my head problem...

At my home, there seems to be, some sort, of fine brown powder, in the air system, which coats the air system vents, and I suspect, that I might be breathing that... There are also, some phenomenal growths, of mildew, which I am constantly cleaning away.

I have overlooked these things, as necessary to accept, as just, 'how things are', because they come with the territory, but this, is being casual, and that could have been, most unwise...

Even if my pain, were to go away completely, I plan, to still go to a neurologist, and have my head examined. If the pain continues, I will start looking, on Monday, for a reasonably priced neurologist, ha-ha. If the pain subsides, then I will be able to visit a neurologist, after I have saved some money, ha-ha again.

I am more concerned, than someone else might be, by the headaches, a while back, the acuteness, of the sharpness, in the pain, in intervals now, because of 'medical history', including the facts, that my father, had a brain

tumor, and I was born, with a brain tumor.

Two of my strongest impressions, now, are first, that it is frustrating, to not be able, to do anything, while feeling, that one's life, might be slipping away, and, second, not knowing exactly what is wrong, or what to expect, can be very disturbing...

I have been impatient lately, with some around me, who seem less able to function, in their good health, than I do, with my problem. The expression, 'half-brained', has been in my mind a lot. Some people, seem to act, 'half-brained', even when they have, use of their 'full', mental facilities.

I have now told, Daniel, Red Jeff, Chuck, Paul, Steve, and Helene, of my problem. Both Chuck and Helene, urged me, to think positive thoughts, to expect that this, will eventually pass, on its own, lest my thinking, negative thoughts, actually influences, for my condition to worsen...

Daniel and Steve, have told me, to go to a doctor, now, and argue about payment, later... Most doctors, do want some cash, before they even do anything. Neither Daniel nor Steve, has cash to give to me, for this purpose...

At least I had holiday time, Christmas Day, off from work, to rest and relax at home, and I have been able, to function at my job... There are times, when I get, that blinding jolt, but, after that, I am okay. For a while, I thought, that the jolt was so regular, that I could count on it, being about every 20 minutes... My eyes would open wide, and my arms and shoulders would rise, and my fingers extend upwards...

And, in the neither here nor there, roommate Barry, has been gone, for just over a week now. Barry left on the 19th, saying he would be back, on the 23rd, four days, to go to a nearby city. Barry has paid, neither his rent, nor his share, of the phone bill, and he did say, he would take care, of his phone bill. Barry has been prone, to enjoying long-distance calls, which means, I do have some phone number(s), I could check, if I wished, to seek to find him. Barry's long-distance calls are the bulk of my phone bill...

I am fed up, with Barry's lack of responsibility, and just impatient, with things in general. If I don't hear from Barry soon, I could pack his things, and then advertise, for a new roommate... My situation, requires that someone responsible, be in my extra room... The world does not give

me any leeway.

Barry is acting, half-brained, as he could simply call, and give to me, some meaningless excuse, which would show, that he cares, and delay me, from doing anything. I have had, my telephone answering machine, back from Paul, since the 25th... I am easy, for others to deal with, because I am agreeably understanding of their situations, but failure to deal with me, strains my patience.

I think, my head situation, is making me, less patient with people... Well, life is sometimes difficult, challenging, so it might be foolish, to expect death, to go smoothly!

Perhaps, it is now time, to seek to end, this book. I must retype the text, and make corrections, and edit, where need be. I need, to make a copy, to send to, the US Library of Congress, while I am still able, to do so. Dead authors, tend to have, a certain popularity, with publishers...

Steve says, he is closer to me now, than he ever was, to Matilda. Paul says, I shouldn't be seeing, a married man, who has two children. Steve has been divorced, for five years, and Matilda has remarried, but that is still, what Paul, has recently said, to me, and probably says, to others... One could hope, that if I might be dying, that Paul, might seek to be pleasant, but he still, just harps, and harps, and harps...

Helene has been, paying me extremely well, and this has, indeed, made a difference, in my life. The work on Helene's stage-play is going well.

As I told Steve, and Helene, my 'vote' is still for, a Golden Age.

[140602 ~ I have mused, that the 'votes', of the 33 shammas, the Elect, are perhaps, very influential...]

I find, the path of 1984, to be distasteful, objectively, but preferable, to the path of Armageddon.

AND A GOOD NEW YEAR WILL IT BE
January 1, 1987

The two most pressing topics are my health, and my roommate situation.

This past Monday, I looked in the telephone directory, and consulted with Paul, and Georgia, about a doctor, for my head. On Sunday, the pain in my head had been overwhelming, at times. Monday, the area was extremely painful, to touch, but was no longer, sending out jolts, without stimulus.

The doctors wanted, $150 from me, just for me, to walk in, through their doors, a flat fee, regardless of the situation, just to look at me. Testing and treatment will cost more. I felt the $150, to be a bit steep, and certainly more than needed, for idle curiosity. I know, that costs and relativity, might change through time, so, let me say, that what a doctor, is asking of me, is equivalent, to half a week's wages, 20 hours work, in exchange, for maybe 20 minutes, of his or her time...

I suppose, one might say, I am being asked to pay, 60 times more, than I earn... I would decline, to view this, as 'affordable', or even 'reasonable', and might be most tempted, to use the word, 'exorbitant'... I can agree, that this situation, is 'how it is', 'now'...

I resolved, to spend the money, delaying payment, of some bills, if need be, if the pain intensified. However, the pain, has been diminishing, so I am going to wait... I think, I should, go to see a doctor, even if the pain, goes away, to seek to find out, what was wrong, in case some preventative treatment, might be beneficial...

On Tuesday, the top of my head, was extremely tender, to touch, but there was no pain, at all, unless I touched it. Wind going into my hair, even lightly, would cause me, significant pain. There was only, a constant slight itch, at that spot otherwise.

Yesterday, there was only, slight pain, when I touched, the top of my head, and no pain at all, at any other time.

Compounding my situation, have been two things: Lack of income, from my roommate, as the first of the month bills, arrived right on time, and an outbreak, of that infection, on

my fingers, those little bubbles, that sometimes become, more irritating blisters. That is, most definitely, stress-related. They give me sensation, every time, I type a keystroke, which is something I do repeatedly, to earn my living... I do have my receipt, from my good dermatologist, Arthur, so that he can, just use the same medication, without having to guess, what the problem might be.

I saw my roommate last, nearly two weeks ago. At that time, Barry told me, that he would return, on December 24th, rent being due, on the 25th, plus the phone bill, he has accumulated. I am keeping his bird, fed and alive. All of Barry's belongings, and car, are here, but he has certainly, failed to deal with me, as either a landlord, or a friend. I know, that if something bad had happened, to Barry, that I would have been contacted...

I waited, until the end of this week, to start running, a new, 'roommate wanted' advertisement, in the local newspaper. I also got, new front door locks, and keys, which Steve showed me, how to install, so I can do this myself, in the future.

I have seen, four prospective roommates, today. The first balked, when I told him, that I am bisexual, and have a steady male lover, and am not seeking sex, with anyone else. He said, living around me, would make him uncomfortable. I figure, it is better, to tell people, my 'story', during the interview phase, rather than, to have a 'misunderstanding', later.

Nathaniel said, my sexuality, wouldn't bother him, as long as I left him alone. I assured Nathaniel, that I am not seeking sex, with anyone, other than my own, steady lover. Nathaniel gave to me, some money, to hold the room for him. I asked Nathaniel, for first and last week's rent, plus a security deposit, of one week. Nathaniel really wanted the room, so I agreed, that we could give, living together a try.

Nathaniel is a Baptist, a conservative Christian, in his view. I don't mind. At least someone like that, is seeking to live, in ways that are karmically positive, overall...

I think people, who intend to have, a platonic relationship, should be able to live, with one another, regardless of the sexuality, of the individuals, though sometimes, two heterosexual males, might find some

problems, competing for women... Sometimes, it actually might seem, that a gay male, and a straight male, can live harmoniously together, precisely because, each is disinterested, in the other's gender preference, so there is a lack, of any 'rivalry'...

I do understand, that some homosexuals, seem inclined, to proposition, any male, and thus some homosexuals, are unable, to harmoniously live, with a heterosexual male... That type of homosexual, often has a compulsive desire, to have sex, with every male, but after having had sex one time, with a particular male, often never wants sex, with that particular male again. This can be sad, for those people...

I have come to suspect, that a basis, of heterosexual 'chauvinism', might be, that men, who find men, to be unattractive, might look down upon women, who seem physically interested, in men...

And, as events unfolded, after I accepted money, for the room, from Nathaniel, then Barry called me, on the phone. Barry tried to tell me, that I am difficult to reach. I didn't have, the telephone answer machine, when Barry left, but I have had it, since the 25th, so I have been, 'easy to reach', since then... Anyone can leave a message, for me, at any time. I was thus aware, that Barry had not tried, even once, to reach me, for he was ignorant, that I have, a telephone answer machine...

When I told Barry, that I had accepted, money for the room, from Nathaniel, Barry then said, he had left a rent check, for me, in his room... Barry now owes me, two weeks' rent... Barry asked me, to tell Nathaniel, to find some other place, as he, Barry, had indeed left a payment for me. I told Barry, that I would not touch, his check. Barry again, urged me, to accept his check, and this time mentioned, that I would have to sign his name to it, and then deposit it. I am quite reluctant, to do something like that, as, if Barry then decided, to say that it was forged, I would be, quite vulnerable, legally, to a criminal charge... I declined, to do that.

I told Barry, that I am a man of my word, and had accepted money, from Nathaniel, so would give the room, to Nathaniel. I said, that I would keep, everything of Barry's, safe for him, and told him, I had been, feeding and watering

his bird, and cleaning its cage for him, so the bird is fine. Barry had refrained, from even inquiring, about his bird... I told Barry, that he could sleep, in my living-room, until he got space of his own, somewhere else.

I got in touch, with Chuck, and arranged for him, to rent, to either Barry or Nathaniel. Chuck said, he would prefer, to live with gay Barry, rather than with Baptist Nathaniel... After his recent robberies, Chuck now thinks, he wants a roommate, in the house, just to provide, extra security, and Chuck now says, he is willing, to find trade, in that security, and not require sex. I will give the choice, to Nathaniel, telling him the situation(s). Barry said, he didn't know, when he could return, and said, it would be, no more, than four more days...

Out of curiosity, after my conversation with Barry had ended, I did look, to see if Barry had left a check, for me. I got annoyed, when there wasn't one, where Barry had said, it would be. Barry was just trying to trick me, over the phone, into agreeing to let him stay... After that discovery, I became quite certain, that I would rather have Nathaniel, as a roommate... One can hope, that Barry's experience, with me, might influence him, to be on better behavior, with Chuck...

Steve said, that people should avoid, being too close, to one another, because they tend, to hurt each other...

I told Steve, that people, who care for one another, usually seek, to avoid hurting, each other, and that, if one does hurt another, then perhaps, the caring, has already decreased... I said, that people are often hurt, by strangers, or by acquaintances with whom they lack closeness.

I wondered if Steve was going to soon declare, a desire for more distance between us, but he has not done that, at least not yet... I understand, that relationships, can have good points, and bad points, and one should seek, to only keep relationships, where the good points, outweigh the bad points...

It would seem, ridiculous to me, for one flaw, one bad incident, to outweigh, all the past good, and the potential future good... I have, somewhat, frowned upon the idea, that a woman, can justify divorce, just because a man, might have one sexual adventure, outside the marriage, when that

marriage, should have many other reasons, to seek to maintain it. If one sexual fling outweighs the value, of that marriage, to that woman, then it seems to me, unlikely, that woman gave much value, to that union.

In diplomatic relations, between nations, I have said, that any incident, can be used, either as, a cause of conflict, or, a reason to negotiate, and that the choice, can reflect, the real existing intent.

Perhaps Steve, was thinking about, his relationship with Patrick. Steve said, that Patrick, has now said, that he wishes to move, and that he has found, an apartment. Steve asked Patrick, to remain, saying that Steve, is unable to afford, the costs of that place, alone... Steve says, he is really compromising with himself, just to have Patrick there, so he feels, it might be the least, that Patrick could do, to remain, at least until March, as agreed.

My mother gave to me, a palm-sized, television set, as a Christmas present. My mother was in town, overnight. My mother enjoyed Christmas, in Mexico City, with her 'beau', who happens to be, a travel agent. My mother, didn't have time, to see me, but gave, this gift for me, to her friend Peggy.

Asmodeus asked me, for a dry day, when rain was expected, because he, and his brother, plan to patch, part of the roof, of Asmodeus' house. It seemed to me, that they could have waited, for a day, that was forecast, to be sunny. However, I agreed, and it was done. The day, that was forecast, to be rainy, remained dry, and Asmodeus' brother, did the roof patching. Asmodeus refrained, from thanking me for this, or even acknowledging, that he had indeed gotten, the weather he requested, for the day he requested, despite official forecasts otherwise...

I have re-typed, the first nine pages, of this book. I shall conclude this book, when I catch up to myself, with the re-write. I can laugh at myself, that this book, meant to be an 'epilogue', has, even now, become longer than normal, for my books.

I thank God, for giving to me, the time to finish this book.

One of the questions, I have asked, is, can a person, who is a good person, be content and comfortable, in life, and said, if the answer, to that question, is yes, then we

might be living, in a truly ‘civilized’, civilization. I think I have shown, that a person, who is a good person, one who seeks to live, in karmically positive ways overall, can be, content and comfortable, in life. I think this is, a good reflection, upon our civilization.

I also think, that I have remained, a good person, despite many challenges, in life, and hope, that this can be, inspirational, or instructive, helpful in some ways, to other people, who are seeking to remain, good people...

I pledge to my readers, to seek to remain, a good person...

= 32 =

A PROSPECT OF VIOLENT DEATH PAYS A VISIT
January 4, 1987

Chuck cooked, a fine roast dinner, for Steve and me. Chuck said, he would take Barry, as a roommate, and I will keep Nathaniel, in part, because Chuck, simply seems to wish, to avoid living, with anyone, who describes self, as a heterosexual Baptist. And, of course, Steve wishes, for Nathaniel, 'to know nothing', about 'us'...

Red Jeff visited, before Nathaniel moved in, when Barry remained absent, at a time when Steve and I, were at my place. Red Jeff suggested, that we all fool around together. I said, that would be, up to Steve, and Steve said, he thought it would be fun, and we did fool around, together 'safely'. Four hands, can be better than two, or six hands, better than four... This was a first, for Steve and I...

Between three, and four, in the morning, last night, Barry returned, unannounced, and somewhat hysterically, or angrily alarmed, when his key, failed to open, my front door. I had told Barry, on the phone, that I had changed the locks, but he apparently disbelieved me... I wondered, if that might be a reflection, of a liar's curse, where a person who lies, tends to disbelieve others...

When Barry entered, and saw the things of his, that I had packed, into boxes, he panicked, perhaps because, of what seemed to be, a very bad situation, for him. I seemed, unable to reach, any rational part, of his mind...

Barry became 'upset', for about 40 minutes, and issued a stream, or torrent, of about, a hundred thousand, angry nonstop, loud words. Just waiting for Barry, to allow me to speak, strained my patience...

Barry repeatedly voiced his opinion, that I am sick, criminally slick, a real low nasty person, uncaring and insensitive, and said, that I had planned to do this, to him, from the moment he first moved in.

I assured Barry, of a number of things... I assured Barry, that I had been the one, who packed his things, and cleaned his room, and that I had done so, before Nathaniel, entered his room. Therefore, I could say, that everything, that was Barry's, was safe, packed, easy to move, and that Nathaniel, had never touched, anything of Barry's. I

assured Barry, that all of his things, had been packed in boxes, and had remained, safely in my room, and that I had lacked any desire, to retain any of his things.

I assured Barry, that I had found him, another place to stay, at a lower rent, with a good decent, stable, gay human being, at Chuck's. I also assured Barry, that beyond a point, that I would tire, of his tone of voice, and his angry words, and that I would call police, to have them, put him out. If Barry could maintain, a civil demeanor, then I would allow him, to stay, in my living-room.

I was a little intimidated, by Barry's sheer unreasoning fury, and by my knowledge, of my handicapped arm-shoulder. I had never seen Barry act, in anything but a rational manner before, so I was a little surprised. In retrospect, I can wonder, why on Earth, Barry would think, that yelling and screaming, and being nasty, would encourage me, in any way, to let him stay with me... I even warned Barry, that his behavior, if continued, would get me, to advise Chuck, against letting Barry, stay with him.

I told Barry, that he had brought this situation, upon himself, that he had left me, short of income when bills were due, that I had cared for his bird, and his possessions, and that his greatest failing, was in not doing things, he himself would say, that he would do, not to mention, owing me money, and not keeping in touch. Some people, might have sold the damn bird, to pay some of that debt...

Barry said, that I had stolen, his payroll check. I told Barry, that I thought he knew, there was no check, and if there was, it would be, where he had left it, and that, if he had lost it, or if it had been stolen, then he could get it replaced. And then, I asked Barry, if he still actually had, his job...

It is my belief, that a physical fight can have two losers. One person goes to a hospital, and the other to jail. I believe, in seeking, non-violent solutions, to problems. I also believe, in self-defense, and I believe, that if one is in a physical fight, it can be better to win, than to lose... I do not believe, that I can win, with my bare hands...

At one crescendo, of Barry's rage, I thought Barry, was beginning to lose, his self-control, and might physically assault me. Perhaps Barry, was trying to intimidate me,

though I lack any idea, of what reward, he thought, such intimidation, might provide. I generally, would prefer distance, from anyone, who would wish, to physically intimidate me. Barry seemed to me, to be trying, to be deceitful, and then intimidating, and neither worked, as far as getting me, to change, any of my positions.

Both Nathaniel, and Barry's friend, Joe, helped to cool off, the situation. The noise awakened Nathaniel, who joined us, and I myself called Joe inside. Barry had directed Joe, to stay outside. Joe was at the door, with Barry, when I first opened it.

Barry then said, that Nathaniel had stolen his payroll check. Barry made his accusations, without ever checking to see, if his payroll check might be, where he had left it, assuming it might beconcealed, inside one of his possessions. I thought that was suspicious... I mean, if one had actually left funds somewhere, one might be inclined, to actually look for them... No payroll check, had been left in the open, anywhere, to my knowledge... Perhaps some of this 'drama', was meant to express 'surprise', at lack of such a check, if funds from that check, had been 'pledged', to go to Joe...

Barry did eventually cool off. I did tell Barry, that he could stay, in my living-room, but he said, he'd just take, some of his things, with him now, and said, he would live with Joe. Barry said, he would return, to get the rest of his things.

Unfortunately, the incident with Barry, did aggravate, the sores on my fingers. It does seem, that if I can mentally handle stress, then my body, is unable to do so... It did seem, somewhat humorous to me, that first, Barry accused me, of stealing his pay-check, and then, wanted to keep, his things safely with me. It might even be humorous, for Barry to seem to wish to continue, to live with me, given the nasty description, which he placed upon me... One might wonder, why anyone, might wish to live, with someone who might actually be, the way Barry described...

Humorous also, is that last week, I was worried, about dying, due to a head problem, being hurt, from an internal source, and this week, I got to worry, about my head, being knocked in, being hurt, from an external source... At least

life, provides me, with 'variety'...

Truthfully, I did not know, under what mood, Barry would return, to claim his remaining things. Steve volunteered to stay around me, until Barry got his things out. Steve is a very impressive, muscular gentleman, a deterrent, to some 'problems'... Barry did later, get most of his things out, while Steve was here, but he left more...

Steve made, an absurd statement, that he is not worthy of me. I pointed out to Steve, that he has been, a healthy influence upon me, in many real-world ways, and that I look up to him. I told Steve, that I love him, and that's how it is. I believe, Steve has done, more for me, than I have for him.

Steve asked me, this week, if I would rent from him, another 20 miles, west of town, if he were to buy, a property there. I told Steve, that I could not, necessarily justify, moving to an isolated area, with no convenient job market, that would enable me, to pay rent, but I could justify, such a move, if I were investing, in an ownership partnership. I think that, is a fair position. I also said, that I could move, to live with him, with a mutually understood union, even if I were, to then rent from him, rather than to have, a share of ownership.

Steve and I have not fooled around, since Nathaniel moved in. Steve has been introduced, to Nathaniel, as one of my straight friends...

I gave a copy, of *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, to Helene, and three copies, to Red Jeff. Red Jeff says, that he has remained away from cocaine rock, and he is now planning, to leave the area. Red Jeff hopes, to get a new, clean start, away from this area, away from people, he says, that are hostile to him.

I close, by wishing to you, a fun and safe frolic, that you enjoy, or at least something harmless, that helps you to smile...

MANY EMERGENCIES
January 10, 1987

It has been, an exhausting week, with many emergencies. The health class seems to be interesting. Algebra got off, to a false start, as our teacher, dropped the class.

My schedule is now that I arise, around 7:00am, and get to class, by 9:00am, then to work, until 7:00pm, after class. School is about five miles south, of where I live, and work is about 15 miles north. So far so good... However, I have been exhausted, during the first four days, of the week.

Now, about the emergencies...

The first emergency was Steve's. It would seem, that Matilda, ran up parking tickets, in Steve's car, which she got, in the divorce settlement. Humorously, or insultingly, it would seem, that these tickets were gained, while Matilda was visiting her lawyer's office, to confer about divorcing Steve. Matilda had not put the title, to the vehicle, into her name, so Steve, as registered owner, is responsible, for paying them. Notices, to pay these tickets, were sent to Matilda's residence, and she just threw them away, without mentioning them, to Steve.

So, when Steve was driving, this week, and got stopped for speeding, the police computer found, all of these unpaid parking tickets, and Steve found himself arrested, and his vehicle was impounded. Apparently, Steve must pay the parking tickets, before he can pay the fee, for towing his vehicle, and the increasing storage impound fee...

One is normally not jailed, for a 'traffic offense', but one can be jailed, for failure to pay traffic fines, even though constitutionally, one is supposed to never be jailed, for any kind of financial debt... I suppose, my experience, with *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, has shown to me, that our government, often ignores, our constitution...

I lent to Steve, my car, and some available cash. Steve had many friends, come to his aid. Steve's emergency, was relatively easy, to deal with. Steve will repay me, shortly. Steve paid, all the required fees, and once again, has his vehicle... I delayed my car payment, to lend money, to Steve, but I will make, my car payment, even without

repayment, by Steve, with my next paycheck.

The second emergency was Chuck's... One of the thieves, who Chuck believes, burglarized his home, came back, to claim his possessions, and was belligerent. I happened to call Chuck, right when this was going on. Chuck was safely locked, within his home. I urged Chuck, to call the police, and have them referee. Apparently, the guy departed, when he heard Chuck, answer the telephone, when I called.

Chuck said, he didn't want, to call the police. Chuck has reported the losses, and has insurance... Chuck thinks this incident, would just make him look worse, in the eyes of the law, for he had already been associated, with many 'characters', in the eyes of the law. Chuck thinks, that the police think, that Chuck is responsible, for bringing these situations, upon himself, by associating with these people, in the first place... Chuck does meet many, who are in desperate situations, by picking up hitch-hikers, or gentleman, who seem to be, 'loitering'...

Chuck said, that if by chance, the police did happen, to actually respond quickly, and did happen, to actually catch the guy, then the guy, could become even angrier, instead of becoming, more cautious... Fortunately, things ended happily, for Chuck. The guy did return, and while he was at the front of the house, Chuck put his things, outside the back door, and the guy retrieved his things, and departed, and probably will never return. Chuck said, he was glad, that he at least did manage, to 'have some fun', with that guy...

Barry has moved into Chuck's. Apparently, living with Joe, didn't work out for Barry... Chuck said, that Barry has been good-natured, and has paid Chuck, more than Chuck was asking. Chuck's place has a yard, and a dog, and Barry likes both.

The third emergency, sadly, is my own. Molly had returned, from vacation, as did Leata-Mae, and then Sheeta and Flip, took time off. I filled in, with the work required, for each absent worker... Upon her return, Sheeta said, that I work slowly, and that, unless my pace quickens, she will have to fire me.

I am concerned, because my actual work pace, now

matches Molly's, and so I find Sheeta's words, to be factually untrue... I did ask Sheeta, what I could do, to become quicker, and she said, that was for me, to figure out. I am concerned, that I might have been hired, simply to give, the 'regular workers', time off around the holidays...

Molly told me, not to worry, that Sheeta, was just in a bad mood. Molly said, that I am doing fine.

Sheeta has previously lacked, any complaint with me, about anything... It has been my experience, that when someone complains, about something that isn't wrong, there can be little way, to fix it, and that they might be, simply voicing a pretext, to do something, that they intend to do, anyway. I have had, a turbulent work experience, with many bosses, and I lack, any sense of 'trust', in employers...

I have wondered, if perhaps, Sheeta's husband, Flip, objects to Sheeta, having a male worker. Other than Sheeta's young son, and her son's 'friend', there are no other males, other than me, in the business. I know I am, a much better worker, than Leata-Mae, who is truly, objectively, 'slow'... Leata-Mae, has yet to even attempt, to learn to use, the computer application form program, which has existed, long before I arrived, and I have learned, to operate that, on my own, and now do so, without problem...

I have learned, all the computer systems, and am the one, who does operate, the new system. I have learned, all the application programs, for all the computer systems, including the office ones. At this point, I am the only one, who seems able to do, all the various things, that might need, to be done...

I did overhear Sheeta, telling someone, on the telephone, that she had invested money, to train me, and what did they want her to do... I had dismissed this conversation, at that time, feeling secure, knowing that I was indeed, doing good work, until this day, when Sheeta, made her 'complaint' to me...

I did, in my consternation, and nervousness, tell Leata-Mae, that if Sheeta fired me, without true cause, then I would go, to the federal Labor Department, and file formal complaints, against her. It can be sad, when an employer, can feel 'threatened', by law...

Steve agreed, with Molly, and said that Sheeta was

probably, just in a bad mood. Steve said, that Sheeta is a smart business-woman, so would never fire me, because I have shown, my value to her. Steve pointed out, that I have learned, three computer systems, that were totally new to me, in a short time, and that my work pace, and quality, is good. Steve said Sheeta must appreciate that.

I told Steve, that maybe, I am just nervous, because I really have, no money in the bank, and have many bills, and am actually, a little behind... Such a difference, a day can make, eh...

So, after all this reassurance, I could at least be pleased, that a cream, prescribed by my dermatologist, was effective, and my little sores, did seem to be, going away. Perhaps Sheeta, is playing with me, as she did also say, that if I got, two more little sores, on my fingers, that she would fire me... Fortunately, my sores, continued to go away, and I did not get, any new ones... I did make Sheeta, aware of this...

Steve has not fooled around with me, since Nathaniel moved in. My relationship with Steve, does not center upon sex. Amusingly, I have had, perhaps less sex, than my norm, since I have been with Steve, but I have enjoyed it more.

Steve said, the property that he was curious about, has been sold, and is thus, no longer available...

Things have been going well, between Helene and I, smoothly, productively... Helene has me type, as she speaks. I also, take home her tapes, and type up that material. I control, the play-back speed of audio material, with a foot pedal, and that is a joy... Helene lets me bring, her machine to my home, and I bring it back, to her home, when I go there.

Helene says, that she now accepts, my position, that people, do have free will, even though, there can be limits, upon the choices, that one can make...

I told Helene, to perhaps seek, to work in, a lament for humanity, into her stage-play... Helene does listen, to my suggestions, and incorporates, some of them... I enjoy my time, with Helene.

Some People...

Some people, are animals... Some people, are robots...

Some people, don't remember. Some people, don't forget...

Some people, never listen. Some people, never understand...

Some people, always complain. Some people, always smile...

Some people, demand perfection. Some people, never care...

Some people, never compromise. Some people, never sweat...

Some people, never blink. Some people, never open their eyes...

Some people, are lazy. Some people, work themselves to death...

Some people, love to lie. Some people, cloth themselves in truth...

Some people, have no feelings. Some people, feel way too much...

Some people, live with total certainty. Some people, find everything a mystery.

Some people, never stop talking. Some people, never communicate...

Some people, live by the letter of the law. Some people, distort everything they hear...

I told Helene, that all of these things can be human frailties, and perhaps each person, has at least one of them.

My half-sister, is having, some distressing problems. My half-sister's husband, lost his job, and she had a miscarriage. Life can have, its share of problems, but it does have, good moments...

I have now edited, the first 15 pages, of this book.

IN THE FACE OF ADVERSITY,
SEEK FOCUS ON POSITIVE POINTS
January 12, 1987

Cold seems to be, the order of the day. Both the northern US, and Europe, including Soviet areas, are now experiencing, terrific cold. And I, in the artificial environment, of my nice modern apartment, am warm... I am thankful for this. This will be, the first winter, in which I have been warm, and comfortable, in ten years...

When I went to work today, Sheeta greeted me, at the door, saying, that she could not afford, to lose more money, by continuing to train me, so she had decided, to let me go, right then and there. Sheeta said, that I was just, 'too slow'... Employers, are required by law, to give to a worker, his or her pay-check, when the employer, lets a worker go, and perhaps, that is the only reason, that Sheeta did not fire me, on Friday, but waited until today...

To my credit, I handled the terrible situation, perhaps the best I ever have... I did not tremble. My vision did not blur. I was able, to reasonably discuss things, with Sheeta, even if unable, to change the outcome.

I told Sheeta, that if my speed, as a typesetter, was a concern to her, then she should have come to me, with the complaint, before it was of critical importance, to her, and she should have taken the time, to find out, what was slowing me down, and given to me, some guidance, on how to perform more quickly. Sheeta had never once complained, about my 'speed', and, in fact, had never complained, about anything concerning me. I did point out, to Sheeta, that I am producing more work, with quality, at a faster pace, than Leata-Mae, and am equal to Molly. One might say, that my being 'too slow', is truly, not one of my flaws...

Sheeta said, she was losing money, by spending her time, to train me. Sheeta said, she had thought she was hiring, an 'experienced type-setter', that she would not need, to train...

I pointed out to Sheeta, that, first of all, she herself, had a brand-new machine, and so everyone, faced a training period, on that machine, and that I had learned that

machine, while Leata-Mae, had yet to even attempt, to operate it. I pointed out, to Sheeta, that I have learned, three computer systems, the work-place procedures, and the various application programs, for all aspects of her work, so that I could do the type of work of any of the three of them, while each of them was unable to do the type of work of all the others.

I said, that to my knowledge, Sheeta had spent zero time, training me, on anything, and that it had been the new machine's trainerand Molly, who had spent some time, helping me. I pointed out to Sheeta that I worked without help, without 'training', while she, Molly, and Leata-Mae, enjoyed holiday breaks, so I had indeed demonstrated, that I could work alone, and properly.

I told Sheeta, that it didn't seem, to make business sense, for her to be content with me, while I was learning, and for her to invest her money, into that 'training period', and now, that I am able to work unassisted, that she is letting me go. I said that essentially, Sheeta had spent her money, to make me, more able to work, for her competitors.

Sheeta said, that perhaps, I was not accustomed, to only doing, typesetting work. I told Sheeta, that I did not understand, what she was trying to say. I said, that I am able, to do all facets, of print-shop work, and thus able, to do only one aspect.

Sheeta said, that she was wasting her time, talking to me, and had other things to do. Sheeta said, that she and her husband, Flip, had agreed to fire me, and that was that. I thanked Sheeta, for her time, wished her luck, with her business, and departed.

I considered possible bias against me. I wondered, if Sheeta was facing, some sort of affirmative action situation, where she had, basically all women, working for her, and one worker, Leata-Mae, who was black. Perhaps Sheeta, had to decide, to either have one black, or one male, and decided to have, one black. It is possible, that Sheeta is biased, against men.

Although I lack, any gay mannerisms, I am, a 32-year-old, attractive male, who has remained single, so perhaps, there was, some anti-gay bias, facing me.

And, perhaps, there was some sort, of anti-elite bias,

due to my work references, that indicate, I have worked, in 'elite circles'. I had dinner the other night, with my mother, and Booth. Booth is now 70, and he lives in a Catholic nursing home. Booth has never had wealth, but has worked, for wealthy people. Booth said, that because of his association, with Palm Beach, even as, 'just a worker', he has faced, bias and discrimination, which ultimately, forced him, or influenced him, to remain in wealthy circles. Booth said, that the mere association with wealth, caused discrimination against him, even though, he did not have wealth...

My mother suggested, that perhaps, I am simply, 'too intelligent', and said that people, who lack intelligence, are often fearful, or resentful, of anyone, they view as 'intelligent', while at the same time, perhaps being too stupid, to value intelligence in others, as useful to their business...

My mother said, that the job, with Sheeta, was at, 'the bottom of the world', and I need to find something, 'higher up in life'... My mother said, that life success stories are full of incidents, of repeated firings, and rejections, usually because, the person was an innovator, one who displayed intelligence.

My mother said, that most people, are just a bunch of animals, and that if I want, better in life, then I need to leave them behind. My mother said, she had long warned me, that I am 'superior', and that those who are 'inferior', are those I should avoid, any association with, lest my associating with 'inferior people', get some, who are intelligent, to then assume, that I must lack intelligence, and might be inferior also...

[140520 ~ In retrospect, I have seen Sheeta, do the same thing, in later years... I speculate, that Sheeta advertises, for help, prior to the Christmas and New Year's holidays, and then apparently, fires anyone she hired, after the holidays. In my opinion, Sheeta hires people temporarily, to cover the regular holidays, of her established regular workers, and of herself. That could be okay, if known at start, but I believe, Sheeta advertises and hires people, with the pretext, of offering, stable permanent full-time employment, a false ploy, as her intention, from the

start, is to get rid of, whoever she hires.]

[140520 ~ If Sheeta was hiring someone, who was unemployed, then her temporary job, might be, an improvement in life, for that person. However, when Sheeta beckons someone, like me, from an existing job, Sheeta does real harm, as I found myself, without a job, where I did at least previously have, a stable secure job. Perhaps Sheeta's behavior, might influence someone, to commit, 'justifiable homicide', if there actually could be, such a thing. What Sheeta does should be illegal.]

[140520 ~ To round out the picture, an employer, is apparently responsible, in Florida, for a share, of unemployment compensation benefits, if that worker, has been at that work-place, for more than six weeks. Sheeta seems, to have let me go, as I reached the point, where she would become responsible, for a share, of my unemployment compensation payments...]

[140520 ~ A painful lesson, for me in life, is to avoid, applying for jobs, in December, or perhaps, even before Thanksgiving... I am sad today, for what I faced then, as I would be, for anyone so victimized, and that was victimization, with intent from the start, to be harmful to me, or to anyone, in that situation. Sheeta knew, even as she beckoned me, from my existing job, that she would cast me away, after the holidays...]

[140520 ~ I imagine, that perhaps, Sheeta, at The Type Gallery, in Palm Beach Gardens, perhaps harmed, many decent, good, competent people, throughout the years. Perhaps Sheeta, eventually changed her ways, but there might be, others like her...]

I went right away, and applied, for government unemployment benefits.

I visited Paul afterwards, and found a letter, sent to me, at Paul's, granting to me, a pre-approved, line of credit, for $2,000. Perhaps this came to me, because of Paul's 'nice address'... I had never solicited, or sought, credit... Nonetheless, at a time, that I lacked income, this line of credit, was certainly a saving grace, like being tossed, a life-preserver, while floating adrift, in a stormy sea, a way to survive. The money is offered, at an interest rate, of 19.8-percent, so I cannot afford, to use it foolishly.

Paul suggested, that I move back in, with him. I said, I would seek to find a job, and seek to remain, in my own space, on my own two feet...

Steve said, I could stay on his sofa, if I lose my own apartment... Steve said, that Abe had extended, a 'line of credit', from him to me, so that I could pay, rent and bills, if need be. Abe also offered to me, a room in his home, way west, in the 'country', rent free, if need be.

The fact that I have, some friends, who are helpful, in real-world ways, helped to take the sting, and hurt, out of this situation. I faced anger, self-doubt, self-criticism, and some anguish, at once again, being adrift in life... Once again, being honest, competent, hard-working, a good person, being able to work alone, or as a team-player, had failed to help me in life, at a job...

My mood is recovering. My mood is good. I am optimistic. I think I can make it, through this okay.

= 32 =

AND NOW, LOVE PROBLEMS TOO...
January 18, 1987

One could say, that the past few weeks, have not been kind...

First, I had that sharp pain, in the back top, of my head, over Christmas 1986, which made me worry, about having a brain tumor, followed by anxiety, that I was going to have, my head knocked off, by an enraged irrational Barry, and then, stress sores broke out, on my fingers, followed by a sudden loss, of employment and income, while having very little money, in the bank, and now, Steve is saying, that our relationship, has become too serious, so must be reduced, to bring it back, within bounds, acceptable to him...

One could say, that the past few weeks, have not been kind...

Steve suddenly stopped, wanting to fool around, with me. Steve emphasized, that he was not, rejecting me, but, if I kept suggesting, that we fool around, at least safely, or, as he put it, 'making things difficult for him', then he would have to stop, visiting me.

This change in Steve, caught me by surprise, but we have been through this before. I also did understand, that there was, a new reason for it. I remind myself, that Steve, has always said, that he wants us, to just be friends. I told Steve, that I was scared, that he didn't want to fool around, anymore with me, in any way. I could think, of no acceptable reason, for this new position.

Steve and I, continue to enjoy, a good-night hug and kiss, as we parted each evening. Steve said, that I was closer to him, than his wife had ever been, and that he loved me, very much, but that, he just didn't want me to think, that we had, any sort of 'relationship'... Steve utterly confused me...

Then Steve and I, had a wonderful romp together, and things seemed, back to 'normal'. I put my fears, of separation from Steve, aside, as groundless. I wondered if my recent unemployment, had also affected Steve's logic.

During the week, I applied for a job type-setting, and it turned out, to be on a machine, far advanced, of the one I used, at Sheeta's. I used Paul, as one of my personal

references, on the job application. Then, I made a special trip, to Paul's, to lend to him, an audio-tape cassette recorder, and player, as he had requested, and he surprised me, by then saying, he didn't wish to borrow it anymore, because he wished, nothing more to do with me, because I had decided, to remain at my home, and to remain, associated with Steve... Paul said, that the next time, he hears anything from me, it has to be, the words that I no longer have, anything to do with Steve.

I mused, that the least, Paul could have done, was to save me, the trip north, to his place, to lend to him, my cassette recorder...

I also mused, that I might not get, that job, if those people, happened to speak, with Paul, at this time... Steve said, that it is because Paul does have instant mood changes, and spits venom, that it is probably not wise, for anyone, to be close to Paul.

Thursday and Friday, Steve and I studied together. I cooked a steak dinner, for Steve, on Friday night. Steve urged me, to consider, asking Nathaniel to move...

Steve said, that because Nathaniel is a Baptist, he could be intolerant, or hateful, toward gays, and if Nathaniel came to suspect, that Steve might be gay, that he might do something, harmful to Steve. I told Steve, that Nathaniel, might be likely to assume, that Steve is a straight friend of mine, just like Nathaniel, is a straight friend of mine.

I believe, Nathaniel has, a proper, live and let live attitude. Steve said, I could be wrong about that. I suggested, that perhaps, Nathaniel and Steve could become friends. Steve said, that was unlikely, to ever occur... I guess Steve might view that as too risky.

I said that Nathaniel, has given to me, no cause, to ask him to leave. Nathaniel has paid his rent, on time, and is clean, in the common areas, of our household. I said, that right now, Nathaniel is my only source of income.

Steve said, that I should act, to have Nathaniel leave, before Nathaniel, actually does something, harmful, to both of us. Steve reminded me, that Abe had said, he would loan money to me, if need be...

Sunday, Steve called me, and invited me, over to study with him. However, shortly after I arrived, Leslie called, and

invited Steve, to join her, for dinner. Steve agreed. I was a little downcast to be pushed aside, so quickly and easily... I told Steve, that it seemed, easy for him to forget, that I exist.

Steve got angry at me, and said, that was just what he had been talking about, how I take things between us, 'too seriously'... Steve said, I was treating him, "like a faggot", and that was insulting to him...

I told Steve, that he wasn't, 'a faggot', that he was, 'my faggot'...

So, that ended, with Steve angered at me, and going out with a woman, and me coming home, a bit glum...

I decided, to advertise for sale, copies, of *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, in an area of California, where movies are made. I thought to advertise, far away, to keep the Christos stuff, away from my home area. Asmodeus gave to me, a quote to use, in the advertisement, for the book. Daniel and Asmodeus, thought such an advertisement, could be a good idea, as it could bring to me, some income. Steve thought, I was wasting money, at a time, when I should not be, wasting money...

Sheeta has not advertised, for a replacement worker, for me...

I mused with Nathaniel, that perhaps, Jesus lived, in a time of rubble, when past civilization, might only be, dimly remembered, and that now, we live, in a time of civilization, when many fear Armageddon, a return to rubble... If we can destroy, our own civilization, then perhaps, in the past, other civilizations, have been able, to destroy themselves...

I told Nathaniel, that I believe, that the at least attempted murder, of Jesus, influenced for humanity, to be treated like children, and that what we call, 'the Dark Ages', was a period, of 'moral guidance', by those called angels, who sought to get humanity, to 'become civilized', before risking the introduction, or reintroduction, of science, which could be used, to once again, destroy our civilization. What if angels or gods, were or are survivors, of past civilizations?

I said, that I didn't think, that the at least attempted murder, of Jesus, was a good thing, nor something, that Jesus wanted. I said, at most, his being murdered, due to what he was doing, was a risk that Jesus accepted. I said, that if Jesus, had been more welcomed, then aid and trade,

between humanity, and ‘others’, might have become open, but, with the at least attempted murder, of Jesus, that door was closed. I suggested, that with the many UFO sightings, that perhaps, now is a time, when that door, might be opened...

I told Nathaniel, that I hope humanity, does a better job of things, ‘this time’, having learned, from ‘last time’...

I believe, that some people do behave like animals, and perhaps, some strict system, of rewards and punishments, carrots and sticks, is appropriate for these.

I believe, that some people, do behave like robots, and perhaps, they simply need, to be given, ‘the letter of the law’, to memorize, rather than to understand. However, I believe, all people, can learn, if they choose, to seek to learn.

I believe, that people, should be guided, that training period, where people are given, the instruction manual, and can learn, why things are the ways they are, and from that, to maintain, or to make improvements...

Rather than seeing, all people, only as animals, or only as robots, or only as sentient beings, I understand, that each person, could have some of each within, and each individual, has the ability, to choose, which way to be.

I continue to disagree, with my mother’s belief, that some people are ‘inferior’, and others are ‘superior’. I believe, that people are ‘different’.

A LIGHT OF DARKNESS
January 22, 1987

It can be easy to be, 'just a friend', to someone you love, when they view you, as 'just a friend', when they have, no one else to love. It can be tough to be, 'just a friend', to someone you love, when they are becoming attracted, to someone else... As Daniel and Paul, could perhaps, 'fall in love' with me, while I regard them, as friends, and as they try, to remain friends with me, despite their feelings of love, for me, so too do I, try to be a good friend, to Steve, even though, that which I feel for him, is a much deeper, romantic love.

My getting upset, with Steve, for making a date, with Leslie, shows just how tough, it can be, to remain a friend, to someone you love, when he or she, is getting interested, in someone else...

Sunday night, I left a note, for Steve in his car. My note apologized, for my having gotten Steve angry, with me. I said, I hoped Steve, would call me, when he had cooled off.

Since Steve had voiced a complaint, that I am too demanding, on his time, I resolved, to let Steve initiate, our time together. I would make, no demands, on his time... Helene called, and asked me, to work for her, Monday evening, and I did so. Tuesday, I accepted an invitation, from Daniel, to go out for drinks, that evening.

I told Daniel, that I feared, I should turn my energies, toward finding, someone other than Steve, and that I might need, to drop Steve totally, in order to do so. I said, that all I seemed to want, was to be with Steve... I did meet, a nice law student, who was interested in me, and very friendly, beckoning, but I remained with Daniel. I did not wish to fool around, with anyone... I really didn't even wish, to talk with strangers, but that guy, had sent a drink to me, and then came over, and joined us, for a while...

Steve had called, and left messages for me, on both Monday and Tuesday nights, but, as I had been out, I had been unable, to return his call, when he was at home, and awake... Steve called me, during the day, on Wednesday, said that he was home, and asked me, to come over. Steve said, I should not be, too mad at him, as all he had done,

was to, ‘accept a free meal’... I said, that I would be right over.

I decided, that I wanted to maintain, a friendship with Steve, at least, and also told myself, that if Steve, was the person I want, as a partner, then I should not give up yet. I reminded myself, that Steve, has said, he doesn’t want, to have a ‘union’, with anyone, and that if he were to change his mind, then I am, at the top of his list... I figured, I should, ‘stay in the game’, though admittedly, for me, with my emotions, this is, ‘no game’...

Patrick was home, when I arrived at Steve’s. Patrick was in, a happy mood, and a bit drunk... It turns out, that Patrick had received, a check for over $5,000, from an insurance company, due to the bicycle accident, when a car hit him. Patrick went through, some tough times, because of the broken leg, but the insurance company, did pay to him, 80-percent of his salary, while he was not working, and his employer, held his job for him. Now, Patrick has more money, than he has ever had, at one time, during his entire life. Patrick took the day off, from work, to celebrate...

Patrick has asked a girl, to marry him, and she has agreed. The two of them, intend to get a place, of their own, after they marry, at the end of June.

I mused, that the only people, I have known, in my life, who ‘became successful’, who had lacked money, and now had money, were those, who had accidents, fires, and were paid by insurance companies, or whores who had met someone wealthy, and married that person... It seems, the workers, who fail to have accidents, often are the ones, who get nothing...

Steve is agreeable, to Patrick remaining, until the end of June, as Steve, is now unemployed. Steve said, the company he had been working for, had suddenly folded, closed its doors, and was being investigated, by the government, for violations of law.

[140520 ~ I did later learn, that Steve believed, he had been laid off, probably for something, unrelated to, his work performance, and that company had not ever closed.]

That Steve lost this job means that his disability payments will also cease, so he is, without any income, except what he gets, from Patrick, at this time. Steve said,

that he had only been earning, $6 an hour, so his unemployment compensation benefits, would be low, as unemployment pays, one half, of what one had been earning, up to a certain amount. Steve's disability pays to him, the difference, between what he earns, and $10 an hour, so that he gets a wage, of $10 an hour, when he is working. The disability only pays him, when he is earning income, from a job. So, now, without a job, Steve's disability payments also stop.

It is now Steve, who might need, loans from Abe, and, if Abe must lend, his 'extra funds', to Steve, then Abe, could be unable, to lend funds, to me.

Steve cooked dinner for me, a nice gesture, which meant the world to me. Steve was apologizing, in his own way... Although Steve tells me, at times, that he wishes for us, to be more distant, from one another, his actions, and expressions, his eyes, and smiles, often suggest otherwise. This is, what keeps me, hanging on.

I helped Steve study, for his homework, and did my own also. Steve has an upcoming test, so I questioned him, about the material, and told him, the correct answers, when need be. We didn't stop, until Steve seemed to know, the material for that test.

A regular study partner, can be helpful, like a gym partner, to help structure, and maintain, a regular routine... Sometimes, it can be an idea, to have two hours, to study, for every hour, of class time, or at least one hour, of study time. For me, taking notes, from both lectures, and books, helps me, to remember material...

I found a list, of high-tech firms, in the area, from a reference book, in the school library, and offered to make, a resume for Steve, to send to all the firms. Steve said, that perhaps he is hungrier than I, when job hunting. Steve said, that I must be doing something wrong, if I haven't found another job by now. Steve said, that he would have another job, by the end of the week.

Steve said, that one should lie, and say whatever is necessary, to get a job position. Claim whatever experience, seems relevant. Make a separate resume, for each job, that you apply for. Steve said, the goal is to get in the door, and then fight, to stay there. Steve said, that one

should be willing, to make co-workers look bad, to keep one's job. Steve said, it is a tough world, so one must be tough...

I tend to disagree, with Steve, aboutlying and back-stabbing. I hope to do a good job, be honest and competent, and hope that my own positive traits, can keep my job. I have had my share, of nasty work environments, and I would prefer, to not be in one.

Steve said, all work environments, are nasty. I said that cannot be true. I said, that businesses operate best, when they have, harmonious teams, and that a business, needs a good team, to compete, in our capitalist environment. Steve said, he wouldn't bet on that.

I told Steve, that he could take, the 'low road', but I would seek, to remain, on the 'high road'. I told Steve, that if one lied, about one's work experience, even if one might get through the door, one might then find, oneself out the door, fairly quickly. Steve said, maybe yes, maybe no.

Steve called me, after I went home, and asked, if I was alone, and I said yes. Steve said, he wanted to come over, 'to talk'... Steve came over, and told me, that for the past two weeks, he has felt, that he is, falling in love with me, out of control in love with me, so he believes, it would be, for the best, if we no longer, had intimate sex, because he does not want, to have a serious relationship, with anyone.

I told Steve, that I thought, we could have, intimate sex 'safely', but that, I could live without it, as I enjoyed more, other ways, to be physical.

Steve said, that I have managed to heal, many of the wounds, from his past, but that my getting angry, Sunday night, because of his making, a date with Leslie, reminded him, that closeness breeds hurts, and since he wants no hurts, especially in his relationship with me, that then we should have, no closeness...

I told Steve, to me that seemed like a formula, for how to be miserable, your whole life... I told Steve, that I would go along, with whatever understanding, he wanted to have... I told Steve, that I could go without, the intimate sex, as that was something I did, basically just to please him. I told Steve, that what I enjoyed most, was our 'full body' massages, with music and oil...

I told Steve, that perhaps more so, than his making a date with Leslie, was that he had made it, while with me, so that he ended, his time with me, in order to be, with someone else. I said, it would have been easier for me, to accept his making a date, with Leslie, for another time, rather than for the time, he was sharing with me.

I asked Steve, if this change, to cease having, any intimate sex with me, was because, he was fooling, or wanted to fool around, with Leslie. We have had an understanding, that we are monogamous, and thus can enjoy intimate sex, but also had an understanding, that we could fool around with others, but that would at least temporarily end, our intimate sex.

Steve said, he hadn't fooled around, with Leslie, or with anyone else, and had been, 'faithful' to me, but that he did wish, to have the option... I said, that we have always had, the option... Steve said, he really didn't intend, to fool around, with anyone else, but that the main thing, was for him to affirm, that we are, 'just friends', and, to do that, then we should end, having intimate sex. Steve said, that with his current situation, he just didn't feel comfortable, with intimate sex... I said I understood, and that was fine, with me.

The end result is that I told Steve, that I wished, to remain friends with him, with or without sex, and I would let him decide, which way it should be. I told Steve, that I wished to remain, part of his life, for better or for worse, in health, or in sickness... I told Steve, that I would prefer to seek to enjoy life with him, rather than without him.

Steve said, he hoped, that I would seek to enjoy life, without him, if need be. I assured Steve, that I wish to be with him, 'for the full ride'... For now, Steve says, he does not want, to have any sex, with anyone... Fine. I told Steve, that I understand his 'concerns', and that I enjoy his company, enjoy being with him, even without sex.

So, Steve and I parted, last night, with a hug and a kiss, and I felt, 'all was well'... I admit, I heard his words that he was, 'falling madly in love with me', 'out of control', more so, than I heard, anything else he said. But I do intend, to stick with my 'understandings', with him, that, for now, any and all sex is 'out', and that it probably won't include, intimate sex,

when and if it is resumed...

Steve called me, this morning, to tell me, that the check, he gave to me, for $50, as debt repayment, had actually been dated, January 31st, so it failed to clear, his bank account now, as he hadn't thought, I would deposit it, so soon. Steve had forgotten, to mention to me, that he had dated it, for January 31st, and I had failed to notice. I just deposited it... Steve was charged $15, for my depositing that check, as Steve's bank account, apparently lacked the funds, to cover that check... I told Steve, that I would give to him, that $15.

Humor in life, can be easy to find, as long as you are willing, to laugh at most anything...

Paul called me, and asked me, to help him, with an errand, that he could not do, by himself. I agreed and did so. Our bridge seems mended...

Paul asked me, why I can't hold a job... I told Paul, that perhaps, the only common factor, is that, maybe, I am being bad-mouthed, by hostile co-workers... I pointed out to Paul, that Mr. Frank had died, and that I had left John-S...

A good work performance, does seem, to have failed, to help me... I did try, to communicate problems, and to solve problems, with John-S, but he seemed focused, mostly on blaming me, for Trudy's mistakes, and there seemed to me, little I could do, other than, to seek to cope, with the situation.

I never ever really suspected, that John-S, had a sexual thing, with Trudy, but perhaps, he felt romantically inclined, toward her. There was a time, when John-S' wife, who apparently, had provided to him, the funds, to open and operate, this print-shop, did start coming in, to the shop, with their infant daughter, to seek to make sure, that John-S, would leave the shop, with her, rather than with Trudy, at the end of each work-day.

My example, and perhaps keeping this journal, helps me to maintain this example, is as a good person, one who seeks, to live in ways, that are karmically positive overall, and to be content, and comfortable, in our world.

If I am unable to survive, then pity this society, and beware of God's wrath, or of the conditions, that might then, naturally develop, perhaps akin, to the Klingon ways, on

Star Trek... That would be, akin to living, in hell on Earth, that it's a bad world, so one has to be worse. I find, that hell burns all who seek to live there, even those, who might seem willing, to seek to prosper, in hell...

I would prefer to find quality of life, in an after-life, rather than, in such a hell environment, here on Earth, or in such a physical reality... I think, a purpose of life, in such a hell environment, might indeed be, to seek to improve that situation. Other people, might be more tempted, to accept the situation, and live, in a state of war. To me, that would lack, quality of life, and, to me, there is no point to life, without some enjoyment, of the experience...

[140520 ~ I am actually concerned, even now, 2014, that my life experience, might influence some, to seek to live in ways, that are karmically negative. I think, perhaps a trap, in life, is to get one, to behave in ways, which send one, to an afterlife hell, or which, at least, create a dependency, upon 'after-life management groups'... I think that such an environment, would be, a miserable place, to live, in this realm, or any other. I hope, that the problems I face, might grow awareness, of these issues, and solutions to them.]

For now, I prefer to find, 'anything else', rather than, to seek to return, to my job, with John-S...

The state job finding service, told me, not to expect, to get unemployment compensation benefits, because I was not with Sheeta, long enough to qualify, and I left my previous job, voluntarily, which disqualifies me, from getting, unemployment compensation payments. One has to be laid off, to get, unemployment compensation benefits. However, I have not yet been, officially disqualified, from receiving these benefits, and I remain hopeful. I have paid, into this fund, way longer than necessary, to qualify, to receive benefits, from it.

I now tend to suspect, that Sheeta intended, to fire me, from the moment she hired me. Sheeta never made, any effort, to train me, nor did she ever establish, a rapport with me, as one might think normal, for someone whom one intends, to retain. For the most part, Sheeta ignored me, and I interacted, mostly with Molly.

I applied, for a job, with *Globe*. This time, I applied for a position, doing paste-up, which I have learned to do, while

with John-S, and which, technically, I also did, for Mr. Frank. I thought this position, would keep me, out of sight, of my former boss, John-V. However, John-V, was apparently alerted, to my being there, and he came to visit me, while I filled out, the job application form. John-V was friendly to me. I suspect, that John-V, might disfavor me, as he might think, I have a grudge, due to the way, he let me go, and both he and I, are aware, now, of his 'situation', with police, and with Bobbie...

[140520 ~ I later learned, that Bobbie, was also no longer employed, at this place... I had used Bobbie, as a reference, for this job position, and perhaps, it was because, she wasn't there, that John-V was then alerted, to my presence. Bobbie went on, to become a head, of a local Democratic Party office...]

Daniel says, the planets have been in retrograde, for the past month, and that is why, everyone is experiencing upheavals. I wonder if there is a major, economic downturn, in progress, which is being ignored by the official media. Daniel says, that the planets should get back in line, as of today, so things will get better soon. I hope Daniel is correct, at least about, things getting better soon.

= 32 =

WHAT YOU HAVE
YOU MUST CARE FOR
January 24, 1987

I feel that the bonds, between Steve and I, are like rubber bands, and I fear, these rubber bands, are being stretched, to their limit. If there is, no chance of union, between Steve and I, and if he now wishes, to refrain from sex, then truly we have become, 'just friends', in behavior. I think this 'reality', is false, as we both have, strong emotions... I believe, actual reality, tends to break, or cause friction, disharmony, with false reality...

I have wondered, if Steve and I, do refrain, from having sex, then will we seek, sex with others, and will we then lose, our 'friendship', due to a sense of hurt, or offense? I know, that if Steve, does get involved with others, that then, I might wish distance, from any pain, that might cause me to feel. I am concerned, that this change, this time, might be 'too much', for our relationship, to endure.

I understand that Steve, right now, is feeling, some tremendous pressures, on his world, and that he is uncertain, if I add to those pressures, or help him, to bear those pressures... I think that perhaps, Steve is giving to me, a chance to step away from him, when he is, 'down and out', and-or a chance, to find someone, who might be, helpful to me, when I am, 'down and out'... However, I think, it would be most wrong, to abandon someone, when that person, is down and out, rather than, when that person, is up in life...

However, I have resolved, to wait two more weeks, to see, if Steve vacillates, back toward me, once again. And, even if he does, how long will that last? I am becoming discouraged, with Steve... I most certainly, and clearly, understand, that I do face, some pain, in this relationship. However, I do feel joy, happy, content, when I am with Steve.

I have believed, that 'true love', a mutual romantic love, can triumph over adversity, and yet, perhaps, sometimes, it might fail, to do so...

Steve did tell me, that his bank, decided not to charge him, the $15 service fee, for insufficient funds, as his check,

was indeed dated, for the 31st. At least that means, that I do not have to repay, to Steve, that $15. Every penny counts. I have the funds, to cover my rent, and car payment, come the start of next month, but after that, I am basically, financially broke...

I did apply, for that line of pre-approved credit. I chuckled, at how I failed to receive, forwarded mail, as a norm in my past, and how that piece of mail, went to Paul's, rather than, being properly forwarded to me... Perhaps I am fortunate, that I happened to be there, when it arrived, to collect it...

Paul says, that my affair with Steve is an insult, to my family, because of Steve's financial level. Paul asked me, what am I trying to prove anyway.

I had not thought, in those terms. I simply thought myself fortunate, to feel romantic love, with someone who says, he feels romantic love, for me. My family has shown itself, to be worthless to me, in real-world ways, even when, things were 'good', between my family and me. If my choice, is between, a romantic love, which improves my quality of life, and a family, that is either worthless, or harmful, then I think, I would select, for the romantic love...

I told Paul, that perhaps, he need not be concerned, as Steve has firmly decided, to remain, 'just friends', and decided, to that end, we should refrain, from fooling around. Paul said, he was glad, that one of us, Steve or I, had come to our senses...

Now that Steve has decided, we are 'just friends', he seems to be spending, most all, of his free time, with me, coming over unannounced, to just say hello, and check up on me. I like to think, that this shows, that Steve cares... I have helped Steve, to study for his school-work, and shared with him, the classified job opportunities, from local newspapers, and shared food, smoke, and drink, and he does, now want me, to prepare a resume, for him.

On another hand, I had injured my bad hip, while exercising, causing me some pain, and Steve declined, to massage it for me, saying doing so, would just make him, want to have sex... It will heal on its own... I did tell Steve, that I thought, he could exhibit, the same self-control, that he demanded of me, and that I was sorry, that he was

choosing, to be unhelpful, to me.

Then Red Jeff called, when Steve was with me, saying that his step-father, had put him out. Red Jeff, asked for shelter, for the evening, because he had no place to stay, and our outdoor air temperature, had dropped to freezing. One might say, that 'cold', might seem to be, appropriate 'bounce'...

Because of his awful situation, I did agree, to let Red Jeff, stay with me, but I knew that Steve, might be displeased, by this development, given that Steve, says no sex with me, while Red Jeff, wants sex with me... I told Steve, and Red Jeff, that Red Jeff would stay with me, only as long, as the weather remained cold.

For his part though, Steve said, that I should fool around, with Red Jeff, so that I would get something, for sheltering him. Steve said, that I should be able, to do anything I want, with Red Jeff as fair trade, for shelter... Steve affirmed, that he did not wish to fool around, with me, Red Jeff, or with anyone...

Perhaps paradoxically, I told Steve, that I already, could do anything I might want, with Red Jeff, but that I refrain, from sex with Red Jeff, to avoid kindling his hopes, for union with me, to seek to minimize, his potential or actual, emotional pain.

I want Red Jeff, to get on his own two feet, so that he could help me, in life, as a partner, rather than thinking, that having sex with me, in any way, paid his way, with me. To me, sex is fun, and should be a thing, that is enjoyed, by all involved. To me, the 'fair trade', is mutual enjoyment of sex.

I told Steve, and Red Jeff, that I did not want, sex with Red Jeff, at this time, as I still wish to give, my relationship with Steve, priority, and I tend to believe, that if I start, to go down that path, with Red Jeff, that it would indeed, interfere, with my relationship, with Steve.

Steve said, he was sorry, that I was 'distressed', by his refusal, to massage my hip. Steve said, that he plans, to spend his life alone, though I have never seen Steve not lean some upon others. Steve said, that he does not want, to ever have, a partner, and that he never wants, to feel hurt again, in his life. Steve said, my emotional reaction, to his dinner date with Leslie, showed him conclusively, that it is

time, to cool our relationship, because I, am getting, too serious.

You know, if Red Jeff, showed any inclination, to gain and maintain, a real job, then I might actually consider, a union with him...

I have not told Steve, that I am going to wait, two more weeks, to see if will start, having sex again, with me, and if he doesn't, then I will seek others. I have not told Steve, because I wish for him, to act as he would, 'naturally', without that knowledge, to influence his behavior.

At least, if I had stayed with Paul, he would cover me, when I am down... I understand, that there could be, no Steve in my life, if I were to return to Paul's. I understand, that there probably could be, no anybody, in my life, if I return to Paul's...

I let Red Jeff, stay with me, without sex, and enjoyed his company, for the days that it was cold, and then, as he had failed, to seek to job hunt, was disinterested, in even looking, at classified advertisements, of employment, I did ask him, to leave, when the outdoor weather, got warmer.

Red Jeff would like for me, to 'understand', that, at around 23 years of age, he can gain some income, with sexual 'trades', and still enjoy sex, with me.

What I understand, is that Red Jeff, has seemed, to fail to gain, enough income, in this way, to even afford, a room some place, and that he risks, getting diseases, which he might then, share with me, and that these 'sexual adventures', lead him to partying, which he can enjoy, but which might also, based on his actual, past recent history, tempt him, to steal from people, to feed the craving, for more addictive party material, even if that party material, might be furnished, 'free of charge', to him, at times...

Red Jeff said, I should stop being, 'such an old woman'...

INJUSTICE
January 30, 1987

Steve said, that the life, of Christ Jesus, shows, that there is, no justice, in this world. Steve said, people who live like Jesus, will die like Jesus.

I told Steve, that sadly, my own life, might provide, the same lesson. However, I do not urge people, to do only good, to be only giving. I urge people, to seek to do more, that is karmically positive, in life, than that which is, karmically negative, and I understand, sadly, that sometimes, people might need to do, something, that is karmically negative, in order to maintain, or defend, their own worlds. I do not advise people, to be doormats...

I do advise people, to do what they can, to be helpful to others, to improve, both karma, and dharma. However, I also advise people, to avoid, walking too far, down a one-way street. Seek fair trade, with people in your life. If someone fails to appreciate, what you do, for that person, then stop doing it. There might always be, someone else, you could be, equally helpful to.

And, while I do urge people, to be helpful to others, I advise them, to seek to avoid, being harmful to self, in that process. I myself, have violated, my own advice, by being giving to people, who seem to fail to appreciate it, by walking too far, or too long, down a one-way street, and by giving to others, when doing so, could have been, or became, harmful to myself... I think the consequences, I have faced, from my behavior, have helped to show, the validity, of my own advice...

Learn from my mistakes, as well as, from my triumphs... I can hope, that some people, who read my journal, might spare themselves, the same 'grief', or problems, which I have encountered. I can hope, that if people, see me making some mistakes, that they can then avoid, making those same mistakes, themselves... Let my life serve as a warning, when appropriate.

Here are two quick examples... First, as my seeking to perform, or endure, in 'less than pleasant', or 'less than desirable' job environments, failed to gain me, any appreciation, from those bosses, then perhaps, a lesson to

be learned, is to seek to leave, such job environments...

Second, if my 'love' with Steve, fails to eventually result, in 'union', and a happy life, then perhaps, a lesson to be learned, is to listen to someone, who is declining, to have a union, regardless of the presence, of 'valuable emotions', and, if what one wants, is a union, to then seek it elsewhere, rather than, 'beating one's head against a wall', as I might sometimes seem, to be doing...

Two 'normal' reactions, to injustice, can be, anger and self-pity, and neither reaction, is necessarily, constructive, for the individual. If one can channel, the energy of anger, into constructive purpose, then anger, can be helpful. However, often, anger tempts one, to do negative things, which can cause one, even greater problems.

To seek to cope, with anger, one can vent, one's 'steam', by speaking to a friend, or to the world of nature, to the sky, or to the ocean, to touch an 'infinity', or to God, or one's allies, with no human audience, or by writing to a journal.

Venting, expressing one's feelings, helps to get rid of them, from one's system, unless one is given, to dwelling, for a prolonged time, on such things, which can also be, non-productive behavior. Failure to vent, can allow negativity, to fester, within self, and that can poison one, for a longer time... Venting can be healthy.

One must seek, to do the things, that help to maintain, or improve, one's world in life. Being angry can be a distraction, from that. Wallowing in self-pity can be a distraction, from that.

Anger can be a result, of a thing of the past, and one should seek, to keep anger, outside of one's spirit. Acceptance, of one's share of responsibility, can help to minimize, the sense of victimization, which can help, to feed anger. Often, one might be, somewhat angy with self, and express that, with anger, toward others... A battle of the warrior, is within...

Knowing, that one can recover, can help one, to fight anger. Anger can be a feeling, that one, is not going to be okay. Yes, sometimes things hurt, and hurt is real, but it also, does eventually pass.

Seek to learn, from your mistakes, to avoid repeating them. This can help, to turn a bad event, into something

beneficial. It can also be true, that one should seek to do something, to prevent further injustice, to oneself.

Angry actions, can breed, long-term conflict. Injustice should be halted, by goal-oriented behavior. Lashing out in anger, can sometimes, be hot, and blind, and less effective, than if, you had thought things out.

In anger, one can waste time, thinking about, what one can do, to hurt others, rather than thinking of things, one can do, to improve self. Wallowing in self-pity can be, the same sort of waste of time.

I have most certainly been tempted, by both anger, and self-pity. I seek to gain distance, from those things, which have caused me, to feel anger, and self-pity.

Injustice can be, a thing of one's past, and you must look to the future, to find hope.

You should seek, to do things in the present, that help to maintain, and improve, your life, or your union. Terrible evils do need to be fought. Ignoring an evil, which happens to someone else, can allow that evil, to grow, and become part, of your reality.

A 'villain', in someone else's biography, sued the biography's publisher, in court. The villain said, that she was slandered, in the biography. The defense contended, that an individual has a right, to portray, his or her life, as that individual saw it, as long as the portrayal, is sincere, and that others, have the same right, to do so. Attention, upon one person's, version of events, can help to gain, attention, to one's own version of events, or to someone else's. The judge, ruled in favor, of the defense.

I have not actually identified, the 'characters' in my life. If they wish to identify themselves, then that is their choice.

Things are, 'back to normal,' between Steve and I... We are enjoying sex, once again, with one another. Steve said, that I had showed him, that our relationship, could endure, without sex, and that he hopes, we can remain friends, and enjoy sex, as long as I don't get, 'too serious'...

Steve also said, that all relationships, eventually sour, so he figured, that he should enjoy our relationship, while we can...

I told Steve, that all relationships, must be built and maintained, and that, if one takes, something for granted,

then one is risking, losing it. I said, what is natural, is change, and failure to do things, to adapt to change, can end relationships.

Steve pointed out, that I seem, to have lacked, having a relationship union, and suggested, that both, his reality of life, and my reality of life, show him to be correct.

I told Steve, that I have maintained, some long-term relationships, and that all connections one has, are relationships, even if they are not, 'unions'... I told Steve, that my relationships, have had their ups and downs, and even those, that were down, have been able, to come back up. I said, that for me, all relationships, have not, eventually permanently soured, even if they have had, sour 'moments'...

Back to injustice...

Episcopalian Bishop, John Spong, said, "I find it difficult, to believe, that a church, that blesses dogs, in a Virginia fox hunt, can't find a way, to bless, life-giving, lasting relationships, between human beings."

Spong was calling, for the Episcopal Church, to recognize, that people can enjoy, a sacred union, without a formal marriage, and also between, people of the same sex. I agree, with Bishop Spong.

A John Doe was held for 12 days, in jail locally, in part, because he refused, to tell the judge, his real name. Doe was held, without bond, without 'real' charges, and had committed, no 'real' crime. Police questioned Doe, at a local bus station, saying they had, an anonymous tip, that he was smuggling drugs, in his suitcase. Doe declined, to open his suitcase, for the police, and so the police, charged Doe, with obstructing justice. The police opened Doe's suitcase, and found only clothing. Doe was brought to jail, on the obstruction of justice charge.

When Doe, was brought before a judge, the judge found, that since there were actually, no drugs involved, that then there was, no obstruction of justice involved, and dismissed that charge. However, the judge then asked Doe, for his real name, and Doe declined to provide it. The judge, then had Doe jailed, for contempt of court.

Considering that the man, should never, have been in court, then he should not have been, in contempt of court.

Given that our government exists, to serve the people, and the people do not exist, to serve the government, then this whole situation, was a terrible affront, to individual rights, and to our Constitution. While the judge, thought Doe, was disrespectful, of the judge, I would say, that the judge, was actually disrespectful, of Doe, and our Constitution.

I think Doe, should be compensated, for his false arrest, and for all of his time, in jail. I do not like the idea, of the tax-payer, having to pay, for wrongs of government officials, and think, that government officials, should face some personal penalty, for their wrongful individual behavior, without penalizing, the tax-payers...

I also doubt, that the police, actually had, any form, of anonymous tip, about Doe, given that he, was a stranger, who lacked any local connections, and had been, just passing through the area. I also think, it somewhat unlikely, that a 'drug smuggler', would be using, a bus, rather than, say, a rental vehicle...

And beyond that, while I do acknowledge, that our legal system has laws against drugs, I find the very idea, of 'victimless crimes', to be political crimes, and also offensive, and insulting, to both individual rights, and to our Constitution, in particular, to our right, to 'pursuit of happiness'...

I guess this chapter, of my journal, is part of my own, 'venting process'...

I mused, that calling for workers' rights, seems to be viewed, as 'subversive', within 'communist' societies, which portray themselves, as respecting workers, and so too, could calling for 'individual rights', seem 'subversive', within 'free' democratic nations, which portray themselves, as respecting 'individual rights'... One might say, there could seem to be, 'something wrong', if there might be, a revolt by workers, within a communist nation, or when there might be, a 'popular revolt', within a democratic society...

WHEN IS SILENCE GOLDEN...?
February 4, 1987

I am progressing, with the re-write, of Book Five, of *The Life of Christos*. I have thus far, condensed 212 pages, of notes, into 152 finished pages. I am omitting, much that is, 'sensitive', and 'personal', perhaps to place into, a 'book of Jualt'... I have to re-read, the whole text, of this book, once the editing process, is complete, in order to find typos, and polish wording.

Daniel visited me, last night, and I went out for a drink, with him. I showed to Daniel, parts of the completed material, and asked, if he thought, there was anything omitted, that should be mentioned. Daniel suggested, that I write a paragraph, or two, about, 'silence is golden'...

Silence can be golden, when words, would be non-productive.

Silence can be sickening, when words, could be healing...

Silence can be golden, when words, would tarnish...

Silence can be sickening, when words, would carry warnings...

There are times, when one might be tempted, to speak in anger. Hostile truths, can be just as harmful, as hostile lies...

Wait, until your anger has passed. Wait until reason, guides mind, before speaking... There are times to talk, and times, to avoid talking...

One must weigh, when to speak, and when, not to speak. The main determining factor, could be, to speak, when one is able, to do so, in a constructive manner, to improve a situation. I know that sometimes, one might be tempted to believe, that rubble, could be an improvement...

Nathaniel keeps a journal. Nathaniel will make note, of the existence of Christos, in his journal. I suggested to Nathaniel, that he take some notes, about his own logic, for re-reading one's logic, can be beneficial, as part of a learning experience.

Taking notes, can allow one, to look at an entire body, of thought. Memory, can sometimes provide to one, just one thought, at a time...

I have long urged people, to take notes of things, which appeal to them, and of their own experience, a 'grimoire', a mixture of research, and experience, and to thus have that, for later reference. I think, that the process of writing notes can help to retain something, in one's memory. I now also mention, that one could have, topic-oriented chapters, and add to those individual chapters, rather than having, a chronological record. That way, the related material, would all be together, for one's future reference. One might also seek, from start, to keep an index of topics, for one's future reference...

My mother has again mentioned, her interest in a business venture, with me, in a property in Lake Worth... I had somewhat stepped away, from any involvement, with anything, in Lake Worth, after the 'Stop Sign Incident'. My mother proposes, that she make the down-payment, on this property, to acquire it, and then I would earn, my 50-percent interest, by fixing it up, and managing it for her. This is a 'duplex', meaning two separate apartments, in one property.

I told my mother, that Steve, could actually be able, to do the work, required on this property. I could easily help Steve, and could manage the property, thereafter. I suggested to my mother, that Steve be noted, as a quarter-owner, of this property, and my mother said, it is up to me, what I do, with my half... I have offered to Steve, half of my half, or 25-percent ownership. Steve has now visited, this property twice, to examine it.

My mother has also now suggested, that I should have, a regular job, and that others, could be hired, to do the work, and their costs, be deducted, from any revenues, upon sale of the property, to be given to her, before a 50-50 split, with me. My mother says, that Steve would be receiving, more than a 'fair share', if he gets 25-percent ownership, just for doing the work...

I think, that I should honor, the offer that I made, to Steve, and if he declines involvement, then he can stay out of it. Steve has not yet, made a decision, and the closing date, on purchase of this property, is approaching. I have to give, to my mother, my own answer soon. I have been holding off, giving an answer, to my mother, as I wait, for an answer, from Steve.

In the back of my mind, I am aware, that Steve has told me, many times, that he wants, no commitments in life, and technically speaking, buying and fixing a property, is a 'commitment'...

In all honesty, to both myself, and my readers, I do tend to believe, that I made this offer to Steve, from my love for him, to show that I am serious, about a long-term, commitment in life, with him. Even if Steve, were to decline this offer, my offering, this 'opportunity', to him, would still have shown, my desire, for a long-term commitment, in a 'real-world way'...

My mother lacks, having a 'good history', with me. There have been, ample times, where my mother, has said one thing, and then done another, without honoring, whatever agreement, she had made, with me. My mother has vacillated, in her behavior, toward me, as much as Steve, though my mother's vacillation, have included, her seeking to be, aggressively harmful to me, while Steve has never been, aggressively harmful to me. I am also mindful, that everything, my mother can do, financially, is because, of my father's estate...

The last time, I was involved, in a property venture, with my mother, was on her Fern Street property, which has now been, torn down, so that she could build, her mini-storage business, on that property.

My mother had a two-story house, on Fern Street, in downtown West Palm Beach, with a separate house, in the back. Both houses were somewhat 'falling down'. The back house had a tenant, who had seemed to expect, that my mother would do something, to fix the property, but she never did. Neither house had been maintained, or improved, in any way, at any time, before I moved in. Part of the reason, my mother tore the houses down, was because of code violations, and my mother, felt it cheaper, to tear them down, than to make repairs...

When I moved in, to the big two-story house, I did so, with an understanding, that I would pay, a certain amount of rent, and fix the place up. I then rented out, to people, who could do the work, and I gave to them, fair rent credits for everything they did, both for their time, and for the supplies. I thus got the place fixed up.

However, mother then raised my rent, first, because she said, more people were living there, though renting out the rooms, was my only source of income, and was something I had told her, that I would do, before I moved in, so her original rent price to me, came with an understanding, that other people, would be living there with me.

My mother also justified, her rent increase, saying the place had been improved. I had the floors, walls, and electrical system, improved... Even though my mother raised my rent, I honored the terms I had made, with my tenants, and kept their rent the same. I appreciated and valued, what they had done, to honor our agreement.

My mother paid herself, from a trust fund of mine, under her 'administration'... My mother took, whatever funds she wished, using this, as a pretext. My mother later, instead of turning that trust fund, over to me, said, that she had spent, everything from it, in my behalf, though it was to herself only, that the funds were paid... This 'rental', was not the only reason, for my mother, to pilfer from that trust fund, but it was among her reasons...

[140610 ~ I viewed, my mother's taking, whatever she wanted, from my trust funds, as 'embezzlement', but I never sought, to have her prosecuted, as part of me, believed, that she had indeed raised me, and I felt it improper, for family, to take family to court. While I might have liked to believe, that family holdings, were somewhat 'communal', among family members, the reality might have been, that the only part, of family holdings, that were 'communal', were those parts, that had been mine... I did always hope, that my mother, would make things up to me, and she did say, she would do so, in her Will, in her estate, after she had passed from this life, and no longer needed, to 'manage' 'family' holdings...]

I ended up, returning to Gainesville, Florida, to seek to return, to school there, and my mother, sought to double the rent, of the tenants, I had left, in her home, and they did move, and the house, then became empty, stayed empty, and began rotting once again, which it did, for the next 13 years... One could say, that I started, with a house, that was falling down, and empty, and left it, fixed up, and with rent-paying tenants, and my mother returned it, to being empty, and falling down, once again...

I believe there were gaping holes, in its roof, when my mother, had it torn down... My mother was fined, by the city, in part, because that place, did become, a gathering spot, for addicts to party, and for the homeless to live, and neighbors in that area, suffered some thefts, which they attributed, to people, who stayed, on that property... One might 'joke', that if there was a question, about 'how bad it could be', that my mother, had been seeking, to display an answer...

My mother always had, the financial ability, to maintain or improve that property, but always chose not to do so. However, inflation would tend to raise, the 'value' of that property, and then my mother, would just borrow, against those increases. Such borrowing had been a source of income for my mother, while she also, counted on my father, to pay all the bills... One might say, that my mother's 'success' in real estate, was 'questionable'...

I am lukewarm, about having anything, in Lake Worth, and lukewarm, about any sort of venture, with my mother, but, this is at least, an 'opportunity', and I would get nothing, if I did nothing, and I might get something, if I do something.

My mother is being warm and friendly, and I am inclined, to at least seek to try, to make the best, out of this 'opportunity'. I am, without a job right now, and perhaps, if my mother was willing, to pay others, to do the work, she might also pay Steve, and perhaps me, to do the work. If nothing else, anything that Steve and I do, does reduce the cost, of paying others, and thus reduces, whatever deductions, my mother might wish to make, upon sale, for those type of costs, prior to our 50-50 split.

Somewhere along the line, and fairly soon, there must be, a meeting, between Steve, my mother, and I. All understandings must be spelled out, in writing. In the same way, that I have advised Nathaniel, to always have, a financial contract, before marriage, saying that only a dishonest person, would object, to such a contract, so too should there be, a contract, between the partners, of any venture, and only a dishonest person, would object, to such a contract...

[140521 ~ A word to the wise... Some states, including Florida, view contracts, as 'statements of intent', rather than,

as inherently legally binding. One should not assume, that courts always honor and uphold contracts. That is a reason, that my Uncle, was able to challenge, his wife's estate, even though he did have, a contract with her... However, I did not know that, at this time. I did assume, that contracts, were legally binding, and honored by courts. It seems, that sadly, courts might sometimes be akin, to an auction house, where the highest bidder wins...]

Steve has had me over, for dinner, and lunch, recently, and I have done the same, for him. Perhaps to seek some balance, some distance, to counter-balance the time, we spend together, Steve has also stopped, working-out with me, and stopped studying, with me. Steve and I, have had sex once, in the past ten days, and that was, somewhat fast, and furious, and was his idea. The sex was 'safe', and 'quick', but we both perhaps needed, the release... Since I did not know, when Steve's 'mood', might change, I gladly accepted, that 'opportunity'...

I think Steve is more distant sexually, in part, because of Nathaniel. In the past, Steve has been willing, to risk 'exposure', to enjoy sex, 'behind closed doors', saying that, nobody can factually say, anything, about what they did not, actually see. However, with Nathaniel, Steve has some concern, that because Nathaniel, is a Baptist, that Nathaniel, might harm him...

Steve does tell me, he would be, more 'comfortable', to be 'with me', if Nathaniel, was not my roommate. Steve does not offer, to supply me, with the income for that room, that Nathaniel supplies to me, so I can hope, that Steve understands, that my having, an easy to live with roommate, who pays rent regularly, is of great value to me, especially now, that I lack much other income.

Steve says, he has been feeling weak lately, and thinks he may have, some infection, which he is fighting. Steve did have, a blood test, a normal screening, prior to giving blood, as a company function, for the company, that he had previously been, employed with. Steve got those results, on January 1st, and has shown them, to me.

Apparently, back in August, a court ruled, that Steve, was in contempt of court, for late child support payments, and said, that if Steve is late again, then Matilda could have

him jailed. Steve now makes payments, to a court office, which then provides funds, to Matilda. The court, can thus know, verify without doubt, the actual real situation, for itself.

Steve is concerned, that his unemployment, could mean, he would be unable, to make his child support payments, and thus be jailed, for debt. Originally, constitutionally, one could not be jailed, for debt, in the US, but the government has, over time, sought to define, what types of debt, one can, and cannot, be jailed for, even if the constitution, did imply, any form of debt... Steve says, that he would be unable, to pay child support payments, if jailed, and then, just fall further behind... Steve hopes, to soon get a job, and make, his child support payments...

Steve says, that if he feels, that he is unable, to make the child support payments, and if he feels, he is going to be jailed, then he is tempted, to just leave the state. The authorities, might eventually catch up, with Steve, but, some states, would disregard Steve's history, in other states, and allow him, to have, a 'clean start'.

Steve said, he is concerned, that he is still, 'under observation', and that is another reason, he believes it is important, for us, to 'be careful'...

Steve said, that if he didn't love, his children so much, that he would definitely, just leave this whole mess behind. Steve says, that the situation, at the end of his marriage, and the divorce settlement, were bad enough, but the whole thing, has dragged out, and hurt his life, ever since...

Steve also believes, that the cost, of child support, would be less, if he had sole custody, of his children, and bore their costs alone... Steve feels, that Matilda, is earning income, from his child support payments, and that, if the system, is going to demand, child support payments, then the system, should also demand, an accounting, with receipts, of how those funds, are spent. The system, at this time, does not do this. Steve is just burnt, on, 'the system'...

My line of credit, for $2,000, has arrived. I can borrow, up to $365, at one time, and, with Nathaniel's rent payments, I can meet my rent, of March 1st. The money is offered to me, at nearly 20-percent interest, so I must not grab it foolishly. I might also, have to borrow from it, to make the monthly payments, on it... At least I know, I can

survive, for a while...

Paul said, he used his own, line of credit, to fund the trip, to the Keys, but that he is old, and might die, any time, so probably, won't have to repay, the money... Paul said, that while he does owe, Frank-B money, that he used to purchase, his apartment, that loan, is not attached, to this property, so that Frank-B, can't force him, to sell the property, to repay that loan...

I am not mentioning, my work time at Sheeta's, when I apply for jobs, because she might, still be speaking, unkindly of me, in the same way, she did, when she let me go. I do claim, on my resume, to have learned, all the types of machinery, that are at Sheeta's business, without mentioning Sheeta's business, so at least, that could still be, beneficial for me.

= 32 =

RAGGED EDGES
February 7, 1987

It might seem, that there could be, an economic recession, going on, or else, people close to me, are being targeted, for unemployment, which I don't think, is the case.

My roommate, Nathaniel, got fired, after he called in sick, one time. This is the only time that Nathaniel has called in sick.

The girl, that Nathaniel has been dating, got laid off her job, as a waitress, though now, would normally be, our 'busy' tourist season, and so it could be, 'unusual', for a 'lay-off', to occur at this time.

One of the places, the school job service, sent me, for an interview, told me, they will probably, go out of business, and close permanently, by the end of March.

The official media is saying, that joblessness is at its lowest level, in decades. I could agree, that perhaps, those who are officially counted, as jobless, might be low...

Lesson: Don't ever blindly believe, the official media, because it 'sometimes', reports news, to suit political incumbents... One might say, that 'official' media', is 'official', because it reports news, for 'officials'...

After paying my rent, and car payments, I am financially broke. My only income is the rent I receive, from Nathaniel, and now, he is unemployed. I am going to give Nathaniel, some slack, because he should be able, to find a job, without too much trouble, and because, he has always paid me, responsibly, when he has been able, to do so. Nathaniel has a good track record, a good history, with me.

I called Nathaniel's former employer, for Nathaniel, to ask that former employer, about Nathaniel, as if I was reviewing, his job application, with me, a potential employer, for a similar position. Nathaniel asked me, to do this, as he wished to learn, if he should list this former employer, on future job applications.

Nathaniel's former employer, said that Nathaniel, was responsible, and honest, but that Nathaniel, was unable, to get along, with other people... Nathaniel's former employer, said Nathaniel, would be okay, if he could work alone... I have found Nathaniel, to be easy, to get along with.

After I made that call, for Nathaniel, then Steve made, a similar call, for me, to Sheeta. Steve said, that Sheeta, was reluctant to talk, and sounded nervous. Steve said, it was like pulling teeth, to get Sheeta to admit, that I had ever worked there. Steve said, if he had not been persistent, then he thought, Sheeta was essentially giving people, an impression, that she had no idea, who I was... I wondered, if Leata-Mae, had mentioned to Sheeta, that I had said, I would file a complaint, with the Labor Department, against her, and if Sheeta, was paranoid about that. My wage pay-stubs, clearly indicate, that I did work for Sheeta...

Sheeta said, that I had shown, no ability, to learn her equipment, and that I was inexperienced, at typesetting, so she had to let me go... Of course, that annoyed me, as I was able, to clearly operate, all of her machinery alone, and did so, when she and her help, took their vacations... And, of course, I was experienced. I had been doing this, for John-S, for quite some time, and basically, could handle, whatever walked in, through the door, which was, in fact, what Sheeta had me, do for her, as a priority. And I also handled, existing businesses, but was assigned, to new business, because of her filing system, and the errors, that it often contained.

Steve had to pump Sheeta, to get her, to at least admit, that I was dependable, that I was always on time, always came to work, and was 'conscientious', about my work. Steve got a very bad impression, of Sheeta, saying that Sheeta, seems to be, a 'honey-dripping, venomous reptile', saying the worst of things, with the sweetest, innocent voice... I suppose, that is a reason, why I prefer, some 'true grit' in people, as the ones, with the most charm, seem to be, predators...

I did chuckle, that the law enforcement personnel, in this area, are now, officially 'on alert', as there have been, 20 bank robberies, within the past two weeks. It would seem, that bank robbery, is one of the best jobs, our system has to offer?

Is it 'purely coincidental', that my mother, wants me to move, to her property, in Lake Worth, in mid-March, a time when it could become likely, that I would otherwise, be unable to afford, to continue to live, where I am now, as

things are now?

Steve told me, that he would be willing, to help me, with the house remodeling, for this property venture, as is he is able, but he does wish, to stay out, of the ownership contract. I wanted Steve involved, in the property ownership, so that he would have, a vested interest, in fixing up the place. Without a vested interest, I am uncertain, if Steve would actually help, with the remodeling.

However, my mother then took a position, saying that only her name would go on the property deed. I expressed my concern, that, if my name, is not on the deed, then I would lack, any ownership interest. My mother said, she would talk to a lawyer, and see what she could do. I know, that my name, can be placed on a deed, as a 'common property', a legal term that denotes shared ownership...

My mother then said, that because I have been, so awful to her in the past, that everything should be, in writing between us. I had thought, we had already agreed, to have everything in writing... I told my mother, that I didn't think, that I had ever been, awful to her, and that I fully agreed, with her, that everything between us, should be in writing.

My mother, twice more mentioned, how awful I have been, to her in the past, and how kind, and generous, she is being, to even consider, a business venture, with me.

The only thing, I have done, in the past, that my mother, might somewhat correctly view, as 'awful' to her, was that I did vouch, for my cousin James', claims against her, as she did, benefit greatly, from the embezzlement, of his trust funds...

Perhaps, my mother, might also view, Mr. Frank's letting her go, and retaining me, as something I did, that was awful to her, but technically, it was she, who demanded, that Mr. Frank fire me, or she would leave him, and-or badmouth him, and it was she, who quit, when he declined, to do so.

I did not mention, anything of our past, to my mother, and just agreed, that everything should be in writing, so that we would not have, any 'misunderstandings'. I suggested, that we let the past, remain in the past. I was a bit surprised, at my mother's words...

My mother says, she will put down, $10,000, on a $42,000 property. My mother hopes, to sell the property, for

$50,000 later, and will split the difference, with me, 50-50, on anything, above the purchase price, of $42,000, when the property is sold.

My mother says, that she will split the income, from the upper apartment, with me, which would give to me, an income, of $200 a month, as she intends, to rent each apartment there, for $400 a month. One apartment is on the second floor, and the other, is on the ground floor.

My mother said, that my payments would be $400 a month. My mother said, I could live, in one room, of the two-bedroom, downstairs apartment, and she would get the rent, from the other room, $200 a month, which would repay her, for her down-payment.

I asked, what my payments are for, as it seems, that I would be paying, the cost of the mortgage, for her, without having, an ownership interest, and that would be, unacceptable to me. I was also uncertain, of how I would be living, 'rent-free', if I was also, to make payments, of $400 a month...

My mother said, that my payments, would enhance my equity, by reducing, the mortgage owed, and thus the amount, to be gained, from a sale...

I said, that I didn't see, how reducing the mortgage, would benefit me, if all my mother was offering, was the amount, above the purchase price, of $42,000, regardless, of how much, remained owed, and that, without an ownership interest, then legally, I would be, owed nothing anyway. I would have no equity, unless my name, is on the deed... Only my mother's equity would be increased, by a reduction, in the amount owed, on the mortgage, and my mother, could always borrow against that, which is what she normally has done, to gain income. Property prices, have increased in value, through the years, decades, and my mother has borrowed, against the increases, in value...

My mother said, our contract, between us, would guarantee me, a 50-50 split, of anything gained, above $42,000, from a sale. I said, that sounded good to me, but that I still would gain nothing, from a reduction, in the mortgage owed, and suggested, perhaps, she might wish, to split mortgage payments, with me at least. The mortgage, would be estimated, now, at $400 or so, a month...

My mother said, I should make, the entire payments, since she was making, the down-payment. My mother said, she would be losing income, by letting me live there, rent-free. If my payments pay her mortgage entirely, and I get no credit for the increase in equity from my paying that mortgage, then I see no ways to think I am living there 'rent-free'.

I said, it would be fair, if I was half owner, and we could deduct her down payment, from what the property is later sold for, and split the amount, above her down-payment. I thought, this was 'giving of me', if I am making, all the payments, before the property is sold. Essentially, my mother, would be giving to herself, credit for her down-payment, while giving to me, no credit, for my making, the monthly mortgage payments...

My mother would also be, paying herself twice, for her down-payment, first, by the income she gained, from the downstairs apartment, that she applies, to the down-payment, and then, by deducting the full amount, of the down-payment, at the time of sale... While to me, my mother's offer, seemed like, a 'good deal', for my mother, I could not see it, as a 'good deal' for me, though perhaps something is better than nothing.

My mother said, she would have to think about that.

Both Daniel and Steve, told me, to accept my mother's offer, as she first made it. Daniel said, my mother, was giving to me, a place rent-free, to live. I again said, I did not understand, how anyone could say, I was getting something, 'rent-free', if I would be, supposed to make, payments of $400 a month, to my mother, which provides to her, the mortgage payments. As long as my name, is not on the deed, then I am making, rent payments, and it is my mother, who then makes, the mortgage payments... I would simply be, supplying the funds, for my mother, to make her mortgage payments.

And, in the neither here nor there, I am not guaranteed, that my mother, will seek to sell the place, any time soon, and am not guaranteed, that the place would sell, even if put on the market, and am not guaranteed, that the upstairs apartment, could be rented, for $400 a month, as it does lack, air conditioning, does get hot, and that is, a somewhat

'high rent', in a somewhat, 'low rent' area...

Things have been going great, with Steve, as if some hidden walls have fallen. Steve and I are fooling around again, though we have been going, to Fort Lauderdale, to do so. Tenderness and warmth have returned, to our relationship. Steve takes the initiative, to have our hug and kiss, which occurs when we are alone, as we are normally, at either his place of mine, by that time. Steve has even told me, that I am a person, that he cares very much about, and this is a big statement, coming from him. Steve has actually said, twice, that he is glad, that 'we are lovers'...

And just for the record, while Steve and my mother, might have their 'vacillations', it would be my preference, to deal with people, who lack such vacillations. I much prefer, 'stability'...

I think Steve, may finally be adjusting, to an idea, that I am his lover, and he is glad of it. At least, during this 'loving vacillation', Steve has been acknowledging, our actual relationship, and this is a first. Steve now agrees, and we do have a mutual understanding, that we are 'lovers'... To Steve, and to me, this only means, that we are a 'couple'. This mutual understanding is a major milestone. I am glad it occurred, before I finished, this book. I can at least hope, that things, between Steve and I, are good, when I end this book... One never knows though, eh... But right now, things are good, between Steve and I...

= 32 =

GIOCARSI, GIOCARE
To Risk, To Play
February 16, 1987

I had important exams, in my intermediate algebra, and health classes. I am pleased to say, that I got 'A's, on both tests, the best possible grade. As long as I get 'C's, I am passing, and at par, so I am doing that. My 'A's, in current classes, plus my 'A', in the computer science class, last term, clearly serve as evidence, that I have, an ability to learn, even if Sheeta, says that I do not.

Steve has said to me, that he loves me. Steve and I have crossed a threshold, it seems. I think Steve is willing, to give a 'union' with me, a try, to have a mutual understanding, that we are, 'with' one another. Steve and I have been 'together', eleven months now, and neither of us, has 'seen' other people, to develop partnerships with. Steve gave to me, a small red-painted metal figurine, of Cupid, with a heart and an arrow, for Valentine's Day. I gave a box of chocolates, and a nice card, to Steve, for Valentine's Day...

My mother has agreed, to split equity with me, on my payments, and will have my name, placed on the deed, at the 'closing', the actual meeting, to purchase a property. Only having my name, actually on the deed, somewhat assures me, of legal claim to equity. My mother says, that I will get her ownership interest, if she dies, and she would get mine, if I were to die. I believe that agreement would also have to be in writing, to be legal, and I am willing to do that...

Steve has decided, that he wants no ownership interest, in this property. Steve will submit, a cost bid, to my mother, for the work, that needs to be done, on this property. My mother, can either have, Steve do the work, or select others, to do the work. Either way, the costs would be deducted, from the future sale amount, before our 50-50 split. This all seems fair to me.

My mother and I have yet to sign, an agreement between us, but we have reached, this mutually understood, verbal agreement. I do require, a signed, written understanding, and I do require, that my name, be on the

deed, at the closing.

I now have, $30 in the bank. My unemployment compensation request, was turned down, because I lacked the necessary time, at my job with Sheeta, to qualify, even though, I have been employed, for much longer than required. The unemployment agency, ruled that I voluntarily left, the job I held, prior to working for Sheeta, so I do not deserve, any benefit, from the funds, that I have been paying regularly, from my paychecks, to the government.

I have appealed, the unemployment compensation board ruling, against me. My appeal is to be heard tomorrow. Daniel told me, that I would automatically, win my appeal, if John-S, fails to appear. My contention is that I left my previous job, because John-S broke a wage contract with me, ending my, or our terms, for my employment there.

Steve gave to me, the following quote, to include in this record...

“Conscience in computing... Illegal use, of the computer, is a threat to us all. To control computer crime, we must protect, our own data, and teach our children, to respect information power.”

Depending on ‘law’, one might suppose, that legal use of computers, could also become threatening, to individuals...

Steve says, that he keeps getting told, he is ‘over-qualified’, when he applies for jobs. Steve laughed, that personnel managers, seem to think, he might be qualified, for higher jobs, and yet those, do not seem to exist...

I believe, truth is, that one is never, ‘over-qualified’. One either, has the necessary skills, or, lacks the necessary skills. The allegation, that one is ‘over-qualified’, in effect, admits, that one does have, the necessary skills. Therefore, being ‘over-qualified’, is an illogical, and unfounded, or false pretext, for something else, that is unsaid...

At one end, of the spectrum, is an employer, who says, ‘experience required’, which means, that competent workers, have been fired, and nobody there, can train one. At the other end, when one is ‘over-qualified’, that can mean, that an employer, is under-paying workers, and feels, that one might know this... The best response, to being told, that one is ‘over-qualified’, if one really wants that job, is to say, that one is willing to work, for a certain specified wage,

without saying or implying, that particular specified wage, is a lower-than-normal wage...

I suspect, that some people, who fear 'intelligence', might also use the expression, 'over-qualified'. I suspect, that some people, who fear 'honesty', might also use the expression, 'over-qualified'. I suppose, there could also be, many forms of bigotry, and discrimination, which are concealed, with the phrase, 'over-qualified'.

A bottom line, could be, that when one is told, that one is 'over-qualified', that one might be facing, am undesirable workplace. A workplace, that seems to dislike, 'qualified' personnel, might be one, that is coasting in business, on some sort, of political insulation...

Our 'managed economy', might indeed foster, many forms of corruption, which the open competition, of capitalism, might help to minimize. Sometimes I tire, of the fascists, who give capitalism, a bad name, by seeking to portray themselves, as 'capitalists', when, in truth, they are private beneficiaries, of some contrived, 'managed', system...

At least socialism, is intended to give, these 'managed', economic profits, to the government, to serve the public good, and would do so, if the administrators, are not paid, excessive amounts... To pay high salaries, to administrators, of economic entities, in either systems that are fascist-private, or fascist-public, implies that these administrators actually do something, to earn their higher wages, while I suspect, that in truth, they do not...

Asmodeus visited me, to make sure, that all is well, after I told him, that I am completing, the editing, and re-typing, of Book Five. Asmodeus reminded me, that even St. Francis D'Assissi, had hurled a curse, at someone, because that person had defied his edict. So, for Asmodeus, a reminder, that hurling curses can be karmically preferable, to becoming physically violent, but that karma, remains karma. It remains karmically preferable, in my view, for someone, to 'call karma' on someone, without using, any of his, or her, own energy, rather than, to use one's own energy, to send negativity, at someone.

Asmodeus's friend, Casey, is now in school. I saw Casey, for the first time, in months, when I visited

Asmodeus. Casey seems to be developing, some concrete priorities. Casey still has, his long hair, kept clean, but he no longer casts, negative attitude at me, because of my short hair. I guess, through me, and others, Casey is learning, that not all short-hair people, are inherently bad people. People are people, as individuals, rather than, inherently as reflected, by hair-length.

Asmodeus has remained 'clean', without use of party materials, all of these months. I find Asmodeus' determination and self-control, to be commendable. Asmodeus says, he accepts, that he has, a share of responsibility, for his own existence, even if he and I can agree, that social conditions do have their influence, upon the condition of life, for individuals. Asmodeus, now also, seems to be doing, what he is able, to be helpful to others... I think Asmodeus is in harmonious alignment, with Christos.

It could seem, that *The White Light of the Golden Dawn*, is having some influence, with China, and the Soviet Union. Both nations have had systems, which gave all ownership, to the state, and the state, assumed total responsibility, for the care, of its people. Even so, the state, had to pay wages, to its workers, and thus the workers, had some 'vote', or 'choice', upon what they 'favored'... People vote with the ways they spend their money...

I have tended to favor, 'middle paths'... Rather than total private enterprise, with everything privately owned, or total public enterprise, with everything owned by the state, I favor 'socialism', with a mix, of private and public ownership, with guidelines clearly stated, intended to maintain, a healthy environment, for the people. Clearly, it seems unhealthy to me, for there to be, an abundance of poverty, and, at the same time, some who are 'astonishingly wealthy'... To me, opulence can seem obscene, when in the midst of poverty. To me, perhaps that opulence, and degrading living conditions, are the only things, that are, 'obscene'...

Both the SU, and China have preferred, that those who administer the political system, be those who have passed, educational courses, that qualify them, to be in that field. Both the SU and China, require 'social awareness', and 'social conscience', to be part, of the training, for 'social administration', with 'social administration', being the

governing system. I tend to personally prefer, a multi-party parliamentary system, which I believe, can reflect, the diversity of interests, within a nation.

At any rate, while retaining the political monopoly, of the nationalist communist party, within their borders, both China and the SU, are moving to allow, private ownership, of small businesses.

Ours is a world, which faces annihilation, at its own hands. A strong central government could be destroyed, leaving all in ruins, at least for a while. A diversified economy, is more of a safety net, so that some survive, if part is harmed... Economic diversity can have the same benefits, as biological diversity...

Steve and I had a gentle, relaxed, day at the beach, together, on Valentine's Day. Steve is indulging, in romance, with me, and I love it.

With these words, I complete the re-typing, and editing, of Book Five. I intend to re-read, the manuscript now, and that will take, some more time. I may not have, what most readers would expect, as a, 'proper ending'. I say, that this is, a book of life, and life, is a matter of phases, and stories can be, slices of life, like pieces of a pie, that accurately convey, the flavor of the whole thing. To that degree, this is then, a 'proper book'...

At least this book, could end, on a happy note... That would be nice...

= 32 =

SIRIUS
February 21, 1987

It was Steve's friend, Abe, who mentioned Sirius, to me. Sirius is a double sun system, in our 'physical' universe, where both suns, orbit each other. I guess, Steve and I are like Sirius, for we are both, like suns, with planets that orbit around us, while we orbit, around one another. I have, in the past, felt kinship, to 'pulsar' stars...

Perhaps Jupiter, is like a sun, that failed to ignite, while still having, its own heat, which could sustain life, on its moons, and its moons, could be akin to planets...

Asmodeus, has started, visiting me again, and Steve and I, also visited, Asmodeus' home. Steve does not mind, Asmodeus knowing, our 'relationship'...

On one of his visits, Asmodeus brought with him, an audio-cassette tape, of a sermon, given by a woman minister, of the Metropolitan Community Church, MCC. The MCC is a new church, based on, devotion to 'Christos', which ministers to homosexuals. One of the statements, made by this minister, which amused me, was that, she pointed out, that people who say, that homosexuality is 'unnatural', are people, who have never owned a dog, never been to a farm, never visited a zoo, as in nature, it is bisexuality, the ability to have sex, with either gender, that is 'natural'...

On one hand, some people, condemn homosexuality, as 'unnatural', and then, on another hand, some condemn homosexuality as 'animal behavior'... I think sex, can be, for recreation, and procreation... I think sexual activity can be healthy, emotionally and physically.

I think, that I might lack 'gay support', because I fail to endorse homosexuality, asTHE life-style... I believe people, should be true, to their own preferences. I believe, any form of sexuality, can be lived in ways, which are spiritually healthy. I am, as unwilling to promote, any one form of sexuality, as 'THE' way, as I am unwilling, to promote, any particular, specific, religious group, as 'THE' way...

The health class, I am taking in school, seems to be, somewhat 'feminist'. The lady teacher, likes the phrase, 'the vulnerable male', and 'simple' male, inferring 'simple', to be

inferior, saying males are vulnerable, to sexual exploitation, because their genitalia, is on the outside, while females are 'more protected', and 'complex', in a superior way, because their genitalia, is concealed, internal.

This teacher, likes to say, that the positive character traits, for civilization, such as nest-building, compassion, cooperation, kindness, and love, are female traits, while males have only negative traits, like aggression, jealousy, envy, warrior skills, competitiveness, and lack of 'emotional quality'...

I find myself, being offended, by that teacher's 'facts'... There are only, a couple of males, in this class, and the teacher's words, seem somewhat embraced, or welcomed, by the females, in this class... I doubt these females, would have smiled, if that professor, had been a man, who said, that all women, are jealous, envious, aggressive, nasty creatures, due simply to their gender's genetics...

The professor expressed the 'fact', that all one has to do, is 'pat a man on the crotch', and he will instantly become, overwhelmed by sexual excitement, and forget about everything else... This 'professor' said, that for a woman, sex with a man, intercourse, could be 'brutal', and 'unsatisfying', whereas, sex between women, could be 'tender', 'considerate', 'caring', and 'stimulating'. The professor said, that for a woman, how to please a man, sexually, could be simple to learn, whereas, how to please a woman, sexually, was difficult for men to learn, and said that men, often are disinterested, in learning anyway, of course, due to their genetics, which make them selfish, and combative, prone to use of force, unlike women, whose genetics, make them communal, cooperative, with a preference for non-violent solutions and life-styles...

One might say, this professor, did nothing, to help me, as a man, learn how to 'please', a woman... I tend to suspect, that both men and women, have tongues and mouths, while only men, have penises... I tend to suspect, that anything a woman could do, to another woman, to please a woman sexually, a man could also do...

It is somewhat accepted, for a man to stand up, for equal rights, for women. It is somewhat accepted, for a white, to stand up, for equal rights, for blacks. However, when I, as a

man, stand up for equal rights, for men, I risk being accused, of being, 'anti-woman', and that would be untrue. When I, as a white, stand up, for equal rights for whites, I risk being accused, of being an anti-black racist, and that too, would be untrue. I believe in equal rights, before the law, and politically, socially, for all.

I am in a sad situation, where to get a good grade, I must provide, the answers, this professor, wants to hear.

I believe, all the traits, expressed by this 'professor', can be had, by both genders. Technically, if one wished to look, at biology, genetics of genders, then men encompass, both X and Y traits, while women, only have Y traits, so that men, encompass everything, genetically capable, of women, other than having wombs, to carry fetuses, while women, lack the Y traits, given to men...

I believe, that people are people, as individuals, rather than, inherently due, to their genders... I am a touch sad, to hear this woman, teaching this 'health class', in such a bigoted, biased manner, and believe, that she is, factually, in error. I am also, a touch sad, that none, of the females, in the class, raised any questions, or objections, to this teacher's pronouncements. Perhaps also sadly, I held my own tongue, in class, and said nothing, to dispute what was being said... I did not wish to be penalized, for failure to be a good robot...

I believe, any belief, in inherent gender superiority, either chauvinist, or feminist, breeds disharmony, and hate, in our world, which would be, both foolish, and undesirable.

Asmodeus said, he saw a book, now on the market, which is claiming, that Jesus, was not crucified, but was saved, by his friends. Jesus, according to this book, went to Egypt, where he started, the Coptic Church there, and then to India, where Hindu scripture, allegedly has record, of his visit, and then to China, where he died. There is said to be, a tomb of Jesus, as a tourist attraction in China. Some say these visits took place, during the 'lost years' of Jesus' youth, though obviously or probably, his death in China would have been after the crucifixion.

I have speculated, that the tip of the spear, that jabbed Jesus, when he was on the cross, could have been coated, with an anesthetic, and-or a knock-out drug, done by a

soldier, loyal to the Roman officer, whose lover, Jesus had healed...

This then caused Jesus, to appear, to die quickly, whereas normally, a victim of crucifixion might live, for days on the cross, and that enabled Jesus, to be removed, while alive, from the cross. Thereafter, perhaps Jesus' 'friends', or those loyal to that homosexual Roman officer, rescued Jesus from the tomb. The resurrection was then said to have occurred, and the idea, that Jesus had died, and vanished, reappeared as spirit, and then vanished, was promoted, to explain, the lack of body, in the tomb, and also to explain, any sightings of Jesus, that might occur thereafter... If nothing else, the spirit of Jesus was born, within the hearts and minds of humanity, with the 'resurrection'.

Police stopped my roommate, Nathaniel, while he was walking to the store, one block away. Police said, that Nathaniel was a suspect, in an armed robbery. Three police cars came. Nathaniel was detained, over a half hour. The police fingerprinted Nathaniel, and they took pictures of him. No charges were pressed, against Nathaniel. I thought this was 'unusual', and 'unconstitutional'. I believe, nobody must be fingerprinted, and photographed, without charges being first placed, against him or her, or it.

I became aware, of this situation, when there was a knock, at my door, and armed sheriffs greeted me, when I opened the door. I was asked to verify, that Nathaniel lived, at this residence, and asked to allow, the sheriffs, to right then, at that moment, 'inspect' my residence... I verified Nathaniel's residence, and allowed the sheriffs, to look everywhere they wished to look, which was everywhere. I wished to show, that neither Nathaniel, nor I, had anything to hide.

For the record, Nathaniel, in my view, is a moderate, mellow, masculine, heterosexual, Baptist, who lives in tolerant, respectful, civil ways, with me, and with our world. I have never seen Nathaniel, express violence, aggressive behavior, or hateful words. I have never seen Nathaniel, with a weapon, and have never seen Nathaniel, with 'extra money'. Nathaniel has never expressed, any interest, in robbing a bank, nor shown, any sort, of criminal activity, to

me. I find Nathaniel, to be a commendable, human being, one who seeks to live, in ways that are overall, karmically positive. I doubt there is, any basis in reality, that Nathaniel had been, or would be, a bank robber...

Asmodeus suggested, that there remain, those 'interested' in me, due to *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. Perhaps there are also, those who remain, 'concerned' about me, due to my path, as Christos... I did wonder if Nathaniel was stopped, because of his association, with me.

My world is slowly coming together. The property deal, with my mother, is set for the middle, of next month. I have introduced, both Daniel and Steve, to my mother. Daniel is buying and selling some of my mother's furniture. Steve is doing some work, for my mother. As my mother said, what is important is, that we are all trying to get along.

My mother and Paul still share social circles. My mother says, that Paul is very concerned, that Steve is a very awful, low-life person. I have assured my mother, that Steve, is a fine human being, with good character, who has motivated me, to build my body, and to return to school... I have told my mother, that Steve, has no bad habits, and is not criminal, in any way.

It is extremely gratifying, for me, to have my world, basically at peace. Paul still actively dislikes, all of my friends, but, at least, is being pleasant, to me, when with me.

I am discouraged, in my job search, because I do not see, any jobs, that I want, nor any available to me, which pay decently. I am concerned, that I lack, any good work references. According to the pressman, John-S, has hired two people, to do the work, I was doing, both working, at the same time, but doing different aspects. The second person, does some work, that was Trudy's, previously to do, so technically, John-S has hired, one and a half people, to replace me... Even though, she is now doing, less work, Trudy asked for a pay-raise, but was declined, and got a bad worker evaluation, which caused her, to be quite livid, in anger, and things were very sour, for everyone, as Trudy seemed to wish, to do even less, and worse, than she had been doing... Perhaps John-S, should have declined the pay-raise request, without also giving, a bad worker evaluation...

John-S opposed, my receiving, unemployment compensation benefits, and told me, how aggravated he was, that I was once again, costing him money, by forcing him, to leave his work, and come to this hearing.

I based my appeal, on John-S having broken, a wage contract, with me, which then required me, to seek employment elsewhere. John-S maintained, that he paid me fairly, and that my leaving, was entirely my choice, so he should not be made, to pay for it.

Because I called for a hearing, of my case, and because John-S resented, having to appear, it is within a realm of possibility, that John-S, might not be saying, anything good about me, as a former employer, to anyone who inquires, for 'some time' to come... I know that Sheeta, is not saying, anything 'nice' about me, and John-V, probably remains paranoid, and defensive, because of his situation, with Bobbie, and John-C from the newspapers, probably never says anything nice, about anyone, and my boss, at *The Palm Beacher*, is a toss-up, at best...

It can be a sad thing, when one's references, are all, somewhat 'ugly'... I did notice, that there was a court ruling, that a former employee, can sue former employers, if they say bad things, about that former employee, which then cause him, or her, to fail to get hired... Proving, that a former employer, actually said something bad, and that was the reason, one did not get hired, can be very difficult, to do honestly, in court...

[140602 ~ I 'mused', but do not advise, that one could, perhaps, tell a former employer, that unless one gains, new employment, that one has friends, who will attest in court, that that former employer, is violating law, by saying awful things, about one?]

Steve has made, lunch and dinner, for me, many times, this past week. Steve also lent to me, $200, to pay bills. Steve has urged me, to just remember, my own abilities, and to minimize, in my own mind, the negative things, that former employers, might say about me...

I will regret, leaving this place, where I now live, to go live, in my mother's Lake Worth house. The place I now have, is comfortable, whereas the place, I go to live, lacks artificial environment... I will miss, being convenient to

Steve, and will miss, use of the pool, and exercise room... I am therefore considering, asking my mother, if I could remain, where I am, and still manage her building, from here. Perhaps, my mother and I, could split the income, from the two apartments... My mother does prefer, that I move, and my finances, might require it...

I am now re-typing, the pages I have re-read, and re-typed those pages, which had errors in them. I will soon finish, this book.

= 32 =

ONE-EYED VIEWS, AND PARTIAL TRUTHS
February 27, 1987

One-eyed views can be, when people only see, their own point of view, and fail to see, or understand, another's point of view. This can be similar, to 'wearing blinders', which can be, when someone surrounds self, with 'yes-men', with people who only applaud one, often 'brown-nosers', who shower one, with false charm.

In the kingdom of the blind, the one-eyed man, is said to be king. I think, two-eyed people, are frowned upon, in the land, of one-eyed people... I have also joked, that in the land of the deaf, the man with one-ear, is often seen as crazy...

I believe different ways, can be, karmically positive overall. I tend to believe, that any way, which promotes itself, as THE way, or only way, is disharmonious, and breeds conflict, and thus can be, or is likely to be, undesirable, unhealthy.

I believe, a difference, between 'THE', and 'A', can be the same, as a difference, between war and peace. I think, many people do erroneously use, the word, 'the', when they do intend, to mean, 'a'... 'A' means, one of many. 'THE' means, the only, or, the best.

A US Presidential candidate is calling for 'workfare', rather than 'welfare'. I think there should be, some sort of 'social corps', as an alternative, to military service. Perhaps two years of service, between high school and college, in either military, or social services, could be beneficial, for a nation, or society...

There are those, who oppose 'workfare', saying such a work-force, would compete, or harm, the 'private' sector, of our economy. I think much of our economy, is 'public', if it is 'managed', by government... I understand, that there could be some parasites, who might prefer, to receive everything, and do nothing, or as little as possible, and I am unsympathetic with these.

Some present partial truths, as the total truth. From observing world news, I have learned, that there are, many facts, in a total picture, that go unseen, and that distortion, can occur, by promoting facts, that are only partial. I suppose, some media promote an agenda, and only favor

news, which supports its own agenda.

I think it can be of value, to understand, that nobody sees the total picture. I think it can be of value, to understand, that what one is seeing, is a partial picture. It can be hoped, that one's source(s) of news, avoids lying...

Steve pointed out to me, that if I am to have, a 50-50 split, with my mother, then I should I only reimburse her, for half, of her down-payment, and her costs, to fix the place, once the property is sold... I told Steve, that I thought it is fair, for my mother to deduct her entire costs, and thus be reimbursed, for whatever she herself did pay. Steve said, I am wrong, and said that I, should not agree, to these terms. Steve has thus, now taken a position, that he does not want me, to do this deal, with my mother. I have not mentioned, Steve's new position, to my mother...

My mother has now made it clear to me, that she dislikes Steve, that, in her view, there is, 'just something wrong with him', and that he is, 'beneath me'. My mother says, I should marry, 'a nice woman', which, in her view, is someone, in her society, someone with wealth.

I have told my mother, that I would wish to be, an equal, with a partner, and that I do feel, a certain equality, with Steve, and that I would not feel, on my own two feet, if I was with a woman, who had money, when I don't.

My mother says, most men would enjoy that situation, of being taken care of, by a woman of wealth, and that my father did... Actually, technically, it was my father, who had money, and my mother, who enjoyed that situation, as she did have, my father put everything, in her name, for her security, in the relationship, which my father did, to show his support, for their 'union'... It was my father, who paid all of the bills, for that 'union'.

I have not mentioned, to Steve, that my mother, now seems, to disfavor him...

Paul says, I should do this deal, with my mother, but that I should seek better terms, and that I should not listen, to anything Steve has to say, regarding 'business', as Steve is ignorant, of such things.

I have told Paul, that I have negotiated, with my mother, and do think, that our deal is fair, as is. I have affirmed, to all, that I will not proceed, with moving to this place, unless my name is on the deed at closing.

My mother says, she has been, ‘too busy’, to write up, her version, of our mutual understanding, but says, she will do so, after the closing. I would tend to think, that doing so, before the closing, might also be of value, but, as said, my mother says, she is, ‘too busy’... For now, I accept this, but I disbelieve it.

I am willing, to accept, seeking a written understanding, with my mother, of our own mutual understanding, of the ‘business’ between us, after the closing, as long as my name, is on the deed, at the closing. I believe, I have remained, fairly insistent, and totally consistent, about this.

Both my mother, and Steve, seem to be, people who prefer, to admit no error, so perhaps, it was thus inevitable, that some sort of disagreement, might occur, between them, as different people, have different perspectives, and all people, are capable of error.

Steve drove, to many places, in search of materials, and charged my mother, for his time, in doing so, and for fuel. My mother, did pay to Steve, with protest, what he asked, but she said, he could have saved, both time and money, by simply calling the stores, on the phone, to find out, what each one had available. My mother thought Steve, had been, both ‘stupid’, and ‘wasteful’, and was surprised at me, for being interested, in someone, who is, stupid and wasteful, though she said, perhaps that gave to me, some sort of security...

For his part, Steve maintained, that his going in person, was absolutely essential, so that he could see, what the places, actually had... Steve said, the way he did things, was normal, as anyone might know, who had dealt with such things before... My mother said, she didn’t think, being stupid and wasteful, was normal, and said those things, certainly weren’t normal, for her...

My mother asked Steve, to justify his final price, as it differed, from his original bid price. Steve pointed out, that he had performed, ten jobs, instead of four. My mother paid Steve, what he asked, but said, that she was only doing so, as a courtesy, for otherwise, he should have consulted her, before doing anything, that he might have thought, to be ‘extra’...

Steve said, that never, has anyone, ever questioned his integrity. I suggested, that it is always ‘fair’, for anyone, to

question anything, to seek more information, to gain understanding... Steve expressed, to my mother, that he would never have, anything more to do with her. This is when, Steve began telling me, to drop this deal, immediately... Steve felt some offense perhaps, that I did not drop the deal immediately.

My mother, is at least accustomed, to my having friends, who meet with her disapproval... Unfortunately, I do tend to agree, with my mother's positions, regarding this particular situation, with Steve, though I most certainly, do disagree, with her assessment, of Steve, as 'stupid'.

My mother had Paul, and Helene, join her for a dinner. I have wondered, if the three, might have colluded, been collusive, in getting me, to move from Helene's, to Paul's.

On another loose end, Maxwell, a very polite agent, with the Federal Bureau of Investigation, visited me at my home. Maxwell wished to discuss, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*... My publication, of *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, has been 'suspended', since the summer of 1986.

Maxwell said, he was unable, to tell me, the exact cause, of the FBI's interest, in me or my newsletter. I did cooperate, with Maxwell, and answered, all of his questions, truthfully. For better or worse, I chose to cooperate, with authorities, with Maxwell, despite thinking, that such cooperation, after the 'Stop Sign Incident', could be, detrimental to one.

Maxwell told me, that he had never seen, a copy of *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, and asserted, that the FBI had never had, before his involvement, any prior interest in me. Maxwell did say, there are 23 government agencies, which can conduct, their own investigations, and that they act independently, without cooperation, between them. I mused, that my parking lot, could have been full of agents, who observed each other, and thought, 'something must be going on'... Maxwell assured me, that he would seek to do, what he could do, to end, any 'confusion', about me.

Maxwell did say, he might investigate, the problems I had mentioned, problems with my mail and telephone service, and problems with my bank(s)... Perhaps, even the theft, of my camera, was related in some way, to *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, even if just, an 'opportunistic snatch'... Maxwell did say, that he was not making, any guarantees to

do so.

When I mentioned this 'visit', to my mother, she said, that she too had been contacted, by the FBI, about three months ago, but said, she could not tell me, anything about it. I wondered if my mother's 'friendliness', to Steve, had just been intended, to gain him, some 'observation'...

For his part, Steve said, I was stupid, to cooperate so blindly, with authorities. Steve said, that I should have demanded, to know the cause, for the 'interview', and declined to answer, any questions, without a lawyer, being present. While that might sound good, I do believe, that I am unable, to afford the services, of any lawyer, at this time... Steve said, that I could have made Maxwell, have to go to a judge, to at least show cause, for such an interview...

I believe, I have done no wrong, and continue to hope, that my own innocence, and the 'honorable nature', of our government, will protect me, and so I do, or did, choose to cooperate. I wish to believe, that our government, reflects, our wonderful constitution...

I told Steve, that I do actually prefer, to believe, that our government is honorable, and that I can do, what I can, for our nation, by cooperating with authorities. I do not believe, that anything that was discussed, really made a difference, to 'our nation'... I also believe, that my position, of cooperation with Maxwell, might have gained me, his aid, in my own situation, whereas failure to cooperate, would have failed, to do so.

I did get a chuckle later, when Paul was complaining to me, on the telephone, about everything, and I made the 'joke' to Paul, that even those, who are paid, to listen to my telephone conversations, must be tired, of listening to his complaints... I told Paul, that he really made them, earn their money...

I mused, that the building, my mother wishes, for me to move into, is right next door, to a big apartment building, so I could, perhaps, be easily observed, from that place, more so, than in my current location...

I lost my appeal, with the unemployment compensation board. It was ruled, that first of all, I had not left my employment, immediately, after the wage contract, was broken. No, I took the time, to find another job first... I did leave, at my first opportunity, to do so, with employment

elsewhere...

And second, the unemployment compensation board, a federal board, ruled, that according to Florida state law, that contracts, are only a statement of intent, and are thus, not legally binding. Therefore, it did not matter, one way or the other, what any contract might say, and a broken contract, therefore lacked any legal cause, for changes in employment, in Florida.

I have now caught up, to this chapter, in my editing... Overall, I am very pleased, with Book Five. I feel some mental pressure, to get this book registered, with the US Library of Congress, as quickly as possible, because of recent visits, to my place, by armed sheriffs, and by Maxwell.

I am prepared, to avoid seeking publication, of this book, as long as doing so might cause, any distress to Steve. I have offered, to allow Steve, to read this book, and have said, I would be willing to consider, omitting any material, that he might dislike, or at least, I could add, his perspective, his words, upon any topic, anywhere.

[140603 ~ For the record, Steve refrained, from accepting this offer, and I refrained, from seeking publication, of this book, when doing so might adversely impact him.]

I do believe, I have accurately maintained, Steve's points of view. I also believe, I have withheld, Steve's actual identity, though, technically speaking, if Steve is described, as my lover, and I become known, as having only one partner, then it might be assumed, that whoever that partner might be, might be Steve...

I am thus prepared, to avoid publishing, this book...

I believe, publication of my books could occur, after my death. I believe it is possible, that I might never see, any financial compensation, for all my time, and work, to make these books. I would like to earn income, to survive in life, from publication of my books...

I believe, keeping this record, is part of my way, of fulfilling God's request, that I go public, as Christos.

May peace be with thee, and with thy spirit.

Amen.

= 32 =

A NOTE FROM ASMODEUS TO YOU
March 2, 1987

I have, now and then, offered, to most who know me personally, an opportunity, to 'time-capsule', some thought, to have their words preserved, within this journal. I am surprised, that so few have accepted this opportunity.

The following, is a note, from Asmodeus:

How should someone, view a person, who believes himself, to be Christ? In this modern age, that is, a difficult question, to answer. Should he be judged, to have, delusions of grandeur, or just, an over-inflated ego, which wants attention?

In attempting to answer, those questions, I will say, a little about, a good friend, who believes this, about himself.

Whether or not, he is, what he feels, he is, isn't that important. I am not here, to judge him. Instead, I will tell, a little, about what I know him to be, and my observation of him, over the past few years, I have known him.

To begin with, he is a person, with a very high level, of intelligence, with an extremely large knowledge, of the world around him, and the politics, of almost every country, in the world. His understanding and his concern are far beyond, that of all people I have met, or heard about.

His knowledge of religion, is beyond, most every expert, I have met, or heard, and reminds me, of the passage in Isaiah, which says, he will be called wonderful counselor of peace, and that the government, will be upon his shoulders.

Yet, there is much about him, which is typically human. He can be, petty at times, and sometimes, he is self-seeking, and self-centered. He is sometimes vengeful, but has never, gone to extremes.

He is easily hurt, and sometimes feels, people are out to get him. He has trouble accepting, that he is from, a very powerful, American family, and has not received, the benefits, he thinks he should have.

Yet with all these things, he has, a very forgiving nature. He lets things go, and does not hold a grudge, even when, people have treated him, with little respect, or understanding.

His mission seems to be, to unify, all religious thought, not to make one religion, for the whole world, but to make it possible, for all religions, to get along, with each other, and to understand, that no one, has a complete corner, on religious truth, so that they might learn, that together, through sharing, they can make this, a better world, for all the people, of Earth.

All in all, he is, a very enigmatic person, who wants a happy life, for himself, but also wants to see, the world become, a peaceful and happy place, for all the people, on Earth. Whether or not, he is Christ, is a moot point. He is someone, who has recognized, his true divine nature, and is willing, to share his knowledge, with all people, of the world.

Asmodeus

Asmodeus was most certainly kind, and I thank him, for his letter. I believe Asmodeus, has provided, a genuine, honest impression, of me, from the perspective, of someone, who has personally known me. Of value to me, is that Asmodeus, is a person, with great depth, of religious, occult, esoteric, mystical, and philosophical knowledge, so his opinion, does have value, to me. I would view Asmodeus, as someone, who is, 'in the field'... By that I mean, that if I was seeking, to be a doctor, then Asmodeus, if 'in the field', would be a person, who has medical knowledge...

There normally can be, some differences, between, how one perceives self, and, how others perceive one. Sometimes, others lie about one, so what they say, might be discounted. However, I do believe, that Asmodeus has presented, his honest, and sincere, impressions of me.

I lack any desire, to seek to 'unify' religions. I seek to 'harmonize' religions... I believe that Asmodeus, might have intended to convey, 'harmonize' when he used the word, 'unify', and I base my belief, on the context, of the rest of his text, on that aspect. To 'unify', can be, to seek to make one body, from many bodies, while, to 'harmonize', can be, to seek to help many, separate groups, to get along peacefully, non-violently, with one another, as separate groups.

I must admit, that I do believe, that I could be or become Christ, but I do believe, that the word, 'Christ', is a title, that

is bestowed, by the people, perhaps properly retrospectively, and I do not believe, that title, can be authentically, 'self-proclaimed'. I do not say, that I am Christ, nor do I verbally, ever say, that I believe, I am Christ. The most I might mention, in privacy, among friends, is that I believe, I could become, regarded as 'Christ', and that I do hope, that occurs. For what it's worth, some others, do often say that, of me, or say, that I believe I am Christ, and to me, this somewhat fulfills, prophecy...

I say, that I am a manifestation, through birth, of the spirit of Christos.

[140520 ~ I later wrote, a small book, *Rs ~ rambling through spiritual history*. In that book, I somewhat give my impressions, of, 'the lives of Christos', whereas this journal, is, *The Life of Christos*, of Jualt Christos...]

I will also admit, that I had visions, from God, which told me, to go into our world, and proclaim to the people, that I am Christ. Some have suggested, that perhaps these visions, were 'from the Devil', from Lucifer-Shiva, and I have chuckled, to consider, that it might have been, a big joke, on Shiva-Lucifer, if he did so, thinking he was in error, or being tempting or deceitful, when in reality, he was correct...

Delusions of grandeur... Anyone who stands up, as an 'authority', on anything, can risk being accused, of having, delusions of grandeur, and that implies, that person, actually lacks the knowledge, to be 'an authority', and their sense of grandeur, of being knowledgeable, or elevated as an authority, is delusional, because it is, an image without substance... This can be, when someone assumes a title, and wants that title, to then bestow 'authority' upon him or her.

Some, who stand up, as 'authorities', could indeed have, delusions of grandeur, but some are authentically 'grand'... Delusions of grandeur are viewed, as a form of mental illness, sickness, because they lack, basis in reality, when they are, image without substance. It can be proper, to be regarded, as 'an' 'authority', when one has knowledge, within a field or upon a topic... It can be delusional, to think of self, as 'the' 'authority'...

At any rate, often the expression, he or she has, 'delusions of grandeur', is meant as an insult, and is

somewhat, of a standard insult, often applied to people, who are spiritually inclined, and can be dismissed, when the person, making that insult, lacks enough knowledge, to be accurately informed. Theirs are insults without substance... One thing, that can perhaps be gleaned, from that insult, is that someone, has chosen, to seek to be insulting... Sometimes, that is their pretext, for remaining ignorant, from avoiding seeking to learn, from avoiding, seeking to become, more accurately informed, or else, they are seeking to dissuade others, from doing so, perhaps as a ploy, to seek to maintain, or elevate, their own 'authority', by putting someone else down, rather than, by building themselves up.

Truth can be, that everyone might have, some sort of 'dream', some sense of self-importance, some hope, for a good, and-or happy, life. Such dreams can be delusional, if a person does nothing, to make them, into a reality, if a person seems to want, either, 'instant recognition', of their 'image', without either knowledge or actions, to make their dream, a reality.

An ideal can become real, when one lives it.

I understand, that modern psychology, of this time-period, might consider me, to be burdened, with a mental illness, with what is now called, a 'messianic complex', and could, at least question, whether I have, or lack, 'delusions of grandeur'. I do not think, the normal reasonable aspiration, or hope, to have a better life, is inherently, a 'delusion of grandeur'...

I remain willing, to proceed, on my paths in life, as Jualt, and as Christos, despite the things, that might be negatively said, about me, or done to me, for doing so. I do this, because I believe, that which I do, is spiritually healthy, for me, of benefit in an after-life, if not in this life, and that God, and my other allies, have shown me, enough support, to encourage me, that I am not alone, and that there are, good beings, beyond what is viewed, as 'basic earth reality', and, that such good beings, give their support to me, encourages me to believe, that I do serve, good purpose.

Asmodeus' statement, "He has trouble accepting, that he is from, a very powerful, American family", leaves me blank... Perhaps my blankness, validates Asmodeus'

statement... I believe, that among my ancestors, among my dead relatives, have been, 'powerful' people. However, to me, this is, a thing of the past, and my current family members, seem content, to enjoy their wealth, without doing much of anything, that is beneficial, for our world, or nation, or without seeking to exert, any influence, upon our world, so I do refrain, from thinking of my family, as being 'powerful', in this 'present' time-period.

I consider, that perhaps, Asmodeus would like to believe, that my family is powerful, and thus he chooses to believe, that my family, is powerful, but this could be, an assumption, a conclusion that is based, on hope, on image, rather than, upon substance.

I believe, my living family members, might like to boast, about to whom they are related, to validate their membership in elite circles, while they do nothing themselves, to be much of anything, in life, with the exception, of Uncle James, who has sought, to serve our nation, as an Honorable statesman. My half-sister, has 'worked' in government, so has had, her 'influence', but at this time, is 'in the private sector'...

I also, do not see myself, as an 'enigmatic' person, for that can be, one who is mysterious, one about whom, knowledge is difficult, to find or gain. I think, my books are quite thorough, or thorough enough, in providing enough details, so that my being seen, as 'enigmatic', could be mostly, a matter of ignorance, or laziness...

I like to think, that people see me, at face value, as a harmless, normal person, and, if they do, get to know me, they can also then grasp, that I am, a humane, decent, simple, kind person, who can be easy, to understand.

I believe that Asmodeus, has truly been, flattering of me, in his letter, to my readers. I thank Asmodeus. I must also admit, that Asmodeus, has become, a very dynamic individual, and no longer, spends his time, mostly in meditation, or vegetative endeavors... This change has occurred, through Asmodeus, making free will choices, and exercising his capacity, for self-control. Asmodeus has dropped things, which weighed down his spirit.

Asmodeus is a good example, of a human being, a positive role model, in his own way. I am pleased, to have

Asmodeus, in my life, and in, *The Life of Christos* series.

Nathaniel said, that I can't be Jesus, because I smoke marijuana, and tobacco cigarettes, and Jesus never smoked... Personally, I don't believe, that use of marijuana, or tobacco, in moderate responsible ways, indicates anything, inherently, regarding spirituality... I do believe, that Jesus, enjoyed wine, in moderate responsible ways, though I also understand, that, at different times, in our linear past, that water, was unsafe to drink, and that it was considered healthier, to drink beverages, that contained alcohol.

Nathaniel and I conferred, and agreed to allow, Janeal, to stay with us, in the living-room. Janeal has been with us, for about three weeks. Janeal was homeless. Nathaniel and I agreed, to let Janeal stay with us, without paying rent, as long as he job-hunted, and then, once he did have a job, then Janeal, should contribute something, to our household, and should also seek, to find a place, of his own, as neither Nathaniel, nor myself, wished to share, our own rooms, with Janeal.

In the interim, I told Janeal, that while he is unable, to make a financial contribution, in fair trade, for the space we provide, that he could still contribute, to our household, in fair trade, by taking out the garbage, and doing the dishes. Janeal has refrained, from doing so... Janeal has seemed to wish, to lack value, to our household...

What has occurred, is that during the previous three weeks, Janeal has gotten, and lost, three jobs... Janeal has tended, to 'oversleep', and has thus failed, to go to work, as scheduled, and he fails to call, when he is going to be late. Lesson: Don't skip work, or be late, without calling in first, and don't fail to call in, while being late, twice, during your first week, or else, you will probably, be fired.

It has been somewhat 'bittersweet', for Nathaniel and I, to observe Janeal, easily getting jobs, and then losing them, and still getting hired, without being able, to have any good work references, while neither Nathaniel, nor myself, who are both, honest and dependable, competent, are having difficulty, even getting hired, by one more place...

I joked to Nathaniel, that Janeal's 'real job', might be, just to observe us...

Due to Janeal's behavior, causing him to lose jobs,

Nathaniel has suggested, that we ask Janeal, to leave our space soon. I have agreed, with Nathaniel, to ask Janeal to leave, as I value Nathaniel, as a roommate, even if he too, is currently without work and thus unable, to financially contribute, to 'our' household.

Janeal is heterosexual, and thus lacks, 'sexual value', to either Nathaniel or myself, and, to me, that is a moot point anyway, but I mention it, 'for the record'. Some 'heterosexual' men can have 'sexual value', just by being passive...

Instead of using, the space and time, with us, to seek to build his world, Janeal has seemed to prefer, to just coast, to exist within our space, as long as we allow it, without doing anything, to encourage us, to continue to allow it. Nathaniel and I, both have, limited resources. Both Nathaniel and I appreciate the challenges, of being homeless, but that prospect, does not seem, to either scare, or motivate, Janeal.

Therefore, I have suggested, to Nathaniel, that we give Janeal, until the end of the week, to get another job, and then, until the end of the month, to get another place to live. Nathaniel has agreed to this.

I got another, pre-approved line of credit, today. If I don't get a job soon, then this new line of credit can pay my bills, for next month. I have applied, for some good jobs, and I hope, that one will hire me.

= 32 =

CHILD-ADULT SEX
AND A CHALLENGE FROM ASMODEUS
March 7, 1987

I myself, lack any sexual desires, for children. I have never had, any sexual desires, for children. I prefer, that all sex, be between, consenting adults. I believe, that more often than not, it is a child, who seeks sex, with an adult, rather than an adult, who seeks sex, with a child. At least that has been, my personal experience, as many 'youths', have sought, to 'play' with me, perhaps innocently, but with my crotch, or 'privates'...

There are those, who believe, that any consensual sex, is okay, even between, adults and 'children'. These believe, that an adult, can provide sex, in an 'educational', and 'fun' way, from experience, and can avoid, pain or discomfort, and disease and pregnancy...

My main concern is that children, can often develop, emotional attachments, and thus can become, somewhat 'smothered', or fail to 'explore', relationships with peers, if they are 'obsessed', with a relationship, with an adult.

Currently, our system, condemns any sexual activity, between an adult, and a child, and different states, have had different, 'ages of consent', below which, such 'adventures', are illegal...

I believe, that our system should treat equally, homosexual, and heterosexual, activity.

I believe, that there are adults, who are 'sick', who seek to inflict themselves, sexually, upon children. Some of these adults, have a craving, or compulsion, a form of a mental illness, and some, attribute their behavior, to a sense of being powerless, as if this sickness, was akin, to an addiction... It might perhaps be better, for such individuals, to seek help, from a group, when individually powerless, lest they find themselves, imprisoned, and-or, harmful to others...

I believe, any form of forced sex, can have, both emotional, and physical trauma, regardless of, whether it is, an adult, or child, who feels 'victimized'.

Some parents seem to like to think, that they own their children, but they do not. Children are not slaves. Children

are young adults, who need to be nurtured, to become, competent, healthy adults. Children are developing adults, who have a right, to a life of their own. Parents should seek to nurture, to teach, to guide, a child, into becoming, a healthy adult, one who is competent, in our world, one who can stand, on his or her, own two feet, and is able to maintain, healthy relationships, with the various aspects, of life in our world, with friends, with job, with community, with spouse.

Two adults have brought this issue, to my attention, and that is why, I provide my thoughts, on this sensitive topic.

One person, an elderly friend, of Asmodeus, Socrates, became involved, as an adult, a young adult, with a 15-year-old boy. Even though the boy, testified in court, that he loved Socrates, and that everything, was consensual, the court sentenced Socrates, to 20 years in prison. The boy, then became poisoned, against the system, perhaps for his life-time, and at least for decades, as he viewed the system, as punishing someone, whose only fault, was to care for him. For his part, Socrates was released, from prison, after serving five years. To this day, over thirty years, since Socrates, was released from prison, he continues to speak, against our system, and would aid anyone, who wishes to act, against our system.

Since it is known, that a youth can develop, very strong, 'puppy loves', then it can be, up to adult, to seek to prevent that, from occurring. I am more concerned, with the emotional smothering, of a youth, which inhibits that youth, from gaining, 'normal experience', in life, than I am, with any other aspect.

There are some, who might say, any sex, that is not intended, to produce life, is wrong, and I do not sympathize, with these.

There are those, who are concerned, that any youth, who experiences same sex activity, then becomes, inherently gay for life, and I do not sympathize, with these. I believe, that teaching, that any enjoyment, of same sex activity, inherently means, a person is gay, is a harmful teaching, and factually wrong.

I believe, people can enjoy, physical activity, with those of either gender, but that, if a youth is taught, that any form,

of sexual activity, with the same sex, means that person is homosexual, then that teaching, rather than the sexual experience, can influence a youth, to remain homosexual, in behavior.

I also understand, and sympathize with, the great urge, of a child, to have sex, with someone he or she admires, and I do understand, that it can be a great gift, to allow a person, to enjoy one's body... To me, it is a mixed bag, with much potential joy, and much potential problems. To feed someone's desire, can be, to encourage a relationship, and, if one does not want, to have a relationship, and if one is going to be, in proximity, then perhaps, one should avoid sex, with that person...

I understand, that sometimes, it might be the adult, who has the emotional bond, and the child, who simply wants sex, and then it can be, the adult, who becomes hurt...

I also understand, that repression of sexual desires, can actually, sometimes, cause them to grow, whereas, some satisfaction, of that desire, can allow them, to sometimes fade. A mixed bag...

I understand, that often, sex is one of those things, where a mountain is made, out of a molehill...

I understand, that it can be simple, and easy, to simply say, that sex between, adults and children, is always wrong, but I am unable, to say that.

I am mindful, that in our times, a 'child', is said to be, someone under 15 years of age. I am aware, that in other times, humans were married, around 12 years of age, and having children, at 13...

I would prefer, that children, avoid having children, as that can pass, much ignorance, from generation to generation.

I am stating nothing, which should be construed, as 'law'. I am stating my opinion. And, once again, I am stating, that I lack any desire, for sex with children.

I became very disgruntled, when I applied, for educational aid, to allow me, to continue my schooling, and was basically told, that the school, had filled, its quota for whites, and I was told this, by a black lady, financial administrator. I tended to suspect, that had I been, either female or black, that then this black lady, would have done

everything she could, to help me.

I would have preferred, that educational aid, be granted, according to financial need, and educational merit, and I do think, I have both financial need, and educational merit.

When I inquired, about another type, of financial aid program, I was told, that one's financial status, is determined, by what one earned, two years previously, and, I was disqualified, because I had earned, $14,000, in 1985. To seek to live, on that amount of money, in that year, was challenging... I think it might be, more appropriate, to look at a person's current financial situation, to determine, that person's current financial need, rather than, to only look at, how they might have been, in the past.

I sought to say, that my current financial situation, is what causes, my current financial need, but that argument, was dismissed, as irrelevant...

I did feel some anger, and some of this, was focused, toward black females, who I was most tempted to believe, are incapable, of being anything but biased, against white males. I felt, that not only, was I being discriminated against, for educational aid, by a black female, because I am a white male, but that I also lost my job, with Sheeta, perhaps in part, because she selected, to have a black female, rather than a white male, for her own need, to appear 'proper', on paperwork...

I told my mother, that I think, I might prefer socialism, where the benefits of major industry, supply revenue, to a government, which then uses those funds, to nurture its people, rather than having any form of income tax. I would also prefer, a 'sales tax', a flat percentage rate on all goods purchased, rather than any income tax.

My mother said, that I would come to favor capitalism, once I benefit, from capitalism.

I said, that I am 33 years of age, and have never benefited, from capitalism, and am becoming uncertain, if capitalism even exists, as it seems to me, that there are active efforts, against independent business endeavors, as I experienced, when doing *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, with my mail service, phone service, and even banking. I might even wonder, about the home intrusion, when I lived on Helene's property, and the police activity, both with Lake Worth, and

with the sheriffs, not to mention the FBI visit, as all being related, to *WORLD PRESS WATCH*...

I might guess, that any person, who had benefited, within a system, might then indeed, support that system, even if that system, was a lottery, that supplied wealth, to some people, randomly... I would also speculate, that any system, can work, if it has the support, of its people, and that therefore, any system, or even any governing incumbent, must seek to have, more who are content, than those who are discontent.

I again affirmed, to my mother, that I should have my name, on the deed, of the property purchase, at closing.

My mother said, I should remain living, where I am now located, as I have a lease here. That could be fine with me. My mother said, she was offended, that I would insist, on having my name, on the deed...

I said this is not a new position, and that I did not understand, what might offend her about that now, that seemed to have failed, to offend her previously.

My mother said, that she would look into, seeing if my name could be placed on the deed, without compromising her ownership, of the property.

Considering that my mother, has been beckoning me, to help her with this, by saying that it would be, 'our' property, that she wished to be, helpful to me in life, which might seem 'proper', given that she is, using my family's money, into which she married, I was a touch surprised, that she now seems to wish, to portray this, as a 'new idea'...

I asked Asmodeus, how did some modern Christians, become anti-sex, anti-music, anti-art, anti-nudity, and so narrow-minded, based on any interpretation, of the life of Jesus, who was loving, tolerant, and believed people should seek to be, as positive as possible. Does some of the behavior, of 'modern Christians', seem to defy Jesus, rather than to honor him?

Asmodeus said, it was Christian retrogression, to giving priority, to the Old Testament, rather than to the New Testament, which is fundamentally to blame. Asmodeus said, that perhaps, also, some political revisions, of *The Bible* through time, different focus on different aspects, to suit different agendas, or leaders, had caused distortions...

I suppose, it is perhaps, like an editing process, except that, sometimes, this editing, is done by scholars, and sometimes by religious leaders, and sometimes, by political authorities, and each time, changes are made, and then sometimes, changes are made, to those changes... I hope my books, are maintained intact, for reference and study, and that others, can make their own 'interpretations', while leaving my own books, intact.

Asmodeus said, there are two large collections, of writings, that should be studied, as part of any study, of Christianity. First, there is a body of works, called, *The Lost Books*, that were once included, in the New Testament, at one time, but were then dropped. And second, there is a large body, of early Christian works, that was never included, in the New Testament, but which were embraced, by various Christian groups, at different times.

[220102 ~ There is also the *Apocrypha*, which are books excluded from the Old Testament.]

Asmodeus says, that both collections have always been available, at least to scholars, and they remain available today.

Asmodeus said, that Christianity, has always had, a certain diversity, but that there has, also always been, a certain movement, to standardize, or unify Christianity, according to, 'one view'.

= 32 =

TIME TO END THIS BOOK
March 13, 1987

Some Golden Guidelines...
If you open it, close it.
If you turn it on, turn it off.
If you unlock it, lock it.
If you break it, fix or replace it.
If you can't fix it, call someone who can.
If you borrow it, return it.
If you use it, take care of it.
If you make a mess, clean it up.
If you move it, put it back.
If it isn't yours, leave it as you found it.
If it belongs to someone else, and you want to use it, ask permission first.
If you don't know how to operate it, ask questions, on how to do so properly.
If you are facing an unknown, seek guidance from someone, who has been there before.
It if works, don't fix it...

These guidelines should be helpful, to getting along more harmoniously, with others.

I checked at a technical school, for computer programming, to see if I could qualify, for educational aid. Using the same forms, which the 'nice lady', at the local college, said disqualified me, this school, said I was qualified, to receive, low interest student loans...

It is a little tough for me, to accept, that I am ending this book. I had hoped to have, some mighty conclusions, to present, at the end of this book. I do not. Life goes on. Love goes on...

Though I had hoped, to have a job, I lack employment. I continue, to apply for jobs. Steve also remains, unemployed. Steve and I, now have an 'understanding', that we are 'lovers', a sexual monogamous relationship. Steve and I, now present ourselves, as a 'couple', to those within gay circles... Steve's family and friends, remain ignorant, of our 'relationship'. This is not, a financial union. However, this understanding is a step forward.

I feel more relaxed with Steve, now that we have this understanding. My spirit relaxes, when with Steve. I feel 'at home', when with Steve. I feel 'comfortable', when with Steve. I am very happy, that Steve has accepted, this union with me. I am honored, to be with Steve, in this union. I love Steve, with all of my heart, and my mind respects Steve, as a commendable, and fine, wonderful human being.

Technically, I suppose, in some ways, that nothing changed at all, between Steve I, when he said that he wanted, this understanding. In some ways, perhaps this understanding, was like a 'gift', from Steve to me... I suppose the change came, with Valentine's Day.

I can hope, that Steve's tendency to vacillate, might now end, and that our union, might help to give him, a firm foundation, of some stability, in life...

My mother and I are drawing closer, at least interacting, with one another, somewhat regularly. We both seem to have, some distrust, of the other. The fact that we are drawing closer, despite a feeling of distrust, is a hopeful sign, that perhaps, we both might understand, that being 'family', can mean, a natural, long-term bond, and that we might seek, mutual benefit, from this 'natural' bond.

Steve found a place, where one can make copies, at a low cost. I plan to go today, and make copies, of this book, and I have, the copyright forms at home, so shall soon send this, to the US Library of Congress, for registration.

This work is now done. I feel this book, has something to offer, to anyone. I hope my readers have enjoyed this work. This book, more than others thus far, perhaps shows me, to be, just another human being, with the same types, of tribulations, as everyone else.

I laughed once, to Steve, that one, of Jesus' main accomplishments, was to get twelve people, to smoothly get along, with one another.

Today, Friday the Thirteenth, March, of the year, One Thousand Nine Hundred and Eighty-Seven, After the Death of Christ Jesus, when he was 33 years old, I finish this book.

May God Be With Thee, and With Thy Spirit.

= 32 =

EPILOGUE
May 24, 2014

I have made an effort, during the books of my youth, books One through Eight, of *The Life of Christos*, to have each book, be able to 'stand-alone'. To do this, I have added material, to provide some background information, and also added some information, about what happened thereafter, to provide more context...

I do this, in part, because there is no guarantee, that anyone, who reads, one of these books, will have read, or will read, any of the others. I seek therefore, to provide, extra relevant information, to each book.

I am uncertain, of how many more, of these books, I might be able, to provide. My journal, of my 'senior years', is at this time, available on-line, at jualt.livejournal.com. I maintained this journal, from Book One, until this day, and hopefully, beyond this day. I hope, that this can serve, as accurate reference, for study, and enjoyment, through time.

The Life of Christos, LOC, reflects my paths in life.

The Thought of Christos, TOC, reflects, what I have learned, from my paths in life... It is this book, TOC, that those who wish to see, my 'teachings', should read.

Rs ~ rambling through spiritual history, is somewhat a look, at 'the lives of Christos'...

Onwards with a smile...

[140603 ~ I did later muse, that at the time, that I was having, those 'mysterious' 'head problems', around Christmas 1986, that, when my head pain ceased, at the same time, the head of the US CIA, Casey, died, of a stroke, or of a sudden pain, to his own head, and I speculated, that perhaps, some sort of, 'illegal technology', was used, in both situations.]

[140603 ~ There did come, an incident, where Patrick, arrived home drunk, and bumped into a table, upon entering, and Steve responded, by punching Patrick, and breaking his nose. One might say, that Steve, 'had had it', with Patrick's drinking... I am uncertain, if this incident, occurred, during the time-period, of this book, or in one of the later books.]

[140603 ~ It was during, this edit and polish, of Book

Five, of *The Life of Christos*, that I noticed, that Steve, had approached me, the first time we met, by expressing an interest, in Armageddon, a topic that he brought up. For the first time ever, I now wondered, if perhaps, Steve might have recognized me, from my picture, in that newspaper article, about *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, which included my description, of four paths facing humanity, including Armageddon. Steve never, really, after that first meeting, had any interest, in metaphysics, or in Christos, and always preferred, to avoid those topics, and tended to disparage those topics, if they were brought up, by anyone.]

[140603 ~ At the closing, for that property, my mother then decided, to leave me, off of the deed. My mother said, that she was concerned, that if I got married, to a woman, then my wife, could claim an interest, in my mother's property, if my wife, were to divorce me.]

[140603 ~ Both Helene, and Frank-B, had their wealth, removed from them. Helene's closeness, to Yoda, did allow him, to help her, to regain, most of her funds. Frank-B's family, did assume, control, of much of what had been his. There were pretexts, for both of their situations, but I do note, that I was a common denominator, in both of their worlds, though I myself did nothing, to seek to cause, any harm, to either of them. I am uncertain, if I was relevant, to their situations, but I am unable, to totally dismiss, a thought, that perhaps, I was relevant, to both of their situations. It seems possible, to me, that they were punished, due to their closeness, to me, when I was doing, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, even if actions against them, were belated, and occurred, well after, *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, was suspended.]

[140603 ~ I never did resume, publication, of *WORLD PRESS WATCH*. I do believe, problems in my life, from perhaps some, within our government, due to *WORLD PRESS WATCH*, continued, throughout my life. I did later enjoy, many years, as publisher, and moderator, of, '*a forum with no name*', a metaphysics publication, via email, by me, as Jualt@aol.com, for those of metaphysics, by those of metaphysics.]

ATLANTA REVISITED
May 25, 2014

[140525 ~ If this were a movie, then this chapter, might be, what is called, a deleted scene, that might be included, in the director's version, if not within, the 'theatrical version'... I originally included, this material, in this version, of Book Five, of *The Life of Christos*, in the 840909 chapter. However, the material, was not, part of my 'reality', during Book Five, so it really did not impact, or influence me, during this book's time-period. It could relate, to events, that happened to me, during this book's time-period, but, if so, I was not really aware, of that possibility, at the time.]

[140525 ~ I felt this material, was 'too strong', too much, of a distraction, from this book, that I was tempted, to totally omit it. However, I decided, ultimately, that it might, relate to events, within this book, and that I might fail, to adequately mention it, if I fail to provide, later books, of *The Life of Christos*, in which it is included.]

[140416 ~ The remainder of this chapter, is adapted, from a letter I shared, in, *The Life of Christos*, in 2011. Previously, this material was absent from this journal, and the onus, for my sudden unemployment, as far as I was concerned, from *Sun*, with *The Globe*, fell upon, John-V's 'relationship', with Bobbie. I present this material now, because it might relate, to the events that happened, during Book Five...]

I need some help ... some light perhaps, upon my dark situation... Last year, I was fired from a job, because of an incident, which I suffered in Atlanta, in 1976... I became homeless, due to the loss of income. I had hoped, this whole incident, would go away, but it is alive and well today...

I was arrested, and booked, in Atlanta city jail, on April 23, 1976.

This is the only time that I have ever been arrested.

Briefly, I was in Atlanta, with a friend, ST, visiting a friend, MM.

MM went to work, during the day. ST and I went to downtown Atlanta, to apply for jobs, as we intended to settle

in Atlanta. ST and I, either took a bus, or walked back, toward MM's, to be at MM's place, when MM returned from work. We got back, to near MM's home, about an hour or less, am uncertain now, before MM, was to return from work. I know that we thought, that we didn't have much time, before MM would return, to his home, from work. Our intention was to arrive at MM's home, shortly after, he returned from work.

There was a public park, near where MM lived, so we went there, to kill some time, until MM returned from work. ST was bored, just sitting with me, so he went off by himself.

I sat on a lawn hill, near a street, remaining in that place, to wait for ST to return, to my location, before we both, went back, to MM's residence.

A gentleman came up to me, and he began talking to me. This gentleman, essentially propositioned me, to have sex with him, and I declined. This gentleman offered money to me, if I would have sex with him. I declined. I believe, I thanked him, for his interest, and explained to him, that I simply lacked time, as I was with, someone at the park, who was elsewhere, at that moment, and that my friend and I, were soon to return, to the home, of the person we were visiting.

The gentleman continued, expressing his desire, to fool around with me, and his willingness, to pay for it. I continued to decline. This went on, for at least ten minutes, with him pressing me, and me declining...

ST returned, and asked me, to roll a marijuana joint. I told ST, that I didn't have any. ST expressed, rather strongly, that of course I did, that I had an ounce on me, that morning, when we left, so I should still have it, on me now. I did, and had it wedged, in the tip of one of my boots, that I was wearing.

The gentleman departed, and I scolded ST, for being so 'indiscrete', to mention marijuana, in front of a stranger...

It was within a couple of minutes, maybe four at the most, or at least fairly quickly, that then a police car approached, and it turned out, the gentleman, who had been propositioning me, was an undercover cop, and he began, an arrest process, for the marijuana, during which he searched me, and found nothing. This gentleman then had

me bang my boots, one at a time, against the side of the police car, and, to my astonishment, nothing fell out.

The two cops, then had ST and I, sit in the back seat of the police car, and I believe, we were handcuffed. I doubt, we were ever read our rights, as the police, were talking about, what to do... The cops thought, they had a problem, in deciding what to charge, ST and I with, which I assumed, was due to the lack of marijuana, being found. I hoped, that we might be released.

However, we were then taken, to the Atlanta City jail, and booked, on what I thought, was a solicitation for prostitution charge. I used a fake name. I provided, no identification documents. And thus, I ended up in jail, with much marijuana, which I quickly got rid of.

Many prisoners told me, that Atlanta police, seemed to be, waging war on the poor, and that it seemed, that people were being picked up, to be railroaded, to be shipped to Georgia state prisons, to be used, as cheap labor, for US corporations... It seems, that the guards, of these 'facilities', are 'stock-holders', in these corporations, and receive some profit, for the prisoners they retain...

To me, this whole situation 'stinks'... Worse, it is an onus, upon all the people, of the US, who knowingly tolerate this situation, and in their tolerance, raise a prospect, that many more, could be victimized...

It seems possible to me, that a reason, that so many people in jails, proclaim their innocence, is because, they are actually innocent...

I was told, that because it was, a sex-related charge, that I would be, denied a phone call, until after a medical exam, to determine, if I had any, sexually transmissible diseases. That examination took a number of days, to wait for, and then I was told, after that exam, that I would be given, a phone call, after I was transferred, to Fulton County Jail, which took some more days. The medical exam said I had 'clap', gonorrhea, though I lacked any symptoms of that disease, which is normally very visible with a green discharge. I was given medication for clap, a container with pills, as I was being transferred from Atlanta City jail to Fulton County jail, and then, upon arrival at Fulton County jail, that medication was taken by authorities, and I was told

it would be given to me as needed, rather than me having all of the medication and giving it to myself. I was never given any of that medication while at Fulton County jail. I never exhibited any signs of 'clap'. I wondered if this whole medical episode reflected some sort of money-making bookkeeping scam.

I believe, I was finally given, my one phone call, seven days or more, after my arrest... Many people, like to believe, that one gets, one's one phone call, somewhat immediately, upon arrival at a jail, but apparently, there is, some 'wiggle room', as to when, that phone call, might actually, be allowed, if at all... I would imagine, could rabidly speculate, based on my own experience, that there could be, some hapless individuals, for whom a phone call, is never allowed... I was never allowed to make one phone call, nor have any contact with a lawyer or public defender, while I was in the custody, of the Atlanta City jail.

I called MM, when I did get, my one phone call, as I had just vanished, from his home, for more than a week, perhaps maybe ten days, at that point, and I let him know, that I was alive, and what had happened, thus far. I told MM, that I anticipated, that I would be released, as this would be a case, of my word, against the cop's word, as no money, had been exchanged, and the cop, had approached me, rather than me, doing anything, to seek to solicit him, and there never was, any sex, and we had remained, in plain sight, next to street, in broad daylight, the whole time...

I told MM, that I wished to avoid, informing my parents, of the situation... I am uncertain, if MM, had already, gotten in touch with my parents, to say, that I seemed to be missing, or if he called them, after speaking with me, but he did, at some point, inform my parents, of the situation.

I met, with a public defender, or at least with someone, who portrayed himself, as my public defender, who told me, that I had to plead guilty, to solicitation for prostitution, and that Atlanta, viewed this situation, very seriously, and, if in a contest, between my word, and a cop's word, in court, that the court, would take the cop's word.

I was unwilling, to plead guilty, and always declined to do so, saying I was innocent, and wished to plead innocent.

The public defender 'strongly advised' me, that he would

be reluctant, to have me plead innocent, and that things would be tougher on me, if I refused to plead guilty, saying that I would then receive, a number of years in prison, whereas if I pleaded guilty, I might receive, at worst, a year or less, or perhaps even probation, upon immediate release, with credit for time served. The public defender, portrayed the situation, as almost okay, if I pleaded guilty, and most certainly, near doom, if I pleaded innocent...

I continued to refuse, to plead guilty, and repeatedly told that public defender, that I was innocent, and there was a lack, of any evidence, against me, for solicitation. The public defender almost seemed to say, that he would decline, to represent me, unless I pleaded guilty.

This 'public defender' lacked any interest, in my version of events, and spent an hour with me, seeking to persuade me, badgering me, to plead guilty. I believe, that the only charge, ever mentioned to me, by 'my' public defender, was solicitation for prostitution. I believe, I met with this public defender, a second time, but am uncertain, but did affirm consistently, at all times with him, that I wished, to keep an innocent plea, as I was innocent.

ST was in the cell with me, for a while, in Atlanta city jail, having somewhat simply left his own cell, at an 'opportune moment', and joined me in my cell, though he was not supposed to be there. That helped me to smile, that he would seek to be with me, to be my protector... ST was 'discovered', and 'returned' to his proper cell...

ST was also, in the same cell with me, in the Fulton County Jail, with me. We were in, a 'gay cell'... I refrained, from visiting the showers, the entire time. ST was my protector, and I was okay, during my time in jail.

My parents arrived in Atlanta, and began making, their own arrangements, with my public defender, and the judge. In retrospect, I consider, that perhaps, 'authorities' dealt with my parents, as they might have assumed me, to be younger than 21, due to my youthful appearance, and thus thought, my parents, had 'authority', legally, to make decisions for me. Truth is though, that I had recently turned 21, and would thus have been, a 'legal adult', and thus capable, of making my own decisions...

My parents arranged, with my public defender, that they

would pay, a fine, of around $300, perhaps directly, as cash, to the judge, and the arrest record, was then altered, to show, that ST and I, were arrested, in two different places, at two different times, and were brought to jail separately, rather than, at the same time, as had actually occurred. We had been handcuffed together, brought in together, in the back seat, of the police car together, and booked together...

My parents stressed to me, that they wished to avoid, any publicity, to avoid embarrassment, to our family, and they wished, to make 'an arrangement', rather than, to fight the charge, as I wished to do.

I was somewhat distressed, that my parents, seemed to be, assuming my guilt, but perhaps, they were uncaring, about my guilt, or innocence, and only caring, about protecting their reputation, in public.

My family said, if I accepted this deal, that then all record, of this event, would be erased, as long as I stayed out of trouble, for three years. I have never been, in 'criminal' trouble, in my adult life, before or since then, and do maintain, my innocence, even in that situation.

The deal arranged, by my parents, would have released me, instantly, from jail, while leaving ST, in jail. I declined, saying I would only accept, such a deal, if ST were to be also released. My parents were very upset, at that suggestion, and I remained steadfast. My parents, agreed to my terms, and I agreed, to their deal...

The police report, was then written again, for a third time, and this time, reflected, that ST and I, had been arrested together, on the same charge, at the same time.

ST and I went to Fulton County court, to face a solicitation for prostitution charge, against each of us. Keep in mind, that all ST had done, was to request marijuana, from me, and that cop had never propositioned him, and yet he was also charged, with solicitation.

To seek to be clear, ST was absent, when that cop, was propositioning me, and he was never propositioned himself, by that cop. That gentleman had left, as soon as ST had said, that I had marijuana on me, and then that gentleman quickly returned, in a police car.

I sincerely believe, that the police officer, expected to find the marijuana, and intended to arrest both of us, for

that. Again, for the record, ST lacked possession, of any marijuana. ST was truly, even more of a victim in all this, than I, though I suppose, it was his big mouth, which brought this, upon both of us.

I noted to the judge, during our court appearance, and that should be, in any surviving court record, if such records, are accurately maintained, that I had observed, at least three cases, of female alleged prostitutes, in court that day, before my case was heard, who alleged, separately and independently, that this cop, the same one, involved with ST and I, had arrested them, after having sex with them...

I had thought, perhaps, that if I did have sex, with the cop, that then maybe, he wouldn't have arrested me, that perhaps, he had arrested me, precisely because I declined his advances. However, the prostitutes said, they had been arrested, after having sex, with the guy, when they demanded their payment, so perhaps, I would have been arrested, after sex, even if I had agreed, to have sex, with the guy...

I noticed, that the judge, failed to care, about the behavior, of that cop.

The judge, made a big point to say, that it was fortunate, that I was from, a big-name family, who were willing to make sacrifices, in behalf of their child, and that he was responding, to their willingness, to seek to sacrifice, in my behalf... The words 'bribe', and 'ransom', were never mentioned in court...

I told the judge, I thought he was ignoring, a terrible situation, and that if anyone, was making a sacrifice, it was me, because I was innocent, and inclined to plead innocent, but was doing this, 'nolo contendere', to spare my family, and my friend. I believed, my public defender, explained to me, that 'nolo contendere', was neither guilty, nor innocent, but 'no contest'. I was led to believe, by the state's lawyer for me, that I could plead, 'nolo contendere', without any onus of guilt.

The deal was, that records were sealed, and my family agreed, not to sue Atlanta, for my false arrest. The judge said, that records would be sealed, and erased, if I stayed out of trouble, perhaps a year.

ST and I were instantly released. Our lives did separate.

I always maintained my innocence, and told my parents, that they should have, sought to defend me, rather than cave in, but they maintained, they had done right, protected the family name, and the incident was gone...

I noticed, that I had a sore, on my penis, within a few weeks, of my release. I had refrained from sex, in jail, and since jail. My only source of sexual contact, had been, the medical exam. It turned out, that I had contracted syphilis. I was treated, in Fort Lauderdale, at a Public Health Clinic. I believe, I saw, years later, where there had been, some disease experiments, being conducted, in Atlanta jails. I am uncertain though...

I did consider, that perhaps my medical exam, had simply been, unsanitary, reusing Q-tips and equipment, so that disease, from one prisoner, was spread to another, due to unsanitary, unclean, health practices, during the exam, but I never ruled out, a possibility, that deliberate disease experiments, might have been, being conducted.

At any rate, I believe, that medical exam, is where I contracted, that disease. It was my only sexual contact...

A decade or more later, when I worked, as a writer, at *Globe*, for *The Sun*, a national supermarket tabloid magazine, story assignments were put in a divider, for the writers to pick, when completing an assignment, and then selecting their next. I plucked a book review, on a book, called, *The List*, written by, Chet Dettlinger and Jeff Prugh...

This book investigated, the Atlanta 'child murders', and said, that Wayne Williams was innocent. This book said, that Wayne Williams was guilty, of taking nude pictures, of young black boys, but not of murder. The book pointed out, that the carpet fiber evidence, used to convict Williams, was basically circumstantial, in that such carpet fibers, were commonplace...

The murders began, after the vice investigation began... The book said, the murders continued, after Wayne William's arrest. The book said, that a vice cop, investigating the 'child' pornography, had the opportunity, to commit these murders, that he had proximity, to all the victims, during his investigation of 'child pornography'...

The book pointed out, that the murders stopped, when this officer transferred from Atlanta to Los Angeles. I

believe, that I saw, in that book, a picture, of the vice cop, who the book said, was the actual killer, in the Atlanta Child Murders, and that, that picture, I thought at that time, was a picture, of the cop, who had arrested me, in Atlanta...

I wrote the book review, for *The Sun*, a supermarket tabloid, given to wild stories, one that could print the truth, precisely I suppose, because it was likely to be disbelieved, coming from that publication...

I lost the job, at *Globe*, suddenly, and without warning, or cause, after three men in gray suits, visited my editor. I worked for a man, named John-V, and he was having, 'an issue', with a co-worker, which involved, some legal questions. I was a friend, of that co-worker. I was not aware, of the legal situation, between my co-worker and boss, nor of the visit, by men in gray suits, when I was 'laid-off'.

However, soon after I was 'laid off', I was told of the legal situation involving my boss, by that co-worker, and she thought, that was the cause of my lay-off. I then assumed, that I was let go, because of the dispute, between John-V, and the co-worker, and that he struck out at me, because I, was a friend of hers...

Within weeks after I was let go, another co-worker told me, of the strange visit, by men in gray suits, to my boss, while I happened to be, out of the office, at lunch. This co-worker, assumed that visit, might have been involved, with my sudden 'lay-off', but this co-worker, knew nothing about, the legal situation, involving the other co-worker, and my boss.

Today, as I sit unemployed, once again, and this time, knowing it was because, I was booked, in Atlanta City Jail, 33 years ago, I wonder, if perhaps, my job, lost at *Globe*, was also due, to this Atlanta situation.

Perhaps unrelated, but nonetheless, coincidentally, after that vice cop 'moved', from Atlanta to Los Angeles, there began, a series of murders, in Los Angeles, predominantly of black female prostitutes, and that case, was recently 'cleared', from the books, by assigning, about 200 murders, to a black man, who was in jail. To me, this situation seems to resemble, seems to have, the same 'modus operandi', as the Atlanta situation, where all those murders, were blamed,

on a scapegoat, and the likely murderer, went untouched...

There was also, recently, a much-publicized incident, where a black male police officer, was chased from Los Angeles, and many terrible allegations, were made against him, by media, as they sought to gain, public support, for his apprehension. I wondered, if that black male police officer, had actually found, some truth, about the Atlanta, and Los Angeles, situations, and was thus being framed, to silence him. The vice cop, involved with me, and with the Atlanta murders, was white...

However, unfortunately at this time, the story, has gone on...

Although I was hired, for a permanent position, Census2010 fired me, suddenly, without warning, March 2009, saying, that my termination, was due to FBI reporting, of my being booked, in Atlanta, in 1976... I was told, that the FBI demanded, that I immediately, be removed, from the premises.

I did, thereafter, visit the specific FBI compound, involved in this situation, in person. I was not allowed into the property. I was barred entry, at the gate. However, two agents, did investigate their records, and met with me, and spoke with me, 'through the fence', literally, with me on the outside of the fence, and they on the inside of the fence. I was told, by these two agents, that they had, nothing on record, against me, and that they, had not acted against me. However, Census2010, did put it in writing, that their behavior, was due to the FBI monitoring, of municipal booking records...

Census2010 required, that I get, Atlanta court documentation, to explain to the Census Bureau, the disposition, of an arrest for Prostitution, and an arrest, for Sexual Assault. This is the first time, that I have ever heard mention, of a charge, of Sexual Assault...

[140603 ~ I understand, that the exact definition, of charges, can vary, in different places, or at different times. At the time in 1976, Prostitution was, to accept money for sex, or to have sex for money. Solicitation for Prostitution was, to ask for money for sex, without sex being actually involved. I never, asked for money for sex. I was never guilty, of a charge, of solicitation for prostitution. Had I

accepted, the vice-officer's solicitation, then I could have been charged, with Prostitution, but I never accepted his requests. I was never guilty, of a charge of prostitution.

[140603 ~ My public defender, only spoke, of a charge, of solicitation for prostitution. A charge, of prostitution, was never ever mentioned, and never ever appeared, in court.]

I was sitting, in daytime, by a street, on a hillside, fully dressed, and was sexually propositioned, repeatedly, by this undercover cop, and there was never, any sex, nor physical contact, nor money exchanged, and I simply am baffled, at this moment, how there could even be construed, to have been a possibility, for a charge, of Sexual Assault. I suspect, that it is an allegation, that I was considered guilty, of a crime of sexual assault, which cost me the job, with Census2010.

[140611 ~ I suppose, some might view, with equal disfavor, the charges of Solicitation for Prostitution, Prostitution, and Sexual Assault. However, to me, either solicitation for prostitution, or prostitution, reflect normally 'victimless crimes', without any inherent karmic negative, associated with them. To me, Sexual Assault, implies, that one has attacked another person, that one has caused harm to someone else, that one has failed to respect the free will of another human or sentient being, and thus, to me, the onus, or stigma, associated with a charge of Sexual Assault, is much worse, than any onus, to be associated with Solicitation for Prostitution, or Prostitution. To me, it is quite offensive, insulting, to imply, that I have been considered guilty, of Sexual Assault. To me, such an allegation, that of perpetrating a sexual assault, is a personal affront.]

The charges, of Prostitution, and Sexual Assault, were never mentioned, in Fulton County court, nor were they ever mentioned, to me, by the public defender, and this notice to me, is the first time, I have ever heard of them. I do know, that it is a terrible thing, to have a Sexual Assault charge, on one's record ... akin to being asked, if one has stopped beating one's wife, when one has never beaten, one's wife...

So, now I follow, the yellow brick road, and go onwards, with this quest, to seek to deal, with this situation. There is that view, to leave sleeping monsters asleep, to let this go, and go on with my life. I would like to point out, that this is,

33 years later, and I seem to have been fired, because of an Atlanta City booking, on charges, that never appeared in court. It has also now seemed impossible, for any Atlanta court, to explain to Census2010, the disposition of charges, that never went to court... Any Atlanta court, can only seek to explain, the disposition, of charges, that have appeared, in any Atlanta court...

Another Catch-22 then, is that, since Atlanta court, or Fulton county court, could not explain, charges that never went to court, then Atlanta courts, or Fulton county courts, could not provide, to Census2010, an explanation of those charges, and could not explain, disposition of those charges, since those charges were never handled, and since no explanation, could be provided, to Census2010, then Census2010 declined to reinstate my employment, as they required, an explanation, of the disposition of those charges, to reinstate me.

That these alleged charges, are being 'publicized', to an employer, is also a violation, of a court order, though perhaps, technically, as these charges, never appeared in court, then they might not be covered, by that court order...

I have also been told, that these bookings, should never ever be mentioned, to any employer, and that they are only intended, to be available, to other law enforcement agencies. How these bookings, got from Atlanta, to the FBI, to my employer, is unclear, and everyone involved, is seeking to avoid having, any responsibility, for anything that has happened. Since law enforcement agencies, are only to provide information, regarding bookings, to other law enforcement agencies, then information, about those bookings, would not be provided to me, or to Census2010, an employer, by law enforcement agencies, even if in response, to an allegation, or a confirmed fact, confirmed in writing by the US Commerce Department, that a law enforcement agency, the FBI, had provided details, about bookings, to that employer already.

I have two federal agencies, the Commerce Department, and the FBI, providing conflicting stories, to me. The FBI declines, to put anything in writing, to me, perhaps in part, because they should not legally have, anything in writing, related to municipal bookings...

Census2010, also took a position, that since I should never have been hired, then I would not be paid, for the time, that I had actually worked... I was able, with many phone calls, and much time, to eventually get payment, for the time I had actually worked...

I know, I feel, that my 'rights', have never been respected, in any regard, in this entire situation.

I am curious, as to how the FBI, is budgeted, to maintain records, of municipal bookings, even if they never went to court. The FBI, as a federal agency, is only authorized, to legally spend money, upon events, related to inter-state happenings. There is absolutely, nothing interstate, about most municipal bookings... That seems to me, to be outside, of 'federal' scope, or legal authority, so how do they, have that right, or is that, a clearly illegal, misappropriation of funding? Or is there simply, no law, that government, must observe?

Do keep in mind, that I was fired, due to an alleged booking charge, rather than, due to a court disposition, as these charges, never even went to court. If I had been found innocent, in court, if these charges, had gone to court, I could still be, in this same situation, as I was fired, due to a booking record, at best an allegation, rather than due to any court results...

I became homeless, due to lack of income, after being fired, in March 2009.

[140524 ~ In my mind, there is, absolutely nothing good, about any aspect, of any of all this. I can hope, that my mention, of these things, might help, to breed some awareness, to help to prevent, things like this, from ever occurring, to anyone. What is perhaps most sad, is that, while to some, my rendition of events, might be regarded, in their unknowing, or knowing, denial, as offensive, as outrageous slander, to our nation, to our government, and yet sadly, to others, my rendition, is 'commonplace'...]

[140524 ~ All of this, led me to believe, that a prudent course in life, could be, to have as little to do, with 'our' system, as possible. However, I also believe, in seeking to help, maintain and improve, the condition of our world, and our world, includes, community and nation.]

[140525 ~ I did have, a touch of anger, when in jail, with

ST, and one thing we did, was a 'blood curse', upon that city. I am not pleased today, by that aspect, of my behavior then. I was 'young', and angry, and felt self-righteous, in that I knew, that I was being terribly wronged. I just note it, as a coincidence, because of the Atlanta murders... One might say, that had anyone cared, about my situation, at the time, then those murders, might never have occurred...]

[140525 ~ I also note, that Atlanta also then, for decades, has had 'problems' with weather... Today, decades after all of this, some people seem to sometimes wonder, if Atlanta, has been cursed. Perhaps this chapter puts some light, onto that possibility. It is quite possible, that the only curse, upon Atlanta, is its own dharma, for as I was wronged there, so too, have others been wronged there, and that city, could very well be, a dharmically negative spot, on Earth, what some might call, 'asteroid bait'. There are places, where rubble might be an improvement...]

[140603 ~ I can hope, that some, who experience this chapter, might seek to prevent, this sort of behavior, from victimizing other people, anywhere, at any time.]

= 60 =

The Life of Christos series,
now has,
Books One through Eight available.

This series, is an in-depth,
thorough, accurate authentic,
rendition of events
as they occurred
a running history.

I like to think,
that each book,
of The Life of Christos series,
can stand alone.

Sometimes I think
that, perhaps, the age I was,
when events in one of these books occurred,
might be the age most appropriate,
for a reader to also be.

From my life experience,
and research,
I put together,
a book of my teachings,
and that book is,
The Thought of Christos.
This book is also available on Amazon.

There is also available
Writing On the Wall ~ perhaps a bit ‘off the wall’,
a long short autobiography,
of my entire life.

There is also available,
The Rapture of Christos,
a stage-play based on events,
within Book One, of The Life of Christos.